

3 1761 09701616 6











A SKETCH  
OF A  
PHILOSOPHY.

*Ἀριστα ὦ Τίμαιε.*

PLATON in Tim.

PART II.

M A T T E R

AND

MOLECULAR MORPHOLOGY:

THE ELEMENTAL SYNTHESIS.

ILLUSTRATED BY 75 DIAGRAMS OF MOLECULES IN THE TEXT.

PRICE 3s. 6d.

*(Sold Separately.)*



A SKETCH  
OF A  
PHILOSOPHY  
PART I.  
MIND:  
ITS  
POWERS AND CAPACITIES  
AND ITS  
RELATION TO MATTER.

BY  
JOHN G. MACVICAR, D.D.

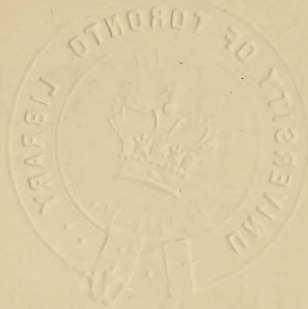


WILLIAMS & NORGATE:  
14 HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON, AND  
20 SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.

1868.

SEEN BY  
PRESERVATION  
SERVICES

DATE.....



4017  
18/6/90

H/hts in 1V.

6



## PREFACE.

---

ONE commonly likes to get a glance, if he can, at a new book, before he commits himself to its purchase or perusal. This, therefore, the author has attempted to give the reader in the Analytical Contents which immediately follow—not without the hope that he will be so much interested by the new aspect in which old beliefs are presented to him, as to feel disposed to dip into the work itself. Even from these contents it may be gathered that the author propounds “A Philosophy,”—meaning, by this term, a cycle of thought descriptive, in an orderly manner, of what is held to be Reality, in which everything that is cognisable has its own place, and in which everything that is introduced, while it stands in the last analysis on a solid basis, proves also to be harmonious with its antecedents, its concomitants, and its consequences, or, in other words, is explained and justified by them.

It is through PART II., which treats of the chemistry of nature, that the author wishes that he could have recommended this PART I. to the reader's consideration; for it is part and parcel of the same train of thought, and he conceives that in it, such arithmetical and geometrical verifications have been adduced, as must ultimately convince every one, that the views there advanced represent molecular nature, or are at any rate such, that molecular nature is most articulately and loudly responsive to them. But the author dare not hope, even though it really possessed all the merits which he ascribes to it, that PART II. can be much attended to, or can make much way in the scientific world for years to come; for he cannot conceal from himself that

it is as antithetic to existing hypotheses in chemistry, as the Newtonian System was at its first publication to the vortices of Des Cartes. Nor can he deny that it professes to make a greater step in science than has been made since those days; for it professes to give the forms and structures of the various atoms and molecules which constitute chemical substances, and thus to raise chemistry to the level, and bring it within the sphere, of mechanics, investing its objects, at the same time, with all the distinctness of the objects of other branches of natural science. Now, it would be contrary to the teaching of the whole history of science, if such pretensions (however well founded) were attended to, or admitted, till after long years, first of neglect and then of resistance. PART I., "The Philosophy of Mind," must therefore stand, in the meantime, on its own merits. It too has, indeed, the misfortune of presenting itself in direct opposition to the prevalent tastes of the day; and therefore it too will be extensively repudiated at any rate at the present moment, and until the now rising tide of materialism and pantheism shall have fallen into the ebb again, as after having reached the full it has so often done already, before the constitutional instincts or inspirations of humanity, with which speculative minds may indeed dally for a generation, but which are ultimately inexorable.

Meantime, to those who, still standing firmly on their feet, as true men actuated by the principles referred to, are not to be carried away by the flowing tide—to those, in a word, who still hold to the worship of God, the duty of self-sacrifice for the good of others, and the belief in immortality,—what follows may serve to show that, in believing and in acting as they do, they are standing on ground which is truly scientific, and have nothing to fear from the progress of thought, in so far as it is entitled to the name of scientific—nay, are in a position to lead the way in all that can be justly so called.



# ANALYTICAL CONTENTS.

## INTRODUCTION.

### CHAPTER I.

#### ON THE RELATIONS BETWEEN THE SCIENCE OF THE DAY AND PHILOSOPHY PROPERLY SO CALLED.

	PAGE
The tendency of Modern Science is to assume a merely mechanical dynamism as the sum total of existence, . . . . .	1
The doctrine of the Conservation of Energy when applied to this extent is quite overstretched. That doctrine was established by Leibnitz, and is an integral part of his philosophy, which is eminently theistical, . . . . .	2
The Sensational Method of research, now so popular, instead of a Rational Method, is leading only to a spelling out of Spinozism backwards, . . . . .	3
This theory of the Universe has already been fully developed in the Buddhism of the East, of which that of Comte is but a poor repetition in the West, . . . . .	4
The popular dogma, that science and religion ought always to be kept separate, is equally illogical and impracticable, . . . . .	6
Herbert Spencer proposes their reconciliation, but on such terms as that science and religion are antithetic, the one being orderly knowledge, the other dogmatic nescience, &c.—terms which cannot be accepted, . . . . .	9
The popular sentiment, that what is held to be true must be asserted all irrespective of its consequences, implies that it may be also held and asserted all irrespective of its concomitants and antecedents, that is, its evidence, which is absurd, . . . . .	13
Such is the harmony of things, that whatever is entitled to the name of scientific truth is in perfect keeping, not only with actual existence, but with the continuance and the wellbeing of existence, not only with that which is, but with that which shall be and which ought to be, . . . . .	14

## CHAPTER II.

THE SO-CALLED SCIENTIFIC METHOD (A METHOD OF MERELY OUTSIDE OBSERVATION), THOUGH VERY CONVENIENT AND FLATTERING TO SENSE, IS WHOLLY INADEQUATE FOR THE DISCOVERY OF THE MOST IMPORTANT REALITIES.

	PAGE
The method which suggests itself as the best is to begin with and build upon that which is at once most palpable and most certain, . . .	15
But these two characteristics cannot be found meeting in any one and the same object, thought and mind being most certain, motion and matter alone palpable. Therefore this method always breaks down in practice and gives two philosophies, Idealism and Materialism, each with its exclusive advocates, . . . . .	16
Hence in despair, "The Positive Method," but which ought rather to be called "the Subjective Method," namely, to turn away our eyes from Nature as she presents herself most distinctly and most fully, and to look at objects successively as best suits our own intellectual weakness, beginning with those which look as if they would be most easily understood, and thus proceeding on the basis of our mental impotency in an orderly manner, to construct "the hierarchy of the Sciences!" . . . . .	17
Hence the emptiest of objects, first (space and time, geometry). The objects which seem mere specks of light, next (the heavenly bodies, astronomy), &c., and man, the most fully endowed of objects, last of all. While those objects, which in all ages have been deemed the proper themes of philosophy, God, the Soul, Liberty, &c., being difficult of discussion, are never properly reached at all, . . . . .	18
Observation from without of the outsides of things merely can never truly give us to know what things are in reality. However great the inconvenience or difficulty to ourselves, we ought to lay the ground of real knowledge in a knowledge of that which has an eye within itself—that which may be observed from within as well as from without, in Mind namely, . . . . .	22
Were it not for the difficulty of the investigation of mental phenomena, this method would never have been called in question, . . . . .	23

## CHAPTER III.

CONSCIOUSNESS : ITS RELATION TO PURE INTELLIGENCE  
OR UNDISTURBED INTUITION.

The only postulate of our philosophy of the creation is the existence of finite Being or Energy, distributed in individualised elements which are essentially relational, and are thus suited for constituting a cosmos, . . . . .	28
That essentially relational property, possessed by everything that exists, is self-manifesting power, together with its counterpart, namely, a certain impressibility in correlation with self-manifesting power, . . . . .	30



Beings whose substance, reality, potentiality, or energy, is so great in amount that they are determined only in part by their environments, and continue to be, centrally, so to speak, self-determining, are doubly self-manifesting,—they are self-manifesting to themselves,—that is, they are conscious, . . . . .	35
There is room for inquiry, whether a simpler and more truthful mode of perception than that of ordinary consciousness be not attainable, . . . . .	42
The existence of consciousness depends on the maintenance of a synthetico-analytical rhythm in mental action ; the synthetic phase being cosmical, spontaneous, inevitable, and other-assertive ; the analytical phase being personal, volitional, and self-assertive, . . . . .	43
When, instead of being used in due co-ordination, either phase by itself is made the basis of a demonstration, there result the phenomena, which Kant has named “the paralogisms and antinomies of pure reason,” but which are in reality only the antilogies of the waking state or of consciousness, . . . . .	45
These contradictory conclusions are not of equal authority. Those which the mind gives in its synthetic phase, when duly purged by analysis of errors arising from the mind’s somatic relations, are the truth, . . . . .	51
If the personal activity of the mind could be brought into a state of perfect harmony with its environments and of perfect repose, these conflicts in thought would vanish, and we should see things as they are, . . . . .	52
Meantime common sense, the catholic expression of humanity, (the microcosm) by man himself, is the best guide to truth, . . . . .	58

---

## THE SKETCH.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### GOD.

Our philosophy lays its ground in the affirmation of God as a most certain datum of all normal intuition and reasoning, . . . . .	59
The God whom we affirm is such that it is reasonable to adore and worship Him, being a glorious personality, immutable yet ever living, almighty yet never acting otherwise than according to the views of perfect intelligence, the two in one constituting His will, of which the character is perfect goodness, . . . . .	60
Our theory of the antilogies of consciousness relieves us of the intellectual embarrassment and the scepticism which seeming contradictions among the Divine attributes tend otherwise to produce, . . . . .	62
Our philosophy, therefore, in reference to the Cause of All, is precisely that of the Newtonian epoch, the scholium at the end of the Principia being here adopted and recited, . . . . .	62

## CHAPTER II.

## CREATION.

	PAGE
The fulness of the Godhead does not exclude, but rather the almighty power of God implies the possibility of a creation, . . . . .	63
That there may be in the Divine mind an adequate motive for awarding existence to creatures (although a creation, being necessarily finite, cannot but be imperfect), the nature of enjoyment is such as to satisfy reason ; for, so long as God alone exists, only one can enjoy, while, by a suitable creation, all but an infinite number may, . . . . .	64
That the production of multiplied, nay, as it were self-multiplying, enjoyment is the design of the actual creation fully appears ; thus : (1.) So far as we see, every field where life is possible, is teeming with life ; (2.) A state of wellbeing in a sentient creature is a state of enjoyment ; (3.) The so-called "struggle for life" in the world is in reality a struggle for a maximum of enjoyment in the world, . . . . .	64

## CHAPTER III.

## COSMICAL LAW.

Since creation, in all its details, must have existed as thought, knowledge, or idea in the mind of God before He awarded existence to it outwardly as dynamism or substance in space and time ; and since it realises, or, at least, in so far as it realises the Divine Idea, this dynamism or substance must be essentially assimilative. Imitativeness must be of the essence of created Being. Assimilation must be the law of the cosmos, . . . . .	65
In imitating and in being assimilated to the Divine Immensity, created Being must be diffused to the utmost through all space, and consequently, being finite, it must at the same time be attenuated to the utmost. Hence a law of Diffusion and of Attenuation, . . . . .	66
In being assimilated to the Divine Unity, individuation and partitionment into minimum elements must accompany diffusion ; and these minimum elements must tend to unite into elements or monads of greater power. Hence there is implied in the law of Assimilation not only a law of Diffusion and of Attenuation, but a law of Individuation and of Unification with recovery of Energy, . . . . .	65

## CHAPTER IV.

## FINITE BEING.

If, as is commonly supposed, there be in creation Beings which are dissimilar in every respect—in substance as well as in attribute—the cause of philosophy and of science is hopeless. Nothing but empirical observation is possible, and a perpetual groping in the dark, . . . . .	69
---	----

	PAGE
Though finite created Being cannot but be essentially different from the Infinite and the Uncreated, yet there is no adequate ground for holding that different orders of finite Beings are dissimilar to each other in substance as well as in attribute, . . . . .	70
That Being who is the author of all is a Spirit; and if we suppose that a finite Being, when constituted by not less than a certain amount by Being or Energy, is a Spirit also, then we obtain a spiritual world as the first grand result of the forth-putting of creative power, and beneath a spiritual world, through the successive attenuation of Being in the individualised elements, we obtain two other orders of Being, namely, those whose properties correspond to those of the Material, and those of the Æthereal Elements respectively, . . . . .	71

## CHAPTER V.

## SPIRIT : ITS NATURE AND ENDOWMENTS.

The law of Assimilation, or, what is the same, the expression of the will of God in action, suggests as the highest order of Beings in Creation Spirits, in the image of God, . . . . .	76
Since the Creator is emphatically "the Almighty," the characteristic of such spirits under the law of assimilation must be the possession of a certain amount of individualised power with innate liberty of action, . . . . .	77
This dangerous gift does not necessarily imply rebelliousness, provided the free Spirit possess also a normal susceptibility or responsiveness, under the law of assimilation, . . . . .	77
That law implies principles of guidance for the exercise of liberty which shall be congenial to liberty itself, thus enabling the free Spirit to make the laws of God and of the cosmos its own choice. Hence the possibility of perfect obedience along with the enjoyment of perfect liberty, . . . . .	77
<i>Religious Obligation.</i> —The impress upon a finite Spirit of the Divine Majesty and Power tends, under the Law of Assimilation, along with a consciousness of power, to awake Religion, that is, an uneasiness to worship urging with authority, . . . . .	78
Hence the Universality of religion, and Fetish-worship rather than no worship at all, . . . . .	78
True religion, in its essence, is purely an assimilation of the soul to God, the adoring contemplation and culture in the soul of the glory of God expressing itself in a congenial flow of mental action, . . . . .	79
<i>Moral Obligation.</i> —The impress of the cosmos specially acting on man as the microcosm which man himself is, assimilates the action of the human soul to the cosmical action itself, so as to awake in consciousness an uneasiness urging with authority to obey cosmical law as embodied and represented by our own constitution as a whole, . . . . .	80
In the actual state of human nature this institution, which is humanity, acts only in a fragmentary way. Hence a Feticism in Morals as well as in religion, . . . . .	81
True morality, like true religion, is wholly disinterested. But such is the	



	PAGE
harmony of things, that as in religion the fear of punishment and hope of reward, so in Morals an enlightened self-interest, leads to the very same actions as the maintenance of right for its own sake, . . . . .	81
<i>Reason</i> .—Within the mind itself knowledge tends to be nascent, but it becomes articulate only through the impress on the soul of God and the world, . . . . .	82
“The law of Parsimony,” as insisted upon by some philosophers, is not a law of Nature, for Nature delights in multiple, concurrent, and complementary causes, . . . . .	82
In virtue of the abiding presence at once of God in His attributes to the soul, and of the soul to herself, there are given to her, under the law of assimilation, those abiding, unavoidable, and consequently regulative modes of mental action which go by the names of Necessary Truths, First Principles, Laws of Belief, or Reason, . . . . .	83
<i>Idea</i> .—In consequence of her endowments and environments, the soul thus becomes the subject of many different modes of assimilative action. The assimilations resulting may be distinguished. They answer completely to what is known in philosophy by the term “ideas.” And thus religious, moral, and general discourse becomes possible, . . . . .	85
<i>Perception</i> .—The self-manifesting influence of an object which presents itself to the mind, tends to assimilate the mind to that object, and the mind, when normally assimilated to the object, “perceives” the object, . . . . .	86
But in reference to objects which lie beyond the investing organisation, the self-manifesting power of that organisation is so overwhelming that it eclipses them all, except through the channels of the senses, . . . . .	87
The Universal Æther also, which intervenes between external objects and the percipient mind, and of which the nerves of the senses may, on a most general view, be regarded as the continuation on to the mind’s eye, acting, as it does, like the other apparatus of the senses only in accordance with the laws of motion, allows and gives only perspective, that is, projected or symbolic perception instead of correct perception, . . . . .	87
In species which are strangers to the embarrassments occasioned by a reflective habit of mental action and liberty, and whose organisation enables them to enter upon the full enjoyment of life as soon as they are born, these external objects in symbol or projection merely are sufficient to form their perceptivity into a correct perception of objects at once—they perceive instinctively, . . . . .	87
But in a percipient such as man, who is centrally, so to speak, undeterminable by external objects, reflective or free, the object itself can be accurately perceived, instead of the symbol, only by application and study; which application is, however, spontaneous and unconscious, and tends even in infancy to acquire the facility and promptitude of instinctive perception, . . . . .	87
To compensate for the loss of instinctive perception, the percipient who has liberty or is reflective, gains a knowledge of Subject as well as Object, Space and Position, Time and Motion, Force and Physics, &c., also of the Ego, . . . . .	88

	PAGE
<i>A Mythological Epoch</i> tends to result when the Ego is overacting, so that it assimilates external nature to itself, and finds another Ego in every object, . . . . .	92
<i>The so-called "positive Epoch"</i> results when the Ego wholly submits itself to the Non-ego, and like it acts only mechanically or mathematically, . . . . .	93
<i>The Scientific Epoch</i> results when in guarded action the Ego and the Non-ego in their reciprocally assimilative effects are duly balanced, . . . . .	93
<i>Retention</i> .—A perception, in virtue of having so far assimilated the mind to the object perceived, leaves behind in the mind an assimilation or idea of the object, which, like everything that is individualised, tends, under the law of assimilation, to be self-conservative, . . . . .	97
<i>Memory—Redintegration</i> .—The mind, in its existing state, when not otherwise engaged, tends to assimilate itself to its former states, and so to recall the ideas of objects formerly perceived, grouped as they were perceived—that is, to remember them, . . . . .	97
<i>The Inductive Judgment</i> .—Hence, given anew the commencement of a phenomenon, or of a series of phenomena, which has been fully observed before, the mind, under the law of assimilation, completes the phenomenon or series just commenced out of the stores of memory, and regards its completion as imminent, . . . . .	98
<i>Abstraction—Selective Attention</i> .—The mind, in virtue of its personal power or liberty, can fix on any object in a given panorama which it pleases, and thus become possessed of ideas in a state of dissociation, more or less, at its option, . . . . .	98
<i>Classification</i> .—But such ideas thus insulated must, under the law of assimilation, tend to aggregate again when they are similar to one another, . . . . .	99
<i>Generalisation</i> .—And by the application anew of selective attention to those ideas which are similar merely, but not identical, all differences may be eliminated, and identicals only retained; and thus discovery may be brought nearer that unity which is at the fountain-head of all things, . . . . .	100
<i>Syllogism</i> is a single cycle of mental action, composed of these three movements, Selective Attention, Classification, and Generalisation, either in this order or its reverse, . . . . .	100
<i>Ideals</i> .—Incidental action and casual observation often give objects and ideas which are not normal. But meanwhile the soul, in virtue of reason, that is, her assimilative relationship not to error or accident, but to God in his attributes and the cosmos in its economy, can underlay these defective data of sense and action with their normal forms or ideals, . . . . .	101
<i>Art</i> .—Creation is one; and natural objects exist in so many relations—are parts of so great a whole—that the finite mind is always unable to comprehend them fully, and consequently unable also to enjoy them fully; nay, it is ever liable to take the part for the whole, and so to misinterpret them, and so at the sight of certain objects perhaps to suffer. Hence a field for Art, namely, to create objects so abstract, or existing in so few relations, that the mind may be able to assimilate	

	PAGE
itself to them, to understand or appreciate them, and so to enjoy them fully, . . . . .	102
<i>A Pure Dialectic.</i> —The synthetico-analytical rhythm of consciousness, when rightly applied, gives, by a normal course of suggestion, a multitude of organically related ideas, such as Unity, Plurality, Totality; Cause, Effect, Energy; &c. &c., . . . . .	104
When the synthetic action is too strong, it gives dogmatism; when the analytic action is too strong, it gives scepticism; and when either cuts in upon the other, or shifts from it before it has done its work, there is intellectual imbecility, . . . . .	104
<i>Reasoning</i> is that process which becomes possible in virtue of the power with which our personality or liberty invests us, of suspending the spontaneously synthetic habit of the mind for a time, with a view to compare various objects in the light of the law of assimilation, and so to ascertain the fact of the matter or the economy of the arrangement, . . . . .	106
<i>Imagining</i> is the same exercise; the aim now, however, being not to extend our knowledge of individual facts or of cosmical order, but to construct something which needs only to be so far in keeping with reality as not to shock, and to prove entertaining, . . . . .	108
<i>Discovering</i> comes from a happy combination of observing, reasoning, and imagining. A discovery may be said to be a happy imagination, awoke by observation, sanctioned by reason, and verified by the responsiveness of reality, . . . . .	109

## CHAPTER VI.

### CREATION IN ITS ORIGINAL STATE.

The theory of Development is an inevitable result of the method of study now popularly followed in science. It is an extension of a method of acquiring knowledge, grounded on our intellectual impotency, to the procedure of the Almighty in awarding existence to the universe, . . . . .	111
This theory ignores the most important phenomena of nature, and, if true at all, is only half the truth, . . . . .	112
Since in the cosmos synthesis is everywhere co-ordinate with analysis, we are led to expect in the original creation the most perfect objects which the condition of the world could support, as well as the most simple, . . . . .	113
There is as good reason for believing in a descending scale (expressive of analysis), from <i>Homo Sapiens</i> , through the savage of the forest and the cave, &c., down to <i>Amœba</i> and <i>Gregorina</i> , &c., as in an ascending scale, from the last to the first, . . . . .	116
Our philosophy does not pronounce upon what must have been a state of miracle, . . . . .	117

## CHAPTER VII.

### THE UNIVERSAL ÆTHER, OR MEDIUM OF LIGHT.

When placed, under the law of assimilation, in harmony with the immensity and ubiquity of the Creator, finite substance being diffused to



	PAGE
the utmost, and consequently (since it is finite), being attenuated to the utmost, and therefore having its self-manifesting power, and all its other properties on the eve of vanishing, gives the universal æther,	120
Hence the æther must be eminently impalpable and transparent, and well suited for assimilating itself entirely to the other beings and things that may exist in it, and thus for representing and reporting them most truthfully,	122
Inasmuch, also, as it must be assimilated to the ever-living, omnipresent One, it may be expected that all action shall take place through it, as simultaneously as is possible, that is, with a maximum velocity,	124
All analogy leads us to infer that such action will be propagated only according to the law of assimilation; that is, between dissimilars, and not by an equal and indiscriminate radiation all around, from every centre, without regard to recipients,	125

## CHAPTER VIII.

## THE MATERIAL WORLD.

As the immensity of the Creator secures the diffusion and attenuation of finite Being to the utmost, and gives the universal æther, so His unity secures the return of the ætherial elements into unities, in which the amount of substance and potentiality shall be greater,	128
During the reunion of the ætherial elements into monads of higher orders, a geometrical consideration leads to the inference that the first step will be the genesis of an order of unities, which shall be all identical with each other, and which, under the law of assimilation, may be expected to manifest the properties of inertia, gravitation, elasticity, union by aggregation only and not by confluence, giving rise to molecular structures, which shall be palpable to sense, and which shall, in fine, be elements of Matter,	131

## CHAPTER IX.

## THE RETURN PASSAGE FROM THE MATERIAL TO THE SPIRITUAL.

The organic or normal aggregation of material elements culminates in the construction of what may be called the myo-neuro-cerebral organism or animal structure,	139
In this organism both synthetic and analytic action appear as maxima. In the central organ or brain the largest molecules exist under the most open structure and serve as a scaffolding for the greatest volume of individualised or organised æther,	139
The entire analogy of Nature leads us to infer, that as in the celestial spaces, without any special apparatus, the ætherial elements form into clusters, through whose centripetal action the material element is given to Nature as a centre to each, so in the focus of centripetal action of this special myo-neuro-cerebral apparatus, that is, in the brain, the ætherial elements will be again formed into a new unity of	

greater power than the material element, viz., a psychical element, ultimately a spirit,	PAGE 140
---	-------------

## CHAPTER X.

## NATURE.

As in the ætherial world the material element is given as a first precipitate or sublimate, itself unfit for life, so in the material world two successive precipitates are given ere material structures be possible, which possess mobility sufficient for being the ministers of sensibility and volition.	144
<i>The Mineral Kingdom.</i> —Some early molecular structures are very stable and fixed, and are only transformable secularly. They constitute the elements of the mineral kingdom, and give to Nature the crystalline world,	145
<i>Living Tissue.</i> —Meanwhile others are being constructed which are eminently transformable, specially the aqueous and ammoniacal vapours, which, when bound together, chiefly by atoms of carbon which are very fixed, are capable of forming a concrete yet mobile or living tissue,	146
<i>The Vegetable Kingdom.</i> —But of this living tissue, a part through defect of mobility, requires to be left behind, and constructs the vegetable kingdom—a kingdom which is indeed still more beautiful than the crystalline, but yet unfit for being the instrument of will,	147
<i>The Animal Kingdom.</i> —But a part of this living tissue also escapes in a state of such mobility that it is fit for constructing an apparatus which is capable of locomotion in obedience to feeling or volition,	148
<i>The Hepatic System.</i> —From the more easy synthesis of vegetable than of animal tissue, the former ever tends to invade or encrust the latter, so as to destroy its mobility. Hence in animals a special apparatus (analogous to a fully developed vegetable), which prevents the formation of vegetable tissue by transforming the material, otherwise tending to form it into sugar, hydro-carbon, &c.,	149
<i>The Myo-neuro-cerebral System.</i> —Of this apparatus the synthetic power in its focus of action (the brain) is so great, that it renders confluent, or unifies the æther there into an indestructible Being of a higher order than the material element, and thus gives a new order of Beings, in which the original endowments of Being (lost through attenuation in the ætherial and the material elements) are recovered, namely, Psychical principles, and ultimately in man, a Spirit,	151
<i>Mind and Brain.</i> —This Spirit having thus a genetic relationship to the brain, is normally proportional in power and capacity to that organ; and having its home in the brain, and existing there under the law of assimilation, which is everywhere reciprocal, mind and brain are to be expected to manifest all that interdependence, whether of harmony or of disturbance, which is familiarly observed,	158

# INTRODUCTION.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### ON THE RELATIONS BETWEEN THE SCIENCE OF THE DAY AND PHILOSOPHY PROPERLY SO CALLED.

IN the rising science of the day it is maintained by our most popular authors and lecturers that the "physical forces"—taken in the singular number, physical force—is the last word, the ultimate principle, which science can legitimately pronounce.

The physical forces are represented, not as the fingers of God, which they are, but as all that there is for God.

Power and Eternity, which have hitherto been generally held to be attributes of God, are now regarded as attributes of a definite amount of merely dynamic energy which, it is maintained, constitutes the whole universe of Being.

The most exquisite objects in nature—the lily, the rose, the bee, the dove, the peacock, the horse, man himself—are now looked to merely in relation to their material environments, and the incident forces which are supposed to have produced them. All growth and development, all organs and limbs, are regarded merely as inevitable extrusions in the directions of least resistance.

The idea of antecedent design, either in reference to nature as a whole or in reference to any object in particular, is dropt as unscientific or repudiated as unsound; in short, a reference to the physical forces is the last word permitted in any treatise, if that treatise is to be admitted as possessing a scientific character. Or; if there be one word more, it is only the "correlation" of these same physical forces, and their "conservation" or persistence eternally in the same amount of energy in the universe.

And let it be fully granted that, in their own place and within



their own sphere, these are physical truths which are of the greatest value. As to the former (the correlation of the physical forces), it is a wholesome relapse into the old philosophy of nature, a reduction to unity again of agencies which had lately been regarded as many, but long ago as one only. And as to the latter (the conservation of energy), it is also a return to a view of things which is more sound than that which was popular before the doctrine of conservation was revived, or indeed at the epoch of the revival of philosophy in modern times. Thus, at that epoch, Des Cartes went the length of maintaining that there was a conservation of motion in the universe.\* This, Newton demonstrated to be a mistake.† Then came Leibnitz, who, as usual, adjusted the truth between these two great men, and he showed that it was not motion, but the possibility or means of motion—in one word, energy—that was conserved in the universe. In many parts of his works this philosopher maintains this doctrine, and very distinctly in the following note added to his fifth reply to Dr S. Clarke, which was indeed among the last things he ever wrote:—"Je n'entreprends pas ici d'établir ma *Dynamique*, ou ma doctrine des *Forces*: ce lieu n'y seroit point propre. Cependant je puis fort bien répondre à l'objection qu'on me fait ici. J'avois soutenu que les *Forces actives* se conservent dans le monde (Voyez la note sur le § 13 de la Troisième Replique de Mr Clarke). On m'objecte que deux corps *mous*, ou non élastique concourant entre eux perdent de leur *force*. Je reponds que non. Il est vrai que les *touts* la perdent par rapport à leur mouvement total; mais les parties la reçoivent, étant agitées intérieurement par la force du concours. Ainsi ce défaut n'arrive qu'en apparence. Les *forces* ne sont pas détruites mais dissipées parmi les parties menues. Ce n'est pas les perdre, mais c'est faire comme font ceux qui changent la grosse monnoye en petite. Je demeure cependant d'accord que la quantité du mouvement ne demeure point la même, et en cela j'approuve ce qui se dit pag 341, de l'optique de Mr Newton qu'on cite ici. Mais j'ai montré ailleurs, qu'il y a de la différence entre la quantité de mouvement et la quantité de la force."‡ Thus our modern physicists, writing on this subject, have, to adopt his own figure, only given us change for Leibnitz's notes.

If it be said that, in the above words, Leibnitz does not state

\* Cartesii Principia Philosophiæ, Part iii. § 36.

† Newton's Optics, Qu. 31.

‡ Dutens, vol. ii. p. 164.

that one of the principal forms of the incident force, when dissipated in bodies on their collision, is heat, which is known now to be the fact, or that perhaps he did not know that heat was a mode of motion at all, the answer is, that it was never doubted by any philosopher of that epoch that heat was a mode of motion. And in the following words of Leibnitz have we not the most approved view of the nature of heat and its relation to light as definitely expressed as it is in any modern work?—" *Caloris eadem est caussa, quæ lucis, solo subtilitatis discrimine, utrumque et oritur a motu intestino in se redeunte subtiliora sui ejaculante, et eum facit.*" \*

But the claim to original discovery in our day of the conservation of energy would be but a small evil if the idea were not at the same time carried à l'outrance. In itself the doctrine amounts to nothing more than this, that inasmuch as every ultimate atom of *matter* is perfectly elastic, so is the whole universe of atoms perfectly elastic. Hence it is a doctrine which cannot be legitimately extended beyond the merely material sphere, except on the assumption that matter is the only reality, and that there is no such thing as a spiritual world at all—an assumption which is one of the boldest, and which, however often it may have been made, has always served only to awake a prevailing voice to the contrary, and the firm vote of a large majority to the effect that mind exists as well as matter, and is prior in the order of existence to matter.

What would the great Leibnitz, the discoverer of the principle of the conservation of energy, have thought had he met in the writings of any man of science who had adopted that principle, such words as these, "A miracle is strictly defined as a violation of the law of the conservation of energy"—prayer also, on the same ground, declared to be objectively impotent, and good only as a mental discipline; nay, the act itself of prayer "probably be found to illustrate that law (the conservation of energy!) in its ultimate expansions." †

The truth is, that the most popular science of our day viewing universal existence as a mechanical dynamism merely, and all mental phenomena as of the nature of echoes merely, just as Spinoza did, but setting out at the other end from that at which he set out, that is, adopting not reason, but the external senses, as the only informers of the mind—the most popular science of the

\* Dutens, Tom ii. Part ii. page 16. † See "Fortnightly Review," Dec. 1865.

day is merely spelling out for itself Spinozism backwards, and, as might be expected, is breaking down half-way, and falling into a Naturalism or Pancosmism, which is fraught with all the evils, and has none of the intellectual charms of the exquisitely systematic construction of the philosopher of Amsterdam, a construction such, that if you grant his premisses, or rather indeed his single premiss,\* the whole comes out with scarcely less concinnity and beauty than the six books of Euclid.

The logical charm of the *Ethics*, it must be admitted by all, is intense; but when regarded in a higher point of view than the merely logical, that charm is not unsullied. Spinoza often makes use of language for which, in its true meaning, there is no place in his system. In that system he utterly ignores, and in fact destroys, all that is understood by personality equally in God and man; yet in writing out that system, he so respected the personality of his readers that he admits, nay assigns, a most eminent place to the love of God, to liberty, to human merit, and to the immortality of the good man. But, for none of these things in his system, considered as a logical construction, is there any place at all. The author is generally admired for his boldness of denial and his honesty of mind. Be it so. It is no less certain that he has spread a net—not designedly perhaps, but in point of fact—a net, of which the material consists in the constant use of terms which are so venerable in the regard of all men that the reader is apt to be caught before he is aware, and to fail to discover till it be too late that these much-loved terms, when worked into the meshes of the author's system, have been entirely emptied of all their meaning, all that meaning in virtue of which humanity has always regarded them as sacred.

It is not in modern times, nor is it in Europe or the West—it was many ages ago, and in the East, that there was developed, in all logical simplicity and purity, the Pantheism which Spinoza clothed in language that does not belong to it, and which the science that is rising into popularity amongst us now is uttering again in broken syllables. Such is Buddhism. The cosmology and the physics attached to that system are indeed absurd enough; but these absurdities are merely imported into Buddhism from other systems. They form no part of the special teaching of Buddhu himself. Buddhu, in fact, discountenanced all such inquiries, and, like Sokrates, maintained that *Ethics* alone was worthy of study.

\* Spinoza—*Ethics*, Part I. Prop. xvi.



And here let us state, though in a few words, and in occidental terms and conceptions, this Oriental Pantheism, as I have myself learned it from the lips of Buddhist priests in Asia, and as it exists as a living creed ; for Buddhism is the type towards which much of western thought is now tending.

1. There exists from all eternity an universe which develops into all that occurs ; and all that occurs recurs in cycles of inconceivably long periods, so that, regarded in the largest point of view, uniformity rules throughout the universe through all eternity.

2. The universe is instinct with life ; and life in various orders of beings, and most eminently in man, effloresces into intelligence.

3. Man, when he has attained to the perfection of his nature (a Buddhu), is the most divine of all beings, and the proper object of adoration—himself if he be still alive, his memory if he be gone.

4. While some (the priesthood) ought to devote their lives to aiming at this perfection, and meantime are worthy of adoration for doing so, all men ought to their utmost to cultivate humanity, and to practise it in their lives.

Here we have a pure Pantheism unmixed with ideas borrowed from other systems. There is no attempt here, as there is in the work of Spinoza, to satisfy the religiously disposed ; and accordingly, when such persons appear in Buddhist families, they have recourse to some more positive religion. Influenced by their inner darkness, or light, or their surroundings, they became demon-worshippers as well as Buddhists, or worshippers of the gods of the Hindu, or Christians, all which the Buddhist priest wisely permits, knowing the necessity of such a step in order in any measure to satisfy the religious consciousness of man. And so far so well ; for nothing seems to be so killing to all the higher attributes of humanity as Atheism. And in the very proportion that Buddhism is more consequent and logically pure than Spinozism, it is more destructive of all earnestness of character, all power of believing and of practising the morality which it sets forth. Thus the Buddhist nations in the present day, inasmuch as they are the mentally enfeebled offspring of a hereditary Atheism, are generally indisposed, if not wholly incapable, of having a strong faith in any one, or in anything. They have become merely the creatures of a long-established conventionalism, to change which in any particular, seems to them as much as their life is worth. Custom, which in all men tends to become a second nature, is to them all the nature they have.

Those who are acquainted with the ultimate views of Auguste Comte, the author of the "*Système de Philosophie Positive*," will observe that his system forms the stepping-stone from Spinozism to Buddhism. Comte's object of worship is not, as it is with the Buddhist, the individual man who has attained to the perfection of his nature, but the aggregate of men, such as they have been and are. This is his "*grande conception de l'Humanité qui vient éliminer irrévocablement celle de Dieu*." Now, this enables him to retain and to celebrate the love of the "*Grand-être, l'Être Suprême*," as Spinoza does, and with a much better grace; for Spinoza's God is merely infinite substance, self-developing itself necessarily into every conceivable attribute and mode—a God in which Intellect and Will differ so entirely from what they are in us that they can agree only in name, and to use his own illustration—"Non aliter scilicet, quam inter se conveniunt canis signum celeste et canis animal latrans."\* Such a being it is obviously impossible to love. Not so, however, Comte's "*Être Suprême*." The love of God, according to Comte's theology, is in fact one and the same thing as the love of mankind. And to this we are by him called with an urgency which nothing can surpass, if we are to have worship at all; for by his own showing the very existence of the Supreme Being himself depends on our love to him. "*Car le caractère propre de ce nouveau Grand-Être consistant à être nécessairement composé d'éléments séparable, toute son existence repose sur l'amour mutuel qui lie toujours ses diverses parties*."†

The "*occidental regenerator*" meets the Buddhism of the East also by providing an ample calendar of such Buddhus as actual history can supply—a motley assemblage—among whom, according to his own showing, his own name ought to stand most conspicuous. His egotism, in fact, from first to last, is enormous. His discontent kept him always unhappy; and his querulousness never missed an opportunity of expressing itself. Would that, for his own happiness, he had taken a leaf out of the book of the Oriental Buddhu! That sage, when he attained to the perfection of knowledge, and had clear insight into everything (as seemed to him), after a fortnight's delighted contemplation, both of himself and of all his surroundings, seated at the foot of a Much-

\* *Ethices*, Part I. Prop. xvii. Schol.

† *Système de Politique Positive ou Traité de Sociologie Instituant la religion de l'Humanité*, par Auguste Comte, Tom. Premier, p. 329.

alindo tree, thus expressed himself :—" Pleasant is retirement to him who is contented, gratified with the doctrines he has heard, gentle and kindly disposed towards all beings, who is free from sensual enjoyments, who is beyond the influence of worldly desire ; and supremely happy is that state in which the pride of the ' I am ' is subdued."\* But this beautiful creation of the human imagination, this perfected saint, this object of the adoration of three or four hundred millions of living men, at last died, and what became of him, and where is he now ? To this the proper answer is, " He is in Nirwana." But where or what is Nirwana ? To this the only discoverable equivalent in occidental thought is, that he has altogether ceased to exist as an individualised being. He lives only in the memory of his worshippers, and if it be not his images in their temples, it is his memory only that they adore !

Had Spinoza, when he conceived the composition of "The Ethics," been previously acquainted with the Buddhism of the East, he would have seen that the problem of which he contemplated the solution had been already solved. According to Spinoza, virtue does not consist in the culture and development of the good affections, together with the suppression and extermination of the bad, and in bringing into play the former only. According to him, a liability to affections of any kind is an impotency, and all virtue consists in living in the light of reason. In Spinozism, just as in Buddhism, knowledge is everything ; and every affection not yet cured by knowledge, or transformed or developed into knowledge, is a weakness, and the evidence of a nature not yet perfected. Now, Spinoza places consciousness among the affections. Hence, for man, when perfected according to Spinozism also, there remains nothing but Nirwana, " in which," to use the Oriental illustration, " the previously thinking and feeling being is where the flame of the lamp is, when all the oil has been burnt up." Spinoza does indeed attempt to make out that there is immortality for the good man. But his system does not admit of such a thing. According to Spinozism, humanity is a failure, an abortion, or, at any rate, in all the higher attributes of his being, man never gets beyond the embryo state. He lives and dies the subject of many impotencies which he finds himself called upon to struggle against, and to cure or eliminate from his being ; but

\* From the *Maha Waggio*, translated by the Rev. D. J. Gogerly.



while doing his best, he vanishes, according to this philosophy, from existence for ever.

But enough of these melancholy, heart-desolating, life-destroying speculations. In our country at the present time, as has been already stated, the popular scientific rule is to make no religious references whatever. We are told to rest in the physical forces as the last word, and the only safe haven of thought. But why this should be insisted upon, or even admitted for a moment, Reason finds it difficult to understand. Granting to the physical forces, both when incident from without and when acting from within, all the architectonic power which is ascribed to them, whether with regard to stellar or solar systems, worlds, crystals, plants, or animals, why should not these forces themselves be investigated with a view to discover, if possible, a theory of them also? Reason, on comparing their absolutely blind and merely dynamical character with the exquisitely-reasoned objects to which they give rise, immediately conceives that surely these mechanically-acting forces are the products or the manifestations of a higher force—a force which is not blind and merely dynamical in its nature, as they themselves obviously are—a force which can compass not merely concurrent and antagonistic motions in space, but which has been able so to adjust these concurrences and antagonisms as to construct agencies which shall realise designs—a force, therefore, which is thoughtful and percipient; in one word, intelligent;—a force, in fine, which is not a mere mathematical dynamism in space and time, but a true Power existing in its type and fulness, in one word—God. Earnest minds in all ages and countries, in contemplating surrounding nature, have arrived at this inference. If there be anything that is legitimate for reason, it is to make such an inference; for, while reason is led to this inference from without by the voice of nature, this inference is at the same time but the articulate expression of a constitutional intuition which in all men worships the Unseen, and aspires to God.

But, in contradiction of this, it is usual to say in the present day, that such an inference belongs to religion, and that, therefore, science has nothing to do with it. Now, surely such a dictum is arbitrary in the highest degree. The logical continuity of thought, science at its very fountain-head claims the possibility of an inference of design in nature as rightfully belonging to one and the same train of thought as that which gives the phenomena

of nature themselves. Such an inference (if there is ground for it) is an integrant element in the interpretation of phenomena. It is, in fact, that towards which every interpretation which aims at completeness spontaneously tends, and in which all interpretations which are adequate culminate. And in works which treat of the phenomena of nature, to forbid or to set aside such an inference, or to put it down under the ban of the term "religion"—a term which happens at the present moment to be out of favour with many—is neither logical nor fair. A systematic distinction between religious, and philosophical, and scientific ideas cannot be maintained. All the three run into each other with the most perfect legitimacy. Their dissociation can be effected only by art, their divorce only by violence. The "Gloria Deo" with which the elder physicists closed their works is more logical and more philosophical by far than the "Finis" of the moderns; for adoration in the contemplation of the universe is always meet, while finality is never attainable.

It may be here mentioned, however, that a reconciliation between religion and science has lately been proposed by an author who is both extensively and profoundly versed in science, and who writes on all the subjects which he handles with great power equally of observation, abstraction, and generalisation; for such is Mr Herbert Spencer, author of a "System of Philosophy," now in the course of publication. But the terms of reconciliation which he proposes cannot be accepted. According to him, the states of mind to which science and religion respectively belong are antithetic, and so also is the subject-matter of both. Science, according to Spencer, rightfully claims as its own all orderly knowledge; while religion, according to the same authority, is and ought to rest in a dogmatic nescience—merely in the affirmation of a power in the universe, underlying phenomena and evolving them indeed, but respecting which we ought neither to affirm nor to deny personality, and to which we ought to refrain from ascribing any attributes whatever—a power, in a word, which is utterly "unknowable."

Such is Mr Spencer's philosophy. He says, that "it gives the religious sentiment the widest possible sphere of action." In his own mind, therefore, it has the same claims as the system of Spinoza had in his mind; while yet, in so far as the use of the term God is concerned, it may be regarded as the counterpart of Spinozism. It is therefore to this extent a great improvement.

Mr Spencer's language is never beguiling, as Spinoza's often is. But except in the omission of sacred names, and the method of reading all things backwards, that is, from the senses to reason, Mr Spencer's philosophy, though of course more precise, is one and the same with that of Spinoza. It may be said to be Spinozism constructed according to the sensational method, and co-ordinated with a more advanced state of physics.

True liberty, the love of God, immortality, all the most animating beliefs and ennobling aspirations of humanity, are excluded from Spencer's view of things no less than from that of Spinoza. And this is the more remarkable, because he even opens his work—and it is a great work—in language such that in reading it, one seems to be listening to Cousin. The first sentence stands in these words, "We too often forget that not only is there 'a soul of goodness in things evil,' but very generally also a soul of truth in things erroneous." And in the first paragraph he says, "We must admit that the convictions entertained by many minds in common are most likely to have some foundation." Then, after having shown in an elaborate manner that the explanation of the phenomena of nature by all mankind consists at first in affirming as their cause the existence of a Principle of volition somewhere, he proceeds to affirm that the progress of light and civilisation, of science and religion, consists in ridding belief of such a Principle altogether. After admitting that "the presumption that any current opinion is not wholly false gains in strength according to the number of its adherents," and "that life is impossible unless through a certain agreement between internal convictions and external circumstances," he proceeds to set aside the testimony of entire humanity as to a certain agreement of that kind. He sets down the world-wide doctrine of a Will, which, when not prompted from without, is free, whether in the individual breast or in the Power which is manifested in the universe, as a mistake which, though secularly committed, is yet antithetic to all science. He considers such a Principle as excluded by the growing certainty of an absolute uniformity of all phenomena, physical, intellectual and moral, when the conditions of existence are the same. Now, granting all that the author affirms as to uniformity, is such a conclusion as this necessary or even legitimate? There might obviously have been another solution of the fact, if the author had had a mind to look in another direction. For, not less than a mere mechanical dynamism, a Will



that is almighty and perfectly free if co-ordinated with an intelligence that is omniscient, must provide to every extent for uniformities among phenomena when the conditions of existence are the same. A considerate Theism, instead of being in any degree incompatible with such uniformities or laws of phenomena as observation may give, whatever their extent, instead of leaving them merely as the unintelligible outcome of "the unknowable," which is Mr Spencer's position, provides for them, and explains them, and that not by any singular and soul-mutilating hypothesis like his, but in harmony with the catholic conviction, and the reason of mankind.

Into this position in which he presents himself to his readers this author is driven by that which is practically and habitually at least, if not also formally, his method, namely, a pure Sensationalism. Conceptions in his regard are true only in so far as they are mental imagery of individual objects given by the senses. And all that we can do with them is to abstract and generalise them. Hence all scientific thinking is vidification; and if the highest generalisations do not give "*vox et præterea nihil*," it is merely because the author here goes a step beyond the method which he usually follows, and along with phenomena admits the existence of a substratum—his "unknowable," namely. He considers himself safe in admitting this much of the philosophy of common sense, though this only. But Comte is more true to the sensational method when he admits only phenomena and their laws; and Pyrrho is more consistent than either when he admits phenomena only, and with regard to all other things suspends his judgment; for who that goes so far as to make a question of all, or almost all, the data of common sense, can legitimately refrain from making it a question, whether the laws of phenomena which men of science discover may not be laws of thinking merely imposed upon nature as her laws? Nay, who can refrain from admitting with Kant that they can be nothing more?

If we look to the external senses alone as the only informers of the mind as to the extent and order of the universe, we unavoidably exclude ourselves from all that is best entitled to the name of philosophy. We possess these senses in common with the lower animals. Their functions in us are the same as they are in them. And if we look to these senses alone for scientific knowledge, it is not to be expected that we shall rise above a knowledge of our material surroundings. The true function

of the external senses is manifestly something very different from that of "carrying the torch of discovery around the universe." The focal distance of the eye is co-ordinate with the range of our prehensile organs, and the structure of the ear is suited to report the existence in our neighbourhood of a centre of disturbance during darkness when the eye cannot act. And still more the senses of taste, and smell, and touch, and the muscular sense which imparts fitness equally for fighting or for flying, in a word, the whole system of the senses, indicates clearly that their normal function is to direct and assist in providing food for the body and in giving warnings of bodily danger. For the senses to determine the nature of Being, and the extent of the universe of Being, is quite out of their way. And as to philosophies which look to the external senses for the whole of their contents, it is only to be expected that they shall be no philosophies at all, and, in a word, that they shall always fail to reach, as they have ever been found to do, the knowledge of God, the soul, liberty, morality, immortality, those very facts and principles which in all ages have been held to be the proper themes of philosophy.

It is not, however, from much that the senses have to show, either for or against the Power that underlies all phenomena, that Mr Spencer holds that power to be utterly unknowable. It is rather from the antilogies or contradictions in which thought is inevitably involved when we attempt to inform ourselves about that Power; and probably, also from the consideration of certain features in nature, especially in the animal kingdom, which appear to him to be irreconcilable with a Theodicy. Now, this latter difficulty on his part, and on the part of many naturalists, calls for a sympathy and consideration which it has not yet received from the scientific theologian; and as to those antilogies in which thought is ever apt to involve itself on every transcendent theme, they are indeed intellectual phenomena of the greatest scientific interest. But they do not warrant the destructive criticism to which Mr Spencer applies them. No; undoubtedly, in the meantime, and until the phenomenon be understood, those are in the right (Kant, Hamilton, Mansel) who, in reference to such all-important matters of belief, take refuge from these apparent contradictions of thought in the stronghold of our moral nature. Already, it may be discovered that such antilogies are not co-ordinate demonstrations of equal value and authority, the one affirmative and the other negative of the same proposition.

They are not simultaneous but alternate, and they are not accomplished by one and the same intellectual power, but one by the mind when acting in its synthetic, and the other by it when acting in its analytic phase. They are, in fact, the expression and the products of a rhythm, which consists in alternate phases, the one spontaneous and intuitional, the other selective and intentional—the one purely cosmical and necessary, the other personal and optional. Now, it is when under the dominion of this rhythm we equate our merely logical powers with the discovery of the universe in all its heights and depths, that we are apt to make such sad havoc of reality, and to leave ourselves but little to believe in, which is much worth caring for.

What is wanted in order to the discovery of the truth as it represents reality in the harmonious relation of all its sides, is emancipation from this desultory way of viewing things, a state of intellectual vision in the repose of the personal activity, wherein the mind mirrors on its own bosom both its own more immediate surroundings and all that is beyond, both the finite and the infinite, no longer in alternate conflicting flashes merely, but harmoniously, simultaneously, steadily, clearly, and distinctly. That such a state of intellectual vision is possible even in this life, many have maintained; and that it is in reserve for the human mind hereafter, there are mental phenomena occasionally occurring in the present state of our being which go far to prove.

Is it said, that in consequence of the antinomies which exist meantime, one does not know what to believe; and that as each contradicts the other with seemingly equal authority and right, the only legitimate conclusion is to discard both, and wholly to suspend our judgment? The answer is, that if one of the sides of the antinomy affirm and the other deny the same proposition, then one or other of them must be in the right; for everything must either be or not be, and it is open to inquire, on some other ground, which of the two is that which is belief-worthy. Now, this point may be often settled by the scientific development of the propositions in suspense, that is, by placing them in all their ascertainable relations, and observing which of the two dovetails into these relations as part of that unity, which all things doubtless are in their ground, and which of the two contradicts these relations.

But this is to view an affirmation in all its consequences. And



this in our day is very generally denounced. We are told that Truth must be sought and asserted without regard to consequences; that in Truth there never can be any danger; and so on. And all this would be very sound if the truth in question were no longer in question, but fully ascertained fact—if, in short, the inquiry were satisfactorily completed, and the affirmation reached were the last word of an irreproachable demonstration directly effected. But this is not always possible even in mathematics. Even in that typically demonstrative science the *reductio ad absurdum* is often unavoidable. And if, in reference to the comparatively simple relations of space, such a method of proof be necessary, how much more may we not expect it to be necessary in reference to such complicated relations as are implied in the idea of humanity, its mission, its well-being, and its destinies? In this walk almost nothing can be demonstrated but by cumulative evidence—evidence surrounding the proposition in hand in every direction. And if in connection with that proposition consequences present themselves, which at once manifestly flow from it, and which are at the same time contrary to what is known to be true, or which are destructive of what is known to be right, then there is adequate evidence that what we have been supposing to be true is not true in reality; for nothing is more certain, and it is universally admitted, that truth, when justly entitled to the name of scientific, is harmonious, not merely with existence, but with the well-being of existence—that is, not merely with reality, but with moral order—not merely with that which is, but also with that which ought to be.

It may perhaps be said that the system of thought which is opposed in these pages, inasmuch as it denies all true liberty, all free choice to man, leaves no room for this distinction, no legitimate place for the term “ought.” Nevertheless, under that system this distinction remains. In the merely mechanical sphere, monstrosities and abortions and wrong places are possible, as well as typical forms and normal developments and relations. And it will not be denied that Truth, though it may be descriptive of the monstrous or disorderly in the instance in hand, yet in the very degree that it becomes entitled to the name of Scientific, becomes harmonious with the typical and the normal, and, in a word, descriptive of that which ought to be.

## CHAPTER II.

THE SO-CALLED SCIENTIFIC METHOD, OR METHOD OF MERELY OUTSIDE OBSERVATION, THOUGH VERY CONVENIENT AND FLATTERING TO SENSE, IS WHOLLY INADEQUATE FOR THE DISCOVERY OF THE MOST IMPORTANT REALITIES.

WE are all born and exist for some time in a state of profound ignorance as to everything. But a certain mental capacity soon begins to manifest itself in each of us. In some point or other we all proceed to chip the shell of ignorance—we all try, more or less, to acquire knowledge, that is, to give contents to our curiosity which shall present to our own satisfaction the realities which we ourselves are, as also those by which we are surrounded.

Mental representations of these realities, provided they be soul-satisfying, we name truth; and it is admitted that there is no pursuit which is more worthy than that of truth, and nothing that is more important than a right method of pursuing it.

And what, let us ask, is that right method? At first sight this question seems easily answered. There seems to be no difficulty about the matter. It naturally occurs to every one that we ought to begin with that which is at once most palpable and most certain, and to build upon that.

But no one can pursue this method long, before he is met by a difficulty which threatens to throw it out of gear, and which ultimately does so completely. In a word, the palpable and the certain cannot be found meeting in any one and the same object! That which is most palpable is by no means that which is most certain; and that which is most certain is, of all things, the most impalpable. Matter alone is palpable; but a little reflection soon compels the admission that matter is not so certain as at first sight it seemed to be—not so certain, in fact, as mind. Thus matter, in so far at least as philosophy has to do with it, can only be thought.

Sensation, in which it is maintained that all thought begins, whether of sight or sound or any other kind, is only a form of thought; and thought is a function of mind. It is mind, therefore, not matter, which possesses the highest certainty: and it thus becomes a question whether that outward thing which at first captivates our senses, which we call matter, and which we affirm as something quite different from mind, may not be some statical and opaque condition standing opposite to us of that same thing, which, when referred to Self and in possession of all its possible limpidity and quickness, is mind.

But of the two, matter alone, as has been said, possesses the charm of palpability, that is, the power of presenting itself to us without disagreeably interfering with us; and this is, of all kinds of evidence, the most pleasing, being at once respectful and persuasive. And hence it has come to pass that, though it is only as an object of mind that matter can be an object to us at all, still matter holds its place in the popular regard as the great thing; and, under influences which can be fully explained, there are many who hold that matter is everything. This our own day is remarkable for the number of those who hold this view, who look upon matter as the Alpha and the Omega of existence. But there are others who advocate with no less zeal the claims of mind. And thus that method for the pursuit of knowledge which seemed at first to be altogether free from objection, namely, to begin with that which is at once most palpable and most certain, completely breaks down, and issues in a distraction and a controversy as to the respective claims of matter and mind.

How then shall we adjust the difference? Shall we attempt a compromise by accepting both mind and matter as co-ordinate and aboriginal? This is what many have done, especially in ancient times. But such is the constitution of intelligence that it cannot but regard as unsatisfactory a duality at the fountain-head of Being. The condition of intellectual satisfaction and repose is the discovery and the holding of an unity there. And hence the history of philosophy has presented hitherto little else but a series of phases of alternate partisanship as to the first of things—now for the palpable, now for the certain, now for matter, now for mind. The former gives to philosophy, as the system of the universe, Materialism, in which mind is regarded as merely a function or mode of action of matter when possessing a special organisation, or at any rate it gives, as the only content of the universe, call it



matter or not, something which is the subject of mechanically-acting force merely, and to which liberty or a true choice, as also a possible existence apart from the special organisation which manifests the mental phenomena, are denied. The latter gives to philosophy some system of Idealism, in which either matter is never reached in its palpable characteristics at all, or else under the guise of an ideal world a system of things is conceived which is as fatalistic as Materialism. So far as I am aware, no philosophical system exists which, on an unity as its basis, provides at once for the free and the forced, at once for mind and matter—placing both in a popular, and at the same time, a scientific relationship to one another. The systems of Spinoza and of Hegel, grounded, the one on an universal substance, and the other on an uniform process, are certainly great intellectual achievements, and both are highly scientific in their development; but, although both repudiate the charge, yet both have the defects referred to: both are equally irresponsive as to what is implied in personality as commonly understood, whether in God or man. Neither of them is suited popularly to explain humanity or to supply its wants.

Now, all this is very unsatisfactory; and hence in all ages, more or less, and most especially in our own, an abandonment, nay, a denunciation of the method of the pursuit of truth which has been indicated. Hence a disregard, in the first instance, equally of the most palpable objects and the most certain as they present themselves to us. Hence, instead of an outwardly-directed appeal to Nature, a giving to Self the choice of what to begin with! And what has this choice been? Naturally it has been to the effect that we ought to begin with that which, however defective its claims in other respects, shall have at least this personal recommendation, that it promise to be most easily understood! Now, this implies that that to which we direct our study in the first instance shall possess the smallest number of properties; that it shall exist and act with the least variety, and be placed in the fewest relations. But this leads us to fix upon mere vacuity and mere duration as the first objects of our regard. It therefore gives as the first mental occupation, the play of our intelligence, now in a synthetic, now in an analytic phase, upon space and time as the ground,—that is, it gives arithmetic, geometry, and cinematics. After these comes that, which, being viewed as finite, may be elaborated by thought as existing in definite quantitative relation with

space and time, viz., matter in general. Then among material objects come those which *seem* to be the most simple, as, for instance, the heavenly bodies on the one hand, which are so far away as to be barely visible, and the molecules of bodies on the other hand, which are so near as not to be visible at all. Then after these come objects which fall within the cognizance of other senses as well as the sense of sight,—minerals, plants, and animals, including man and his ways, who comes last of all. Such is the so-called “positive method” which has been so boldly and consistently developed by A. Comte, and has been maintained by him as giving “the hierarchy of the sciences.”

But this method had come into favour before Comte’s day, and it is very generally followed now by those who care little for his views. Thus, modern systems of chemistry generally begin with those elements of bodies which they deem to be most simple; systems of crystallography with those forms which are most regular; systems of botany and zoology with those plants and animals which have or seem to have fewest organs and endowments; and these systems come to a close with the discussion of those objects which are the most highly organised and perfect in the kingdom they belong to. It may be said that this method has prevailed during almost the whole of this century. And at the present day it is never doubted but that it is most philosophical. And to this method the great progress and the highly advanced state of science—of which one hears so much—are said to be in a great measure owing.

Now, however the fact may be as to the advanced state of science in our day, whether this be a reality, or only the expression of that popular egotism in which no age is defective, it is surely desirable that we should keep in mind what the circumstances are which led to the adoption of this method, what the ground on which it stands, and what its sanction. For, as to its ground (however we may boast), it manifestly stands on no basis more respectable than our intellectual impotence; and, as to sanction, it has none higher than necessity. Instead of a sound method which shall be natural and objective, and which shall lay hold of Nature as she presents herself, and which may haply join her in her dance, it is the substitution of a method which is wholly subjective and a thing of human convenience merely. It is an attempt to acquire a knowledge of Nature, by laying hold of her train merely, with chalk in hand, to scribble our own notions on

her skirts, while we, on our part, are creeping up as high as we may before she shake us off. On the ground of comparative facility, this method may have much to commend it. It may be maintained, perhaps, that considering our intellectual means, or rather our want of them, it is a necessity, at least for the general run of inquirers. But, at any rate, it ought to be remembered respecting it, that it is not at all the reflection of Nature, rather that it is a creation of despair, the despair of man, who, before he will believe, protests that he must see with his own eyes, and who, before he will admit that his position is high, must show that he has climbed up to where he is. Hence in this short life of ours, in those who adopt this method, there is a sufficient reason why they do not and cannot reach the highest truths. In beginning their studies on the level of their own impotency, they place these truths in such remoteness from where they begin, that life is over before they reach them.

This method, however popular, is the very reverse of that which ought to be, and which alone would be, if our intellectual power were equal to what we undertake. If the mind of man in its present embodied state possessed a cosmical intuition, or even such an intuition of our more immediate surroundings as some of the inferior animals appear to possess—if our own organisation, for instance, were visible to us when viewed from within, and we could see its whole structure and functions as clearly and distinctly as we can see, or suppose that we see, the structure and functions of an amoeba or a polype, would any one in that case propose to head the zoological system with such creatures as I have just named? No; in that case reason could not be kept from insisting upon knowing and understanding at once the typical animal, that species in which organisation and function attain the highest perfection. And, doubtless, all the other members of the zoological field would be distributed in relation to the typical species, and be viewed as so many aimings at or falling away from the type.

It may, perhaps, be thought that, provided we complete the course of study which we have begun, and reach man, though it be at last, it matters little which end we begin at, whether with the *Homo sapiens* of the "Systema Naturæ" of Linné and the old school, or with the *Animaux apathiques* of Lamarck, or the *Protozoa* of the more modern school. But this were to mistake. This were to suppose that we are creatures of entirely free and pure intelligence, whereas, on the contrary, we are in the main creatures of memory and habit, building up every successive



acquisition of knowledge on what we possessed before as its foundation. This were to ignore the law of redintegration, in virtue of which every new step in knowledge tends to suggest and to reproduce our knowledge already acquired, and to lead us to rest in the objects first studied.

Nor is it in natural history, as commonly understood merely, that reason would lead us to adopt a method directly the reverse of that which is popular, if we possessed the intellectual means. If we possessed as clear and distinct a perception of mind, its powers and laws, as we possess, or think we possess, of matter and its laws, we should certainly begin with the study of mind in preference to the study of matter. To this we should be led not only by its magical endowments, and its being our very selves, or at least the field in which we are always digging, and which we are always bent on cultivating, but because it is only through mind, nay, only in terms of mind, that we can know anything about matter, or indeed anything at all. If a thorough and scientific knowledge of mind were easily attainable, there can be no doubt that just as if we had a clear insight into the structure and functioning of the human organism, we should hold Man to be the type in the zoological kingdom, and should view all other organisms in relation to the human frame, so, could we but have a clear and distinct knowledge of mental being and its attributes as a first attainment in philosophy, we should hold Mind to be the type of being, and refer all other sorts of beings which are less highly endowed to mental being, regarding them all as fallings away, or residuary forms or states of that which, in its type, constitutes mind or spirit.

But every such notion as this is quite foreign to the mode of thought which is fashionable in science in our day. That mode is to look only at things which are outside of ourselves—things of which, consequently, we can see but little, and which therefore seem to us very simple and easily understood; and hence a tone and general character of modern scientific thought which is much to be deplored. Hence mere matter has come to be the favourite in popular regard, and is permitted to claim the homage of all primary study; and mind, when at last it obtrudes itself in connection with certain organisms, is looked upon merely as some kind of accessory to these organisms, some kind of efflorescence of matter when it happens to be built up into certain molecular structures, as nothing more, in fact, but a mere phe-

nomenon, a mere function, accomplishing itself under the same laws of necessity as determine all material movements, and vanishing altogether when the organism which manifests it ceases to act. In a word, a homage to our intellectual weakness, the consecration of our inability to comprehend at first anything but what *seems* to be quite simple, and the holding up to Nature our own ignorance as the mirror in which the universe is to reflect itself, is betraying us through a forgetfulness of the grounds of our method into a denial of God, the soul, liberty, immortality—all, in fine, that gives value and dignity to humanity.

Or, if haply we still continue to view nature as a creation, it is leading us in our thoughtlessness to ascribe to the procedure of the great Creator the same intellectual weakness which actuates ourselves. Thus, as the system of scientific knowledge, according to the most modern conception of it, is a gradual development of science out of nescience, beginning with the most empty and simple objects, and gradually rising to those which are more richly endowed (the whole scheme being the dictate of our intellectual weakness and want of comprehension at first), so the whole procedure of Nature itself begins now to be scientifically regarded as a development also from the low to the high, from the simple to the complex. Those animals, for instance, our ocular analysis of which either is, or is supposed to be, most easy, and with which, therefore, the study of Zoology is begun, are named Protozoa—a term which, taken by itself, means something more, or rather something else, than that they are the first objects of study. And the theory of all plants, all animals, which is at the present moment most popular, is, that they have all been similarly developed from one or a few germs, which were more simple than any plants or animals now existing, and which came into being at an epoch previous to which neither plants nor animals existed at all. Such is the theory of development. But it will abundantly appear as we proceed that the Analytical and the Synthetical in nature are everywhere co-ordinate, and that there is every reason to believe that they were from the first coeval. The theory of development, therefore, considered as an objective theory or history of nature, if it be true at all, is at any rate no more than half the truth.

But any merely cosmological speculation, however inadequate, can only be a small evil compared with a denial of the liberty, the responsibility, and the morality of man. Yet to this result

a commencement of scientific study with matter and force as the primary data, if that study is made consistent with itself all through, cannot but lead. Such a method tends to rob us, or rather, indeed, to steal away from us before we are aware the best part of our inheritance as men.

Let us, then, at whatever inconvenience, reverse this method. Instead of looking around us, like Buffon, or beneath us, like more modern naturalists, to pick up worms in the first instance, let us rather, like Sokrates, look to ourselves, and see whether, from what we know and feel that we are, something may not be learned of mental Being, and, possibly, through mental Being of Being in general.

That mental rather than material Being must be regarded as the type of Being, must be admitted by every one who admits that there is such a thing as mental Being at all. For not only is mind, as has been already stated, more highly endowed than matter, but it rules throughout the universe, and regulates everything. Or, if this be disputed, it must at any rate be admitted that it rules in philosophy, and regulates everything there. It may indeed be said, and it is too often said, that there is no such thing as mental Being; but with equal cogency, to say the least, it has also been often said, and may be said again, that there is no such thing as material Being. Let these two conflicting views, then, in the meantime be set off against each other.

But have we the means, it will here be asked, of learning anything about mental Being with which we thus desire to become acquainted in the first instance? Now to this we answer Yes; better means of becoming acquainted with it than we possess in reference to material Being, though haply the use of these means implies more application, more patience, and more perseverance. Thus, in reference to matter, if we can see it at all, we can see it only on the outside; for matter, when seen, is always on the outside of us. It may, for aught that we know, have an eye within itself to see its own interior, but at any rate it has no tongue to tell us what is there. In a word, we are completely excluded from all direct knowledge of the interior of matter. But with regard to mental Being, on the contrary, we are sure that in certain cases, at least, it has an eye within itself. In the case of ourselves it has such an eye. And with that eye we stand in such immediate communication that we not only hold it as our own, but as our very selves. Its informations do not come to us at second hand



at all; its sights are intuitions. We say each for himself and with his entire consciousness of truth,—I feel, I see, I think, I will.

So far, then, all is satisfactory. There is no doubt that this "I," this *Ego* has the power, at least when placed as a member in the system of the universe, to supply itself with contents. There is no doubt that when these contents possess certain characteristics, the *Ego* holds and receives them as truth, and affirms them to others as truth. And with regard to the most important and the most constantly recurring of these contents, there is no doubt that men in general are agreed about them that they are truth. They constitute the common sense of mankind.

But yet, let it not be concealed that to the speculative mind a difficulty presents itself even with regard to these truths. Thus, whilst the *Ego* affirms the ambient universe, or any of its features, it also asserts its own liberty, its own right to be free, that is, to be as if it were itself the universe. Hence the serious question, Can this *Ego* be expected to present to itself truthfully and to conceive aright the external universe to which it thus appears to object? There is obviously room for a question here. In devoting ourselves to the acquisition of a knowledge of mental Being, therefore, our first step must be to acquire, if possible, a knowledge of this *Ego*, this eye within, which thus in successive moments seems to see and not to see, to affirm and to deny. In a word, we must endeavour, in the first instance, to ascertain the structure or normal mode of functioning of perceptivity as it exists in us; in other words, of consciousness. We have seen that it tends both to affirm and to deny, and curious it is to observe the way in which popular science does homage to this peculiarity. It gives the most hasty solution possible. Within a certain sphere, that of physical science namely, it unconditionally accepts an universal affirmative; beyond that sphere it affirms an universal negative! But this solution, as might be expected, does not stand long. After having told us that matter and force, definite and unchangeable in amount from all eternity, is the whole of existence, and that it is by the use of the senses only, aided by abstraction, that anything can be known, it tells us in the next breath that all perception and the external world, as the external senses and consciousness give it, is mere illusion!

One must search far back into the history of philosophy if he is to find a state of anarchy in science as great as that which exists at the present day.

## CHAPTER III.

### CONSCIOUSNESS : ITS RELATION TO PURE INTELLIGENCE OR UNDISTURBED INTUITION.

It is often maintained that consciousness, taken as it naturally expresses itself, is an infallible criterion of truth. Such maxims as "*falsus in uno, falsus in omnibus*," have been applied to consciousness; and in a word, it is often maintained that if the affirmations of consciousness are to be subjected to criticism, our case is hopeless, for we have no other criterion to go by that is not more open to suspicion.

Now, doubtless the legitimate authority of consciousness is very great; but, at the same time, it is certain that it bases all its deliverances upon the "I," the "me," the "*ego*," and is, indeed, precisely the *ego* expressing itself in thought. Plainly, therefore, it would not be safe to assume, previously to inquiry, that the affirmations of consciousness are always, and objectively as well as subjectively, infallible; for, undoubtedly, the *ego* itself is not universally trustworthy in an intellectual point of view. On the contrary, as has been already hinted, the *Ego* tends inordinately to assert itself. It is also averse to law. We ought not, therefore, to take for granted that it will represent other things, all of which are expressions of law, as they really are. We ought not, somnolently, to accept consciousness as universally trustworthy, and to hold it to be an organon of ultimate truth in every field in which we may bring it into play, though possibly it may pretend to give us information as to what is there. Consciousness, as it exists in us, may possibly be a provisional form of intelligence merely, beautifully adapted, perhaps, to the uses of this life, and most excellent and trustworthy when so applied; and yet, possibly, it may not be excellent and trustworthy universally,—as, for instance,

when applied to matters of mere speculation, which lie wholly out of the way of our calling in this world, and on which consciousness was never designed to instruct us.

Something of this kind there seems, at all events, good reason to suspect; for in all that relates to common life consciousness is above reproach. But it is no less certain that when we apply it to some transcendental themes, it throws the process of thinking into perplexity. Contradictions refusing to be reconciled inevitably emerge; and consciousness is obliged to record against itself as an organon of truth the sad sentence of *felo de se*.

Such are those contradictory solutions of all the great problems in philosophy which Kant has signalised under the name of the paralogisms and antinomies of pure reason. To us they are only the antilogies of consciousness. But they are at present exerting such a powerful influence in prescribing limits to belief, and, indeed, in denouncing the pursuit of all that has hitherto been held to constitute philosophy, that if we could arrive at a right understanding of them it would be well worth the pains; especially if it should come out that silence may be happily made with regard to them, and important truth be cleared of the embarrassments into which they throw it. Now, by our becoming acquainted with what we are disposed to call the structure of consciousness, we think that this may be accomplished. Let us then bestow here a few words on the structure of consciousness.

For this, however, we are not prepared, if we proceed to the enquiry under misconceptions of the nature of Reality, whether material or mental, or both. Now, that we shall do this is probable; for it is not blank ignorance,—it is misconceptions, now, in every field, that prevent knowledge. A discovery, now, is usually no more than a correction. These remarks apply to consciousness. We cannot think of it otherwise than as a special function of some kind of Reality, either material or mental; and it is manifestly desirable that we should not think of it under misconceptions as to what matter or what mind is. Yet, if we be not on our guard, it is most likely that we shall do both. As to matter, for instance—the least atom or element of matter, are we not given to thinking of it as if it were something very small and very solid, like a millet seed or a very small shot, consisting of a continuous impenetrable substance, bounded by mere nothing or mere space, with attractions and repulsions on the outside? And as to mind or spirit, do we



not usually rest satisfied with simply holding it to be something quite different from matter? In a word, in order to attain a conception of mind or spirit, do we not take our departure from a certain conception of matter? If then that conception is a complete misconception; and if we reach a conception of mind at all, what can it be but a double-deep misconception?

Such a conception of the material element as has just been stated stands in need of being radically reformed, or rather, indeed, of being discharged altogether. The conception of a small ball of continuous or solid matter which suddenly stops at the periphery, where there is nothing beyond, is a state of things which violates the law of continuity to the utmost, and which is of no use whatever for explaining the phenomena of physics and chemistry. It also gives rise to the notion of an *actio in distans*, a misconception which is beset with all kinds of difficulties, yet which, if it is admitted at all, must be admitted to be a fact in physics. It only gratifies the demand of the imagination for a definite form for everything. But in order to find a basis for natural philosophy which can prove in any degree satisfactory to reason, we must disregard this demand. Instead of thinking of an atom or element of matter as a small shot, we must think of it as a centre of force, with isodynamic boundaries indeed, which are definite forms, but with a field of action so extensive that no limits can be assigned to it. Its isodynamic boundaries may give it, with respect to light, a visible form, with regard to contact with other matter like itself, an impenetrable or palpable form, and so on—thus giving imagery so far, and satisfying the imagination so far; but as to the entire sphere of its possible being and acting, it would not be safe to affirm that it is less extensive than the universe itself. With regard to gravitation, for instance, who will venture to affirm otherwise? Now, gravitation is one of the eminent endowments of the material element.

By such a conception of matter as I have here proposed, following Boscovich and others, the way is also paved for a conception of mind or spirit also. For spirit is obviously a centre of *force*, or rather, let us say, a centre of *power*, inasmuch as, in the spiritual Being, it is no longer the *vis inertiae* merely that we have to do with, that is, the ability to rest as it is resting, or to drive as it is driven. Spirit is characterised by the *vis voluntatis*, self-directive power seeing its own way.

But let us not forget that in the present day the existence of

mind or spirit as a reality, which may possibly exist in a state of separation from matter, is very often boldly denied. The favourite view of the present day is, that mental phenomena are related to bodily structures as functions merely are to their organs. It is said that the brain secretes thought just as the liver secretes bile. But it is right to remark, that between these two views, though Materialism invokes the aid of both, there is a notable difference. No doubt the liver functions, and the result of that functioning, when normal, is bile. But the functioning is one thing, and the bile is another; and bile, though a product of the functioning of the liver, is no less substantial than the liver itself; and if the mind be related to the brain as bile is to the liver, then in the brain there must be produced a thinking substance. Now, of this substance, whatever its nature besides, it may be confidently affirmed, that in order that it may be capable of thinking, it must not remain in the molecular state, or its particles in juxtaposition merely, like those of the brain itself. It must be completely unified. It must be a true unity. There is nothing, so far as we can see, that is more indispensable to all the phenomena of thought than the unity of the thinking substance or principle. This materialistic illustration, then, which appeals to the liver to explain the phenomena of the brain, when followed out with accuracy, leads to a view which is not materially different from the world-old doctrine of an undecomposable or indestructible, and therefore immortal soul in man. That it should place the brain in the position of the mother and nurse of the soul, instead of assigning some higher origin to our immortal part, if an evil at all, is fully compensated by this scientific advantage, that it explains how the mind should always be co-ordinate in endowment and energy with the brain to which it owes its being, and how in its actual functioning at any time it should always correspond with the state of the currents of nervous energy which actuate the brain at that time.

The determined materialist therefore, when considerate, does not go so far as to say that mental phenomena are secretions of the brain. He says only that they are functions, thus leaving the materialistic hypothesis in a less definite, and, therefore, a less palpably erroneous form. But it is one of the first principles of natural philosophy, that the mere functioning or acting of that which is itself a purely mechanical apparatus can only issue in a merely mechanical resultant. This, the general theorem of the composition of forces, which is the very basis of mechanical science,

secures. For all the motions and pressures applied or combined in any mechanical system the science of mechanics either accounts, or holds itself accountable, and that as motions and pressures, and not other things. The resultant may, indeed, display great variety in the forms of the motions and pressures of which it consists—a variety not to be found in the component forces. The Rectilinear (gravitation, impact) may give in its resultant the Reciprocating (heat), or a mode of motion in which both the rectilinear and the reciprocating are combined (electricity), and *vice versâ*. But any one of these modes of force is just as truly mechanical as any other, and as far distant from thought and feeling. And all of them are utterly incompatible with that liberty or self-directive power of which every one is intimately conscious as an attribute of the Principle which thinks and acts within himself.

In order to impart a scientific character to the materialistic hypothesis as to the relation between mind and matter, it is necessary to assume that every element of matter, or at least the organic elements, carry always along with them an aura of the spiritual. Nor that only. It is necessary to assume, further, that in the focus of the mind-producing organic action of the brain, these auræ become confluent into a true unity of some kind; for of that (whatever it may be) which is the basis of mental phenomena, unity, as has been already stated, cannot but be a most indefeasible characteristic. But here again, by this other change, on the materialistic hypothesis, we are thrown back on the old doctrine of a soul in the body. And, indeed, it is well that on this, or on some similar belief, we should be always thrown back; for without some such ground to go upon, philosophy is not worth the pursuit, or rather the conception of a philosophy is a mistake. Without some such ground philosophy is a thing that one ought not to waste time upon. In that case, let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we cease to exist.

But what of consciousness, its genesis, structure, and conditions of existence? That is the theme that we proposed for inquiry here.

Now, here, in answer, we may immediately say that consciousness is obviously the reflex or foil or doubling of simple perception. It therefore belongs to the sphere of Perception.

But what shall we say of perception, and of knowledge which is its orderly aggregate retained in the mind?



Shall we say that it is something so altogether singular and, *sui generis*, that it is impossible to conceive it as in the least degree resembling anything else at all—not even that which is perceived and known. Or, on the contrary, shall we say that being and knowing are in their ground one and the same thing?

These views differ from each other *toto cælo*, and yet both of them have been, and still are extensively entertained. Now, surely there is comfort in this. They are so wide asunder that the truth is sure to be found within their embrace. It must lie somewhere between them. Keeping both in mind then, let us endeavour to discover the truth.

And for this purpose, let us postulate as existing what men in general believe to exist, namely, God, the world, and the soul. Or; if this be objected to, let us postulate the existence of infinite and of finite Being merely. Or; if this be still objected to, let us postulate the existence of Being merely. Or; if even this be objected to, inasmuch as it may be said that being is but a name for power when viewed as existing statically, then let us content ourselves with postulating as the only beings and things in existence, various powers or potentialities distributed so that they may possibly exist in relation with each other, their numbers and kinds being left to be as they may happen to be, without any assumption by us on these heads. Let us only assume distributed existence, its elements such that there is a relation between them. Is it possible to assume a more modest basis for our investigation than this?

And yet, already, have we not possibly here a product of mental analysis merely, rather than a conception of that which exists? Are we safe in looking at beings or things on the one hand, and at relations on the other, as if these were really two things distinct from one another? May not the beings or things be such as to secure and provide in their very existence for their relations with each other also? Yes; such a provision seems implied in the very idea of that whose destiny from the first is to constitute a cosmos. For; an element which is to be essentially cosmical, must not only be essentially *real*—it must be essentially *relational* also. Our hypothesis, then, so far simplifies itself. We do not assume beings or things on the one hand, and relations imposed upon them on the other hand. We only assume beings or things distributed so as to leave or have a relation or relations, subsisting in and among themselves, that is, some property or

properties which are given when the Beings or things themselves are given, and which makes them to be such that they reach from one to another, placing the whole in a relation of reciprocity.

Let us, then, take a survey of the known properties of things in general, with a view to discover whether there be any property which is universal, and which is at the same time essentially relational, that is, such as serves to unite all Beings and things into a whole or system.

And here gravitation at once suggests itself; but no sooner suggested than it must obviously be given up. Gravitation holds good universally in reference to the material world alone.

But if not gravitation, may not light, then, be the cosmical bond which we are in search of? Light is an effluence, or influence, or both, so extensive that it is commonly believed that it brings the fixed stars into relationship with one another; and it is certain that it brings them into relation with our eyes at distances so great that there is no evidence of gravitation operating to the same distances, but rather the reverse. May not light, then, be the universal or cosmical principle of relationship which we are now seeking? But no; light will not answer,—at least when considered as a physical phenomenon, that is, as a mode of motion propagated in the universal ether; for that motion may cease. At any rate, there is darkness as well as light. In a word, light, taking the word in its physical meaning, is only a contingent phenomenon. If the whole universe were in a state of perfect repose there could be no light.

*Self-Manifesting Power.*—But though not as a mechanical action, may not light be a symbol of what we are seeking—the copy in space and time of something which lies deeper somewhere in the nature of things? This is worthy of inquiry; and to this inquiry the progress of our thought invites. We remark, then, that the function of light is to make manifest, or, more shortly, to manifest. Now, are we not here already within hail of what we are seeking? We are certainly in the same field as that of perception and consciousness. And may we not safely say of Beings and Things in general, that they manifest themselves not merely in virtue of that motion which the æther propagates, but in virtue of a property which attaches to their very substance as destined to constitute a cosmos? May we not say that all Being is essentially relational in this respect, at least, that it is self-manifesting to other Being—not, indeed, as out-

wardly perceptible object to all other Being—not as outwardly perceptible object to such defective recipients of self-manifesting power as we ourselves are—but self-manifesting, inwardly or outwardly, or in some way or other, and more or less, to all other Beings and things, and perfectly self-manifesting to a Being who possesses perfect perceptivity, such as God. Yes; self-manifesting power is an essential attribute of everything that exists. This is proved by the very conditions under which alone existence can be admitted by us. In forming a notion of any Reality, however much we may strip it of all its other properties, we must leave it in possession of possible perceptibility, or a self-manifesting power. The moment we deprive reality of possible perceptibility it can be held as a Reality no longer.

But here, let it also be remembered that this objectivity is such as to imply at the same time a corresponding receptivity. The one property is, indeed, the complement of the other, or rather they are as face and back of the same mode of action. Self-extensiveness, impressiveness, self-manifesting power, or perceptibility, on the one hand, and impressibility, receptivity, or perceptivity on the other, are always co-ordinate.

Moreover, this view of Being, which is thus given internally as one of the necessities of pure thought when bestowing itself on pure Being, is fully verified by external observation—not indeed as direct observation in all cases, but as legitimate reasoning from what may be observed. Observation warrants the inference that every being and thing, all reality, be what it may, is a self-manifesting or an extensively impressive potentiality. When, even with regard to ourselves, we take into account the many impediments that are in the way, the extent to which the universe manifests itself to us is altogether wonderful. Thus, though we are localised in space in a small planetary orbit, though the æther comes between us and distant objects with its alternate fits of light and darkness, and though the percipient mind in the present form of our Being is enclosed in a material framework, necessitating a peculiar apparatus (that of the senses) to prevent our being wholly blinded by the overpowering impressiveness or immediate glare of our organic environment which wholly takes possession of our perceptivity, still Nature manifests herself to us in a vastness which transcends the reach of our minds.

The self-manifesting power also, which is the counterpart of this, that, namely, of mind to matter, is very certain. From the



fact which has just been mentioned, indeed, that is, the enclosure of the mind in a frame, into which it is in a manner fused, and in which it is dynamically bound, the sphere of the mind's self-manifesting power outwardly is not so extensive. Its normal mode of manifesting itself outwardly is through the body, and by the use of the bodily organs. The embodied mind, the mind's eye within the encephalon, is like a mariner's compass in the hold of an iron ship. The action of the organism is so overpowering as to render equivocal, beyond the confines of the bodily frame, all evidence of the action of an outwardly self-manifesting power in the mind within. Testimonies have, indeed, been given in all ages and nations, and are extensively given in our day, to the effect that a mind, at least when it is energetic (and especially when possessed of a special art also), when bestowing itself in the form of some special volition or outward discharge of its own power, can manifest itself somehow directly to others so as to control these others and mould them into a perfect parallelism with itself. Many phenomena of unconscious imitation, of sympathy and of antipathy also, are difficult to explain except on the supposition of such a self-manifesting power in the mind as transcends the organisation, and is caught otherwise than by the external senses. But normally, doubtless it is in and through the organisation and its movements, as observed and interpreted by the senses, the instincts, and experience, that mind manifests itself in the present form of our being. And all the so-called biological phenomena just referred to, and especially such an interpretation of them as that now given, are disputed. Since, then, we can afford to let them pass, we need not insist upon them.

Suffice it to say, that within the limits of the organisation, the self-manifesting power of the mind to the organism is intense. Not a thought, however abstract, but it affects the brain, nay, even the blood, and that perhaps in the whole of its course down to the renal arteries. Not a thought that has bearings upon human wellbeing, whether our own or that of others, but it tends to embody itself in a special organic rhythm of emotion. Not a volition, but it tends to bring into action the muscles towards which it is directed. And thus Nature, though merely material, has come, in every region where civilised men reside, to be impressed by forms which indicate mental action, and, indeed, to be clothed in the vestments of humanity.

Similarly, looking to reality in its purely material state, where

distinct perception, by general consent, no longer exists, still, to what a wonderful extent do we not find self-manifesting power, or the extensiveness of centralised being and the corresponding reality surviving! It is generally believed in science that every atom of matter manifests itself to every other atom, all awaking in each reciprocal discovery—not, indeed, as existing and posited in space, for that would be awaking perception, but as mobile in space. Nothing less than this is implied in the reciprocal tendency which all atoms are universally believed to excite in each other to move towards each other, or, as it is commonly said, to attract each other. And if there be, as has of late been more than suspected, an universal repulsiveness between the elements of material nature co-ordinate or even more extensive than their mutual attractions, this would be a still further verification of our view. Attractions and repulsions are not, indeed, perceptions, neither are they instincts, nor are they justly designated by any name which is appropriated to mental action solely. But it is important to remark here, that such affections of matter are not wholly diverse from certain affections of mind. Thus, with regard to the familiar phenomena of love and hatred, or rather of desire and aversion in the mental sphere, if the virtue of consciousness or sensibility were to go out of them, what would remain but tendencies to move towards or away from other objects—in a word, attractions and repulsions? And as to the phenomenon of perception itself in the same circumstances, that is, in the absence of sensibility, what would remain but some reciprocally assimilative action such as we see in the phenomena of electric induction, &c.? But to adduce such analogies in this place is to anticipate.

But in this place let us claim the reader's assent to the fact, which there is abundant evidence to support, and nothing at all to contradict, that self-manifesting power of some kind, and a corresponding impressibility or receptivity, is possessed, more or less, by every kind of substance; in other words, that every reality, be what it may in particular, is at once an extensively aggressive or impressive and an impressible or receptive being or thing. Thus it is that in awarding existence to individualised objects in different regions of space, or in anticipation of such a distribution of substance, there has been provided, in the very constitution of substance, the condition that it shall constitute a Cosmos, or at least an universe—a whole, and not a multitude merely. What

the specific character of this reciprocal action between all beings and things we need not as yet inquire. For our present purpose it is sufficient to regard it merely as a self-manifesting power. And having done so, we have made our first step towards the discovery of the genesis and structure of consciousness.

And now, as a second step, let us apply this universal attribute of self-manifesting power and the corresponding receptivity to various orders of individualised beings, and mark the phenomena which must result in the different cases.

But how, it may be asked, can we, with such extreme parsimony of postulates as we are now observing, obtain different orders of beings at all? To this it is to be answered, that nothing certainly can be more parsimonious than to assume that the realities which are in the cosmos, though they are each truly individualised, differ only in this, that they consist of different quantities or intensities of substance, and are merely centres of force possessing different degrees of potentiality, some greater, some less,—that is, some more fully, some less fully endowed. Yet this suffices us.

These endowments, moreover, we can as yet view only in their relation to the cosmical self-manifesting power of objects distributed in space, and their corresponding impressibility. But this point of view is sufficient for our present purpose. It arranges at once all the beings and things in the universe into three orders:—

1. Those whose individual potentiality is so feeble that what is external to themselves impresses them thoroughly, and fixes them permanently, so that their action is cosmically stereotyped, and continues the same from age to age.

2. Those whose proper or inner potentiality is so much greater, that while they are receiving impressions from without, and yielding to these impressions, and becoming fixed by them so far, they at the same time remain centrally, so to speak, unimpressed and competent to act from within.

3. Those which as to their potentiality hold an intermediate position, and by intensely impressive objects, are liable to be thoroughly impressed and stereotyped, while, under more moderate impressions, they remain centrally more or less active and free.

Now, it will afterwards fully appear that the first of these three orders gives us the ætherial and the material elements and the molecular sphere of being. But this we may here pass by, for there is no question as to atoms with regard to consciousness.



Their modes of reciprocal manifestation produce quite other phenomena. We have here to consider the phenomena of self-manifestation only as they take place into the second and third orders; and these ought plainly to be considered together, since the third is merely the link by which the second is united to the first, and the law of continuity maintained throughout all the three.

*Self-consciousness.*—And what shall we say of that centre of force, or central force in the second and third orders, which either always or generally remains unfixed from without and in possession of its own potentiality—its own selfhood? To this the answer is the same as to the question, What do we mean by potentiality when we think of it in itself? and what is it, let us ask, but the power of producing or of resisting change—a self-caused changefulness or resistance to change? And what is this in familiar language but *life*? And when viewed, not in reference to motion merely, or change in space and time merely, but in reference to thought as well, what is it but *will*? And when we take a view, as to self-manifesting power and impressibility, of the whole of such a living and willing Being—that is, of a Being which, though truly an unity, is yet fixed and impressed externally, so to speak, by the self-manifesting power of its surroundings, while yet it continues within free and self-changeful from moment to moment, and at the same time essentially self-manifesting, of course, like all things else in both spheres of action, what are we to expect in these circumstances but that that Being shall be doubly self-manifesting! that is, self-manifesting to self; in other words, conscious of self, or self-conscious?

Such, according to our views, must be and is the condition of Being in general, and of the individual in particular, in which self-consciousness manifests itself, and by which that individual is put in possession of the pronoun of the first person. It implies quantity or intensity of reality, along with a true unity in the individual. And this it is which, according to our philosophy, constitutes a spirit or mind, that is, a Being in which, along with a certain amount of fixation of regard determined from without, there is also a certain amount of flow, or of that which is undetermined and free to determine itself by a self-determining power within. Grant this, and then, while it exists thus potentially determinable, but not yet determined, there may be, within the compass of the composite mental frame described, action and reaction, whence, in virtue of the self-manifesting power common

to all Being, there will result, within the compass of a Being which is an unity, a manifestation of Being to Being—that is, there will result a manifestation of a Being to himself—that is, self-consciousness, the “I am” or “I,” which implies “I am.”

Here we have the steed at the starting-post, uneasy during the moment of detention, but eager for the race. And unhappy the creature that will not start, but only curvets and whips himself round and round for ever in the small circle of I,—I,—I, me,—me,—me,—in mere self-consciousness.

*Attention. Genius.*—What has now been described is obviously the function of *self-consciousness* in its culmination form, in its purest state—that state in which the percipient has succeeded in blinding himself to all his surroundings, and has for the moment become the universe to himself. Now, such a state is not normal to any Being who is a member in the universe. What is normal is, that each being a member of the universe should give his mind more or less to the objects which surround him, and which are at the time presenting themselves to him—that is, that he should fix his consciousness more or less upon them. Now, when this is done, self-consciousness is modified into the well-known and all-important state of mind named *Attention*. And the well-being of a mind consists in its ability to attend to external objects as it wills, or to bestow itself otherwise as it ought. It is this which constitutes self-command—the highest of all commands.

Attention, however, in all its most fruitful forms of existence, is rather a continued acquiescence than a sustained volition. That kind of application which is not only a fountain for recollections and abstractions, but for new views in connection with its object—that kind of application, in short, which constitutes Genius, could never be acquired by any effort of will, however intense, or by any degree of forced attention, however sustained. It is rather a yielding to a charm in some object, and a spontaneous brooding upon that object, until out of the egg there comes of its own accord, a feathered fowl. It is more a phenomenon of self-forgetfulness than of self-command. Cosmically considered, it is indeed strength; but in him who has genius viewed as an individual there is always too much reason to apprehend that it will be associated with notable personal weaknesses or defects.

In purely psychical beings attention is of course constitutional. It constitutes all the provision that they have for their safety. It is then a state of *watching* ever ready to become emotional, as

*alarm*, and to issue in a rapid retreat from the alarming object ; and this retreat is often so well regulated, and yet so blindly done, as to look like a merely physical repulsion.

And, indeed, a large view of Nature leads us to infer that there is a complete series of guiding relations operating between all individualised objects in the universe. It appears to commence in universal gravitation, or rather perhaps in that still more extensive world-isolating action, or cosmical repulsion, by which the fixed stars are kept from falling in upon each other. Then receiving continual accessions of guiding power, as the beings in which it exists are more richly endowed, it gives the wonderful instincts of the lower animals ; and ultimately, in ourselves, it gives distinct perception with its normally accompanying feelings. Whether it be not too bold to say, with the admirable Leibnitz, that perceptivity and its correlative perceptibility are co-extensive with the whole sphere of individualised being, may be a question ; but it would be certainly more unwarrantable on the other hand to affirm that there can be no kind of vision or guidance from without, between one object and another, except that one particular kind which is known to us as perception.

In alarm with its reciprocal mode of action,—namely, *appetite* or attraction towards objects which are congenial,—we have what seems to constitute the entire mental action of hosts of sentient creatures low in the scale of animated nature. Most insects, certainly, cannot possess anything better than a very general and indistinct vision of an object ; and yet that vision, such as it may be, is very effective for their conservation. When the object seen is an entomologist, for instance, approaching with a view to capture, each species of insect has its own moment of taking wing so definitely marked, that instead of anything mental, the resultant motion looks more like a simple repulsion, according to some law of the distance. That the action is not merely mechanical, however, not a result of an incident force merely, is proved by the mistakes which these exquisitely psychical beings so often commit. Thus objects of the most dissimilar nature, nay, a shadow as well as the object of which it is the shadow, when it comes within a certain distance of them, or over them, will cause them to be off ; and this certainly indicates that, not a merely physical repulsion, but alarm, accompanying defective vision, is the cause of their flight.

*Perception. Intuition.*—But in man the issue is very different. The self-manifesting power of the external object does,



indeed, tend to fix the inner activity of the percipient, so far as to invite attention to that object. But that self-manifesting power from without is, at the same time, met by the self-manifesting power of the percipient himself, acting in a direction quite opposite. Thus the impression which is being produced by the object presenting, is resisted and stopt, and, in a word, defined to the percipient. The two self-manifesting powers directly meet, and there results that phenomenon which is properly expressed by saying that the subject perceives the object. The self-manifesting power of the object reaches to the percipient, and impresses him it may possibly be in to the very core of his Being. He seizes and holds the object as the reality that it is, though he cannot at once know it as it is. Even in the midst of his somatic environments, indeed, though at first sight they seem as if they must render all external perception impossible, the percipient *in one moment* attains to a perception of the object presenting in its true appearance, that is, as presented to him in terms of light or sound, resistance, motion, rest, &c. That absolute moment is, indeed, developed into many moments in time, implied in the successive stages of somatic perception, involved in the elastic action of the media of light and sound, and the inertia of the apparatus of the senses. But these media and mechanisms, if they are the appointed means, are also the resistances in the telegraphic wire which retard the free diffusion of object-self-manifestation. If by means of the senses only in the embodied state the mind can normally perceive external objects, it would, in the free state, according to our views, do so simply and in a moment, in virtue of the extensiveness, and the corresponding self-manifesting power of the objects presenting. The varied apparatus of the senses are, in our philosophy, merely so many schemata for securing, to a certain extent, transparency between the external world and the perceiving mind. In perception, it is the object itself that is perceived, and not any image of it. How that object comes to be perceived, not merely as object or reality, but as marked by its own features, we cannot now set forth. That will appear when we reach the cosmical law of Assimilation.

*Memory. Idea.*—And yet it was necessary to allude to this law of assimilation here, because this law, while it implies that the external object shall assimilate the mind to itself, and thus compass a state of perception in that mind, also implies that the mind shall store up within itself states that are expressive of bygone

perceptions, and when no object is presenting itself, or when the mind is not otherwise engaged, shall assimilate its nascent states to its former states, and thus tend to reproduce them. Moreover, these former states are obviously to be expected to be but faint when compared with actual perceptions. But unless they are confused they cannot but be truly representative of the external objects that impressed them. Further, since they are products of the law of Assimilation they might be accurately designated "assimilations." But plainly, they are those phenomena which are already familiarly known under the names of mental imagery and idea, the material of memory, of imagination, and of thinking in general.

*Idea without memory.*—Now, such imagery might possibly be produced in the mind, though at the time of perception the mind was giving itself wholly to the object presenting, or was wholly absorbed by that object. In other words, distinct impressions might possibly have been made on the perceptivity of the mind in the absence of consciousness of what was going on at the time. But if they have been made on the mind any how, they may revisit it; only, they cannot recall the moment of their acquisition or any of those circumstances which have entered into the conscious experience of life. They can only make their apparition in the mind in a dream-like light, and without giving any account of themselves. They must resemble, in this respect, constitutional or abiding impressions—the laws of belief, or the principles of common sense—in reference to which there can be no place for memory since their objects or causes are always present.

But in men in general this total absorption of the mind in an object presenting is a rare case. Normally, it is in part only, or if wholly, then very transiently only, that the proper potentiality, the inner activity or life of man as a percipient, is wholly fixed by an object of perception. Somewhat within is usually left free and undetermined from without. But though free, it is not stript of its self-manifesting power. Nay, when thus stimulated it may be expected to be in possession of that power in the highest degree. In what way or ways then, let us ask, will this inner activity manifest itself? Now, to this the answer cannot but be manifold. Here, a highly endowed self-manifesting power exists and acts in a field which is so extensive, and in which it must itself be so desultory and reciprocating in its action that a great variety of results must be possible. On these it would be wholly unsuitable to enter here in detail.

*Personality.*—But among many phenomena we may certainly conclude that the self-possessed potentiality or spiritual changefulness and causality of the mind, belonging, as it does, to a Being which, amid all its changes, is still one and the same, must tend to manifest itself to itself at the moment of every change. A moment in time is not like a point in space. It has, and cannot but have, a beginning, a middle, and an end, however momentary, and while one moment is departing, the next is coming; and thus, in virtue of the mind's essential life and changefulness, there must result within the mind a continually recurring manifestation of self to self. And in what point of view will it regard itself in the first instance? Doubtless as often at any rate as that power is for the moment opposed, it will regard itself as a potentiality to which freedom or self-determining power belongs; more shortly, there must be a continually recurring manifestation of self to self as a Being possessing power. Now, is not this precisely what every man means when he uses the all-important syllables, "I," "me," "myself?" Not that we are to suppose that the *ego* could attain to a knowledge of itself without the practice secured to it by the varied presentation of the *non-ego*. The attempt to discover what knowledge the mind could attain if it were placed in other circumstances than those in which it constitutionally exists, is hopeless. We merely affirm that, given to the mind those supports and stimuli which it enjoys as a member in the cosmos, it attains, through its own intuitional power, to a knowledge of itself as an *ego*.

But if the preceding views be admitted, we have circumvented consciousness. We have laid hold of it in its very citadel. If the preceding views be admitted, it follows that the possible consciousness of a Being, or its capacity for being conscious, or of having a subjective cognition of anything, depends upon its possessing (at that time, at least), a living spark of liberty or of free self-manifesting power. And that this is, in reality, the uniform condition or "the constant" in consciousness, is proved by the constantly recurring presence of the pronoun of the first person in every mental experience from which that pronoun is not designedly excluded.

The simplest affirmation of consciousness, then, is the manifestation of self to self as a potentiality capable, now of a statical, now of a dynamical state. This we express in the propositions "I am," for the statical, "I will," for the dynamical.



*Joy and Sadness.*—After this comes the manifestation of self to self, as existing in either of two states differing as to wellbeing or illbeing. First, it may exist in the full and free play of its own intrinsic activity without either exertion or resistance; or, secondly, it may exist in a state of suppressed activity, that is, as thrown into embarrassment or held in arrest, and capable only of acting by exertion. And corresponding to these two states of consciousness there are the expressions, “I am joyful,” “I am sad.”

*Sight and Feeling.*—But the self-manifesting power of the *ego* does not terminate in itself, so as to manifest to itself nothing but self and its own intimate states. Like self-manifesting power in general, that of the *ego* is extensive, and it meets the *non-ego* in the self-manifesting power of the latter. Hence two other states. According as the resulting impress is clear and distinct, in direction, from the *ego*, and such as can give independent play to the mental activity, or, on the other hand, such as is confused or rather fused into the embodied *ego* itself, the language of consciousness is, in the first case, “I see,” and in the second, “I feel.”

### *Our Theory of Consciousness.*

Such, according to our philosophy, is the genesis, and such are the conditions of the existence and of the functioning of consciousness. And we conceive that if we are right we have determined something that is of importance in philosophy. Descartes postulated “*cogito*.” The Scottish philosophers merely appeal to consciousness, asserting its supreme authority, but without attempting to give any account of it at all. And the German philosophers, even Hegel, with all his determination to get at the root of things and establish a system of absolute purism, sets out with “I think” as the omnipresent element in all mental action; nay, he assumes thought to be the type of all cosmical action. We set out with something much simpler, nay, with that which is the very simplest of all knowable things, that which is the common property of all individualised objects, material as well as mental, that which must be possessed by them every one, if all taken together are to constitute a system or cosmos. We set out merely with the self-manifesting power of being, that without which it cannot be thought of as a reality. And having investigated what its mode of functioning must be in Beings which are possessed of a certain amount of potentiality, at least while they

exist as members in the cosmos, we have found that it must give rise in the individual to a self-manifestation of self—in other words, to self-consciousness and consciousness in general.

And now we are in a condition to inquire into the value of consciousness as a truth-imparting faculty, and to ascertain perhaps, or at any rate to suggest, whether there may not possibly be a simpler state of intellectual action in which the *non-ego* alone shall take an active part, and which therefore will be objectively trustworthy in a higher degree.

The condition necessary to the existence of consciousness in the ordinary meaning of the term, we have found to be a proper potentiality in the individual so great, that it is not all engaged or fixed by the object presenting, but remains centrally, so to speak, unimpressed or free, that is, in possession of its own proper changefulness; and it is to the development of the mind into this dualised mode of action that consciousness attaches. Thus, when the light of the morning streams in at the window, the stimulus awakes the reposing mind of the healthy sleeper into consciousness, and with regard to any object to which his eye or his ear may be open, he says, "I see it, I hear it," I think this or that about it. Here we have the mind acting normally in consciousness. And this plainly cannot but be of the greatest value to the individual; because along with whatever else it gives, it gives also himself, and therefore puts him immediately up to any danger or any benefit which the object presenting may bring along with it. But this very fact (that consciousness seems to be a conservative function) assists in suggesting the inquiry, whether, while one may still continue in the waking state, a perception of objects may not be attainable from which all egotistical reflexion on the part of the observer shall vanish, and the "it" only remain, that is, the object as it is, in terms of a pure knowledge of it? To ask for more,—to ask, for instance, a knowledge of "the object as it is in itself,"—is either to imply that knowing and being may be one and the same thing; or it is to speak nonsense. But it is a fair question whether, besides and beyond every-day consciousness, there may not be a state of vision from which the subjective element has for the time vanished, or at any rate is on the eve of vanishing, so that the entire mental action shall belong to the object, and purely represent it?

*Synthesis and Analysis.*

Let us approach this inquiry. And here, in the very first place, it would be desirable if we could identify the two phases of the dualised mode of action which we have described with familiar names. The first is that in which, in virtue of the self-manifesting power of its environments, or of its own former states, the mental activity is impressed by that which is not itself as actually in play, and by being so impressed affirms the existence of that which is impressing it. The second is that in which, in virtue of its own intrinsic power and liberty, it may ramble among its environments, fixing on this, and neglecting that, as it pleases, being obliged meanwhile to affirm only itself. Now, do these, our two typical modes of mental action, correspond to any that are well known and which have appropriate names? Yes; is not the former, let us ask, precisely that which is well known as the *synthetic action* of the mind—that in which the mind exists and acts as a member in the universe, striking with this object or idea, or with that, as it may happen to present itself, and so affirming it? And is not the latter precisely that which is known as the *analytic action* of the mind—that in which the mind exists and acts as an universe itself, or at any rate an universe to itself, affirming its own existence independently of that of the outward universe, or even in opposition to it? These agreements with well-ascertained phenomena will not be disputed.

We may say, then, that the existence of consciousness depends on the development of the mental action in the individual into a synthetico-analytic rhythm. And it has appeared that the condition necessary to such a development is that the mind shall be normally affected, on the one hand, as a member in the universe, and so far fixed, while on the other hand it is not wholly engaged or fixed by that which is other than itself, but continues to a certain extent free, that is, in possession of its own proper potentiality, and a spectator of itself as well as its surroundings.

*Synthesis, its value.*

Now, in this mental rhythm, supposing all to be correct from the first, that which is of the greatest value to knowledge is obviously the synthetic phase; for it is in this phase that the perceptivity of the mind strikes with the perceptibility of the object, whether real or ideal; and it is in this phase that the two



become united by that bond which constitutes "affirmation," which is the well-known condition of all knowledge. And if there were no impediments in the way of a simple perception of things as they are, there would be no need, in order to perfect knowledge, of any other phase of mental action, but simply this, the synthetic. And indeed, such a state of mental action seems to exist to a wonderful extent in those animated species which are denizens of the world along with man, but of whose privileges it forms no part that they should enjoy the most precious but dangerous gift of liberty. The bee is a master of the calculus without knowing it, and without one thought about integrals constructs its cells accordingly. A chick, instead of pecking or grasping at the moon like a child, is in full possession, the day it leaves the egg, of the true distances of objects, as well as of the true nature of objects which are in relation to its own well-being. Given a particle of food within that horizon which the mother thinks safe, and permits her little one to range over, and within the eyesight of the chick, and that chick immediately discriminates both as to where and what that particle is, and runs right up to it, seizes and swallows it. In a word, throughout the animal kingdom generally, as soon as the organisation of the individual is adequate to accomplish the functions which the knowledge demands, there is to be observed already a perfection of knowledge-in-use compared with which applied human science in its most advanced state is no better than laborious bungling. But in order to secure such a state of things, and thus to enter simply and beautifully into the system of the cosmos, it follows either that there must be sacrificed that which to all men worthy of the name is the most precious of all things, namely, liberty, or else, that that over-potentiality, which is the source of liberty, shall, on the presentation of objects, be capable of adopting or falling into a state of complete fixation and repose (which, doubtless, the presentation of an object tends to induce), so that the whole mind may give itself to the object purely as a percipient, and act, or rather exist, purely as an intuitional agent. Now, such a condition of mind, if it be at all attainable, is obviously exceptional, and difficult to be attained. It implies in the mind synthetic action only. But, in all cases of ordinary consciousness, the analytical phase of mental action subsists along with the synthetic.

*Analysis, its evil.*

Analysis is obviously the functioning of the free activity in the intellectual sphere, that is, when the mind is dealing with an object of some kind or other which is distinct from itself. It is a different, but not a wholly different mode of functioning from synthesis. Thus, when an object inexorably presents itself, the mind, though insisting on indulgence in its analytic phase, cannot refuse to strike with that object or idea altogether—it cannot choose but hold or affirm that object more or less. But inasmuch as every affirmation by the mind of something else than itself is necessarily a limitation of its own liberty, which is its very life, all such affirmations exist in opposition to its own interest as a thing of life. And, therefore, the mind, in so far as it acts out of a regard to its own volitional nature, endeavours to shake itself free from every such affirmation. And when it cannot do so altogether, it seeks to modify that affirmation, to restrict its sphere, to change its form, and, in a word, ultimately to substitute, if it can, a negative for a positive view of it, that is, to deny what it at first affirmed.

Let it not be inferred from this, however, that the discovery of the realities which surround us, and a belief in them, will come to an end. In denial, no less than in affirmation, there is the maintenance or admission of some determinate relation between the mind and the object denied. No better in negative than in affirmative propositions does the liberty-loving activity of the mind succeed in emancipating itself altogether from cosmical relations. The proposition binds, whatever its form. And so long as the individual mind thinks in propositions (which it cannot avoid doing if it think at all) it cannot be its own universe, and merely the critic and the questioner of any other universe which other people may possibly suppose to exist. It must believe. It must exist in relation with much that is other than self, or at any rate, with much which can be construed as self, only by a manifest perversion of common sense. (Fichte.)

*The Antilogies of Consciousness.*

But here, from this twofold functioning in consciousness, from this synthetico-analytical rhythm of mental action which is normal to the waking state in man, a phenomenon tends to result which is of the greatest interest, and which has been productive

of the most fatal effects in philosophy. Thought, when applied to objects which are transcendent, according as one or other of these two phases takes the lead, tends to issue in uttering contradictions. Moreover, these contradictions have been looked upon as of co-ordinate authority. And hence, being set off the one against the other, the object to which they relate has been excluded from the sphere of philosophy, even as that which cannot be, or at any rate that which cannot be reached in a manner satisfactory to intelligence. These contradictions Kant has developed with great scientific beauty. But, happily for the interests of philosophy, though he named them the antinomies of pure reason, and though he could not see what was wrong, yet he felt that something was wrong, and he would not succumb to them. In the face of all the dogmatic contradictions which the dialectic of such transcendent themes implied, he affirmed the being of a God whom it is reasonable and therefore right to worship, of design in nature implying a Creator, of liberty in man implying responsibility, and such a state of things here as implies a hereafter. These great truths Kant found firmly resting in human intelligence on a basis which was quite secure, and to which, rather unfortunately perhaps, he gave the name of "the practical reason." And more lately Sir W. Hamilton has endeavoured to remove the reproach of a break or rather, indeed, a break-down in the philosophy of Kant in this field, by regarding these contradictions as the product of a mental impotency, which, while giving both as true, gives them also in such a relation to each other that one of them must be true (though the dialectic cannot say which), and therefore possibly that set which all sound philosophers, along with common sense itself, affirm.

Now, both the philosopher of Königsberg and he of Edinburgh were led to their respective hypotheses by regarding the contradictions which emerge during the logical manipulation of the leading ideas in philosophy and theology as of equal moment and authority, and such that each, when compared with the other, completely neutralises it. Herein is their grand mistake. In point of fact, the two conclusions which contradict each other do not stand on the same basis at all. They are not like two rays of the same kind of incident light, which, after pursuing different routes, on being thrown upon the same screen, interfere with each other and produce darkness. They are rather like the electro-magnetic phenomenon, half the movement in which is always at right angles,



or around the other. Instead of being really entitled to such a name as antinomies of reason, they are merely antilogies of consciousness—the one the development of the analytic phase of mental action, the other the manifestation of the synthetic. The analytic, which is ever driving towards zero, is merely the contre-coup of the synthetic, which, left to itself, inevitably affirms the universe, though as yet it knows no details. The seemingly paradoxical equation, in which much deep thinking, ancient and modern, oriental and occidental, is brought into its most articulate form, namely, “pure being = nothing,” is not a homogeneous, not a simultaneous equation. And to build the universe of things on such a basis is to build on a merely subjective phenomenon, difficult to be reached even in human consciousness, and peculiar perhaps to man. Still, inasmuch as it is to be found in consciousness, and truly represents in its purest and most abstract form the rhythm or “process” of consciousness, it is a symbol of value, and cannot but serve as a key by which nature may be partly opened, and obscurely formulated to a certain extent. (Hegel.)

*Analysis, its good.*

But after these remarks, which seem to be only in disparagement of analysis as an intellectual power, it may with seeming justice be asked whether then we hold analysis to be the enemy of all cosmical truth, and essentially a destroyer of all but self? Now to this we say, No. It is only when analysis acts abusively, only when it takes possession of the whole field of inquiry and careers over it, that it is so. Is analysis then in the mind, it may be further asked, merely to interfere with and to limit discovery? To this we say, No, again. The analytic function of the mind is the true self-conservative principle. It has for its aim the highest of all aims, the conservation of the conscious self, the maintenance of a self-possessed changefulness within (which is life and liberty), in circumstances which, if not thus resisted, tend to fix the whole mind as a stereotype of nature, to reduce the universe of thought to mere instinct and memory. But this function it can accomplish only as acting in sisterhood in the mind when the mind is acting synthetically—that is, intuitively or as an open perceptivity. Now this analysis can and does, nay, cannot but do. And hence the analytic phase of the mind's action becomes no less valuable in the intellectual than it is in the volitional sphere of mental life. For as in the volitional sphere it is the safeguard

of liberty, so is it in the intellectual sphere the safeguard against wholesale error. In the interest of its own liberty and life, it is so parsimonious of belief, so reluctant to be bound, that it scrutinises everything before it consents to strike with it and to hold it for true. It delights in "suspending the judgment," which the Pyrrhonist holds to be the very principle of philosophy. While the *synthetic habit* of the mind lays hold of objects "*en masse*," the *analytic practice* consents to close with them only in minima. Happily its own intrinsic activity calls upon it to shift its ground very rapidly from one minim of intuition to another; and its native love of rambling, and the personal interest which it has more or less in almost everything, disposes it to exercise a selective attention ("Abstraction") among them. And thus such minutiae as are admitted increase in number in the mind. In reference to one object after another given by synthesis, analysis, having attempted in vain to deny and reject, gives in, and begins to affirm what it at first attempted to deny. And analysis ultimately becoming fatigued, and the synthetic phase (which is always imminent and spontaneous) supervening and taking possession of the whole field, the entire object given at first comes to be held again, not as a multitude of minutiae, but in its unity, its totality.\*

Has all this long-sustained application to the object, then, this exhaustive analysis of it, been useless? Has all this labour been mere waste, except in so far as haply being the spontaneous play of the activity?—

"Labor ipse voluptas."

This it is in an eminent degree. But no, as to analysis. To the human mind in its embodied state such work is indispensable. Analysis is the only condition of clear and distinct perception. In fact, Nature, as she is received at first by the embodied mind, is received merely as a glare. Her first telling upon the mind is as a crowd of sensations merely. In order to render nature intelligible, analysis is altogether indispensable. To this fact our organisation in its every detail, and every one of the senses, is a witness. It is expressly in order that they may be able to effect analysis that they have been constructed. They give everything in the veriest minima, each minim on the tip of a nervelet.

\* See "An Inquiry into Human Nature," by John G. Macvicar, D.D., author of "The Catholic Spirit of True Religion," &c. &c. Simpson, Marshall, & Co., 1853. Appendix B, "On Method."

This is not all, indeed, that their structure gives. In thus awaking manifold sensations, the senses also transmit new force from the cosmos into the mind. And by this the mind is rendered more powerful than it was when asleep, and, consequently, it is more fully bent on acting as a power, and therefore in bestowing itself on the analysis of the object which causes the aggregate of sensations.

And what holds in reference to the objects of the senses holds in reference to objects generally. All impressions made on the embodied mind are at first of the nature of a glare merely. They present themselves to ignorance, and it is analysis that enables us to chip the shell of that ignorance, and to see clearly and distinctly over and into, and before and behind, and so to clear the way for a full understanding of the object. Meanwhile synthesis which, as has been already stated, is always spontaneous and imminent, is always ready as soon as and as often as analysis intermits, to restore to the object, now clear and distinct, its primal unity again. If, then, we have much to say against analysis as a dangerous gift to Beings whose wellbeing consists, not in isolating themselves, but in closing with their true relations in the cosmos, so that they may fulfil their mission and attain their destiny, we have also much to say in its favour as a protection against imposition, as the safeguard of liberty, and, in a word, of all that adds dignity to humanity.

But let us not refrain any longer from asking whether there is reason to conclude that this structure of mental functioning, which we thus hold to represent and explain the phenomena of consciousness, is permanent and unalterable, or whether there may not be some other form of intellectual functioning that is more simple. In treatises on the philosophy of mind in general, consciousness is regarded as the constant in all thought, and the universal criterion of truth. Its antilogies are indeed admitted, and are granted to be insuperable; but they are therefore insisted on as indications of the shortness of our intellectual tether, and evidence of the impossibility of our carrying up knowledge into any of the great questions of philosophy, or, indeed, beyond the sphere of sensuous experience. The great points of philosophy we are told to abandon or to relegate to the domain of faith; while with regard to faith the general impression is, that however necessary it may be for man, both with reference to this world and the next, yet it is not so respectable as knowledge.



Are the antilogies of consciousness, then, let us ask, ultimate teachings of intelligence from which we cannot escape, which we cannot explain, and to which we must blindly submit? To this we answer No; there is much as to these phenomena which is full of hope. Thus, is not that mood which we have found to give consciousness, an expanded, nay, we might say a dichotomized mode of mental functioning? On the one aspect it is cosmical, on the other it is personal; on the one aspect it is systemic, on the other it is individual; on the one it is passive or receptive merely, on the other it is active or aggressive. Looking for something analogous to it far down the stream of Being, we are reminded of the polarised state as compared with the non-polarised. And still farther down, we are reminded of the flower with its blossom fully expanded to the sunbeam, as compared with the flower when closed in the absence of the sun. Both phases of mental action do indeed agree when viewed in reference to the intellectual sphere, in having as their common ground the same property, perceptivity, namely, or the faculty of intuition. But the one of them, the personal, or analytic, is always playing itself off against the other, is always selecting, neglecting, or denying, or only tacitly assenting; while the other, the cosmical, the relational, the synthetic, is always spontaneously, openly, indiscriminately, universally, affirming.

Now, does not such an antithetic, nay, somewhat contradictory, mode of action in an agent which nevertheless is all the while a true unity, lead us to expect that surely that agent must be capable of another mode of mental functioning also, in which both these phases have lapsed into an unity, in which the analytic shall be sheathed, as it were, or concentrated in the synthetic, and all personal interest hushed in the harmony of the universe? And of such a state of things have we not a repetition in that condition of the organisation by which sleep is induced? Thus, in the waking state, the muscular, or rather the myo-cerebro-neural system, exists in a state of tension and antithesis. But such a state cannot exist without intermission. Fatigue and the periodicity of planetary life demand another state alternating with this the tense and antithetic,—a lapse, namely, or falling away from that state of tension and balanced opposition into the folded rhythm to which sleep is proper.

And here the interesting inquiry presents itself, Suppose such a state of simple intellectual repose, lucidity, or perspection, to

exist, and the object presenting, whether real or ideal, to be withdrawn, what will the state of mind be then? Will not all mental action consist in intuition pure and simple? Will not the presentation of objects to the mind be responded to by a simple and steady perception of them? Will not things be seen immediately, instinctively, and known as they are,—though still of course in terms of knowledge, and not otherwise?

Now, it is well known that the philosophers of India, with somewhat general consent, as also some of those of Europe, maintain that, by a long cultivated discipline of contemplation, it is possible to bring to a state of rest the usually ceaseless activity and changefulness of the mind, and to command such perfect repose that the soul is absorbed in vision, and mirrors the universe, at that time, namely, when in their own beautiful language, the pride of the “I am” is subdued. And without maintaining that such a state of simple and impersonal perception is ever reached in the actual experience, at least, of the Anglo-Saxon mind, may it not be fairly regarded as a limit? And, as a limit, may it not be fairly used in metaphysical inquiries, as limits are used by mathematicians in physical inquiries? It is certainly no small consolation to think that mental action, when existing in its limit as pure perspectivity or intuitive mental action,—when, in a word, reduced to unity, like the mind itself to which it belongs,—gives no paralogisms or antilogies, but, on the contrary, when directed to the sphere of cosmology and natural theology, gives successively Creator and creature, liberty and necessity, and all the stamina of the Catholic philosophy of humanity, without reserve or distraction. If the view which has been here advanced as to the structure of consciousness be accepted, the contradictions of these great truths, which may be elicited in thought, are not given by the mind when acting as a disinterested intuitional Being, or a cosmical intelligence. They are emitted by it when acting as a personal or private Being only, playing the part of an universe to itself. They ought therefore to keep silence. Nor should they in the privacy of the mind be permitted to disturb a higher vision.

### *The Solution of the Antilogies.*

According to the view here advocated, it follows that if the mind could be recalled into such a state of repose, that, while the mind's eye was still open, it should not move, but be fixed—should

not act from out of itself, but remain wholly and merely receptive of the objects presenting; if the mind could be brought to function wholly as an intuitional capacity or perceptivity, the analytical power having sheathed itself in the intuitional;—then every intuition would be given precisely according to the stuff, and would be truly expressive of that stuff as it actually exists.

Thus, since the mind is itself Substance, Being or Reality, if it have intuition of this, with no accompanying activity to disturb and change this intuition, it will simply affirm Being or Existence. Nor this incidentally merely. Since its own Being is imminent to its own intuition, its affirmation of Being must be imminent also and unavoidable. Being must haunt the mind. Existence must be an universal category. Non-existence cannot be conceived,—except analytically as the denial of existence.

Moreover, intuition, when thus wholly pure and simple, and undisturbed by the mental activity or by variety of objects, must give Being merely, nothing more and nothing else. The conception of a beginning or of an end cannot, in this case, arise; for these conceptions are functions of the mental activity or changefulness. They cannot exist previously to the perception of change, they can only be co-eval with it. Neither can this internal and elementary intuition of Being, if still quite pure, find any other limits for Being, as it affirms Being. The pure intuition which it has is a preluding for the affirmation of an infinite, an absolute Being, if such a Being exists and presents himself. It may, indeed, be thought that it must imply an affirmation of such a Being, though he do not present himself, and therefore though possibly he do not exist. But no; that which the mind affirms, in virtue of its own Being merely, does not amount to this. It is properly conceived, as a preluding or preparation merely for the holding of such a Being if he present himself. To affirm such a Being on a purely subjective ground (as Fichte) is an act of usurpation. The self-manifesting power of the mind to itself secures, in virtue of its own Being, the intuition of Being, in general, as an abiding and inevitable conviction, but it sanctions nothing more.

But intuition cannot remain for any appreciable time in a state so simple and elementary as this. The percipient, being a finite member in the cosmos, cannot but have the limitations of his own Being soon pressed upon him. And say that they are, what then? Plainly his state of intuition must now be differentiated. But if, as we suppose, nothing has been discovered but that this Being



which he holds is limited—if nothing has been introduced to alter the nature of his intuition, then the form which his now existing state of intuition shall take must be this, the affirmation of “Being,” accompanied by that of “room for more,” that is, Being and vacancy (Raum), the latter retaining all the character of pure Being, all its simplicity and boundlessness, all except its substantiality; so that not without a show of truth one may maintain, as Hegel has done the paradox, pure Being = Nothing; for the first differentiation of pure intuition gives Nothing as the complement of Being, the possibility of more Being, that is, Being-coming = Becoming!!!

But even in obtaining this first differentiation the personal activity has been brought into play. The absolute (supposing that the absolute Being does not manifest himself) has passed into a dream. The mind, now in possession of finite Being and vacuum, is already expecting—already preluding the cosmos. For, far from respecting the law of parsimony, as Hamilton or even Newton insists upon it, nature rejoices in concurrent causes, and delights in pre-exercitations, preparations, and preludings. She never repeats herself; except when her conditions of existence are the same. She ever aims at variety. But she is always beautifully consistent with herself, and never ushers anything into existence without first paving the way for it. The “anticipations of the mind” which Bacon was for putting down altogether, though, in the ignorant, they be always far too rank and manifold, are yet the only mine from which the true interpretation of nature can be obtained. Merely to “observe” while, at the same time, no ideas shall be allowed to develop themselves within, is merely impossible; or, if possible, then only to a fool. But to return—

Elementary intuition, so far as we have followed it in giving Being and vacancy, has given nothing which savours of a contradiction. The same is true of the mental activity, the analytic power, when we regard it also as acting alone. This power indeed gives a set of intuitions which is quite parallel to that given by the mind when considered as a percipient merely, and which are equally valid. There is, however, a marked difference between them. Since, in the point of view in which we now come to regard it, the mind is no longer a manifestation of Being merely but of Power and action, it gives in intuition, no longer the statical, but the dynamical view of things. It preludes the self-existent, not as the Infinite,

but as the Almighty. And just as the first differentiation of the intuition of Being as Being, gave Being with room for more, that is, Being and Space, so the first differentiation of the intuition of Being as Power or changefulness, gives Change and "room for more change"—that is, duration or time. Moreover, this new intuition is given with the same characteristic as that of Space—that is, as mere time, pure time, beginningless, endless time. In a word, in holding time as elementary intuition gives it, the mind is anticipating and preluding eternity.

Whether, therefore, we look to the mind acting as pure intellect, the *ego* being hushed in it, or look to the *ego*, if to that alone, we find nothing whatever to forbid the manifestation to the mind of an Infinite, an absolute Being, inhabiting eternity, if such a Being really manifest himself; rather have we found the mind framed expressly for responding to the existence of such a Being. Nay, we have found that, if such a Being do not exist and manifest himself so that the mind may be filled by the manifestation, then is the mind no better than an hollow lie-whispering thing.

But the result is widely different when we bring to bear on the absolute and infinite Being both functions of the mind simultaneously, or in such rapid succession as to seem simultaneous—that is, both the purely intuitional, cosmical, or impersonal perceptivity of the mind, and its active or personal power acting in its perceptive capacity. In that case contradictions inevitably set in. In fact, the very use of the personal activity in the intellectual sphere, is to render clear and distinct to the embodied mind an object which the senses give merely as a glare. Now, to render an object clear and distinct is to differentiate that object from something else, is to define it, and consequently to limit it. And hence the mischance which happens when the mind, in its active or analytic phase, is allowed to play upon that which is simple, continuous, boundless. It cannot but destroy its character and give birth to a brood of contradictions.

Thus, if I, in the simple exercise of perceptivity, or mentally acting in cosmical synthesis, reduce my intuition to as pure and simple a state as possible—if I exclude from my regard all individual realities, and, in a word, everything that I can, there remains to me the pure intuition of vacuity, and it presents itself to me as boundless and continuous; and so long as I contemplate it in perfect intellectual repose, it preserves its continuity, its boundlessness. The intuition continues true to that of which it is the intuition.

But as soon as I lose my intellectual repose, the moment that my mental activity begins to act within me, and the *ego* is awoke, that *ego*, alarmed perhaps for being lost in the boundless vast contemplated, proceeds to explore, and, in keeping with its own finitude, it assigns a positivity, a limit, nay, a form to vacuity ; it conceives it as space, nay, as a vast sphere with self in the centre ! Now, this done, the *ego*, the activity, the analytic phase of mental action, is, for the moment, satisfied. But with this state of things the mind as a whole, is satisfied but for a moment. Forthwith the purely intuitional, the impersonal, or cosmical perceptivity of the mind, that is, the synthetic phase of mental action, spontaneously resumes. And of this the consequence is, that space is re-affirmed as existing beyond the boundary which the mind in its analytic phase had imposed upon it. Thus it is held as boundless again. But do matters rest here ? no, the *ego* is as active and as imposing as ever. It resumes and prescribes a second boundary adapted to the new conditions of the intuition, that is, a boundary more remote than the first. Then, by the again recurring synthetic phase boundlessness is given again ; and after that, by the alternating analytic phase, a boundary still farther removed ; and so on as long as we please. And here it is most worthy of remark, that the analytical phase, the action of the *ego*, being of course always the most interesting and the most intimate to the thinker, ever tends to have the last word, that is, the thinker tends to give a boundary to the infinite, and so to deny infinity. Here, then, have we, in consequence of bringing ordinary consciousness into a field for which it was not designed, and for which it is not adapted, not only a succession of contradictions, but a tendency to the wrong one as the last.

It is some consolation that the result which is obtained is of great value as supplying a method of measuring the forms and movements of the cosmos, that is, in giving a basis for the Calculus.

The same series of mental phenomena recur when we reverse the process, and instead of aiming at the comprehension of all space, take a small portion of space and propose to ourselves to reduce it to zero. The act of primary intuition or synthesis with which we set out, reproduces, after every alternate phase of analysis, a portion of space which was the primary datum. If the form of the analysis was bisection the successive portions of space obtained will be less and less, and bear such designations as a half, a half of a half, and so on. But then, in consequence of the spontaneousness or imminence of the synthetic or intuitional phase



of the mind's action, a portion of space, under some denomination or other, will be posited as often as another act of analysis or cutting down threatens its extinction. And this process, too, in consequence of the vivaciousness of the personal activity, we may carry on as long as we please. And hence the seeming as if any portion of space, however small, could be cut or divided to all eternity, and yet some space remain.

It is the same with time as with space. Under a similar manipulation by consciousness time is lost as pure time, as all time. Analysis shapes even eternity into a form of which it can lay hold. It prescribes a boundary, a beginning, or an end to it. But this it cannot do always; for the personal activity, though very vivacious, is liable to exhaustion and requires repose, in order to be recruited for another act. And thus simple intuition finds room for intervening, and the boundlessness of the original intuition is restored. For my own part, I think it is easier in reference to time to rest in the simple intuition than it is in reference to space. Nothing appears to me to be so certain as eternity. If, indeed, I am not content with the intuition, if I proceed to "conceive" it, that is, to make it the object of analysis as well as of synthesis, I lose it. In that case I cannot but think both a beginning of time and an end of time, and my conception, however earnestly bent on discovering a harmony between eternity and time, never gets beyond a compromise, nay, a mixture in thought which, when looked into, is no better than a contradiction.

After the intuition of Being and its companion space, and that of Action, or change, and its companion time, there comes in logical order that which is at once the logical synthesis and the real source of both, namely, Power or Potentiality. And in reference to this, which is the most important of all things, and, indeed, the basis of everything, we obtain by our method a development which is perfectly analogous to that which we have had in reference to Being and Action.

The mind in its simply synthetic phase, that is, when reposing in its pure perceptivity, and as often as it obtains the glance of its own potentiality when in this state of intuition, has an intuition of pure power, all power. What it gets is a true prelude and a pre-exercitation for receiving the impress of Omnipotence or absolute power, all-subduing power. Moreover, the mind, when acting as an intuitional being, though in its analytic phase, provided only that it holds by what itself in this phase gives, gives

the same result—only in this case the power is given as in action, that is, as absolute, all-embracing, irresistible causation. The mind, in either phase when taken by itself, gives nothing finite, nothing limiting or limited. But when the analytic action of the mind applies itself to the datum of the synthetic or the simply intuitional action of the mind, it cannot but define and limit it. Absolute Power or Self-subsisting causation is in that case obliged to admit an antecedent cause and a consequent cause, that is, an effect. And thus, what we ultimately obtain in consciousness, is an alternation of cause and effect in a beginningless and endless series. The elemental intuition or glance (proper to the reposing intelligence) of Absolute Power, that which is cause within itself and to itself, that is, the preluding in the soul of the doctrine of an Almighty Will, which is the preparation for receiving or believing in such a Power, if He manifest himself, is secularised into a form of thought which is indeed a beautiful adaptation of the doctrine of cause, in so far as the creation is concerned, but which is no longer answerable to the whole of Reality.

And thus we are in a position to appreciate the philosophy of Hamilton, which is the latest theory for disarming the antilogies of reason—enemies to discovery, these antilogies—which, under able generalship, such as that of Herbert Spencer, still threaten to turn philosophy out of doors. Sir William admits that these antilogies result from an imbecility or impotence of mind. But he maintains that no detriment comes from this fact to those theological and cosmological ideas, about which chiefly philosophy is conversant, for when the antilogies are reduced to their most categorical terms, the one always denies what the other affirms; whence it follows that, while both are “inconceivable,” “incomprehensible,” “unthinkable,” still one or other must be true; and therefore it is open to inquire, or at least to believe either the one or the other, provided it commend itself to belief on adequate evidence derived from some other source than the dialectic movement of consciousness.

It forms no part of my plan to estimate the views of others. But it is impossible to avoid observing in passing that Hamilton's views, at least in their bearings on the great questions in philosophy, are not materially different from those of Kant. In both there is much to commend and to admire. But Hamilton, far from discovering and acknowledging a harmony in the great thinkers who have gone before him, has left it open no less than

Kant for some future Fichte, or Schelling, or Hegel, to look upon his labours with the same contempt that he looks on theirs.

But there is a harmony, that reigns among all great thinkers, and not a little of it, as appears to me, is to be found in the views of consciousness that have been here advanced. If cut into slips, might not these pages be mostly distributed under such labels as Kant, Schelling, Hegel, Hickok, Calderwood, with Leibnitz and Cousin everywhere, and Dr Reid, above all? Of the last, the founder of the Scottish Philosophy, I am in nowise ashamed, as my master; though in the higher regions of philosophy he has been of late spoken of, and in his own country too, as being as helpless as "a whale in a field of clover." But this was by one who said of Philosophy that it was more proper that it should be reasoned than that it should be true! Those, therefore, who are bent on work and not on play, need not mind much what he has said. Very different is the judgment passed upon Reid by the illustrious founder of the Eclectic Philosophy. Referring to the thorough-going scepticism which had emerged from the views of Locke and Berkeley, through the handling of Hume, Cousin says, "The human race had lost its titles to philosophy, and Reid restored them." And again, "Reid is incontestably one of the most critically acquainted (*connaisseurs*) with human nature that has ever been, and along with Kant, the first metaphysician of the eighteenth century."\* But since then the Scottish Philosophy has not thriven in Scotland. It went to the Continent for its health, and it became so strong that it worked wonders there. Now, however, it is high time for it to be taken home again. Common sense, the spontaneous intuitions, the ineradicable convictions of mankind, are as necessarily the basis of the science of mind as minerals are of mineralogy or plants of botany. And there is wanted still in order to the true science of the human mind, not a mere enumeration of the principles of common sense, and a vindication of their authority indeed, but an orderly digest of them in their positions of natural relationship, and their genesis from one another, or from some principle or principles which are still higher, more general, or more common.†

\* *Philosophie Ecossaise*, par M. Victor Cousin, 1857, pp. ix. 272.

† *An Inquiry into Human Nature*, by John G. Macvicar, D.D., App. D. on the Philosophy and Science of Common Sense.



# THE SKETCH.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### GOD.

As the most important of all intuitions, as one of the "*foedera humani gentis*," which all men are bound to respect, its witnesses lifting up their voices from the past, the ruins of places of worship, all the world over where no other monuments are to be found, and its witnesses for the present and the future, temples that still stand entire, or that are now being built new from the foundation; as one of the zoopyra of Reason which are never extinguished, except in such states of extreme barbarism or scepticism, that all the other characteristic beliefs of humanity are extinguished along with it, our Philosophy lays its ground in the affirmation of God.

If it be asked what we mean by God, we answer that we mean what is usually meant by the term—that Being, namely, whom it is right and reasonable to worship and adore—a glorious Personality inhabiting immensity and eternity yet unextended and indivisible, immutable and yet ever-living, almighty yet never acting otherwise than according to the views of perfect intelligence—such intelligence being in Him an aboriginal attribute co-ordinate with His irresistible power, the two in one constituting His will, of which the characteristic is perfect goodness.

If it be said that such a conception implies contradictions, we reply that to such seeming contradictions we attach no weight whatever. We hold that they are explained by the theory of the antilogies of consciousness which has been already given, and that, notwithstanding their seeming conflict with each other, they

are the nearest approximation to truth which is attainable by the popular consciousness when attempting to compass an articulate conception of the Infinite and the Absolute.

Our philosophy, then, as to its ground is precisely that of the Newtonian epoch ; and considering that the spirit of our times in this respect is so different from the spirit of that epoch, let us here remind the reader of the remarks on this subject with which Newton himself closes his *Principia*—that work which, by the general consent of the Philosophical world, is the greatest and the most valuable of all the works that were ever given to Science. Referring to God, he says—

“This Being governs all things, not as the soul of the world, but as Lord over all ; and on account of His dominion He is wont to be called *Lord God*, *παντοκράτωρ*, or *Universal Ruler* ; for *God* is a relative word, and has a respect to servants ; and *Deity* is the dominion of God not over His own body, as those imagine who fancy God to be the soul of the world, but over servants. The Supreme God is a Being eternal, infinite, absolutely perfect ; but a being, however perfect, without dominion, cannot be said to be Lord God ; for we say, my God, your God, the God of *Israel*, the God of gods, and Lord of lords ; but we do not say, my Eternal, your Eternal, the Eternal of *Israel*, the Eternal of gods ; we do not say, my Infinite, or my Perfect : these are titles which have no respect to servants. The word *God* usually signifies *Lord* ; but every lord is not a God. It is the dominion of a spiritual being which constitutes a God : a true, supreme, or imaginary dominion makes a true, supreme, or imaginary God. And from His true dominion it follows that the true God is a living, intelligent, and powerful Being ; and, from His other perfections, that He is a supreme, or most perfect. He is eternal and infinite, omnipotent and omniscient—that is, His duration reaches from eternity to eternity ; His presence from infinity to infinity ; He governs all things and knows all things that are or can be done. He is not eternity or infinity, but eternal and infinite ; He is not duration or space, but He endures and is present. He endures for ever, and He is everywhere present ; and by existing always and everywhere, He constitutes duration and space. Since every particle of space is *always*, and every indivisible moment of duration is *everywhere*, certainly the Maker and Lord of all things cannot be *never* and *nowhere*. Every soul that has perception is though in different times and in different organs of sense and

motion, still the same indivisible person. There are given successive parts in duration, co-existent parts in space, but neither the one nor the other in the person of a man, or his thinking principle; and much less can they be found in the thinking substance of God. Every man, so far as he is a thing that has perception, is one and the same man during his whole life, in all and each of his organs of sense. God is the same God, always and everywhere. He is omnipresent not *virtually* only, but also substantially; for virtue cannot subsist without substance. In Him are all things contained and moved; yet neither affects the other. God suffers nothing from the motion of bodies; bodies find no resistance from the omnipresence of God. It is allowed by all that the Supreme God exists necessarily; and by the same necessity exists *always* and *everywhere*. Whence also He is all similar, all eye, all ear, all brain, all arm, all power to perceive, to understand, and to act; but in a manner not at all human, in a manner not at all corporeal, in a manner utterly unknown to us. As a blind man has no idea of colours, so have we no idea of the manner by which the all-wise God perceives and understands all things. He is utterly void of all body and bodily figure, and can therefore neither be seen nor heard, nor touched; nor ought He to be worshipped under the representation of any corporeal thing. We have ideas of his attributes, but what the real substance of anything is we know not. In bodies, we see only their figures and colours, we hear only their sounds, we touch only their outward surface, we smell only their smells, and taste their savours; but their inward substances are not to be known either by our senses, or by any reflex act of our minds; much less, then, have we any idea of the substance of God. We know Him only by His most wise and excellent contrivances of things and final causes; we admire Him for His perfections; but we reverence and adore Him on account of His dominion, for we adore Him as His servants; and a God without dominion, providence, and final causes, is nothing else but Fate and Nature. Blind metaphysical necessity, which is certainly the same always and everywhere, could produce no variety of things. All that diversity of natural things which we find suited to different times and places could arise from nothing but the ideas and will of a Being necessarily existing. But, by way of allegory, God is said to see, to speak, to laugh, to love, to hate, to desire, to give, to receive, to rejoice, to be angry, to fight, to frame, to work, to build; for all our



notions of God are taken from the ways of mankind by a certain similitude, which, though not perfect, has some likeness, however. And thus much concerning God; to discourse of whom from the appearances of things does certainly belong to Natural Philosophy."

But here it may perhaps be said, Why quote from others? Since we claim existence for a higher, or at least a less embarrassed mode of vision than that which belongs to ordinary thinking, why not invoke the aid of this "apperception" or "perspection," this "vision of repose," to enable us to obtain and to express the attributes of God more purely and serenely, and free from all semblance of contradiction? To this we answer, that we are contented that the light we claim should be used for the purpose, not of discovery, but of criticism merely, that it should show us the cause of those contradictions which are imminent in consciousness when it addresses itself to any transcendental thesis, and point out to us which to hold as the truth—whether the thesis or the anti-thesis. As to the Attributes of God, attempts have been made to reach them in other forms than those in which they express themselves in consciousness, both by the Asiatic and the European mind. But so long ago as the days of the Patriarch Job, it was discovered that the attempt was hopeless. In emptying the conception of God of the earthly, the anthropomorphic, philosophers in general have only substituted the unearthly, not the heavenly. But yet there are some, perhaps many, and of these Krause\* in Europe, and Hickok† in America have fallen in my way, whose views I would gladly repeat here.

For myself I cannot find words to express what I may perhaps wish to say; and I cannot help thinking it very desirable that investigators of such matters generally should remember that the vernacular meaning of words is insuperable, and so refrain from putting into unsuitable words that which, as private thought, may be all right and easily intelligible, but which in words comes out no better perhaps than paradox or blank affirmation, stupifying to the brain, and wasting precious time to the reader.

\* See *Essai Théorique et Historique sur la Génération des Connaissances Humaines, &c.*, par Guillaume Tiberghien, Professeur et Doyen de l'Université de Bruxelles.

† *Rational Cosmology; or, the Eternal Principles, and the Necessary Laws of the Universe*, by Laurence P. Hickok, D.D., Union College, New York.

## CHAPTER II.

### CREATION.

THE Being of God, such as has been conceived, implies that all besides Himself must be His creation—that is, either directly caused or permitted by Him ; for He is almighty, and He is in possession of immensity and eternity, all space and all time as His own field for the manifestation of His own Glory.

But here an objection is raised on this very ground to the existence of a creation altogether. In the Divine Being it is said all fulness dwells from all eternity, and whatever is, or possibly can be, is God. Nor, though it were possible, is it conceivable how a Being, who is perfect in Himself, and a perfect stranger to every want, could ever be visited by a motive to award existence to that which, being finite, cannot but be imperfect.

Now as to the possibility of a creation, it is to be replied that, in a Being who is infinite in Power, there is distinctly implied the power to award existence, though we may not be able to construe in our thought such an act. And while creation must thus be admitted to be possible, there is something in the nature of sensibility which renders a creation probable—nay, leads reason to expect a creation. Thus, among the many things that are known to us, happiness is invaluable, it is that which is very worthy of existence, and very expressive of goodness. Now, happiness is essentially an individualised thing. In the absence of a creation there is no more than one Being who can possibly be happy—that is, the Almighty Himself. By creation, on the other hand, and in a creation, there may possibly be all but infinite millions who may be happy ; inasmuch, therefore, as the perfection of God implies that He is perfect in goodness, we are led by a regard to His attributes to infer that He will award existence to a creation.

This argument, it is true, goes only to explain the existence of

a creation, and to justify it in so far as that creation consists of sentient creatures, or creatures capable of happiness ; but, possibly, much non-sentient scaffolding may be necessary to pave the way for such a creation, and to uphold it. We are not at present in a position to deny that the creation of individualised objects, such as suns, planets, crystals, molecules, plants, may be explicable on the principles of a sound theodicy, though they be not capable of happiness. Such objects may possibly be necessary, as a ground on which sentient creatures may stand, or a womb from which they may be brought forth ; the whole creation meanwhile marching as straight and as fast as is possible to the production of sentient creatures, as its end and aim. Now, in these conjectures there is nothing that is contradicted by observation of the actual creation so far as we can see into it. On the contrary, by all that we see around us, and of which we form a part, they are verified. Living and sentient creatures, so far as they are actually known to us, require a ground on which they may stand, or a medium in which they may move. Nor is that ground or medium necessary as a support to them merely ; it appears to have brought them forth at the first ; and it still assists in maintaining their successive generations. Altogether there is ample evidence that the actual creation presses towards and culminates in the production of sentient creatures, and these as vast in variety of species and multitude of individuals as the conditions of sentient existence in our planet will allow.

If it be said that, in order to make our argument of any avail in theodicy, it would need to be so ordered in creation that a state of wellbeing in a sentient creature should be a state of enjoyment to that creature also, we admit the legitimacy of the argument. Nay, we accept it gladly ; for nothing is more certain than that such is the fact in the actual creation. A state of wellbeing in every creature ever tends to be a state of enjoyment to that creature. Every sentient creature, when itself normally organised and placed in the midst of its proper environments, enjoys its existence. If human creatures too often supply exceptions to this rule, it is only because the conditions of man's happiness have, in a great measure, been committed to his own keeping, and he has not kept these conditions.



## CHAPTER III.

### COSMICAL LAW.

THE fulness of the Godhead does not forbid a creation. But it excludes from creation certain classes of objects ; nay, it assigns contents to creation viewed in reference to eternity. It admits of infinite variety ; but it excludes all that would be quite new and singular. No such thing is possible. Whatever is not self-contradictory or self-destructive is already anticipated, has already a place from eternity in the Divine mind, either as knowing or being.

*Assimilation.*—In the Divine mind there must exist the archetype of everything that is possible. Created substance can only be a mirror which shall reflect, or a luminary that shall radiate, or a treasury that shall dispense the glory and the wealth of the Infinite. Both in Being and action, therefore, created substance must be essentially assimilated or assimilative. It must be essentially assimilative to the Divine idea which proposes it for existence ; and, when actually created, it must be assimilated to that idea, so far as harmony with the other Divine ideas in the same field, that is, the action of its environments, permits.

But to be assimilated and assimilative is to exist and to act according to law ; for the idea of law is that of obedience or conformity in acting where the command or conditions of existence are the same. Now the Creator, both in His Being and His attributes, is immutable. And He is as perfect in intelligence as He is in power. His mind and will are ever at one. And we may be sure that He will never put forth His will except in those directions which His intelligence suggests or sanctions. He will never ordain any Being or any thing to act contrary to the nature which He has awarded to that Being or thing ; nay, inasmuch as that nature is the expression of His own mind and will in reference to that Being or thing, He will ordain that it should act

according to that nature ; or rather, in awarding to it that nature, He has, no doubt, appointed and provided that it shall act in accordance with that nature ; in other words, He has, no doubt, appointed that the nature or constitution of a being or thing shall also give and be the law of its acting.

Now, it has been shown that the nature of created substance is Assimilative. To this nature, therefore, it will certainly conform. The law of its Being therefore, the law of all finite Being, must be " Assimilation."

Moreover, Assimilation, when viewed in all its possible influences, while it is the cosmical law, must be the only one. For since the unity of the Creator is as perfect as His intelligence and His power, there can be no doubt that the cosmos, however multiple it may be in our eyes, is yet, in the mind of the great Creator, but one grand idea realised. All cosmical laws, therefore, must in their ground be but one law. And from what has already appeared, it follows that that law must be a law of Assimilation.

Yes ; as all creation is, and cannot but be, the manifestation of the attributes of the Creator, which on their part are the harmonious manifestation of His being which is an unity, so must the whole cosmos, however vast and varied, be a harmony, having as its ground an unison. And the relation between the two must ever be this,—that the plastic material shall ever tend to assimilate itself to the archetype ; the finite ever tend, so to speak, to emulate the Infinite. And in so doing, surely it cannot but be good and beautiful, because of the nobleness of the aspiration ; but yet we can scarcely expect that it will be without a mixture of failure or evil, because of the impossibility of a wholly successful accomplishment of the undertaking.

*Individuation.*—In contemplating the grounds on which a creation becomes probable, the grounds on which reason can justify to itself the existence of Nature as a work of God, we have found as an absolute condition the awarding of existence to such beings at any rate as shall be sentient and capable of enjoyment, and which, therefore, must be individualities, or self-contained beings,—in some sense true unities or monads. Nay, we have found that the glory of a creation, so far as can be discovered by us, must consist in the multiplication, to the utmost degree possible of such individualised Beings ; for in the very degree to which there is multiplication of sentient Being, suppos-

ing the conditions of their wellbeing provided at the same time, there is multiplication of enjoyment; and enjoyment, so far as we can conceive, is an object worthy enough to be proposed for awarding existence. Not but universal order is a worthier aim than individual enjoyment, and self-sacrifice for the restoration or advancement of order worthier than self-gratification when it involves a compromise of order; but these things are so, only because universal order is the condition of such enjoyment as shall be general and of the highest kind. In the unfathomable depths of the ocean of possibilities there may perhaps be something that is more valuable than enjoyment; but it is certain that we cannot conceive such a thing, and never could be brought to vote in its favour. The permanent enjoyment attaching to an action or a state of being, or ultimately resulting from it, is, in fact, the only measure by which we can estimate the value of such action or state, or indeed of anything whatever. If all were perfect apathy, all would be without any value to us.

But it is here needful to be remarked, that, as to the whole amount of enjoyment attaching to an act or line of conduct, we are not competent to estimate it. Nor are we called upon to do so, nor even permitted to attempt it. In human nature, in its normal state, the promptings of sensibility are sheathed in the consciousness of obligation. In consequence of the seeming claims of the present and the near, as compared with those of the future and the distant, the promptings of sensibility constantly tend to mislead in the pursuit of happiness. In this pursuit, therefore, it has been appointed that the promptings of sensibility shall be superseded and left without sanction. A sense of right and wrong has been provided as the guide of life.

But it ought never to be forgotten that the interest of sensibility and of moral obligation are intimately and ultimately, at least, if not immediately or always, in the most perfect harmony. In fulfilling the law of moral obligation, it is impossible to violate the law of sensibility, viewed as a cosmical institution. When the aged saint in the Scottish cottage was overheard in her devotions using words to the effect, that if the holiness of God required that pardon should not be extended to so great a sinner as she felt herself to be, still she could not cease to pray that in the place of punishment, some retired spot might be permitted her, where she might not be exposed to hear the holy name of the God, whom she loved, blasphemed;—this glorious homage to the law



of order or holiness (which is the same), was not a violation of the law of sensibility, much less was it a contempt of it. Though nothing was farther from her thought, yet her prayer in reality implied that a place appointed for suffering might, notwithstanding, be to her a place of enjoyment,—that the hell of the wicked might, nevertheless, be a heaven to her. And, indeed, how could it ever be otherwise? Order or holiness on the one hand, and wellbeing or happiness on the other, are intimately and abidingly co-ordinate.

In proposing the enjoyment of creatures, therefore, as the motive to creation in so far as that creation itself is concerned, we do not conceive a lower order of motive. On the contrary, law and order are *to us* valuable only as the safeguards of enjoyment. In spite of all thinking that looks elsewhere, or seeks for other terms, happiness must be the haven and Sabbath of our thought, the last word among all the reasons which could possibly be assigned by us for the awarding of existence to a creation. But enjoyment implies individuality. The multiplication of enjoyment implies the multiplication of individualities. And hence, we are to look in the cosmos for a powerfully operating law of individuation, or of the partitionment of being, supposing being to be previously or at any time undivided.

*Unification.*—But from the presiding unity of the Creator, and the assimilative character of created being, it follows that individuation or partitionment must have its limits; nay, it follows that there must be another cosmical operation in quite another direction. Supposing created Being to be now existing in multitude, there must be an operation tending to reduce the number of unities in that multitude,—in a word, to reduce that number until these two opposite tendencies—that to individuation on the one hand, and this to confluence and unification on the other—are in equilibrio. This is so plain that it needs no further words.

Such, then, are the cosmical laws which our theory of nature, as a creation of an infinite and perfect Creator, suggests to us. As they have presented themselves, they are three in number. But we shall find, as we proceed, that they are one in their ground, and that the law of Assimilation gives both the other two, which, while they are its offspring, are also manifestations of it.

## CHAPTER IV.

### FINITE BEING.

THE foregoing laws lead us to anticipate the existence of created reality, not as one, but as many, with a continual play between greater and lesser in point of number. But here the question occurs, What shall we think of reality, when regarding it in its most comprehensive point of view? Shall we say, with some, that it is merely the aggregate of all its attributes, and nothing more? Or shall we say, with others, that it is the substance in which its attributes inhere? Our views as to the constitution of consciousness prompt us to decline taking either side in this controversy, and to attempt rather to reduce these seemingly conflicting views to an unity. Now, such an unity we find in the conception of reality as a potentiality, a something to which it belongs to develop itself into action, but which is such, that in so doing it does not exhaust itself. Every other conception of reality will be found to be quite unprofitable in philosophy. But on this subject I shall not enlarge, especially after what has been said on the subject already, when treating of consciousness.

More important it is to take into consideration the question whether there are in creation beings which are radically dissimilar to each other, or, as we might say, dissimilar both in attribute and in substance; or whether created reality, in what variety soever it may manifest itself, is yet in its ground universally one and the same?

Now here it is to be hoped at least that the latter opinion will ultimately prevail; for if the former, then the cause of philosophy and science is hopeless. If there be in creation beings and things more or fewer, which are radically dissimilar, then there can be nothing better for intelligence to learn than empirical facts and empirical laws. In that case, an intellectual system of the universe which surely is the proper aim of philosophy and science, can never be construed in the mind.

But in defence of this hypothesis of essentially heterogeneous

beings and things, it may be asked with seeming cogency how, on the supposition of only one kind of being or reality in its ground, can we possibly account for phenomena so diverse as those of matter and of mind? Now, for a long time, it must be admitted, this identification, even as to a common ground, was deemed in philosophy to be impossible. The essence of matter, it was said, is extension; the essence of mind is thought; and between these two—extension and thought—there is no common term, nor is there any possibility of bringing them to an unity. But that phase of philosophical thinking has now passed away; and though men in general still feel that body and soul are a complete contrast, yet physiologists in general are now of another mind. They have run into the opposite extreme. The turn of modern thought is not only to bring body and mind into most close relationship with each other, but to identify them even as substance and attribute. And, what is certainly very remarkable, all things considered, is that in proceeding to identify them, many make Body the ground of mind, and the only reality in the case! Perhaps even the majority of physicists and physiologists in the present day regard mind merely as a function or phenomenon,—merely as the outcome and manifestation of the physical forces, co-operating under certain conditions,—merely as an ideal efflorescence of the nervous system, and nothing more. To many the whole universe is a purely mechanical system, and, according to their view, all philosophy and science ought to be merely the exposition of an all-pervading, everywhere prevailing materialism, and nothing more.

At the same time it is not denied—it cannot be denied—that mental attributes or phenomena are of a much higher order than material properties and phenomena; that volition, for instance, or self-directive power, the *vis voluntatis*, is a much higher attribute than mere inertia, or the *vis inertie*; that desire and aversion felt towards objects are higher attributes than mere attraction or repulsion; that self-preservation is higher than mere resilience or elastic action; that an idea is of a higher order than a form or diagram in space; and that thought is higher than mere motion in space. In a word, it is not denied, and it cannot be, that mental functions and phenomena generally, are of a higher order than merely mechanical functions and phenomena. Supposing there to be in its ground only one kind of substance, then the question between spiritualism and materialism is this,—Are we



to suppose that the higher birth gives also the lower, or that the lower gives birth to the higher?

Of these alternatives spiritualism affirms the former. It posits, as the basis of all philosophy and science, the existence of a supreme Mind, and does its best (what, indeed, it has done as yet only indifferently well) to show, in the relation of matter to mind, that matter is something quite subordinate to mind, and incapable of attaining, under any circumstances, to the attributes and phenomena of mind. Materialism, on the other hand, sets out with matter and force, as the first of all things, and holds that mental phenomena come into existence among material phenomena for the first time when the physical forces succeed in constructing nervous systems. Such is materialism. It is impossible to exaggerate its consequences if it ever should become the popular belief, for it annihilates at once all the hopes and all the fears connected with a life hereafter. If it be a mistake, it is the greatest of all possible mistakes. Happily it exists in opposition to a world-wide belief. What, then, let us ask, is its scientific claim to regard? Now, to this it is to be answered that positively it has nothing to support it but the fact, that mind can be observed by us only in connection with brain, and that it is apparently proportional in value to the value of the brain with which we find it associated. Materialism exists in direct opposition to scientific principle. The science of mechanics can prove that every possible combination of mechanical forces must have a mechanical resultant which is truly and fully the representative of that combination of forces. Exact science gives no opening at all for such a conception, as that at some moment when the combination of forces has become complicated to a certain extent a transformation takes place of mechanical force into feeling and thought. Such a transformation is besides utterly inconceivable. If it took place, the law of continuity would be completely violated. One thing would arise out of another thing which has nothing in common with it at all. The objections to materialism in a scientific point of view are insurmountable. The only way of getting rid of them is to exclude them, to affirm that we know nothing at all about the matter, and, as the ground of materialistic belief, to fall back upon the well-known fact, that mental phenomena are seen only in connection with a cerebral organisation, and thence to conclude, that they are appearances merely, and that the brain is the thing, the only thing.

But this is an inference which is confessedly made wholly in the dark. Here one thing is concluded from another as its direct and immediate sequence, when for aught that is known there may be many links between. Nay, this inference is made, not in the dark only, or in complete ignorance of the contents of the field in which it is made, but it is contrary to the teachings of physiology in all cases that are in any degree analogous. This is, indeed, implicitly affirmed by the materialist himself, when he maintains (as has been referred to, p. 27) that the brain secretes thought just as the liver secretes bile. All the other glandular structures give peculiar secretions, each its own. All these secretions are merely molecular or material, no doubt, but all of them are things of the highest synthesis, and consist of the most composite molecules. As to the womb with its appendages, whose morphological analogy to the brain (or rather, to the myo-neuro-cerebral system) is of all the organs the most perfect, it has for its function to cherish and to develop an embryo, which is something of a much higher order than a molecule, or a gall-bladder full of bile, or the like. In order to place the cerebral organism, therefore, in analogy with glandular organisms in general, the brain also ought to have for its office to cherish and to develop some Being or thing distinct from itself and having a substantive existence. Nor does it follow of necessity that that creature of the brain shall, like the secretions of the glands, or the creature of the womb, be merely a molecular aggregate, a liquid or solid, and either amorphous or organised. All the secretions, and indeed all the functionings of the animal organism, are but means to an end; and that end manifestly is the construction of the nervous system viewed as operating in the fulfilment of its special office. Were it wonderful, then, if that fulfilment implied the giving to material nature a Being or thing of a higher order than the merely molecular and material? Were it wonderful if the molecular synthesis, which we see to be so powerfully operative in all the other glands, should be so much more powerful in the brain, that instead of effecting the placing of elements of force in juxtaposition merely, it should be able to effect their confluence into a new unity, so that in the focus of action of the myo-neuro-cerebral system, existence should be awarded, through the action of the brain, to a new centre of force, constituted of so great an amount or intensity of being or potentiality, that it should be wholly emancipated from those trammels which characterise matter, and manifest those higher properties

of perception, volition, consciousness, for the sake of which creation exists, and which we hold to belong to all individualised Beings, when the quantity of Being or potentiality which constitutes them has not been weakened by attenuation to such a degree that instead of mental endowments, there are left only those residua of power which constitute the properties of matter—namely, instead of a *vis voluntatis*, a *vis inertie* merely; instead of desire, attraction merely; instead of aversion, repulsion merely, and so on?

And here let it not be hastily inferred that such a theory implies the transformation of matter into mind. There is every reason to believe, as will appear more fully hereafter, that the material element possesses such self-conservative force, that it is wholly permanent in nature, at least in and around our planet. It is not in the molecular or ponderable parts of the brain that the material is to be sought which may possibly be the mother-element of the mind. That ponderable matter is indeed everything to the anatomist. But to the natural philosopher, to the true physiologist who endeavours to take an all-embracing view of the contents of the field which he is investigating, that ponderable matter is a mere scaffolding for the ætherial matter that is present, the matter of light, in which the mind really dwells, and by which we should expect that it would be fed and constituted. Now, in the ætherial element, Being or Reality is so attenuated, compared with what it is in the material element, that its potentiality in general, and consequently its self-conservative power, or its resistance to confluence, and its incapacity for constituting a true unity of a higher order, must be much less than it is in the material element; and, for anything that appears to the contrary, its individuality may be overcome by an adequate synthetic apparatus such as the myo-neuro-cerebral.

By this view, which we maintain has the analogy of all nature in its favour, that fact which is the only one that gives countenance to materialism is adequately explained—namely, the fact that there is an observed co-ordination of mental phenomena with the organisation and the actual functioning of the brain; for while the power and the perfection of the mother and nurse will normally be expressed in the power and perfection of the child, the law of reciprocal assimilation provides, that during the whole period of organised life, mind and body shall be continuously assimilating, each itself to the other, and thus producing that interdependence and sympathy which is so universally felt and



acknowledged. And in order to every outward manifestation of mind there will be the necessity that the currents in the brain shall be duly circulating—a condition on which so much has of late been built in the interest of materialism.

By the view now advanced all the phenomena are explained much more fully and intelligibly than they are attempted to be explained by materialism; and thus the ground is taken away from under the feet of that detestable hypothesis which excludes from the field of science altogether, and refers to an exercise of faith merely, a belief in God, in merit, in immortality, in all that is most ennobling in the thoughts and most encouraging to the aspirations of humanity.

Nor does the view which has now been suggested demand any supposition as to the nature of Being in general, or of any Being in particular more elaborate than this, that power as it is known to exist, endowment in the individual, is always porportional to the amount or intensity of the substance or potentiality constituting that individual. And is not this a conception so simple that it, in fact, possesses the value of a mathematical equation?

According to this conception, we obtain a system of Beings which, commencing as near as we can reach the throne of the great Creator (which is yet at an infinite distance)—gives us a hierarchy of spiritual Beings ranging from the highest that is compatible with a finite nature, through all orders downwards until we reach the region where all mental endowments have vanished, and Being is found in the most attenuated, and consequently the most diffused state, viz., in the universal æther.

If it be asked, as at this stage of our progress it might be with seeming cogency, why, in being partitioned and individualised in order that the number of centres of enjoyment might be multiplied, should finite Being have been attenuated in the individual to such a degree that ultimately the individual is no longer capable of feeling, and thus the very end aimed at be frustrated by overdoing,—the answer is, that the cosmical law of assimilation insists on this result, providing, however, at the same time, that after this extreme analysis, sensibility shall be restored by a co-ordinate synthesis. The great Creator is infinite as well as absolute. He has for an attribute immensity no less than unity; and immensity, when construed in consciousness and in reference to finite Being, is represented by all space—boundless space. Finite Being, therefore, in assimilating itself to the Infinite,

needed as far as possible to fill all space. But being finite, this it could do only by underdoing the utmost attenuation possible. Hence, according to our theory, the universal æther, all apathetic though in itself it be.

But, shall this extreme attenuation of being be regarded as an evil or a departure from the interests of sensibility? No, surely. The universal æther is the medium of light and colour, and all visible glory, and we know not how many genial influences besides. Moreover, in it our philosophy, while admitting a hierarchy of Spirits, provides at the same time for them a medium in which they may dwell, than which we know not of any, and can conceive none that could be more kindred or congenial.

As to the material element and the molecular world, it presents itself as the development of a mathematical necessity; not on that account, however, outcast, or useless in the economy of the universe, but, on the contrary, a beautiful episode in the epic of creation, appointed as an apparatus for redeeming, so to speak, or for bringing back Being or Reality from its most attenuated and powerless state to a state of power,—in a word, for restoring the ætherial to the spiritual, giving life to light. But of that hereafter.

Created Being, then, according to our philosophy, is neither “nothing,” nor yet is it “that which fills space.” But it is an extensively self-manifesting something existing in multitude, the individuals constituted by a greater or a lesser amount, or intensity of Being or substance, whence it results that in the higher orders of Beings self-manifesting power becomes two-fold, acting both outwardly and inwardly, or reflectively, thus rendering the individual self-manifesting to self, that is, a Spirit. If it be said that the term spirit implies more than this, more than consciousness, namely, life and liberty, we add, that to us created Being is in no case that which is dead or wholly inert, in no sense that which shall be a clog upon the infinite (which, however, seems to be the common notion). To us, created Being is in itself like the Creator, power, life, free life, only it is not left to itself in the unguided play of such a dangerous nature. It is placed either altogether, or more or less, under cosmical law that is under the Divine Attributes radiating, the voice of God echoing, and embodying itself in space and time, and thus constituting creation a cosmos. And now as to spirit much requires to be said.

## CHAPTER V.

### SPIRIT : ITS NATURE AND ENDOWMENTS.

WHEN treating of consciousness something was said of Beings of the order of spirits. But at that stage of our development nothing could be said of the cosmical laws. At that time we were able to speak of Beings as self-manifesting things only, and that to a distance from their centres, or more generally as extensively impressive and impressible centralized powers. We know now more than this. We know now that inasmuch as all reality is the creation of an all-Perfect Creator, it can neither exist nor act in a manner which is wholly singular or anomalous. It can only exist or act so as to manifest and be assimilated to the Creator, and be the expression of His mind and will, or if it be an individualised power, or Will, then possibly in a contrary way. And hence the cosmical law which we have already laid down. Hence assimilative action the law of the cosmos, considered as such.

And here a primary inquiry presents itself. If the law of assimilation is the very order of the created universe, shall we not have an order of Beings which shall be fully expressive of that law—an order of Beings, in a word, which shall be the image of God in the whole of His Being, in so far as the finite can image the Infinite? Such an expectation certainly finds a first place in our theory. Now for its discussion it first asks the question, What is that special condition which shall make a Being to be the image of God? What is that attribute which, being withdrawn from a Being, that Being shall cease to be the image of God? Now, to this the answer undoubtedly is,—the possession of truly individualised power, that is, a potentiality or energy within itself, which shall be a Cause in its own right, and see its own way, that is, a principle of volition, in one word, a person. If we deny this of God, we deny God Himself in that sense of the name which all humanity claims to be the true sense; and if we deny it of man, we deny



man himself in that character which the consciousness in the breast of every man affirms man to be.

This; then, when we descend from the Creator to the creation, we find to be the first order of Beings which we are to look for in the cosmos—an order of Beings, namely, possessed of truly individualised power more or less, that is, free will or liberty.

But how, it may here be legitimately asked, can we suppose that existence should ever be awarded or permitted to Beings of such a nature? Is it not, it may be said, of the very essence of liberty to resist a law imposed from without? And thus, if there were Beings in the image of God, must not these Beings, in virtue of the very make of their minds, be rebels against God, and, in a word, be as gods themselves? This is a grave question, and it suggests many thoughts, and explains many things. But we have here only to affirm that such an issue is not necessary or unavoidable. Thus, in the constitution of such liberty as is true and perfect so far as it goes, there is implied the opposite of every tendency as well as the tendency itself. The tendency to rebel, therefore, in a spirit which is perfectly free must be accompanied by a tendency in quite an opposite direction. The same actions or manner of life which, when viewed solely as expressions of an external authority, awake the recoil of liberty, may, in another point of view, become the free spirit's own choice. The spirit, enlightened by reason, and seeking, as a free spirit ever must, those channels in which its life and liberty can flow most fully, may find them, nay, is sure to find them in that order which the all-wise and the Almighty Creator has appointed. The love or law of liberty, therefore, in an enlightened spirit leads it directly to maintain the cosmical order, to keep the appointed law. It is only when existing in a state of ignorance that a free spirit tends to be rebellious. In the argument against the existence of liberty in the creature, founded on the native tendency of liberty to rebel against authority, there would be cogency only if liberty had been bestowed without any provision having been made for the enlightenment of the free spirit. But means of enlightenment have been provided. The same Divine appointment, the same law of Assimilation, in providing for those creatures, who should be most fully entitled to the name of "the image of God," the dangerous gift of liberty, provides also for the enlightenment and guidance of their liberty certain principles, the principles of Religious and Moral Obligation and Reason.

*Religious Obligation.*

God is at once a Perfect Intelligence and an Almighty Power ; and from this twofold consideration, in virtue of the law of assimilation, there must result in man a twofold endowment, namely, *Reason*, the impress on him of the Divine Intelligence and *Religious Obligation*, the impress of the Divine Power.

Along with these (even as an ember of Deity itself) man has liberty, and that in the position of spectator of all the *Ideas* which reason supplies, and all the *Duties* which obligation imposes. He is free to ramble amongst them, and to make his choice.

The imminence of religious obligation in the mind of man when existing in its normal relations, fully appears ; but it also fully appears that it must continue as an authority or feeling of obligation merely, and cannot be developed into articulate ideas. We can easily conceive how the Divine attributes could mirror themselves in the human soul as ideas, as reason, or laws of belief ; but we cannot conceive how the Divine Being, or Power, could be represented in this way or otherwise than as an abiding impress merely of that Power. Besides the laws of belief, therefore, and the ideas of reason, there ought, under the law of assimilation, to be in the mind an abiding impress of the Being and Power of God.

Nor will the mind be altogether unconscious of that impress, or altogether unaware of the source from whence it comes. As in all other cases of synthetic relationship the soul, as herself a proper power, must react. And what, in the midst of so much darkness and yet so much power, can such reaction be but a determination in the soul towards God—a fixed looking of the soul towards God, responsive, or, if not actually responsive, uneasy to respond to the impress of God's Being upon her ? And since that Being, so far as it is felt or known, must give an impress of the Omnipotent, the Adorable, what, in terms of consciousness, must the corresponding impression be but a conscious obligation to God, a felt call by God to worship Him, and, in so far as His will is discovered or conceived, to obey Him ?

And thus our philosophy enables us to understand both the universality of religion in the world, and the vast breadth and variety that there are both in religious objects and observances. According to this view, religion in its essence, and viewed apart from reason, must manifest itself merely as a conscious obligation, an uneasiness to worship. And, accordingly, we find that

worship is universal. But when acting alone, this native religiousness of the heart must manifest itself as an obligation to worship merely. It does not and cannot give the object of worship in His true character, that true character is given in reason only, or by the aid of revelation. Hence in any individual, or any race where reason is in abeyance, any object which happens to interest the imagination will be assumed as an object of worship. Religious obligation when acting analytically, will discharge itself in Fetichism, when acting synthetically, in Pantheism.

In proportion as reason is developed on the other hand, then, under the law of the equivalence of energy, whatever its form, the sense of religious obligation, the constitutional uneasiness to worship, will tend to become feeble. But, at the same time, the object of worship will be brighter and more glorious in a higher degree. The deliberate contemplation of His glory ought, therefore, now normally to awake adoration no less than the feeling of an obligation to be religious did before. The practice of religion, therefore, ought not to abate as mental culture or intellectual light advances. Only the motive to worship will no longer be felt to be an instinct which it causes great uneasiness not to gratify, but a free movement in the light of reason and intelligence towards that which is seen to be most truly love-worthy and adorable.

And thus we are clearly taught what the spirit of true religion is from first to last. Its animating motive is no calculation of self-interest or advantage either here or hereafter. However valuable such motives may be, as leading ultimately to true religion, neither the hope of reward nor the fear of punishment enters into true religion. True religion in its essence is purely an assimilation of the soul, a conformity to God, the adoring contemplation and culture in the mind of the Glory of God expressing itself in a soul-delighting flow towards communion with Him.

### *Moral Obligation.*

In order to be enabled to place in juxtaposition those faculties in man which are most nearly allied, let us here call to mind that not only do God and the soul exist, but also the world or the universe. Here, then, is a third Being or Power, and plainly it is one of great potency. Under the law of assimilation it must needs act with great influence upon the soul. The mind must tend to be impressed constitutionally not only by a Divine,



but by a cosmical assimilative action. And of this action let us here ask what must be the general character? It is commonly supposed in the present day that the external world, in so far as the mind is concerned, exhausts itself in giving sensations or perceptions of individual external objects. Now, perception is no doubt a fine example of assimilative action, as we shall soon see. But the perception of individual objects, one by one, cannot exhaust the assimilative influence of the world as a whole. The world as a whole, as an economy, and not a multitude of particular objects merely, must act assimilatively, and as such must impress the soul. Now the world in this point of view quite transcends knowledge. Its assimilative action on the mind, therefore, cannot produce in the latter clear and distinct ideas. It cannot produce an impression more definite than that which results from the being of God, and therefore nothing more definite than an uneasiness to fall in with the universe so as to sustain it. In a word, the assimilative action upon the soul, of the world as a whole, must produce feeling only, and that an "obligation" to maintain its economy. And hence, as that economy is liable to be grossly misconceived, we may have a Feticism in morals as well as in religion. But even at the worst, all will not be utterly wrong.

We may go a step further. Thus the economy of the world, even when regarded as the universe, and in all its details, is undoubtedly expressed accurately overhead by the idea of "Order." All the parts are so adjusted to each other, and work so as to form one harmonious whole. This the cosmical law of assimilation secures. The functioning of each part is so adjusted as to perpetuate the being, nay, the wellbeing of the whole. The present is harmoniously interwoven with the past and the future. Every object, when it is in its right place in nature is kindred with its environments. The individual is a member of the family. The family is a member of the nation. There is a community, and there ought to be a communion of nations. Each works in all and all in each. A reciprocal assimilative influence operates universally. And of this the expression in the consciousness of the human soul, when that soul is in a duly impressible state, ought to be a sense of obligation to observe, and, so far as in her lies, to maintain the universal order from the impress of which she cannot escape, however great the local disorder in the midst of which she may happen to be placed at the time. Now,

this consciousness which never ceases to insist upon order as the right thing, when viewed in the face of the fact that a man may, in virtue of the freedom of his will, traverse and violate it if he please, exists, and is named moral approbation. And thus, under the law of assimilation, and assuming with all mankind the existence of the World as well as that of God and of the Soul, along with religious obligation, we find man the subject of moral obligation also.

These two obligations are justly regarded as distinct and as belonging to distinct spheres of duty. But they mutually support each other, and are beautifully interwoven, and indeed agree in most of their features. Thus, as in religious obligation the soul desires simply to acquit itself of the duty called for, apart altogether from considerations of reward or punishment, so in moral obligation does the soul desire to acquit herself of her duties, cost what they may. Pure morality is no less disinterested than true religion. Not that either of them can possibly be realised without bringing in due time its own reward along with it. The economy of the world, which implies a harmony between the wellbeing of the parts and the wellbeing of the whole, is so complete, that, when obeying the behests either of religious or moral obligation, it is only in very exceptional cases that even the individual permanently suffers. So deep-laid, indeed, is this harmony between well-being and well-doing, whatever the inner motion of the action, that let all the individuals in any community, or let all the world, adopt as the end and aim of all their actions a true and enlightened self-interest, and the general result will be the same as if each acted purely from conscious obligation to do what is right, without any view to his own advantage at all. But between the inner life and character of the two classes of actions, or rather of actors, there would be this difference,—that those who are acting from interested motives only are, in so doing, selling their birthright as the children of God, nay, as members in the brotherhood of humanity, for a mess of private enjoyment which generally issues in disappointment at last ; while those who act from a sense of duty, in so far as they acquit themselves aright, always find themselves strong and happy at the time, and have nothing to fear from the future. And no wonder ; for they live in the light of God's countenance, and move along with the glorious tide of the universe ; while the merely selfish man, with many clouds overhead, is ever struggling

against that tide unconscious of its existence, and can swim in eddies only, which he mistakes for the universe.

### *Reason.*

We have already seen, when treating of consciousness, that there belongs to a Being, when powerful enough to be free more or less, and when constituting a member in the universe, the power of manifesting itself to itself, and of knowing, to a certain extent at least, what itself is. Hence, from the mind's own substance and activity, there results a knowledge of Being and Action, as also of Action arising out of Being, and therefore there results a knowledge of Cause.

Hence, also, from the mind's own identity, along with its life or changefulness, there results a knowledge of identity and change, that is, Identity and Difference ; and so on.

But such knowledge must be of a most inarticulate kind, and would be better named nascent than innate. If the mind had no other source of knowledge but self, nothing could be distinctly conceived or truly known by it. To be distinctly informed as to anything, the mind must be informed from more sources than one. As in still water a ripple forms only at the meeting of streams from different sources, so in the mind, with regard to articulate knowledge, more influences than one must always concur in forming it ; and the more these influences are similar to each other, provided they come from different quarters, the more is the resulting knowledge satisfactory.

It may, perhaps, be thought that such a statement stands in opposition to Sir Isaac Newton's first rule of reasoning in philosophy, which claims also the authority of Aristotle in its favour. That rule is to the effect, that " we are to admit no more causes of natural things, but such as are both true and sufficient to explain their appearance." But in this announcement of the rule (though not in the comment on it which Newton gives) this philosopher has saved philosophy by the introduction into it of the term " true." Doubtless we are not to admit more causes of natural things than such as are true. But, even immediately after Newton's own day, by John Locke and others, and more especially in our own day by Sir Wm. Hamilton of Edinburgh and others, this rule, under the name of the Law of Parsimony, has been made to assume a character which is wholly subjective, and which



breaks loose from nature altogether. Having found or fancied some hypothesis that seems adequate as a cause for a phenomenon, we are told not to look for any others—nay, to reject the claims and pretensions of all others. The results of my own observation of nature is to the effect that no such law, as a law of parsimony, exists. Instead of being guided by parsimony, nature delights in dispensing her wealth, and in enriching every object. To make sure of the fulfilment of her economy, in order to realise her phenomena, she usually makes concurrent causes to bear upon each, although, in ordinary circumstances, it may seem to us as if one of these causes might have been sufficient. Further, lest any of those which are brought into action should be frustrated, she has usually other causes in reserve in the same field. Nature absolutely scouts this supposed law of parsimony. That law would dictate, for instance, that the venous system was adequate to account for the return of the fluids of the body to the heart, but nature gives the lymphatic system also; nay, in addition to this, a centripetal movement of the fluids through the tissues, and in opposition to all obstacles. The law of parsimony would dictate that the sickliness of a plant, growing under an umbrageous tree, was fully accounted for by want of sunlight, for shadow alone would undoubtedly produce such sickliness. But to this cause nature adds others—the consumption, for instance, both by the foliage of the tree above, and by the roots beneath, of the carbonic acid, ammonia, and moisture, which the sickly plant required, in order to be in health. And so in other cases—perhaps in every case. Not only are there those classes of causes which Aristotle long ago so happily signalled, but there are concurrent causes of the same class; and the limitations to knowledge, which the method of modern science is now occasioning, are in no small measure owing to a neglect or exclusion of this fact. Is any knowledge innate, or is it all the product of experience? Such is the alternative which this law of parsimony dictates. But nature recognises no such question. The answer is, that from the mind's own Being and make, it acquires much of what may indeed be entitled to the name of knowledge; but, in order to acquire its knowledge, such as it is, the mind must be where it is. If the mind were placed in solitude, out of all relations, and in outer darkness, without previous experience, all thought and feeling would certainly remain for ever at zero. The ideas which, independently of its environments, exist for the mind, are like the

veins in the marble which is yet in the block. Practice, reflection, and experience, like the sculptor's chisel, are needed to bring them out, and then they become distinct objects of thought.

But the case of a mind left altogether to itself need not be considered by us. The mind never is, and never can be wholly alone. The Being of God is always imminent. And as the mind, in virtue of its intimate receptivity, is always undergoing assimilation either to itself as it is, and thus affirming conscious identity, or reproducing its former by acquired states, and thus remembering, &c., so must it be always undergoing, more or less, according as its receptivity in that direction is greater or less, assimilation to the Divine Being and His attributes. It must be continually or constitutionally penetrated, so to speak, with a nascent knowledge of the Omnipotent and the Infinite, the Absolute and the Perfect. In a word, in virtue of the law of assimilation, and the abiding presence at once of the soul to herself, and of God to the soul, there must exist in the soul those abiding modes of mental action which go by the name of First Principles, Laws, belief, or, in one word, Reason. And that they are justly entitled to the names of principles or laws fully appears from the genesis, and the conditions of existence which we have assigned to them. Thus they cannot but speak with authority; for they are supreme. And they must eventually oust all others if they cannot be brought to coexist harmoniously with them; for they are the most deeply seated, and, in virtue of the imminence of their cause, they must be reproduced as fast as they are obliterated or forgotten. They must, in short, be characterised by that very authority and necessity which are ascribed to the principles of reason or the laws of belief.

And now, by their aid, something like definite knowledge seems to be possible, or rather, indeed, inevitable. This new manifestation of Being, that of the Divine Being, which the soul acquires in virtue of her position as living and moving, and having her Being in Him, must enter into synthesis with that which the soul has from herself as Being; and that synthetic holding in the synthetico-analytical rhythm of the mind, being subjected to analysis, it appears certain that there must be a differentiation of the idea of mere Being, indefinite Being, into that of infinite Being on the one hand, and finite Being on the other, with their respective attributes. There is reason for inferring that the soul can now no longer escape from the conclusion that she is herself

a finite Being, while, at the same time, an infinite Being is imminent. Happy for her if she feels the latter fact as strongly as she ought! and can keep self in its own subordinate place. But usually, alas! it is quite otherwise. Usually, almost unavoidably, self, the *ego*, as soon as it has acquired the consciousness of its own existence, seats itself on the throne, and construes all things merely as its own attendants. Its conclusions are no better than a travesty of things as they are. "Man, the measure of all things," "Protagorus for ever," that is the "ticket" for the day. The greater part of our so-called modern science consists of this sort of thing.—But not so in the soul that is sensitively alive to the glorious impress of the Omnipotent and the Infinite. Not so in the adoring Spirit which, after and under the Great Creator, loves all Being, and, that it may not be put to the pain of denial, duly watches its own gates against the entrance of error.

### *Idea.*

But why should I avoid the term "idea," which is so constantly employed in this field, and has been so constantly employed ever since mental philosophy has had an existence? Certainly not, because such a term, and the phenomenon which it denotes, are alien to our philosophy! On the contrary, the universal function of our great cosmical law is Assimilation, and what term could express better the corresponding phenomenon than the term *Idea*? An idea, it is usually said, cannot be an image of that of which it is the idea, though the term etymologically considered implies as much. Now, according to our theory of ideas, it need not be an image. In order to be an idea, it is enough if it be an Assimilation of a kind appropriate to the object of which it is the idea. It is certainly bold to affirm that in no case nor sense whatever can an idea be an image. But in some cases, at least, it certainly is not. It obviously is not in reference to the ideas which belong to the sphere of Reason and Obligation, both religious and moral.

Thus our cosmical law of Assimilation finds ready made in the language, both of philosophy and common talk, a term expressive of its characteristic product in the spiritual world—namely, "idea." And the soul, in virtue of her position in the universe, as ever in her own presence, and ever in the presence of God, is put constitutionally in possession of the ideas of reason.

And here it might seem as if an articulate enumeration of these



ideas were desirable. But such an enumeration, in order to be intelligible, would be possible only in relation to other ideas acquired by the mind in virtue of its relation to the world around it. And for such an enumeration, therefore, this is plainly not the place. But the sooner we come to that place the better.

### *Perception.*

Now, then, let us turn to those phenomena which are determined in the mind by its mundane relations. And yet, while we do so, let us do it with the greatest rapidity ; for the mind is known to us only as embodied, that is, as specially invested by an individualised structure, consisting of elements different from itself of which we as yet know nothing, but of which the imminence to the mind is so intense, compared with that of external nature, that a confusion, if not even a fusion, of mental and bodily phenomena is to be apprehended, and, at any rate, the reciprocity is so complete that an unravelling and a successful analysis of it in the actual state of science is quite hopeless.

There are, indeed, what are named "the avenues of the senses," "the five gates of knowledge ;" and if they were true avenues and gates merely, through which the self-manifesting power of external objects, and the co-ordinate receptivity of the mind, could act and react without obstruction, then under the law of Assimilation there would result, as soon as object and subject came face to face with one another, all that is implied by a clear and distinct perception of the object looked at. The mind, in submitting directly, in so far as its inner activity or personality would permit, to the assimilative influence of the object (to whose sphere of assimilative action no limit as to distance can be assigned), would be assimilated to that object in a way which is accurately described, when it is said that the mind would perceive that object, but which it is vain to attempt to illustrate by mechanical constructions or imagery of any kind.

But such direct and simple perception is not possible to man in his embodied state. There are obstacles in the way. The universal æther, at all events, existing everywhere in the outward, as also in the axes of the nervelets of sensation, if indeed they be clear of more gross matter, is in the way ; and when it is at rest, or acting otherwise than according to a certain rhythm, it puts a stop to all perception of external objects. In that case it

acts with regard to the self-manifesting power of such objects like an absorptive medium with regard to light. But when, by an external object, its particles are made to move rhythmically with certain forms and dimensions of motion, it is an obstacle to their self-manifesting power no longer. In the lines of such motion it is nearly, if not perfectly, transparent. During the day distant objects, and during the night even the fixed stars, manifest themselves to the human mind. That manifestation, indeed, depending as it does on a mode of motion in the æther, cannot take place otherwise than according to the laws of motion and elasticity. It must, therefore, be always in perspective, and a projection merely of the true form of the object, not that true form itself. In a word, it can be a symbolic manifestation only ; and, in the human species, it is only after many mistakes that the symbol comes to manifest the real object to the mind. But, in other species which exist from the first wholly in harmony with nature, and in which perceptivity is not disturbed by the co-existence of an undetermined will—in those species, for which a moral life is not designed, and which are endowed from the first with ripe organs of sense, and instincts adequate to the conditions of their existence,—the self-manifesting power of objects reaches them immediately in its true characters. Witness a pheasant the hour that it has escaped from the egg, run up with precision to a small object which may be several yards distant from it, knowing that object from the first to be suitable food ; or witness a cobra-capella, just set free by breaking the egg in which it was enclosed, immediately rear itself up and offer battle to the hand that liberated it, with as much ceremony, and strike with as much precision, as if it were an old snake with effective fangs. Phenomena of this order are manifold all through nature, and cannot be denied. Here, then, we have the function of perception realised in a typical manner. Here we have the phenomena exhibited in that form which ought to be regarded as cosmical—that is, where the self-manifesting power or perceptibility of objects comes face to face, and into immediate relation with the perceptivity of living Beings, all the obstacles between being surmounted even as if they were not in the way at all.

But, unhappily for the progress of philosophy, man has been taken as the type—man of whom it has been jocularly, yet truly said, that he enters upon life as “a born idiot,” and whose organs of sense and whole organism, it must be confessed, are so defective at first, that not till after more than a year can he even balance

himself in the most elementary of all antagonisms, that of gravitation.

In man, therefore, as might be expected, the obstacles to the distinct vision of objects immediately on their presentation are insuperable. Nor that at the first only. That versatility and power of imagining which is implied in the possession of liberty, expose man all his life, when engaged in observing, to form misconceptions. The study of perception in man, therefore, is beset with great difficulties, and little has, indeed, been made of it as yet. Nor is science in its most advanced state equal to the inquiry. Such an undertaking, in fact, if it is to be successfully accomplished, implies both a full knowledge of the æther and of its modes of action, of the material system and its modes of action, and of the nervous system and its modes of action. But of all these things science down to the present moment is profoundly ignorant. We shall therefore merely glance at the phenomena as they present themselves to a man in the full possession of his senses.

### *Subject and Object.*

First, then, given an external object and a mind possessing adequate impressibility or sensibility in the same field, synthesis immediately takes place. It is not such a synthesis, however, as issues in the fusion of both object and mind into one. On the contrary, both object and mind have an individualised existence each its own, and this, the self-assimilative and consequently self-conservative action of each tends as its first function to maintain. Moreover, these realities now standing face to face, that is, the mind and the external object, stand opposite to each other as centres of reciprocally assimilative action. They stand in a position of essentially antithetic action. And thus, according to our theory, we obtain, as the primary condition of normal intellectual action in the sphere of the finite, the distinction of *subject* and *object*, or, in the language of consciousness, the “I” or Ego, and the “not-me” or non-Ego.

### *Position and Space—Time and Motion.*

But this is not all that develops itself as proper to the same state of mind. By an act of volition, while the attention continues directed as before, the external object may be discharged or forgotten, and the same direction may be thought, the object being



away. And now there manifests itself as a residuum in perception, as the pure or empty complement of the object, a more articulate conception of an outward than that which the mind has from itself merely—in a word, a conception of space or place not now as a boundless infinity, but as that which is limitable and divisible and capable of form.

And similarly, as an inner residuum, as the complement of the mind's changefulness, when every change in particular is put out of the way, attention continued in this direction gives Duration, not now as the symbol of eternity, but under the articulate conceptions of past, present, and future. These intuitions, therefore, space and time, stand on a basis that is both objective and subjective. No wonder they are quite insuperable. No wonder they always present themselves when nothing else is given to engage the mind's eye, and thus to cause them to be forgotten for the time.

But the mind cannot be in possession of such ideas as that of space, considered as limitable and divisible, say the idea of position or form, and that of duration, say past, present, and future, without spontaneously compassing their synthesis. Now, of such a synthesis what is the expression? Is it not plainly the idea of here and there with transition but yet continuity between them? And what is this but the idea of motion?

### *Force—Physics.*

Now to these conceptions add power, which lies in our nature more deeply seated than any of them, and we obtain that group of ideas of which Physical Science is but the orderly development. No wonder, then, that physical science in its fundamental ideas appears so certain and so clear, and affords so much mental enjoyment. It has to do with those ideas only which are most elementary, and which admit with the greatest facility at once of intuition, of analysis and of synthesis, in a word, of the full play of the mind; and to this, as has been shown, intellectual enjoyment and satisfaction always attach, be the subject what it may.

The radical evil of science in our day is a grievous misconception of the nature of force in its ground, a misconception extending, therefore, to the whole of the sphere of Reality. Force, even in its original or rather aboriginal state and form, is considered at present by the most popular advocates of science as a thing all whose manifestations may be expressed in measurable terms of space and

time, in other words, mathematically. Mental force is regarded merely as an ultimate development or efflorescence from certain organisms of that which in its ground is wholly blind and mechanical. Now, this is precisely an inversion of the fact.

But happily there is reason to believe that this view of things cannot last long. It has often taken possession of men's minds before. The history of thought has fully shown its utter inadequacy to solve the problems of philosophy. The essential theism of the human mind is absolutely opposed to it. Let us hope that it will soon pass away as it has done before, and that mental power will be resumed as the type, of which mechanical force is the limitation designed for certain ends, and effected, no doubt, in some manner that is simple and beautiful, though what that is we have not come yet to consider.

### *Sensationalism.*

While the object is assimilating the mind to itself, the assimilative action of that object is in a normal state of mental action, soon stopped by the inner activity proceeding from the mind in an opposite direction. The *ego* is constituted, and, in being constituted, claims self-possession and identity as its inalienable right. At the same time, some special form of consciousness due to the external world is awoke, into which the *ego* enters as a factor, and for this in its various modes the names are—I see, I I hear, I smell, I touch, I taste, &c. And thus do we reach the phenomenon of normal sensations, corresponding to external objects. And it belongs to our philosophy, in accordance with the absolute affirmations of common sense, to hold that these sensations are produced by the objects themselves, acting immediately upon the mind, and expressing themselves, though badly, yet as well as they can, in terms of mind. This, according to our views of the nature of objects, they may do, since we ascribe to every object beyond its visible or tangible form an extensiveness to which no limits in distance can be assigned. This sphere of action, in the actual state of science, is admitted only in reference to the gravitation of objects, but we hold it in reference to other properties also, and especially their perceptibility, or self-manifesting power. The prevalent hypothesis is that even when we are directly observing an external object, and affirming, with all the confidence of which we are capable, that we see it,

hear it, smell it, touch it, &c., yet we are in reality completely mistaken. The prevalent hypothesis is, that it is only some sort of an image of it that we see, such as that which is formed in the retina of a dead animal when its eye is used as a camera obscura, that image being connected on our part with its object only by practice and inference. It is certain, however, in the case of percipients which are capable of taking their place in nature as soon as they are born, that no practice or experience whatever is necessary, in order to their distinct perception of distant objects; and that not only as to their distances and forms, but as to their specific relations to the individual percipient. (*See* p. 87.) The evidence, also, that certain objects are sometimes perceived otherwise than by the external senses, appears to be insuperable. Common sense, which affirms in all unsophisticated minds that external objects themselves are perceived, when construed into a science of perception, as we have done, may, indeed, demand an assent to more difficult conceptions than the image-theory; for the latter has all the charm of a mechanical construction, and therefore affords to the student a play of mind both in analysis and synthesis which is always pleasing. But our view is surely worth the cost of mastering it. In fact the idea-theory so completely knocks down common sense in its own appropriate field, that field in which it believes itself to be standing most firmly upon its feet, that it is impossible to avoid the inference that if this be the way of it,—if consciousness be mendacious even here, it is of no use to think about the discovery of reality anywhere; for if what is most peremptorily given us as truth and reality, is no more than a mere shadow (if indeed so much), and that projected within the mind itself,—then truly “a possibility,” or, let us say, “some kind of orderly stimulus of sensations,” is all that we can ever know for certain of the external universe, as is indeed frankly admitted by consistent sensationalists.

Holding fast, then, in the meantime, by common sense, whether we succeed in developing it into a philosophy or not, let us proceed with tracing the phenomena which must arise in the course of the action and reaction of object and subject, under the ever recurring law of assimilation. This, as will have been already perceived, is the sheet-anchor of our philosophy, and to this law it must be admitted that we are very faithful, since while all other works in modern science and philosophy invoke the aid of many different laws, some rational and some empirical, we avail



ourselves of one only. Yes; and by the action of one law only we undertake to explain all the phenomena which we discuss.

### *The Mythological Epoch.*

Under the law of assimilation the external object assimilates the mind to itself. But to this the mind, in virtue of its own individualised power, and the self-assimilative or conservative action which this implies, puts a stop. And when there is an equilibrium, the result is the just perception of the object, with the appropriate sensations. But this equilibrium, and accurate distribution between object and subject, is reached only after much swinging to opposite sides, which, viewed in reference to the history of the human mind, are epochs. And of these we may name the first swing, the epoch of Mythology or poetry, and the last swing, that of mathematics, or (adopting its own name for itself) Positivism.

While the object is assimilating the mind to itself, the mind, in its turn, is assimilating the object to itself; and here, in the first instance, in virtue of the treasures of life that there are in the mind, feelings and views well out of it fast, and rise in the mind in quite a cloud, and then they surreptitiously fly forth, and cluster around, and cling to, pierce and house themselves, and find a home in the objects beheld—nay, possibly, in the very names merely which recall the objects.

To what extent, and whether to any extent, in reference to certain objects at least, the mind can actually assimilate these objects to itself, we shall probably never know, because the objects referred to have no eye within to observe, nor though they had an eye, have they a tongue to tell us what is happening to them. In some cases, indeed, assimilations to mind are obvious. But these so generally take place through the somatic investiture, that nothing can be here affirmed on this subject that would not be open to criticism. But what tends to happen in the observer's own mind at the time when his mental power is flowing out upon objects may be ascertained, and in fact is well known. It is well known that the mind tends to assimilate the object to itself, to animate it, to invest it with thought and feeling, and to find in it all that there is in self. The contemplation of nature, as a whole, tends to be a communion with the Great Spirit; and of individual objects in nature, a communion with spirits more or less kindred

with self. Science to a mind in this state is as yet all and only a mythology. And so it is in children, and glowing hearts such as those of young mothers, even in this iron age.

And thus does our theory fully account for an epoch in the development of the human mind, which manifests itself both in history and in the now extant world in the position which our theory assigns to it.\*

\* At a time of life when the author had both time and money to spare, and when he thought that there was a larger number of inquiring people in the world than he believes in now, he expressed himself on this subject more fully thus :—

“Another very interesting feature which the emotion of the Beautiful displays in a peculiarly eminent manner, is its tendency to diffuse itself over the objects which awake it, so to appear as if it belonged to them, and not to the mind that contemplates them. Hence there arises this very interesting phenomenon, that the mere materialism of nature seems in many cases invested with the qualities proper to mind only ; and sun, moon, and stars,—the sea, solitudes, ruins, groves, ‘running brooks, stones, and everything,’ seem to embosom a congenial spirit, and to express feelings responsive to those with which we gaze on them. So completely, indeed, and so unconsciously, is the transference of life and feeling made from the mind of the beholder to the object beheld, that the view which naturally suggests itself in contemplating nature, and which has, in point of fact, been poetically, and sometimes literally, held in all ages, is that nature is really full of feeling, and animated either by one great Spirit, whose expression in every region is always kindred with the scene, or by many spirits, each of which has its own congenial and peculiar dwelling-place. It has even been maintained philosophically that this is really the case.

“But without entering on the question whether Nature ought to be regarded as in some sense animated or not, it may be satisfactorily shown that the landscape, the ocean, the starry heavens, and picturesque and sublime objects generally, owe their expressiveness not to anything felt by them, but to something felt by him who contemplates them ; that they reflect only, and do not utter feeling ; in a word, that they are so many natural mirrors, beautifully varied by the Creator ; that, when looked into, they may draw out and reflect with truth and fulness all our varied and ever-varying sensibilities. It may be satisfactorily shown that the spirits which seem to inhabit every lovely and every lonely spot, are but the shadowy images of our own emotions, which, as if they found the human breast an uneasy dwelling-place, seem fled to find an abode in the bosom of surrounding nature.

“It may perhaps seem strange that the mind should possess such a power of apparent translation ; nevertheless this is but a particular case of a very comprehensive psychological law, in virtue of which the mind, when in a state of emotion, always tends to impute to some object external to itself its own feelings. This law may be called the law of imputation, and many examples of it might be adduced. Thus the complacent and affectionate mother imputes to her unconscious infant all the tenderness with which she herself gazes on it. The delightful overflowings of her own heart seem to her to be beautiful emanations radiating from the face of her little one. The lover, in like manner, imputes to the object of his adoration all the charms with which his passion inspires himself, and ascribes to her every look and smile a beauteous origin and signification, which, alas ! are but the creation of his own fancy.”—See “The Beautiful the

### *The Positive Epoch.*

However strong the tendency of the mind at first to assimilate all nature to itself, it is found ere long that, in the main, nature is not assimilable; nay, that it rather stands in opposition to self. Thus is the *ego* called upon to subject to a destructive criticism its own first views respecting the *non-ego*. It enters, in fact, upon a period of reaction against the poetic and mythic view of nature, in the embrace of which it had lived happy for the time. And during that epoch it was not more fully bent on finding the free movements of life everywhere, than it is now bent on referring every motion to straight lines, and measuring them all according to some mathematical power of the distance from their origin. It was not formerly more fully bent on finding that all was the expression of mind, than it is now bent on finding that all is mere machinery, revolving machinery indeed, but still only a revolving stereotype press, into the origin, design, or destiny, of which it is held to be vain to inquire, inasmuch as human thought, though it persistently equals itself to such inquiries, is merely printed matter thrown off by that machinery so badly composed as to be incorrigible.

Thus does the mind, in virtue of its two-fold constitution in consciousness, its synthetico-analytical rhythm, tend to swing at first, nay, from first to last, into one or other of two extremes; now merging the material world in mind, and creating a world of mythology and poetry; now merging mind in the material world, and affirming all things to be a mere display of applied mathematics. Both views are equally subjective, both are at once defective and exaggerated. Both, therefore, are to be avoided, and which the two most, we may leave the reader to determine for himself. Happily there is something within reach, the balance of both, which is better than either.

### *The Scientific Epoch.*

When the mental activity has fixed itself on an object, then there is that most important state of mental functioning which usually bears the name of *Attention*, and when existing in its most sustained and intense form, *Application*. Its fixedness is so far contrary to the nature of the mind, which is essentially active

Picturesque, and the Sublime," by the Rev. J. G. Macvicar, M.A., 1837, London; and the author's theory matured in "The Philosophy of the Beautiful," Edinburgh, 1850.



or changeful, that it needs to be sustained by an act of the will. But this it can be, at least after adequate practice and in those who have the aptitude, to an almost indefinite extent. Now, out of this frame of mind it is that all great discoveries have come. But whether these are of the nature of births in the mind, to which the object contemplated is merely the stimulus, or whether they are not happy views given by the object of itself, is not agreed. Application is, therefore, altogether invaluable.

It is, however, equally to be considered that it is from the overforcing and misdirection of application that all partial views and most errors take their rise. This faculty, therefore, is the source at once of the greatest good and of the greatest evils.

How, then, it may be well asked, ought attention to be regulated ; or rather, let us say, what is its normal state in relation to the presentation of an object with which it is co-ordinate ? Now, to this the answer certainly is,—that given an object of attention, there ought in a perfectly normal state of things to be no forthputting of an effort of the will to interfere with the true spontaneity of the mind's action one way or another. The whole mind in the synthetico-analytic mode of action which the presentation of the object awakes in it, ought to be left to bestow itself upon that object without any interference of the part of the *ego*. And in ordinary perception, by the use of the senses, such a state of things is usually secured. But in the sphere of reflection no discipline is more difficult, if indeed it be attainable by culture at all. And hence interminable speculation and no end of partial views. Hence, also, abundance of inverted views, in which subjective is put for objective, and *vice versâ*. Hence, in a word, endless error.

But the method of reaching the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, however difficult it may be practically to compass it, is not of difficult statement. It is plainly to the effect that Synthesis (the-object-holding-capacity) shall supply new food for the perceptivity as fast as Analysis (or attention) assimilates or comes to understand what has presented itself already. For then, things will be received, understood, and retained in the mind in their true relations ; and the mind, when acquiring ideas, will be kept diligent, and not be permitted to break off and speculate *ad libitum*, as in virtue of its egotism an empty mind ever tends to do.

Supposing the normal order as described above to have been observed from first to last, then, in reference to the object in hand, mental action comes to a close in an accurate and at the same

time a clear and distinct perception of that object. And on the retrospect of what has been done, it will be seen that the mind has accomplished three phases of action, or rather, indeed, has completed one, that has been cut in upon and modified by another, which occupied the middle period, and thus so far partitioned the one into three. The first is pure synthesis, in which the object strikes the mind in its totality, but at the same time all in confusion. It therefore causes in the mind embarrassment and consequent uneasiness ; for the mind has lost its liberty or power of rambling among objects without gaining any such clear and distinct view of the object which has fixed it, as would allow of a play of its activity in analysis and synthesis upon that object. Urged by this uneasiness, therefore, and in that *expectation* of relief which uneasiness always awakes, the mind enters on its second phase. In this it does not exclude the object presenting altogether. That it has not power to do. The law of assimilation insists upon its continuing to hold the object to some extent. But it excludes it all save some single point. And in this it finds relief, especially if on that point it bestows itself until it has come to understand it ; for the glare, the confusion of the original presentation, has been reduced to a point. Then the mind moves to another point, and bestows itself upon it. And thus it finds a play for its activity, and, consequently, a measure of relief in moving from point to point of the object presenting ; and so on, until the whole of that object has been surveyed. This accomplished, that is, *analysis completed*, nothing remains to restrict the original synthetic holding of the object. That object, therefore, now again occupies the mind wholly as it did at first. But there is a great difference in the view which the mind now takes of the object, compared with what it took at first. The object is now no longer a thing of confusion and a cause of uneasiness to the mind. It is lighted up with intelligence, and affords a field for the full and free play of the intellect upon it. The mind as a member in the universe holds the object in synthesis, and as an individual it holds it in analysis. The mind's relations and its functions in reference to the object are fulfilled. The uneasiness, therefore, with which it regarded the object at first, has been displaced by intellectual enjoyment (for enjoyment is always either the companion or the reward of natural conditions fulfilled). Science has taken the place of ignorance, and phenomena have been referred to mind or to matter according to their true parentage.

*Retention.*

But we have already anticipated a mental phenomenon which cannot but be of the greatest value and significance. The mind having been once assimilated to a variety of objects by the presentation of these objects, is no longer precisely what it was before. It has acquired a new state, a new mode of Being. The *ego* has, indeed, all along remained in possession of itself. But it has, at the same time, been put in possession of many assimilations by external objects. Nor does any reason appear why such assimilations once effected in the mind should ever after wholly vanish. On the contrary, no sooner does any individualised thing, such as one of the assimilations referred to, come into existence, but under the law of assimilation, it is invested with a *vis inertiae*, a self-assimilative, that is, a self-conservative power.

Thus must the mind have in store two classes of ideas. They may be severally distinguished as the one *constitutional* and the other *incidental*; the former depending on a continuous presence or presentation, viz., that of God to the soul, and that of the soul to herself, and constituting reason; the latter depending on the occasional presentation of surrounding objects, and constituting the materials of experience.

Will the latter then, let us ask, be liable to re-present themselves to consciousness from time to time in a rambling and merely chaotic manner? If so, surely they will be a greater inconvenience than an advantage. But no; against such a state of things the law of assimilation amply provides.

*Memory.*

In the absence or non-observation of external objects, and during the neglect of the ideas of reason, when, in short, the mind is in a vacant state, it must at such seasons bestow its assimilative action upon itself. It must tend to assimilate its existing state to some former state; and thus it must tend to bring up into consciousness the formerly acquired ideas now in store. Nor will these ideas tend to come up spontaneously in disconnected groups, unless they have been previously disjointed by special analysis. They will obviously tend to come up, cohering in those very groups in which they originally impressed the mind and



were received as unities in it. And thus when all is spontaneous, and the present is no more to the mind than the past, there will be the phenomenon of living in the past. And when the present is taken and held as the principal point of view, there will be the phenomenon of remembering and the exercise of memory.

*Consecution (Leibnitz).—The Inductive Judgment.*

The assimilation of that which is, or which is to be, to that which has been, and has been observed, and which we may designate the law of redintegration, applies universally. And under the general canon which affirms identity when no effective difference appears, it applies to the future as well as the past, and thus brings the past into the present and becomes a guide of life. In virtue of this law, it comes to pass that when the conditions in which a phenomenon has been already observed recur, and the beginnings of the phenomenon are observed again or conceived anew, the mind, remembering the past, assimilates itself to what it was before, and predicts with confidence the completion of what has commenced again, that is, the recurrence of the whole phenomenon.

Such is the true theory of the inductive judgment. It does not stand high in the intellectual scale. And, accordingly, as is well known, in uncultivated or superstitious minds, who do not distinguish between the conditions productive of a phenomenon and its accidental concomitants, the inductive judgment is the source of interminable blundering. It is a judgment of the very same order as that which leads a dog to howl when a stick is held over him, if he have been beaten with a stick on some former occasion. It is, consequently, no argument whatever for the invariable constancy of nature, much less is it a sanction for this tenet. Apart from cosmological theories, indeed, there is no sanction at all for this tenet but that which the testimonies of the past and the observations of the present supply. If a narrative attests the observation of seemingly exceptional phenomena, miracles, or what in general may be called the supernatural, the part of the man of science is, as in other cases, simply to inquire and to determine as to the accuracy of the observation. In so far as scientific principles are concerned, miracle or no miracle is an open question. The belief in a dead uniformity of phenomena from all Eternity, in a stated recurrence of the same conditions of Existence, and in the

very same phenomena when the same conditions of Existence recur, which the popular science of our day either broadly insinuates or positively affirms, is perhaps the poorest expression of human conception that has ever claimed the name of philosophy.

### *Abstraction or Selective Attention.*

But the mind, though not engaged with the observation of a present object, is not under the necessity of always slavishly remembering something past. The personal activity, the analytic power, just as when engaged on a display of objects presenting themselves for the first time, may fix itself as it may please on any one idea or group of ideas in the revolving panorama of past experience now recalled, to the neglect of all the others. In this field, as in the other, it may accomplish an act of *selective attention*, of which the good and the evil have been already touched upon. And this, whatever its dangers, is that to which the name of "Abstraction" has been awarded, and on which all philosophical praise is popularly bestowed.

### *Classification.*

But Abstraction being wholly and solely of the nature of analysis, cannot rule long, if indeed at all, alone. As soon as the effort ceases by which analysis has been sustained, the synthetic action of the mind spontaneously supervenes, and other ideas come in upon that which Abstraction has up to that moment detained in consciousness. And of these ideas, what shall the general character be? This the law of assimilation must of course determine, for there is no other law. Now, does not the very name of that law suggest that the ideas now rising up in the mind, perhaps crowding up into consciousness, shall be similar? And such they are well known to be. And thus does our theory give the classification of objects on the ground of their similarity as necessary or unavoidable, and therefore legitimate. But if legitimate or normal mentally, then such also that the material world must respond; for the material world is both a manifestation of mind as to its origin and design, and a residuum or deposit of mind as to its substance. Objects, therefore, when classified according to the amount of their most vital resemblances, are classified according to a natural method.

*Generalisation.*

But similars are not identicals. After a classification has been made, therefore, on the ground of an observed similarity, there opens up a field for renewed abstraction or selective attention. Differences, as well as identities, present themselves. But under the law of assimilation these differences will tend to pass out of consciousness, and those features in the objects classified which are identical will tend to be kept in mind. And this is that important process in the normal spontaneity of the intellect which bears the name of Generalisation. It is deemed to be all-important. And so it is for sound philosophy ; but not for the philosophy of those who are loudest in its praise. For them generalisation is merely vidification, merely "thought," after having accomplished an outward-bound voyage for the discovery of the universe, returning to view that universe at last only in those few lights which it can itself reflect. Generalisation is valid for discovery only in so far as mind is the type of all, only in so far as the make of the mind and the make of the universe is the same. Now, this is a point on which our most popular philosophy has but very little to say. Possibly, according to that philosophy, the products of generalisation may be nothing but the imposition of laws upon Nature as her laws, which are merely phenomena of human consciousness. And in the face of such a possibility one would have certainly have need to be solicitous about all philosophy, whether it had not better be let alone. But, happily for us, there is no occasion for solicitude. For us, all Nature is but the manifestation of mind ; and that mind is One, and such an One, as is above even the possibility of awarding existence to any thing which, when in normal action, shall belie any other thing.

*Syllogism.*

It is thought by many that in generalisation the logical functioning of the mind comes to a close, and that after the utmost generalisation has been accomplished, it can only retrace its steps and thus amuse itself or explain to itself its own meaning. And this view is no doubt countenanced by the common syllogism, whether we adopt the form of Kanada or of Aristotle, the former being the direct and natural march, the latter the studied retrace of thought. Perception, as supplying contents for the syllogism, is of course essential to both ; but it is implied and not expressed



in either. Then in the order of the intellectual spontaneity come Abstraction or selective attention, Classification and Generalisation, and that in the order now named. And thus Kanada—"This mountain is on fire (selective attention); for it smokes (classification); whatever smokes is on fire" (generalisation). And thus Aristotle—"All men are mortal (Kanada, whatever is man is mortal), (generalisation); Socrates is a man (classification); Socrates is mortal" (selective attention).

### *Ideals and Art.*

But this is a very superficial view of the intellectual functioning of the mind. It recognises as the only laws of suggestion or association (or "cohesion") of ideas, first, redintegration," that is, the reappearance of ideas as assimilated to former experience, or as products of *incidental assimilation*, learnedly set down as "coincidence or proximity in time and space;" and secondly, similarity in the ideas themselves, that is, *essential assimilation*. But there are many other occasions of suggestion besides these. Nay, it is not possible to enumerate all the occasions of suggestion. And to attempt to reduce them to law, which is the popular expression for subjecting them to the process of generalisation, is merely to attempt to include a higher order of phenomena in a lower, and to lose far more than is gained. In fact "something" suggests "nothing," and nothing may suggest anything. The soul, as a member in the cosmos, tends spontaneously to effloresce with thought. Though not in its own knowledge, yet, in point of fact, mind is "a mirror of the universe from its own point of view," and offer it gold, no man can tell what change you will get till you see it on the counter. Only, in that change you are sure to find the coin which is proper to the soul's own treasury; you are sure to find certain abiding impressions, certain indwelling ideas, which tend to take a place in every conception and in every train of thought wherever there is an opening for them. Such are the postulates of Being, Action, Unity, Identity, &c. And these the soul gives forth as she has got and holds them, that is, not as attributes confined to the limited Being which she has now discovered herself to be, but as general intuitions manifesting themselves in Mind when existing and acting not as this or that individual, but as a Perceptivity merely, of which, if she look for the origin and the fountain, she looks, not to herself, but to God, the author of all. Moreover, these

the ideas of reason, in virtue of her own intrinsic changefulness the soul is for ever differentiating within herself, and thus developing into endless variety. Meanwhile, when engaged upon the outward world, she is also called upon to observe an endless variety. Now this train of thought, whether awoke from within or from without, may be either normal or merely incidental. But in the depths of reason there must ever tend to be an echo or an image of it, which is always normal.

And hence, on the occasion of any construction by the imagination on the observation of any phenomenon, form, or action, within or without, the soul underlays it with its Ideal. More shortly, every adventitious object and action tends to suggest its Ideal. If it be asked what we mean by Ideal? the answer is that the ideal of a phenomenon, a movement, a form, an action, is that which ought to be in the circumstances as the soul conceives these circumstances. And if it be asked, what we mean by that which ought to be? the answer is that we mean the fulfilment of the cosmical laws, or in the moral sphere the maintenance of cosmical order in the circumstances conceived. Ideals prove to be symmetries and harmonies, or more generally such movements, forms, and actions as the law of assimilation dictates, and as are familiarly known by the qualities of Beauty and Goodness. As to the principles of Beauty in sensible objects, I have elsewhere shown\* that they are precisely those symmetrical areas and continuously curved lines or contours, which the cosmical laws tend to develop in material nature, and that the ideals of the Beautiful in the mind are the corresponding mathematic.

But the ideals of the Good are beholden also to the presence and influence of Him who is the fountain of goodness. Taken together, the ideals of the Beautiful and the Good, the soul has them, not as an individual insulated in space, but as a member in the creation, in intimate relationship with the Creator. And in having them she cannot but be joyful, either when she is herself able to realise them outwardly, or when she sees them realised; for in that case her activity, whether in relation with the senses or the will, must flow spontaneously and freely; and this we have found to be the sure condition of enjoyment in every case.

In the wagging of the world, however, the Actual and the Ideal do not always coincide. And in that case, in consequence

\* See "The Philosophy of the Beautiful, by John G. Macvicar, D.D., author of *An Inquiry into Human Nature*," &c. Edmonston & Douglas, Edinburgh.

of the greater force and obtrusiveness of the Actual, there is, of course, mental arrest and uneasiness. The Actual is declared to be ugly or depraved. If, indeed, the soul, notwithstanding her fusion into the mould of the body, were capable of taking a cosmical view of objects, all would be found to be beautiful to which the cosmical laws award existence. But such a view would not be suitable for us during the period of our somatic existence. In order to keep up the organisation during the long period required for the development of the soul, and for training her to obedience to cosmical law, Reason requires to be seconded by appetite, desire, and aversion. Now this it scarcely could be, if all our environments appeared to us beautiful and agreeable, as they do to the cosmically enlightened.

And thus there exists a field for art. Our incapacity to embrace Nature as a whole, and to view each object in all its reciprocities, disqualifies us for enjoying many objects that come in our way. Hence a demand to surround ourselves with certain objects only, namely, such as may enjoy fully. Now this demand our constructive imagination enables us to supply ; and the result is Art. Like Nature herself, Art may be developed either as means or as end, thus giving Useful art on the one hand, and Fine art on the other. But it is to the latter that the name and our remarks here specially apply. And what follows from our theory is this, that the secret of a composition in the fine arts which is to be successful as such, is this, that it shall be true to normal Nature so far as it goes, but at the same time more isolated, more abstract, embody fewer ideas, or exist in fewer relations than the corresponding objects in Nature usually do. Thus is the beholder able to assimilate his mind to it more completely, that is, to understand it more easily, and to enjoy it more fully. It is quite a mistake to suppose that a human Artist can produce anything whatever, that is, finer than the corresponding production of Nature, when the latter is viewed in all its greatness and in all its reciprocities. The composition of the Artist may possibly be finer when considered as its own universe, finer than any similar objects when picked out of Nature and grouped together by art,—but not finer than these same objects when viewed as they are in Nature, that is, each a source and a recipient of manifold forms, sympathies, reciprocities, and radiations.



*Dogmatism, Scepticism, and Mental Imbecility.*

There is yet another depth in the law of suggestion, and its importance cannot be over-estimated; for it appears to be the institution by which the personal power, freedom, or liberty of the mind shall have a vote in the purely intellectual sphere. I allude to that mental phenomenon, in virtue of which an idea tends to be followed, or, as is commonly said, to suggest its opposite. It takes its rise in that mental rhythm on which consciousness also depends, and which consists first in a phase of synthesis, and, immediately after, in a phase of analysis. These modes of mental action are the counterparts of each other; and hence they tend to give opposite products. But the products of synthesis are not modifiable within the mind. They are determined by the object. They express the mind when in direct and positive relation with an object, either real or ideal. They are therefore affirmative, universally affirmative. Hence it remains for analysis in its *contre coup* to affect the negative.

And in our submitting to this rhythm, does not the history of philosophy, and indeed the history of ordinary thinking appear? When synthesis becomes the habit of the mind, regardless of genuine data, there results Dogmatism. When analysis becomes the habit, without a legitimate field, there results Scepticism. When each phase acts separately, and after intervals, instead of simultaneously, there is intellectual Imbecility. Only when both in good balance co-operate powerfully and fast, is there sound judgment or good sense. Dogmatism and scepticism are both evils; but if liberty could not be secured in the intellectual sphere except on the condition of this synthetico-analytical rhythm, which thus occasionally produces them, these evils are not too great a price to pay for so great a boon.

*The Pure Dialectic.*

Moreover, the normal products of this rhythm are far greater and far better than its abortions are bad. To it, indeed, we owe our ready suggestion, not only of opposites, but of correlatives generally, and indeed all our orderly knowledge. Take an instance, the simplest possible. I conceive or posit "unity," that is, I exist in synthesis with that idea—that is, my mental

activity finds itself attending to or kept in arrest by unity as an object. But being essentially an activity, and claiming its own action as its own right, my mind naturally, that is, I naturally tend to emancipate myself from that arrest, and so to break off from the object which has been holding me in arrest. I tend to break off from the idea of unity. But if I do, and obey the law of assimilation in my act, I must break off only in the same field of thought. The idea in which I break off must somehow contain the idea of unity. Hence I say to myself "not unity, yet something in the same field as unity;" and this done, analysis has completed its phase. And now the phase of synthesis supervenes, and I obtain as a synthetic datum, "one + not one," not, however, as two, but as one, for I hold them in synthesis. But what is one + not one when held as one? Plainly it is a whole or "totality." But now analysis may cut in, which, as the expression of the mental activity, it ever tends to do; and thus looking with the analytic eye upon a totality or whole, and seeing it to consist of one + not one,—that is, one and other number or numbers not stated,—I obtain the idea of "plurality." And here the development comes to a close, for the next step is only a return upon the idea of totality. Thus a sustained, spontaneous, or constitutional, synthetic habit when acting, is cut in upon by the individual, the personal, the volitional activity, and they give together (in this case) the arithmetical elements—unity, plurality, totality.

Subjected to the same dialectic, the idea of Force, gives the series,—Cause,—Effect,—Energy.

The idea of Being gives—Being,—Acting,—Power; and so on.

But such developments do not take place with a rapidity which is altogether fatal to liberty. During the change of phase from synthesis to analysis, or back again, like the moment of rest in the swinging pendulum or undulating particle of elastic medium, a moment of contemplation normally awakes, which may be prolonged at will. The mental activity can command for itself more or less completely a state of repose. If the repose were complete, while yet the mind's eye remained open, there would be no analysis, no abstraction, no exclusion. The soul acting no longer then as an *ego*, but simply as a perceptivity or a purely intuitional Being, might mirror a given Reality as it really is, and attain to views of things as they are. There would be nothing in that case to impair its vision of the Infinite and the Absolute.

*Reasoning.*

The gift of self-directive power or liberty if, on the one hand, it opens a wide door for error, invests man, on the other hand, with the power of suspending the synthetic action of his mind for a time, that is, his judgment, in reference to much which in seeming only is belief-worthy. Liberty cannot intrude, indeed, either into the sphere of Reason,—that is, the sphere of constitutional intuition,—nor into that of unequivocal perception, nor of trustworthy recollection. Nor can it interfere with the judgment of identity, that is, with the affirmation of one thing of another when no difference between them appears. But it can interfere in a multitude of cases notwithstanding. And the result of this interference is nothing less important than the genesis of that mode of intellectual action which, when viewed without reference to any special end, is named *thinking*, and when viewed in reference to a proposed end, is named *reasoning*. And thus we see what are the conditions which render reasoning possible, and wherein it consists. It is rendered possible by the possession of such individualised mental power or liberty as can put an arrest for a time upon the synthetic habit of the mind (which always tends to accomplish its act spontaneously, and to affirm immediately), and which can thus for a time hold up to the view of the mind an object or thought without any judgment being passed upon it. And it consists in entertaining during this interval of suspended judgment without partiality the various objects, real or ideal, which present themselves according to their various relations to the thesis, and in endeavouring to carry out in reference to them the laws of the intellect. Reasoning, therefore, consists in stopping precipitate conclusions, in listening both outwardly and inwardly, in comparing and in selecting, with a view to an ultimate synthesis or judgment. It is therefore happily expressed in its integrity by the term *deliberating*.

Reasoning is the whole of our intellectual nature in exercise ; and to accomplish it fully, and bring it to a close correctly, is the greatest of all intellectual achievements. But it implies many risks. And even where the data are most rich and ample, there are two risks of a most serious nature. They arise from the use that is made of the personal power or liberty during the process.

First, if liberty is permitted to interfere too freely or too long,



so that synthesis is not allowed to strike, that is, judgment to take place, when it ought, then a sceptical habit is formed ; for the judgment, like all transformable powers, becomes weak through want of use. If, on the contrary, we do not invoke the aid of our liberty at all, and judge immediately and without reflection, it is only the favoured of Heaven who keep right. The point of true intellectuality is the discreet use of both—the secret of avoiding precipitate judgments, on the one hand, and of suspending the judgment too long on the other.

But come what may, we must do our best. Even the savage cannot get on without reasoning ; and in a highly civilised state of society reasoning is constantly needed as the guide of daily life ; for, of civilised society it too often looks as if the very secret were to pass off a seeming for a reality, and to build upon the gullibility of the public. Thus the lower animals, which, with all their Heaven-born instincts, are devoid of liberty, and, consequently, cannot deliberate, make sad fools of themselves in society, or when invited by man to accommodate themselves to his ways. A salmon, after having succeeded, by waiting and working with nature, in accomplishing a voyage of a good hundred miles, perhaps, up the river to a suitable spawning bed, when hailed by the angler, leaps at a steel hook dressed with a little tinsel, and grasps it, mistaking it for a fly, and is caught and killed. A hen that can rear a family of a dozen simultaneous descendants in a way which any mother of twins merely may envy, when the brooding disposition returns upon her, will step with infinite complacency into a nest containing a few balls of chalk, mistaking them for her own eggs, and will settle her feathers over them, and sit upon them week after week till she is nearly dead. When at liberty in a room, a monkey, which in appearance is a perfect sage, while stealing up to an object suspended from the side of a lady engaged in knitting, will show all the caution and cunning of the detective police, and having at last laid hold of the ball of worsted, it will gallop off in triumph as if it had now got possession of a great thing—having mistaken a ball of worsted for a fruit. The lower animals fall into such mistakes, not because their senses are not so acute as ours, not because their senses cannot mark differences, but because they cannot take possession of their own thought and suspend their judgment, even for a moment, because they cannot think, cannot reason, because, in a word, they have no individualised power of their own, no liberty.

*Imagining.*

When the object proposed, then, as the aim of intellectual action, is either the development of a truth representative of reality, or the elimination of an error, we have a process of reasoning. Nor is it improperly so called ; for the principles which are regulative of the process are the principles of reason, that is, reason itself. But the object proposed by the mind need not necessarily be the establishment of a truth. It may possibly be the construction of a world of the mind's own, for the entertainment of self or of kindred minds. The mental action is then named *Imagining*; and it is usually regarded as a distinct faculty, named *The Imagination*. But the powers of mind engaged, nay, the process itself, is the same as in reasoning, only the train of thought in imagining is not guarded, or selected, on the same principle as it is in reasoning. In imagining, the mind leaves itself free to dwell upon all that it suggests in connection with the theme, and from among all these suggestions to choose those which will best give the construction which it is intending. In imagining, consequently, the mind throws itself loose from the law of redintegration ; for if it obey that law, there would result a train of recollections or of memory only. It throws itself loose, also, from the process of exploring the contents of general statements, as also from that of striking and transforming identicals, and substituting and balancing equivalents ; for in either of these cases there would result a process of reasoning. In a word, in imagining, the soul places herself in the full exercise of her liberty on the throne of thought, and allows herself when seated there to dictate the development. When engaged in imagining, therefore, the mind is in its most exalted exercise, that exercise in which the law of assimilation has fullest play ; for when thus engaged the creature is not merely acting the part of a creature, not merely receiving on the bosom of the mind the impress of God and of nature, and being assimilated and instructed in the knowledge of realities divine and human. When imagining the creature is assimilating himself to the Creator, as such. He is venturing on the production of a cosmos of his own, or of some object or objects in such a cosmos. And sometimes in gifted minds, though very rarely, the creations resulting, though not real, have all the features of reality—yes, all the features of the highest order of reality of their own kinds—except, of course, extension and substance in dynamical position in space. Such, for instance, are

many of the creations in the sphere of human nature, which have been constructed by the genius of Shakespeare.

### *Discovering.*

But why ought not the mind, when well instructed in the Being and attributes of God, Nature, and man, and when imagining or developing thought harmoniously with its acquired knowledge and the laws of intelligence, reach the real creation, or real objects in it, as its own creation, if the real objects be what it is aiming at? Plainly in this there is nothing impossible or even hopeless. Nay, this is the only method of discovering which has been as yet successful. A fine discovery is only an enlightened imagination verified by the responsiveness to it of external nature. And, possibly, between the enlightened imagination and the verification there may be an interval of long ages. Nature often shows herself to the individual mind in flashes, which to that favoured mind do not stand in need of verification, and which to minds in general cannot be verified perhaps for long ages thereafter. And such flashes, to a wonderful extent, were the privilege of the philosophers of India, and of the eastern coasts of the Mediterranean, in ancient times. Our calling and our capacities are chiefly to verification. But when our heads are right with those who have gone before us, this is no drudgery; for God is as good, and nature is as beautiful as ever.

### *Summary.*

Such are the outlines of a pure Psychology or Pneumatology.

1. An individualised Being, consisting of such an amount of substance or potentiality as enables it to fulfil the cosmical law of Assimilation fully; that is, both (*a*) as to the Being and Attributes, and also (*b*) as to the Power of the Creator, is a Spirit; and to the extent that it does so assimilate itself, it is a good spirit.

2. From the impress of the Creator in His Being and attributes upon a spirit, and its assimilation to Him in these respects, there result in the consciousness of that spirit *Religious Obligation* and *Reason*.

3. From the impress of the World in its objects and economy upon a spirit, and the spirit's assimilation to the world in these respects, there result, *External Perception*, and *Moral Obligation*,



with the incidental formation and subsequent retention of manifold *Assimilations* or *Ideas*.

4. From the impress of a spirit in former states (variously revived) upon itself as it exists in its present state, and its assimilation to these former states, there results *Recollection*, both (a) simply retrospective and (b) anticipative, that is, both *Memory* and *Consecution* (the inductive judgment). And thus is the first epoch of mental existence constituted. A panorama is given, in which a purely instinctive, spontaneous, and happy life may be led.

But a spirit exists under the abiding impress not only of the Being and attributes, but of the Might or power of God. It is accordingly under the law of Assimilation, put in possession of Power or ability to act from within self as a fountain of action.

5. In the panorama therefore which is given, it is free to ramble or to fix itself on what objects it pleases. It is endowed with the faculty of *Self-directed Attention*. But meanwhile existing, as it ever does, under the law of assimilation, it cannot refrain from marking similarities and no-similarities, that is, differences. And if it act normally under the law of assimilation, it must bestow a *Selective Attention* upon similarities, pursuing them till all differences are eliminated. In other words, it must *Abstract, Classify, and Generalise*.

6. But in merely rambling, attending, or selecting among data supplied from without, the power of a spirit is not exhausted. When existing in its normal relations, it is suggestive or productive of ideas which may not be given in the panorama placed before it or obtruded upon it. From its own depths it can supply itself with their *Ideals*.

7. Moreover, the structure of consciousness (see Chap. iii.) puts it in possession of a *pure Dialectic*, supplying correlatives of all kinds, whereby the primal panorama and the mind's store of ideas may be immensely varied and indefinitely increased.

8. Hence a field in which error cannot but mingle largely with truth. Thought and life can no longer proceed spontaneously and instinctively. Wrong may be chosen instead of Right, and Evil may come to be.

9. But if the law of assimilation be honoured from first to last, the discovery of truth and right conduct are for ever secure. The life of the spirit meanwhile has risen from the merely instinctive to that which is *Rational* and *Moral*.

## CHAPTER VI.

### CREATION AS TO ITS ORIGINAL STATE.

ALONG with the denial by not a few students of nature that science can ever attain to a knowledge of God, the soul, liberty, immortality, nay, along with the indignant or contemptuous exclusion from the sphere of science altogether, or a merely ironical reference to, these great interests of humanity, there exists at the present time a most courageous state of affirmation in other directions. The extent and materials of the universe are boldly affirmed—also the order of nature—and the mode of procedure therein from the first!

In the application of that great principle of the philosophy of Leibnitz, the conservation of energy,—an application which the discoverer would have been the last to sanction,—it is affirmed as to the extent and contents of all that exists, that it consists of a definite quantity of force or energy, which can never at any time, nay, not in all eternity, be either diminished or increased. And as to the order and procedure of nature, it is maintained that it has been from the first, and is now a system of evolution or development only, or at any rate always a procedure from the simple to the composite. Of the fact that there are obviously interruptions in such a mode of procedure,—interruptions, indeed, so constantly recurring, that one of them happens in reference to every object which grows and developes,—of the fact that every such Being, after a period of growth and development, reaches a limit at which all further action in that direction ceases, and there follow the resolution or decomposition of that object, and its restoration to nature in mere atoms or elements again,—of this great fact, which to us is the most solemn of all events, the theory of development gives no account, nay, when strictly conceived, it leaves no room for it. Neither does it explain at all why in certain objects, those, namely, which are named, organised, there tend to

survive, as a product of such objects, a composite element or germ which tends to grow and develop anew. Nor has it any account at all to give of the elementary fact, which may be said to be the very characteristic of Nature, that these germs develop into the likeness of their parents, often reproducing, after long intervals, peculiarities of ancestral organisation. These the most notable phenomena of nature, the theory of development, leaves as it finds them.

But it goes on to affirm that these germs tend also in certain circumstances to develop not merely into the likeness of their parents as we see, but into something more highly organised, in which after long ages they succeed. This is not the theory of development itself, indeed, as applied to explain the phenomena of Natural History in detail, but it is the fundamental principle in which that theory proceeds, and it is probably in consequence of a general feeling in the consciousness of all men in favour of this principle that the theory of development, in its applied and extended form, meets with such general favour from all who are not prepossessed by other views. Some well-disposed persons have, indeed, taken alarm at the very name. It has seemed to them as if a secular development were a disparagement of creative power, and a substitution of something else instead. But this is a groundless apprehension. Assuredly there is nothing in that conception which is adverse to the interests of an enlightened piety. On the contrary, the conception of a continued improvement in creatures, which are the creation of an all-perfect and almighty Creator, is an eminently theistical idea. And that man, even in the course of his single life, should be made a better creature than he is at first, and, after his somatic engagements are over, attain to a higher form of existence, constitutes the central idea of revealed religion. We find no fault, therefore, in the theory of development, as to its progressional principle. But as to that theory as the mode of the creation, it is, at the most, only half the truth. And when it is propounded as the whole of the truth, and used to dictate a cosmology claiming the name of science, we have only to protest against it as by no means entitled to what it claims.

We maintain that the disposition (which is the only sanction as yet of the theory of development in detail) to explain the whole of animated nature, as the secular product of a few primeval cells, first giving to our planet some most simple organism, such as an *Amœba* or the like, and then going on and giving upwards,



until the development culminates in man himself, is not a product of science, is not a discovery made either inductively or deductively. It is, in fact, nothing better than a product of habit merely, the application to nature of a method of study, whose only claims are its convenience for the ignorant and the short-lived. These limitations in our intellectual Being make it prudent for us to begin with whatever is most easily understood, and to proceed to more composite structures as we gain acuteness to observe, and strength to understand. Hence *Amœba* first, and *Man* last, with that continuity between which the identity of the mind itself demands in order to logical satisfaction. But on this subject I have touched already (see Introduction, chap. ii. p. 18).

As to the primeval state of Nature we ought to refrain from speculation. On this subject, we of the nineteenth century of the Christian era, if we are to know or propound the truth, stand just as much in need of a communication from heaven as *Moses* did. We may have reasons for denying much. But we are not in a position to affirm anything. As showing the inadequacy of the theory of development, however, according to the philosophy which we advocate, it may be here stated that instead of admitting only one primeval state, as that theory does, our philosophy suggests either of two, and these the opposites of each other or, rather, it suggests the simultaneous institution of both of these primeval states as more probable than either of them by itself. Thus ;—

Our philosophy implies two modes of action, always co-ordinate with each other, and both of them in the strictest sense primeval, whether we regard them as mental or as cosmical, namely, Analysis and Synthesis. And either of these, and more than either by itself, both together coexisting and co-operating simultaneously, present themselves as suitable for imparting order at the first creation. Now, if we assume this last alternative, then at the first creation, along with the most highly analysed state of finite Being, or its partitionment into the weakest and least elements of Being and its utmost diffusion in space, in a word, along with the universal æther, there would be produced also the most perfect products of synthetic action, or the highest orders of Spiritual Beings, and the most perfect material organisms possible in the then existing circumstances. Thus, there might be an early state of the universe which, in its general features, might not be very different

from that which we believe to be either actually in existence in the present day, or discover in such monuments of the past as Geology unfolds. For anything that appears *a priori* to the contrary, God may have created for the first epoch of Nature the heavens and the earth (suns, moons, planets, plants, animals, &c.), much like those which exist at the present day.

The same theory (that of a co-ordinate action, from the first of analysis with synthesis) would, indeed, imply that the particles constitutive of the heavenly bodies which gem our present firmament, as also those which constitute our own planet, and all the bodies in it, are not the very same particles which constituted them at the first creation. Doubtless they must have all been either slowly or suddenly vaporised and condensed, and turned over and over and over. Doubtless the bodies which we see in the starry heavens are all resurrection bodies. In vain should we look in any one of them, in our own planet for instance, for any formation that is truly primitive or primeval. Nevertheless the general structure and aspect of the universe in the first epoch of Nature may possibly have been much the same as it is now.

Moreover, this view explains what the theory of development does not explain. It shows that every individualised object must be the subject of analysis as well as of synthesis; that every organism, when it has culminated in synthesis, must tend (unless it be supernaturally maintained in a state of full development) to be resolved by the cosmical analytic action into its original elements again. If it be said that, according to this view, since these two opposite modes of action are always co-ordinate, the one should always and at every stage undo the work of the other, so that there could be no growth and development at all—the answer is, that certainly all physical, perhaps all cosmical action, is rhythmical; and it is only what is to be expected that, in the individual, the height of the tide of synthetic action should not occur at the same hour or period as that of the analytic action. It is only to be expected that, under the dominant influence of the one tide, the individualised object should grow and develope until it is overtaken by the other tide, after which the tendency to dissolution gains the ascendant. Thus there will be accretion, followed by diffusion, the latter, to us, so terrible under the name of Death. But on this we need not enlarge, since no justice can be done to it till we come to unfold in its physical action the law of assimilation. From this law it results that the embryo shall tend to grow and develope

until it has assimilated itself to its parents and ancestors, and that afterwards it must relapse, so that, whatever has had a first childhood will tend to have a second childhood also; whatever has been constructed by the use of atoms which previously existed in the free state, will tend to be partitioned into these atoms again, that they may be assimilated to their former state, and exist free again.

The theory of Development, now so popular, explains none of these things, nay, it comes out very impotent to explain things in general. Even when held in its theistical character, it can lay claim to be only a part of the truth, and that the lesser and the least important part. In contrast with it our philosophy suggests as proper to creation, as soon as it was completed, the realisation of typical forms and structures belonging to both extremes of possible organisation. It suggests a descending as well as an ascending series of Beings and Things. In reference to animals in our planet, for instance, it suggests as the expression of analytic action, on the one hand, some ectozoon (*Amœba*, &c.), or entozoon (*Gregarina*, &c.), some creature haply almost amorphous, so as to be the mere representative of the law of Assimilation as a function merely; and as the expression of synthetic action, on the other hand, it suggests some animated species that as to organisation shall be most perfect, and in functioning or calling assimilated as far as possible, that is, exist in the image of the Creator. It does not leave Man to be given to the world only by rising up from quadrupedal to quadrumanous, from quadrumanous to anthropoid, from anthropoid to *Homo sapiens*, implying a period necessary for his genesis, which, by all that can be gathered from the observation of Nature as it exists, must not differ except in conception from eternity. It gives Man to Nature, with the other species which are denizens of the world along with him, as soon as our planet was fitted for his reception, and that not as mere savage, or something lower and worse, but as realising on his first creation the type of true humanity, the image of God.

It will, indeed, be objected to such a view, that it regards the primeval state of Nature as miraculously effected. But in order to set all such considerations aside, it is surely not enough to say that the supernatural in all cases, and therefore in this case, is to be ignored by "science." What philologist in any age of philosophy ever obtained the sanction of reflective minds to such a limitation of the sphere of this most important term? "Science"



and "Knowledge," provided that that knowledge exist clearly and distinctly, and in an orderly manner in the mind, ought ever to be regarded as synonymous. The supernatural is just as legitimate a subject of consideration for the truly scientific mind as is the natural. And if it explain satisfactorily phenomena which cannot be otherwise explained, there is no good reason why its aid should not be invoked by the man of science.

Granting the view of the origin of man, which has been here suggested as belonging to our philosophy, how easy and reasonable it is to believe that a typically organised pair or pairs, after having multiplied exceedingly, and having spread far and wide into inhospitable regions, should fall away from the typical structure, so as to give to nature, both in ancient and modern times, the savage of the cave and the forest! How difficult, on the other hand, even to imagine, that with no other womb but the crust of the earth, and no parentage in the last resort but some zoophyte, a creature like that should grow through a succession of individuals into a man or a woman! At any rate, unless we assume the pre-existence of the human type, and regard it as already embodied and in action at the commencement of the zoological scale, such a line of growth and development seems to me utterly incredible. To devolve the construction of a human Being upon "incident forces" wholly blind, and equally undesigning and undesigned, and merely acting according to some mathematical law of the distance, is certainly to assign to such forces a most desperate undertaking. But grant that these forces have been designed—that they have been dynamically fashioned and endowed by a perfect Intelligence expressly to realise his designs in a dynamical system, and thus to be to Him as fingers, and grant that amid these designs the construction of man was one, and then this conception of incident forces and of "natural selection" is not so extravagant and incredible. Nay, when thus supplemented the doctrine of incident forces met, resisted, and ultimately balanced in modes specifically different in different species, by the reaction from within of the developing organism, as the mechanical institution by which dissimilarly individualised Beings and species shall be constructed, is a fine idea; and a regard to true science will never lead any one to say that it ought not to be followed out as far as possible. It is not with the physical powers themselves that the philosopher has to quarrel, but with the tenet now so frequently advanced that they are the only powers in existence. Let it only be granted

that, instead of this, they are the creations of a higher power, which modelled and endowed them, and brought and brings them into active bearing, so that they may be to Him as fingers to fulfil his designs, and accomplish His providence, and all will be right.\*

The feeling which underlies all this modern aversion to the truly venerable idea of Creator and creation, and which tends to look for causes in any direction rather than that of a First Cause, seems to be mainly a determination to get rid of that which is called "miracle." But do we not habitually get rid of this idea at much less cost to reason than by framing a cosmology which shall exclude miracle? Do we not get rid of it merely by becoming familiar with it? Take an instance. Suppose we were called upon to witness, for the first time, the transformation, in the course of a certain number of the revolutions of our planet on its axis, of the glairy contents of an egg into a feathered fowl, being at the same time quite unacquainted with the procedure of Nature in other cases, what should we say of such a phenomenon if we had observed it, and could not escape from a belief in it, but that it was most truly miraculous; and have we not still to confess that it is just as inexplicable as any miracle that ever was related? yes; but because we happen to be familiar with it, we hear of it without any emotion at all, and content ourselves with saying that it occurs in the ordinary course of Nature. The truth is, that the ordinary course of Nature is one continued miracle, one continued manifestation of the Divine mind. If that course be uniform, it is only because it is what it should be, in order to be the expression of a Will which ever moves in harmony with an Eye that is omniscient, and an Intelligence which is perfect, and which, therefore, can never stand in need of correcting its own procedure, so as to occasion departures from uniformity when the conditions of existence are the same. But for the same reason, when new or singular conditions arise, new or singular phenomena are to be expected. And when these conditions are of such critical importance to the destiny of the most important of created species, as they undoubtedly were at the commencement of our era, it consists with all that is most logical and philosophical to have respect to history, and to believe it when, on evidence which would be admitted to be adequate in other cases, it affirms

\* See this subject more fully treated in "The First Lines of Science Simplified and the Structure of Molecules Attempted," by the author, p. 105.

the occurrence of miracle. But if at the commencement of our era, how much more at the epoch of the creation !

In order to satisfy the demands of science in each and all of its sanctioned fragments, whether bearing the name of theology, geology, or any other, it appears to me that thought must be made to run in some such channel as the following. The whole creation, or rather the creation as a whole, to which the Great Creator designed to award existence, considered as a pure structure of thought in the Divine mind, was complete from the beginning. But as to the realised or material existence of the different objects in detail which entered into that Divine ideal, a set time was appointed for the giving of each to Nature, namely, that at which the physical conditions of the environments of the proposed object came to be suitable for its existence and wellbeing. At that time there was given to Nature that modification of the type which was in harmony with Nature as it then existed. And thus it became possible to award existence to many more species of certain genera, and many more genera of certain orders, in a word, to vary the type through many more forms than if all the variations that were to be allowed to exist were created simultaneously, and thus to verify the sentiment of the Hebrew prophet, that "the glory of the Lord is the fulness of the whole earth." As to the popular hypothesis, that at first there existed only one or a few simple cells, each having life in itself, and that the successive Floras and Faunas of our planet, as also all plants and animals now in existence, are the descendants of these primeval cells through successive Floras and Faunas, in which individuals, during the sustained struggle for life, have, through an incidentally improved organisation, survived ultimately as new species,—this is a view to which palæontology and the observation of living organisms oppose so many objections, that, notwithstanding the charm of extreme simplicity with which it tends at first to captivate every one, it may be said to be already in the course of being abandoned. Instead of that very gradual rise in organisation which alone this theory permits, the oldest strata, no less than the newest, provided there is evidence that the state of the planet at that time was capable of entertaining them, have afforded specimens of all types of organisation from the zoophyte to the vertebrate. All types, then, must be ever waiting, so to speak, as ideals in the Divine mind from the first, each to be added to Nature, each to be created as soon as the state of our planet is prepared for their reception.



But let not the theory of development, whatever its destiny in science, alarm any believer in God. It does not, indeed, absolutely require a God apart from Nature, such as it would be possible to love, or reasonable to worship; but it does not attack the faith of those who believe in such a God. It is not intrinsically atheistical, still less is it antitheistical. To the Theist it is only a hypothesis as to the mode of creation—a very inadequate one, no doubt—but still it admits of being construed in this way; and in these circumstances it ought to be allowed to pass without adding another to those most mournful pages of the history of philosophy, in which a charge of atheism—too often quite unwarranted—has too often brought suffering and even death to the unjustly accused.

If any argument were wanted to show the utter unfitness of science in its actual state for determining anything as to the primeval state of Nature, it might be readily found in the speculations which are current as to the physical constitution of the Sun. By the highest scientific authorities it is maintained, on the one hand, that the interior of the sun is merely nebulous; and, on the other hand, that it is a white-hot molten or solid mass. And as to the solar spots, what endless speculations! nay, what cruel surmises! For it begins to be seen that the planets have something to do with these spots. And if that be the case, why then, the hypothesis of a regardless and universal radiation equally into all space from the sun,—a hypothesis which, however strange and out of keeping with the economy of Nature in general, is yet a cardinal article in the creed of modern science,—is brought into grave suspicion.

Here, also, having happily applied the prism to diminish the confusion of light radiated from an object, as received by the unassisted eye, what bold conclusions, when viewed in reference to the reasoning by which they are reached! Not that there is anything improbable in the facts concluded. Our philosophy reaches the same facts by another method. But the spectroscopic reasoning, how precarious! Who knows what there may be at the top of our mixed atmosphere? or out in the celestial spaces? Does it follow that a ray of light, though it may undergo no spontaneous change of structure during its passage of *a few minutes* from the sun to the earth, shall undergo no change during its passage of *many years* from the starry heavens to the earth?

## CHAPTER VII.

### THE UNIVERSAL ÆTHER OR MEDIUM OF LIGHT.

WE set out with the consideration of the spiritual world and its endowments, or at least with mind as manifesting itself in man. To do so is a necessity in philosophy, if in further research we are to know what we are about; for it is only as functionings of mind, only in terms of thought, that we can have, or, as it is said, can know anything else. And if we know nothing about mind and its modes of functioning, we know nothing about what we know, nor even what it is to know.

Moreover, such a commencement, while it is a philosophical necessity, is not out of scientific order; for the world of spirits, more generally spirit, is that in the creation which is at the top of the creation and nearest to the Creator. And therefore, in laying a basis in pure psychology we are beginning at the beginning.

Now, one extreme logically suggests the other. If, then, from the world of spirits—that world in which the individuals constituting it consist of the greatest amount, quantity, or intensity of Reality, Being, or Power—we proceed to that in which the individuals composing it possess the least, we shall be observing an order of procedure which is logical, though such an order may be, as we shall find that it is, a procedure which convenience also renders indispensable.

Nay, more. Such a procedure is not merely logical, it is, as we might say, orderly in a genetic point of view also. Thus when, with the law of assimilation in our eye, we view the creation in relation to the Creator, we obtain the conception of two states of finite Being as simultaneously given—the one representative of Him as an Infinite Power, the other representative of Him as an Infinite Being. Now, the former of these conceptions is realised in the creation of a world of spirits, and of cosmical dynamics

generally. The latter, again, leading us as it does to contemplate the Creator, not in relation to His energy, but in relation to His Immensity and Eternity, leads us to ask what state of finite Being will represent these attributes.

This then is the question which we have now to ask. And if we obtain a definite answer we ought to accept what it gives, however inadequate the senses may be to demonstrate it as palpable reality. That which is to affect the senses, and secure its own affirmation through their agency, must be a dynamism more or less. Pure Being is as nothing to the external senses.

Guided by the law of assimilation, then, let us place finite Being in keeping, as far as possible, with the immensity and the eternity of the Infinite. And here, as representatives in this sphere of these Divine attributes, there present themselves, as imminent in all thinking, the phenomena of space and time. And as to Reality or Being, in order that it may be in harmony with these attributes, it must (1.) be diffused to the utmost extent possible, it must be present throughout all space, as if it would emulate immensity in its extent. Such must be its aim, so to speak—the end altogether unattainable. No less impossible must it be for finite Being to place itself as fully representative of the Eternity of the Infinite. But (2.) it must aim at this also. We thus obtain from our cosmical law in this sphere the condition that finite Being shall tend to exist in a state of utmost diffusion and extension in space, though it cannot fill immensity, as also that it shall tend to exist in all time, though it cannot have existed from Eternity.

Now, such a distribution of that which is finite in quantity implies that it shall, in point of substance, be everywhere attenuated to the utmost degree possible, that is, rendered most ætherial. Moreover, such a state of extreme attenuation of substance implies, in its turn, that the endowments of that ætherial substance should be reduced to a minimum. Among others, therefore, its self-manifesting power will be reduced to a minimum. We are not to wonder, therefore, but are rather to expect, that the existence of finite Being in this state should not have been universally recognised, and especially we are not to wonder that astronomers, whose other hypotheses require that the celestial spaces shall be a vacuum, should have ever denied the existence of the æther.

But to the very conditions which have brought the universal æther into this disgrace, it owes its peculiar fitness for many



most important functions in the economy of nature. Among these we may remark the following :—

Since Being and power in every particular portion of the æther are, in virtue of its extreme degree of attenuation, on the eve of vanishing, it is not to be expected that the æther shall have any modes of action proper to itself—it is not to be expected that it shall have an inherent self-assimilative action. Nothing more is to be expected of it, than that it shall take on or assimilate itself to the modes of action proper to the other Beings and Things which exist in it. Moreover, since with this mode of acting there is nothing to interfere, this it will do in the most perfect manner. The æther will, therefore, to the utmost degree possible, be a truthful recorder of the forms and movements, the modes of Being and of Action generally of the other Beings and things that exist in it.

Further, those modes of action which it must truthfully record, it must also be capable not only of radiating, but of reporting without degradation to the greatest distance; for, as has been shown, its self-manifesting power must be a minimum, and therefore its invisibility or transparency must be a maximum.

Further, as in reference to space the æther represents immensity, so in reference to time it represents eternity, that is, all time in one, the universally simultaneous. Hence the velocity with which action impressed on the æther shall be transmitted must be a maximum.

Now, these deductions, it must be admitted, are verified to a remarkable extent by what is shown and known of the universal æther. The truthfulness of the images which it gives to the objects of which they are images, the transparency of the medium between us and the fixed stars, and the velocity of the transmission of light, are altogether marvellous. That of gravitation, indeed, is believed to be instantaneous or simultaneous, that is, the realisation of velocity in its limit, or motion in relation with eternity rather than with time. And such a mode of transmission is conceivable so long as we regard the universal æther as a medium merely, that is, as a truly continuous reality, incapable of action and reaction within itself; and we have said nothing as yet respecting it which is incompatible with such an idea, in so far as it can be conceived.

But such a conception, or at least the corresponding reality, is forbidden by the very grounds on which we were able to find a

sanction for a creation at all, viz., by the existence in that creation of discrete or individualised Beings, which, when not too much attenuated at least, might think and be blessed, and, in this respect, be assimilated to the Creator.

Placing the ætherial medium, then, in harmony with this conception, we must regard it not as continuous, but as consisting of particles; and placing these particles in harmony with its constitution in other respects, we must regard them as each most attenuated, and consisting of the smallest quantity of Being possible, and consequently the whole medium, in point of numbers of particles, as all but infinite.

Nor are we left to mere conjecture or speculation as to what the characters of these ætherial particles or elements must be? No; as soon as existence has been awarded to them, they fall under the cosmical law of assimilation. They must, therefore, still continue in some sense to represent the immensity and the eternity of the Creator; and, therefore, the whole must continue to constitute a medium as little discontinuous as possible. But each must also represent the unity of the Creator. And this, when viewed in relation to space, gives the idea of position only, without magnitude or volume. We infer, therefore, with regard to the ætherial elements, that they are merely elementary centres of action. But as to the sphere of that action, and that in the instance of each particle, it would seem as if there could be no boundary but the boundary of the creation itself.

Moreover, the ætherial elements must represent also the identity or immutability of the Creator. They must, therefore, be all assimilated each to itself in its every region, and all to one another. But in order that each may be everywhere, or on all its sides assimilated to itself, it must be spherical, its isodynamic boundaries all round the centre must be spherical. Its substance must also be homogeneous. In a word, the ætherial element, when viewed as in a state of perfect repose, or as constituting its own universe, must be a homogeneous centre of nascent and evanescent force, its circumference touching upon zero. But let it not be inferred that the radius of this sphere must necessarily touch upon zero when the ætherial particles are viewed in relation to each other, or as constituting the ætherial medium. When the law of assimilation has done its work completely upon the individualities constituting any medium, when all are identical, and each is fully individualised, then each acquires a right to

assert a certain space as a field in which it may exist, and, consequently, each tends to extrude another from the place in which itself is. And thus there arise the phenomena of rarefaction and specific volume, the elasticity of media and of masses, and ultimately their impenetrability. And thus may phenomena which are commonly regarded as merely physical and brute be connected with those which are purely rational. Grant that reciprocal assimilation is the law of the cosmos, and that Beings and things, when they have completely fulfilled this law, are invested with the right of undisturbed possession of a certain volume of space suitable to them, then there must result phenomena such as those which have been referred to, and for which "repulsion" is rightly assigned as the physical cause.

As to the ætherial elements, then, when all is repose, each must occupy its own volume, and all must be reciprocally repulsive in an exquisite degree. But when some foreign body is introduced into the æther, then very interesting phenomena must ensue. Say that a hot or luminous body is introduced, the æther immediately around it must, of course, be assimilated to it. But in being thus assimilated, it must be differentiated from the æther beyond. But no sooner is this the case, than the now differentiated shell of æther must proceed to differentiate the æther still further beyond, receiving from it in its turn an impulse towards repose. And thus outwards from the luminous or hot body there must proceed a rhythmical radiation, consisting in alternating fits of what may be called elastic and diælastic action, the number of ætherial elements involved in each fit depending on the number simultaneously assimilated and differentiated, and, consequently, on the differentiating force of the radiant source estimated from a state of repose as zero.

But supposing there to be only one differentiating or radiant source in the æther, or, if more than one, then all of them identical in their relations to the æther and to one another, it seems to follow that this radiant action could take place only to a very limited extent, at least if the differentiating force of the radiant source were powerful. Thus, suppose the sun existed alone in the heavens without being accompanied by any planets, then it seems probable that, in consequence of his intense differentiating power, the elements in the sphere of æther or matter immediately around him, being assimilated to him, would be rendered repulsive to such a degree as to be thrown into a state of tension



and action, so as to constitute around him a photosphere, with none, or else a very feeble and secondary radiation to a distance. The immediate effect of such a state of solar action would be that little or none of it would be wasted from age to age. It would, consequently, be chiefly bestowed in expanding and developing the matter of the sun himself in the progress (as follows from our theory of matter) of assimilating him to the surrounding medium, or of reducing him ultimately to the ætherial state again. In this case, then,—that is, were there in the celestial spaces nothing but suns or stars, which might be viewed as orbs of light and heat merely, and, therefore, as identical with each other,—the universal æther would carry the day. They would all be first insulated from each other to the remotest distances—all material elements be developed in them—then all ultimately vaporised or dissolved, and reduced to æther again, so that all space, in as far as they were concerned, would become one transparency.

But if planets—that is, orbs which in themselves are cold and dark, and therefore very dissimilar to suns and stars—are introduced into the celestial spaces, the result must be very different, or, at least, the issue which has been stated must be indefinitely postponed. In virtue of the law of assimilation, two dissimilar bodies, as a planet and the sun, being given in the heavens, assimilative action must tend to strike between them; and, for this purpose, the æther will serve as a medium. In those directions in which cold and dark matter exists, the tension of the matter immediately around the sun, which constitutes his photosphere, will be relieved, and radiation will strike between the sun and that matter, and that with a force proportional to the difference that there is between them. Planets whose position tends to make them the coldest and darkest will thus be indemnified for their distance, by receiving more heat and light, and the whole planetary system will be warmed and lit up, not by the merely mechanical and inexorable law of the inverse square of the distance from the sun, but by a rational law which forbids waste, and has respect to need. And here let it not be supposed that I am now introducing any novel kind of action into science. I am merely referring ætherial radiation to the electro-magnetic order of phenomena as the type, instead of mere mechanical undulations in a compressed medium, like our air at the sea-level. The prevalent view is, that the action of the sun is like a voice roaring all around in darkness with continual exhaustion, and with none

to hear but a very few individuals moving about here and there. The view now suggested is, that of a fair-trader holding commercial correspondence with others, and continuing so to do only with those who correspond in return, and who, in fact, give an equivalent for what they get—some kind of change for the sun's gold, but what the nature of the currency, it must be confessed, it is not easy to say precisely.

Or to take a more scientific analogy. In order to represent the sun in the æther, let us take a small sphere of amalgamised zinc, which we hold in our hand suspended by a wire terminated by a copper ball at the upper end to represent a planet; and let us immerse our zinc-sun in some very gentle solvent—some saline or acidulated water; then, it is to be observed that, while the zinc alone remains immersed, the action of the solvent upon it is next to none. There is only a state of tension. But when, having taken hold of the wire near the zinc, we arch it round so as to immerse the copper ball also in the acidulated medium, face to face with the zinc ball, making this copper ball to revolve around the zinc ball if we please, then remote action forthwith strikes and continues to take effect between these two balls; and in due time the dark copper ball is illuminated, so to speak, by a coating of zinc. The two dissimilars become, in short, assimilated as to surface, that is, to all the extent to which they are present to each other and to the fluid intermedium.

And so, by the aid of the law of assimilation, it might be shown that all the seemingly so multifarious phenomena of electricity may be happily reduced to a very few, and these fully explained in harmony with the economy of nature generally.

These phenomena may indeed be regarded universally as phenomena taking place in the æther,—not, however, in the æther considered as free and constituting a medium by itself, but as investing the material elements, and constituting their atmospheres or dynamospheres. It forms quite the triumph of our theory, that in this way calorific and electro-magnetic action and magnetism and electricity, both galvanic and frictional, present themselves as at once so distinct, and so distinctly involved in that theory, and yet so normally transformable into each other.

When dissimilars are partially insulated, so that assimilation between them can take place only slowly by reciprocal currents representative of the dissimilars, and constituted in some conduct-

ing medium, then we have the phenomena of atomic electricity or galvanism.

When, on the other hand, the dissimilars are not kept in partial isolation, but are free to move as they are determined, they rush together, and merge their differences in the genesis of a new chemical species, and we have the phenomena of chemical affinity and action—the galvanic currents being this chemical affinity in action, suspended or postponed.

But as to the special point in hand, radiant action, namely, regarded as an economy, we need not insist upon it. The mathematical convenience of the hypothesis of indiscriminate radiation and exchanges still keeps it alive, and it is more and more obvious every day, that if mathematical convenience can be secured, if the phenomenon can be brought within the dominion of the calculus, anything may be advanced and claim belief, however singular or absurd in itself. A complete mathematical sanction of a hypothesis would, indeed, be an adequate sanction, if the mathematic of the cabinet were that of nature; but, unhappily, it is precisely the reverse. Nature, in all her truly individualised structures and systems, takes the periphery as the origin of co-ordinates, the mathematician takes the centre. Hence the strange uses to which the actual mathematics sometimes lend themselves. Witness the recent bottling of the emanation theory of light, to account for the phenomena of æriform fluids! The mathematical theory, as applicable to sound also, has been used to a wonderful extent in reference to light; but, in being used, has it not also been changed and corrected and new-modelled, till scarce anything of the original remains? and, now again, are not men of science at present quite at sea as to the constitution of the æther? Is it, in short, everything or nothing? Or is it not rather next to nothing in itself and yet the mother-element of everything? Such is the solution of the scientific embarrassment about it which our philosophy gives.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### THE MATERIAL WORLD.

IN the æther the main end of creation, according to the view that we have taken of it, is not attained. In the ætherial elements the attenuation of Being is carried so far that feeling and, consequently, enjoyment is no longer possible to the individuals which compose that medium. We shall soon see, however, that if not itself sentient, it contributes immensely, as the medium of light, to the enjoyment of all Beings that are sentient throughout the whole universe. Its value to the creation, when viewed in reference to sensibility, is inestimable. And it is no difficulty in the way of our theory (*viz.*, that the end of creation is the multiplication of happiness), that ætherial elements exist all through space, though they be not themselves capable of enjoyment.

It now falls to us to remark that the creation, viewed in reference to our cosmical law, cannot consist of an universal æther, and of that only. Under the abiding presence of the Creator, who in the very act of creation appointed that that creation should explicitly obey and manifest His own mind and will, inasmuch as He is One, a synthesis and unification of ætherial elements into unities, constituted by a greater amount of Being than that which constitutes the ætherial element, may be confidently looked for. Now, if these new unities are constituted by a greater quantity of Being than the ætherial elements, they will, of course, according to our theory, be more richly endowed, or possess a higher potentiality; for we regard Being and Power (or potentiality) as differing from each other only as the statical differs from the dynamical, and both must vary in the same ratio.

But when contemplating the synthesis of the ætherial elements, it is important here to remark that this synthesis may take place according to either of three modes, and that these must give pro-

ducts that must differ from each other in important particulars. Thus—

(1.) The elements of æther or light may possibly be unified by the complete confluence or fusion of many into one, so that the resulting unity shall be as truly an unity or monad as the ætherial element itself.

(2.) They may be unified by juxtaposition merely, so as to constitute an ætherial group or molecule, consisting wholly of ætherial elements.

(3.) They may be unified in such a way as to combine in one individual both these modes, that is, so as to give an ætherial group with a nucleus consisting of ætherial elements truly unified or confluent into one.

Of these three modes of unification the first contains no limiting principle or law of synthesis, which may give the new individualities either in distinct species or genera only. The resulting conception is that of a perfect series of Beings ascending in power and endowment, a world of living monads, with this privilege attaching to the individual, that perhaps by the assimilation of more and more æther or light into itself, as time rolls on that individual is appointed to grow in power as well as in general endowment. Moreover, at a certain point in its history, which cannot be ascertained, such an individual must be from the first, or become by and by, powerful enough to manifest itself to itself, or in other words to be conscious (p. 35). And from this region upwards, therefore, there must be a hierarchy of Spirits. Lower down, however, there may be feeling and enjoyment. And, therefore, we may say that this spiritual hierarchy may have its basis in, and rise out of, a world of *Psychical Beings* to which existence will not be without great value, though they may not attain to reflective knowledge or liberty, or consciousness as it exists in us.

But the ætherial elements may be unified by aggregation merely, and the cluster may consist of ætherial elements in juxtaposition merely, their identity and the place in nature which it secures to them (p. 123), preventing their confluence. To this condition of the ætherial elements, however, supposing it to terminate here, little or no interest attaches. Since no true unity is produced, no new endowments will present themselves. Rather are we to expect that the bindings of all the ætherial elements among themselves will trammel them, and limit their powers more than

when they existed free in space, so that the æther, when thus existing in clusters, may be less transparent perhaps than pure æther, perhaps perceptibly nebulous.

But here the question suggests itself, Will such clusters of ætherial elements grow indefinitely by the attachment of more and more æther to each? This we supposed when the union issued directly in confluence, and a true unity was maintained all along. But it does not appear that unlimited aggregation will take place when it produces juxtaposition merely. On the contrary, it appears that the following phenomena must occur:—

First, the process of clustering must go on in such a way that the cluster as it grows must be always in the highest degree symmetrical. Such a result it belongs to the law of assimilation to effect; for the idea of symmetry is that of assimilation. The symmetry of any form in general consists in the assimilation in point of position of all its parts or particles, to some one plane (as in most animals), or to some one line or axis (as in most plants), or ultimately to some one point (as in all those objects, whether animals, plants, crystals, or molecules, which are most free from dependence on the gravitation of our planet, and their environments generally).

Further, not only does the law of assimilation enable us to deduce the symmetry of individualised objects in Nature generally, it also gives the form towards which symmetry must culminate; for plainly, if symmetry be the assimilation of all the parts or particles ultimating to one point within the form, then symmetrising action must culminate towards the construction of the spherical superficies, the spherical shell or cell; for, in this form, all the particles being equidistant from each other and from the centre, assimilation is a maximum. In every case, therefore, in which there is nothing in the particular forms of the constitutive particles to prevent it, the law of assimilation will tend to determine all individualised objects into spherical, ultimately into cellular forms. Now there is nothing to prevent such a result in the case of the ætherial elements. Viewed in reference to their forms among themselves (their isodynamic boundaries), they are equal and similar spheres, representative of equal and similar central forces. The ætherial clusters will therefore be spherical.

But, secondly, the same cause which makes the ætherial elements cluster must also, as the cluster increases in quantity, cause



a growing pressure towards the centre of the cluster. And when this pressure attains a certain amount, it is to be expected that the innermost layer of the mass of ætherial elements which constitute the cluster will no longer be able to resist that pressure, and will be fused into a true unity as a nucleus to the cluster. And thus there will be given to Nature a thing, which within the compass of its own individuality is permanently differentiated. It consists of an ætherial atmosphere or dynamosphere, investing a nucleus which is a true unity, the latter constituted by more substance or reality than the ætherial element itself—how much more it may not perhaps be impossible to determine, though we cannot attempt to do so here. (See Part II. Chap. III.)

Moreover, when the pressure towards the centre is adequate to unify completely the innermost sphere of ætherial elements in any one cluster, where condensation is going on, it must be adequate to do so in all other clusters. Both the quantity of Being or Reality, therefore, which constitutes the unified nucleus, and that which constitutes the ætherial atmosphere investing that nucleus, must at first, at least, be the same in all. Here, then, we have a new order of unities resembling the ætherial unities in this respect, that they are all similar to each other. They also resemble the ætherial elements in this, that they are all centralised forces, the geometrical centre, however, being vacuous in all.

We may also express their relations to the ætherial medium itself on the one hand, and to the world of spirits which has its home in that medium on the other, by saying that they are representatives or products of the reciprocally assimilative action of both. Thus, inasmuch as all spiritual Beings are powerful unities constituted by a great amount of Being compared with the ætherial elements, their presence in the medium of light must tend, under the law of assimilation, to reduce to a true unity the groups of ætherial elements around them, and so to give birth to spirits like themselves. But the assimilative action of the æther itself, on the other hand, must tend to maintain an ætherial cluster wholly in the state of the æther, nay, to disperse it. When, therefore, there results, as a new order of Beings, an element consisting of an unified nucleus invested by an ætherial atmosphere, the law of assimilation in both its tendencies is satisfied.

But what can they be—these new elements which our theory gives us, all equal and similar to each other, consisting of a cluster of ætherial elements with a unified nucleus as the centre of

each? Let us discover, if we can, whether they represent anything that is known to exist; and if so, what?

It forms the most original part of our philosophy to show that they represent material elements, or units of weight, and explain all that is known of body. On this demonstration, however, we do not enter here. It implies a review of all that has been discovered in material Nature, and the laboratory. It forms the special theme of the succeeding parts of this work. But we may remark here how directly in connection with this new order of realities, inertia, gravitation, elasticity, and the molecular structure of masses present themselves, since these are the most eminent characteristics of matter.

### *Inertia.*

The ætherial elements in which individuality is nascent merely have been supposed to be capable only of assimilating themselves to those other Beings and things with which they exist in relation. We have held them to be not capable of assimilating themselves to themselves, or of detaining within themselves action which has been communicated to them; much less to be capable of originating any action within themselves. What then are we to expect in the next order of realities, which exists immediately above them in point of quantity or intensity of Being, and consequently of power? Plainly we are to expect an assimilative capacity extending to self also, as well as a yielding to others. What we are to expect, in short, is that this element of the second order, this element with an individualised nucleus and an ætherial atmosphere, shall be able not only to assimilate itself to other beings and things, but to assimilate itself to itself in the successive moments of its existence, that is, to continue to do, to be, or to suffer this moment, and so on, what it was, did, or suffered the moment gone by. Now, such an inference we can verify by the senses in reference to space and time, though in reference to space and time only, for with regard to ideas and all the higher affections and endowments of Being, we are destined to remain altogether strangers, except as they appear in our own minds or are evoked there. At all events, it is only in so far as action expresses itself in space and time, that it can be in any measure known to sense. Now, when we affirm that an element of Being has acquired the power of assimilating itself this moment to what it

was the moment before, what is this when viewed in reference to space and time? Plainly this is to affirm, that if that element be at rest, it will continue at rest; if it be in motion, it will continue to move, performing in every successive moment the same element of motion, which it performed in the preceding moment. Now, this is the same as to affirm that it shall continue to move uniformly forward in a straight line; for an element of motion, that is, progress from one position in space to the next position adjacent, cannot but be a straight line. The whole motion, therefore, must be a straight line; and that it must be equable or uniform, is no less obvious. And thus we deduce from that cosmical law which alone we apply and which we apply universally, the phenomenon of inertia, and that in a conception much more clear and distinct than observational science has yet arrived at. Natural philosophers explain it, now as that which is given by intuition as a necessity in motion, now on the principle of a sufficient reason, now as an universally observed phenomenon or law of matter merely of which no account can be given nor ought to be sought for, now as the effect of the rotation of the atom of matter as illustrated by the gyroscope. And very serious to the interests of true philosophy are the consequences of such darkness at the very fountain-head of the material economy. Thus, whatever moves is generally assumed to possess inertia! Once in contact with matter in the study of the natural philosophy now so popular, no escape from it again is permitted. But according to our philosophy the *vis inertiae* presents itself as the characteristic of only one of three orders of Beings, and that the mean between the other two (so that by it the law of continuity is maintained in all the three). It characterises the Material, that which lies between the Spiritual on the one hand, and the Ætherial on the other. In reference to the Spiritual, the Material is the residuum, when the virtue of autokinetic power has been lost through the attenuation of the individual. And in reference to the Ætherial, it is the new power which has been constituted when a certain number of minims have united their evanescent elements of power into one again.

### *Gravitation.*

As to gravitation, that of course follows also as a universal phenomenon, when elements which possess inertia, and which occupy different places, are viewed in reference to the law of unification, that



is, assimilation, as to the place or space they occupy. They must all obviously tend to move into one and the same place, and that place must obviously be the centre of inertia of the system. In a word, they must gravitate. And of gravitation, as thus conceived, it might be shown that the laws must be precisely those which observation gives. But such developments belong to the physical part of our work. (See Part II. p. 11.)

It may, indeed, be said that this is truly a very summary way of discussing and of dismissing the great question of the day, the *quomodo* of gravitation. It is enough for us, however. It cannot be denied that our cosmical law of assimilation, when applied to inert particles existing separate in space, gives their aggregation with force towards one another, and ultimately towards one place. It says nothing, indeed, as to any mechanism by which this shall be effected, but it says nothing against the possible existence of such a mechanism; for law, in the natural sphere, is generally fulfilled by mechanism; if it also leaves it open to be supposed that gravitation may take place otherwise than by mechanism. It only throws science at an early stage into that place into which it must be thrown sooner or later; for however intensely Imagination may insist that there shall be no motion in space without machinery to push or to pull, yet Reason will not consent to machinery in an endless series—which, nevertheless, this demand of the Imagination implies.

### *Elasticity.*

Similarly the phenomenon of elasticity, which may be regarded as the inertia of form, comes out necessarily and very distinctly on our theory, and that under two manifestations, one of which may be designated Immediate Elasticity or resilience, and the other Secular Elasticity,—the latter being the law of redintegration, atavism, the hereditary principle, the principle of embryology, whose full range in material nature is only then justly appreciated when we carry it down into the philosophy of chemistry, and view it as a cause modifying chemical affinity. But this we have discussed elsewhere. (See Part II. Chap. IV.)

Thus our elements of the second order, with which it would appear as if the universal æther or realm of light tended to be granulated, represent material elements or units of weight.

*Molecules.*

But the formation into clusters of the individualised elements of Being cannot come to a stop when material elements or units of weight have been formed in the æther. The law of unification is persistent. And just as the ætherial elements aggregate into clusters, so must the material elements or units of weight aggregate into clusters also. But here a difference as to the result presents itself. In reference to the ætherial elements, we assumed that the individuality of each was so weak, that when the cluster attained a certain magnitude and force of pressure towards the centre, then the set of ætherial elements in the centre fused into one, which thus came to possess a true unity. But in the material elements the principle of individuality must be much more powerful than it is in the ætherial elements. Their resistance to fusion or influence must, therefore, be much greater. We infer, accordingly, that to whatever pressure material elements may be exposed they maintain their individuality, and exist in each other's vicinity or juxtaposition only, at least in our planet. It will appear, indeed, as we proceed, that under great pressure or powerful operation of the law of unification, they form themselves into groups of four, or tetrads (that is, into the smallest group which a sphere can circumscribe), these four being more closely united than the next which are adjacent to them. And it may possibly be that these four are sometimes confluent into one of quadruple weight and power generally. But if so, it is certain that such a "baric material element" is secularly subject to resolution into four elements of common matter again. And as the matter of fact cannot be ascertained in the present epoch of science, this possible confluence of material elements need not be again referred to. Neither need we speculate whether, under certain ordeals of analysis, material elements are not dissolved or developed into ætherial elements again. Such a supposition is indeed necessary to complete the cycle of ideas which constitutes our theory. But realities, which must conform to space and time, under special conditions, cannot always conform to their pure ideals.

We suppose, then, that our material elements or units of weight are permanent in nature. But they cannot long remain separate. Under the law of unification, which every passing impression, every differentiation, will bring into play, they must cluster and cluster again, giving rise to molecules upon molecules.

*Symmetry. Sphericity.*

And here it may, at first sight, be thought that such molecules might be all but infinite in number and variety of form and structure, and their orderly investigation consequently hopeless. And so, doubtless, they might be, in so far as the law of unification alone is concerned. But in order to see that they must be limited both in number and variety, we need only call to mind what has, indeed, been already often mentioned, that, as the very fountain of the law of unification, and as the mode of its fulfilment, there is still the law of assimilation. And the ætherial and material elements in aggregating into groups, or at all events when these groups have attained to a statical structure, must exist in positions as assimilated to each other, as is possible under the conditions of their genesis and existence. In other words, the particles constituting these individualised groups or clusters must be as similar as possible in position in reference to some plane or line, or ultimately some point in the form. And what is this, but precisely a definition of symmetry, either bilateral or axial, culminating in sphericity. For what is sphericity but symmetry carried to a maximum,—since as all the particles, in a purely spherical or cellular form, are assimilated to each other in position, and that in relation to one and the same point within the form?

Thus does our philosophy give us, as our molecular structural principle in the material creation, the familiar principle of symmetry. And does not all Nature, let us ask, in so far as she is visible, proclaim aloud that symmetry is her architectonic principle everywhere? The orbs and orbits of heaven, and all individualised objects on earth,—crystals, plants, animals,—are all most conspicuously symmetrical. Is it any violence, then, to sound logic to extend this principle to the forms and structures of those individualised objects of which all stars, crystals, plants, animals, are composed, namely, the elemental atoms and molecules of bodies? Can the accident that these objects are too small to enable our eyes to see them make any difference in this respect? Nay, is it not a strange thing, that on the strength of the inductive method merely, this atomic and molecular symmetry should not have been insisted upon long ago? But, unhappily, so far is this from being the case, that down to the present day most chemists take no account of the principle of symmetry at



all, except, perhaps, in relation to linear series of abstract numbers, or the mere work of the printer!

### *Molecular Morphology.*

The results of our labours in this field place molecular science (commonly thought of as chemistry) in the same category as botany and zoology, and invest the unseen with all the charms of the visible. It is, therefore, on this part of our work that we have bestowed the greatest labour. And even in the short sketch of molecular morphology which we have published, we believe that verifications have been brought forward which will be found to be insuperable, to the effect that our theory, or something very like it, truly represents the intimate structure of material nature. Speculation on this head is now so completely hedged in by atomic weights, atomicities, &c., &c., that a hypothesis which explains everything, and is contradicted by nothing, cannot but be true, and either real or very like reality. But as this cannot be believed otherwise than by a mastery of the details, the reader is referred to Parts II. and III. of our work; and if he grudge the time which the perusal of the whole would require, we refer him to the commencement of Part III., in which he will find in a deductive form the properties and relations of the familiar substances, such as hydrogen, oxygen, sulphur, carbon, &c.; or if he be a master in the philosophy of chemistry as well as of its more striking facts, let him read Part II.

It is Part III. alone, however, which has any direct bearings upon our philosophy considered as a Philosophy; for in that part the question is solved, whether the organic elements and organic structures—such structures as might nurse and be suitable vehicles of sensibility—be really the end and aim from the first of molecular synthesis and action, as our philosophy affirms—or whether the organic elements and organisation be not merely an incident in the material system. The latter is, I suppose, the prevalent view. But our philosophy leads us to expect the former; and I shall not soon forget the delight with which this fact surprised me, by presenting itself in all its fulness long before I had even ventured to look for it. I had appointed Part IV. for organic chemistry. But as happily as unexpectedly the tissue element presented itself in Part III.

## CHAPTER IX.

### THE RETURN PASSAGE FROM THE MATERIAL TO THE SPIRITUAL.

IN our progress of deductive thought, and our deduction of corresponding realities, matter has presented itself to us as a bar raised by the tide of time in the ocean of space—a bar putting a stop to the immediate birth of Beings into the spiritual world, that is, their direct creation in the bosom of the æther, except by special miracle, or by some genetic organism, some other womb, in short, than the realm of Light itself.

We found that the immediate restoration of that which is so attenuated as to be on the eve of expiring to that which is full of life, that which possesses only a mere residuum of endowment to that which is highly endowed,—in one word, the immediate transfiguration of the ætherial into the spiritual,—was prevented by geometrical principles—principles therefore which, when viewed apart from miracle, are inexorable and insurmountable, and which are, in fact, the first data of the Divine intelligence when contemplating finite portions of space in relation to anything to be introduced into space. In short, we found that in consequence of their relations to finite portions of time and space, that is, to geometry, the ætherial elements when aggregating must tend to close up into unities, when these unities are as yet nothing more nor greater than elements of matter—elements which are, indeed, more highly endowed and more powerful than ætherial elements, but which possess only a *vis inertiae*, with its accompanying sympathies and antipathies, or, in modern language, attractions and repulsions, but by no means a *vis voluntatis*, with its accompanying perceptions and ideas. (See Part II. Chap. IV.)

But we have also found that the redemption of Being from its most diffused, attenuated, denuded state does not come to a close in the genesis of material out of ætherial elements. We have found that these material elements continue the same mode of action to which they owe their own Being. Just as the ætherial

elements tend to unify into material elements, so do the latter tend to unify into material molecules, and masses consisting of molecules. And the great question for us—the great question of the day is,—Does the synthesis, the process of unification, come to a stop here? Materialists maintain that it does; that all things in their ground are “matter and force,” meaning by “force,” a capacity or tendency towards motion according to mathematical law; and meaning by “matter,” that in which this force inheres.

Now here we have to remark, that there is absolutely no sanction for this supposition, that cosmical synthesis comes to a stop in the construction of molecules and masses of molecules, whether brains or any other. Nay, there is good evidence that synthesis does not come to a close here. The cosmical law of unification continues to operate above just as it does beneath the material world. Moreover, the unification which it effects within the material world, the molecular, namely, is very defective compared with that which it has already effected in the ætherial world, when it gives in the æther the material element; for the material element is a true unity having higher endowments than the ætherial element, while the Molecule or the Mass is merely a congeries of material elements destitute of all true unity, and existing in such relations to each other that certainly they must draw against each other, trammel each other, and neutralise each other's powers rather than exalt each other's powers. And that such is really the effect of molecular synthesis, the entire circle of chemical phenomena demonstrates. The farther that chemical union is permitted to take place the more inert does the product become, not because there is any loss of elemental energy, but because that energy is more generally distributed in opposite couples, which balance each other and effect the repose of the whole. A molecule is a perfect machine. It may be worked backwards as well as forwards. There is no dynamic, no scientific sanction at all for such an idea as that in any molecular structure—in a brain, for instance—any mechanical force is lost as such. And that it is transformed into thought and feeling is certainly one of the wildest hypothesis that ever was proposed—a hypothesis which certainly nothing but absolute despair of finding any other scheme possessing a scientific character of accounting for the apparition of mental phenomena, wherever there is cerebration, would ever render tolerable. This despair, the parent of this sad hypothesis, takes its rise in the assumption that the synthesis of the elements of Being



comes to a close in the construction of the molecule or material mass. But dare we conclude that the merely molecular is the last product which the law of unification—the law of return to that unity of which God himself is the archetype—has to give to Nature? On the contrary, when we call to mind how the Material was obtained from the Ætherial, the more highly endowed from the less highly endowed, namely, in the celestial spaces *without any special apparatus*; and further, that the whole economy of Nature proceeds, under the law of assimilation, in the repetition of the same process in different spheres and conditions of existence, are we not invited to inquire whether, by *the aid of some special apparatus*, the same law of unification may not be able to escape from the geometrical necessity which obliges it to form out of æther elements of matter merely—are we not invited to inquire whether some molecular apparatus may not be possible, of which the synthetic power may be so great that it may be competent, in its focus of action, to fix or condense into a true unity a greater amount of being, thus giving birth to a Being of higher endowments, so that the æther which co-exists with the matter in that apparatus may thus constitute that apparatus the cradle and nurse of a psychical, ultimately a spiritual Being? Such a birth, if it really took place in such circumstances, would be in perfect keeping with the whole analogy of Nature; it would, indeed, be its normal fulfilment. It would be the surmounting of the barrier which threatened, when at first it presented itself, to keep all nature apathetic; nay, it would be a turning of that barrier to account on all hands in the interest of life, joy, and intelligence. Nor that only; the barrier itself cannot but be an object of most pleasing contemplation to intelligence; for it took its rise in the laws of geometry; and symmetry and beauty geometry cannot fail to secure, when embodied in forces which are equal and similar to each other, as the material elements are. The conception of the possible genesis of spiritual Beings, through the functioning of a material organism, then, is not at all a strange idea, out of keeping with the general analogy and harmony of Nature. Quite the contrary. Let us then look into this inquiry somewhat more in detail.

And here one thing is immediately obvious, namely, that if, according to this conception of the origination of spiritual Beings, they should make their apparition in nature in connection with a material apparatus or organism, then such an apparatus thus

continuing to exist in close relationship with them is the very thing that would be wanted for them during their growth, in order to their being fitted for taking and for keeping each its own place in the cosmos here or hereafter. Thus, a spiritual Being is, when considered in itself and as unimpressed by its environments, an essentially free or self-directive Being. Viewed, therefore, as placed in the midst of an orderly system, it is an essentially dangerous Being; for it may act from out of itself urged by some private motive, and all irrespectively of the surrounding order or the wellbeing of the system into which it has been introduced. To prevent such a disaster, either the light of science would require to be shining habitually and with authority in the spirit from the first, or that spirit would require to be trained into conformity to the physical and social laws. Now, the former state of things does not exist for man. There are, indeed, for man, Reason and Obligation, both religious and moral, and this renders science and right conduct possible to him. But these constitutional guides give no details. Hence, placed as he is in the midst of a highly composite and easily modifiable system, in order to be able to act rightly he requires to be trained to it. Now, for securing such training independently of art and application, and more or less in the case of every human spirit, nothing can be conceived that would be better than a material investiture existing in such intimate relationship with the spirit as we have supposed the organism to be. For, from the material element of which that organism consists, all self-originated, all self-directive action has been withheld. Matter exists wholly under cosmical law, and cannot disobey. The Creator has retained it wholly in his own hands. So far as it acts at all, it only executes His behests. Wherever liberty exists, therefore, without being accompanied from the first by an adequate enlightenment as to the economy of the system into which it has been introduced, and an adequate conviction of the necessity of falling in with that economy on proceeding to any action, an organic investiture is the fittest of all monitors that can be conceived—provided its entire teaching be observed—for securing at once the wellbeing of the spirit within, and that of the system into which it has been introduced.

No doubt, an organism genetic of a Spirit, that is, of a Being in which liberty is to manifest itself, implies a limitation of that liberty. It leaves certain channels only open to free action,—

those, namely, which are harmonious with the economy in which it is involved,—and it imposes an arrest, or at least it gives a warning, with regard to certain others. And so far, it may be said to exist in opposition to the wellbeing of the spirit within; for that spirit claims and loves liberty more than anything else. But unless perfect anarchy is to be risked, such limitation of liberty is unavoidable. Unlimited liberty of action in one who is a member of an orderly but easily destructible economy is plainly out of the question. And surely an organism related to a spirit within, as we have conceived the organism of man to be, if it advises that spirit, or even confines it to those channels which alone are open to its full play, and in which alone it can deploy itself without injury to itself or others, does far more in the interest of the liberty of that spirit than it does against it.

In order to the attainment, however, of this harmony between the material and the spiritual in human nature, it is indispensable that the whole teaching of the organism shall be attended to and respected. If, for instance, instead of this, the spirit within listens and gives itself up to the impress of certain organs only, as, for instance, those which awake the appetites merely, throwing itself into them and indulging them without reserve, its own ruin and the rise of disorder among its environments are confidently to be expected. And this is the state of things which in the past and in the still present epochs exists to a sad extent in human nature. But when the divine light of Reason is fully restored within, when conscience *acts* with the same authority with which it even now *speaks* in a right-minded man, and when a perfect knowledge of the properties and functioning of matter, that is, science, shall have been attained, then it will not be denied that a material investiture placed in such intimate relationship to a spirit within, as our theory supposes, cannot but be an invaluable educator of that spirit in the interest of order and enjoyment.

Given a material economy, then, which under the sustained operation of cosmical law is appointed to give higher and still higher products of molecular synthesis, our hypothesis is, that such a synthesis may ultimately give birth to some molecular unity or organism, which is itself so powerfully synthetic, that in its focus of action there shall be generated a new centre of force, which shall be no longer a molecular aggregate, but a true unity, an unity constituted by a greater quantity or intensity of Being than the merely material element, and which therefore



shall possess other and higher endowments than those of matter, that is, psychical of spiritual powers, and so be itself of an immaterial or spiritual nature incapable of dissolution.

Now if, in the meantime, we suppose such a thing to be, then one analogy pervades all Nature, and the circle of creation is complete. The æther gives and harbours the nebulous speck in the firmament, itself ætherial still. The nebulous speck, when it has attained the requisite magnitude, and, as we may say, organisation, gives and harbours in its focus of action the material element. Material elements, when they have succeeded in constructing mundane systems efflorescing with manifold organisms, give and harbour in the focus of action of the most perfect of these organisms a spiritual element, an element which, like the ætherial and the material elements, is a true unity again, but which being powerful, is characterised by the recovery of those endowments which, in the ætherial element, were wholly eliminated in consequence of the extreme attenuation of Being in the individual, and which in the material element for the same reason could manifest themselves only as the simplest forms of force, viz., a *vis inertiae* and certain blind appetencies and antipathies, acting always uniformly according to mathematical law. By this ultimate order of Beings, then, the cycle of creation, as has been stated, is completed.

But the individuals which constitute it, and whose numbers are, according to this view, continually increasing as the ages roll on, and of which the other two orders may be regarded as mother and nurse, are capable of enjoyment. And thus created Being, after having been sent to light up the most distant regions of space everywhere, and after having suffered in accomplishing this mission, is also made ever to tend back again towards the throne and the bosom of God. After a fall into space and time, with loss of all sensibility, there follows a regeneration of Finite Being again, into the likeness of Him who inhabiteth immensity and eternity,—regeneration into a likeness which is also the image of the Ever-Blessed One, so that to be is to be blessed! And thus spirits also, by the various orders of the hierarchy which they may constitute, since they are immortal, and eternity is given for their birth, may fill up as far as is possible the interval between the Creator and the material creation.

## CHAPTER X.

### NATURE.

AND now, in order to withdraw such a conception from the region of speculation merely, to see what actually exists, let us take a glance at nature as it actually surrounds us and affects our senses.

#### *The Mineral World.*

The most patent and popular distribution of the objects which nature presents to us is into inorganic and organised, the latter including plants and animals, and the former all besides.

Now, of this differentiation of Nature and distribution of natural objects the cause may be discovered. In fact, just as the individual material element itself arose geometrically as a barrier in the way of the direct creation of spirits in the realm of light, a barrier which could not be kept down but by a sustained miracle, so now do we find that the entire molecular or material world exists under the same condition. In consequence of the constitutional relations which subsist between finite portions of anything and finite portions of space, the synthesis of the former in the latter, if it is to be wholly intellectual or rational, must be a purely geometrical construction. Moreover, all the modes of action which are proper to such a structure, if all be purely material, must be a pure dynamism, that is, a system of motion and rest, and an operation of force taking place according to purely mathematical laws. What these laws are in detail, and in all but their simplest expressions, there is little hope of discovery, so long as the attempt is made to apply to nature the mathematics at present in use; for our mathematics are the very converse of those by which Nature constructs her objects.

But a few things are demonstrable. Thus, under this economy, when we take into consideration the fact that all the elemental forces of material nature are equal and similar to each other, it is

demonstrable that the molecular structures which result from the synthesis of single material elements shall be very stable compared with those which come after, and which consist of the elemental series in union with each other. When, therefore, a variety of molecules are made to react divulsively upon each other in the laboratory, some must yield before others, and there must always be an undecomposed residuum consisting of those which are the most stable. And, accordingly, in the actual state of chemical analysis, while there are many thousands of individualised molecules which have been decomposed, there are between sixty and seventy which refuse to break up. They commonly go by the name of atoms. And in this name there is no harm, provided we do not associate with it the strange notion, that whatever the chemist, in the actual state of analysis, cannot decompose, is essentially simple, and a true unity—thus giving to our planet alone some sixty or seventy different kinds of matter, and admitting as a basis for molecular science a notion which must for ever keep it in a state of anarchy and chaos.

Now, as in the laboratory of the chemist, so in the laboratory of Nature some molecules, and the molecular masses composed of them, must be much more stable than others. And in point of fact, some are so well fitted for repose in nature, while yet they are also so well fitted for cohering firmly with each other, that they aggregate into homogeneous structures which, when they attain to individuality, display simply geometrical or crystalline forms, and, under all the reagents to which they are exposed in the course of nature, are so little liable to decomposition, that they remain from age to age very much the same. Such are the integrant molecules of minerals, and the minerals which they constitute. And thus, as molecular synthesis advances, the mineral world appears as a sublimate in the æther. And thus a ground is at once provided on which the less stable products of a more varied and more exquisite synthesis may stand.

Let it not be hastily inferred, then, that because the mineral world presents itself first to our regard, and is so extensive compared with the organic world, our theory is invalidated, though it maintains that sentient Beings are the great end and aim of creation. The mineral world, in all its actual extent, is a necessity enforced by geometry, that is, enforced by the Divine Intelligence acting as the author of a dynamic system. And



though it be a fact that the crystals which alone it can produce are so fixed, stable, and immobile, that they could not harbour sentient existence—for that demands mobility as a first condition of its wellbeing—still the crystalline world must be admitted to existence, unless the entire material system is to be changed.

### *The Organic Elements.*

But all the elemental molecules are not equally fixed and untransformable. Among those which occur even near the commencement of molecular synthesis there are two, as we shall afterwards find, which are very remarkable for their aptitude for existing in either of two forms which are very dissimilar to each other, as also for changing along with a change in the conditions of their existence from one of these two forms into the other. These are common vapour or the aqueous element, and ammoniacal vapour or the volatile alkali. And along with these there occur other two, which are remarkable for their dissimilarity to the former two in every respect. Thus while the former two are eminently mobile and transformable or dimorphous, and bent upon the æriform state, the latter two are eminently unchangeable, and so fixed that they cannot (except in combination) be raised into the æriform state at all. These are carbon and boron.\* And all the four are so related morphologically that they tend to unite with one another, and can unite in several different ways. In the state in which they present themselves, when refusing to yield to further decomposition, they are hydrogen, oxygen, nitrogen, carbon, and phosphorus, to which may be added calcium, iron, sulphur, and the alkaline metals which are composite though undecomposable products of one or more of the first three.

Now, in consequence of the mobility, dimorphism, and tendency to exist in the fully expanded state of the two vapours that have been named, whether as vapours or as the gases which their decomposition yields (hydrogen, oxygen, nitrogen), and the inex-

\* The naming of boron, as an organic element, will shock the chemist. But our theory gives this element as monatomic instead of triatomic, possessing one-third the atomic weight of the boron of chemistry, isomorphous with carbon, and forming the basis of some very important undecomposable molecules or elements, especially phosphorus, which has the run to a remarkable extent of the whole organic world. Our boron, crude and reduced, comes in to fill up the blank between hydrogen and carbon, giving 3 and 4 between 1 and 6. The popular chemistry starts at once from 1 to 7.

orably fixed character of carbon, so long as it is in union with the vapours themselves and not with the gases which appear on their decomposition, there tend to result from these elements individualised structures very different from the objects of the mineral kingdom, there tend to result tissues composed of particles of vapour chained together or kept at anchor as concretes by carbon, but bent on expansion in volume or development. Moreover, this they accomplish under the influence of the heat of the sunbeam together with the influx of force from the Earth until, in successful keeping of the law of assimilation, the growing individual has attained the form and structure of the parent. After this, the same law continuing to act, the æriform state is urged with more rapidity; dissolution ensues; and all the constituents of the structure resume their place in the atmosphere, except those which the fixed elements insist on detaining below.

As to the exquisite forms, structures, and functions of the individualised objects now referred to, they can be explained only in reference to the design of the Creator in His framing the material element from the first, and His placing it in the cosmos in such relationship to Himself that it shall fulfil His designs without a continual miracle.

### *The Vegetable Kingdom.*

And here, on entering on the consideration of the organic world whose elemental conditions of existence have been stated in the preceding paragraph, we again meet with a barrier precisely of the same nature as we have met with several times already, that is, a barrier preventing the production of a higher order of beings until existence has been fully awarded to a lower order, after which the barrier itself becomes a stepping-stone to a higher order and an apparatus for its support. Thus we formerly met a barrier which prevented the direct birth of spiritual Beings in the realm of light or the universal æther, and gave us the brute or material element instead; and similarly now we meet a barrier in the world of matter which prevents the direct birth of sentient Beings, and gives us vegetable Beings instead.

In fact, molecular synthesis, when culminating towards the construction of an organic tissue-element of the highest order, tends to give also, and gives with greater ease, an organic tissue element of a lower order. The higher kind has, as we shall

afterwards find, as its axial part an atom of ammoniacal vapour fixed by carbon, while the latter has, as the axial part, an atom of common vapour fixed in a similar way. Hence the latter ever tends to be constructed along with the former. And as they are dissimilar and yet conformable, so that a symmetrical union is possible, they tend to unite. But this composite element, consisting as it does of two parts along the axis which are dissimilar to each other, must be, as a whole, dissymmetrical or heteropolar, and therefore incapable of separate existence. In a word, it may be shown that such composite elements must tend to aggregate into a group which is complete when it is spherical, and constitutes a cell. Now this cell, thus constructed of these composite elements, must in consequence of the structure of each of these elements have a double wall. It may, therefore, be expected to be very stable. But in the very degree that it is stable it is unfit for the construction of such a body as is to be the vehicle and instrument of a psychical Being, that is, a truly animated Being or animal; for, of such a body, extreme mobility is the most needful characteristic. What we have arrived at, in fact, is the primary utricle of the botanist, that is, an animal cell encrusted by cellulose, and by the latter fixed so as to be very permanent, but in the same degree unfit for accomplishing the demands of volition.\*

### *The Animal Kingdom.*

How then, it may be asked, does an animal kingdom become possible? How can an organism be constructed and upheld, which shall be mobile enough to answer the demands of feeling, thought, volition, and yet not be liable to be encrusted and fixed? Now, this question, according to the view that has been given of the elementary organic elements, resolves itself into the question, How can the stable cellulose (say phyto-cellulose), which tends spontaneously to construct itself out of the same elements wherever the more mobile kind of cellulose (say zoo-cellulose) is forming, be allowed, under the law of Assimilation, to induce the formation of the latter, while yet it shall itself be kept down;

\* What has been stated above is very probably barely, if at all, intelligible to the reader. It is demonstrated in detail in Book III. of Part II. of this Sketch in the chapter on Carbon, which is not yet published.



for the zoo-cellulose, being of the same type as the phyto-cellulose, will, probably, be more or less capable of existing alone?

To solve this problem one is disposed to suggest the introduction into the organic Being, which is to be of a mobile nature, that is, into the animal, of some apparatus, if such be possible, which may lay hold of the matter introduced from without (the food), while it is in its most fully reduced state, and which may have the power to prevent the spontaneous reconstruction of phyto-cellulose in the animal by disposing of the matter tending to construct it, in other ways which will not obstruct motion.

### *The Hepatic System.*

But is there, let us ask, any apparatus in nature which is known to be capable of such a function, or is our conception altogether without any sanction in its favour? Now, to this it is to be replied, that nature distinctly sanctions it, and indeed illustrates it. Thus, it is well known in vegetable physiology that, when in any region in a plant the tissue proper to the fully developed state of that region has been completely supplied, while yet into that region cellulose-forming materials continue to be sent, there the vegetable structure has the power of disposing of that material otherwise than as cellulose. It may, indeed, with a view to future increment of cellulose, allow its construction to proceed as far as is implied in the structure of starch. But where there is no room for future development it can dispose of the cellulose-forming materials, as sugar, resin, colouring-matter, &c. &c., of which the last may be regarded as ultimate and normal, since the economy of nature ever is to provide first for that which is useful, and then to display that which is beautiful. We may affirm, therefore, with organic nature on our side, that an apparatus may exist which may prevent the development of cellulose in the living organism, though cellulose-forming material be supplied for such an apparatus in the fully developed vegetable. And, therefore, what our inquiry leads us to expect and to look for as the condition required for the existence of a mobile organic world or animal kingdom, as well as a stable organic world or vegetable kingdom, is some differentiating apparatus in the animal which is not found in the vegetable, but which may be similar in structure.

And if throughout the whole range of the animal kingdom we

find an apparatus (or a function bespeaking an apparatus which, considering the unfitness of our eyes for any discovery whatever in the molecular world, may well be in many cases invisible itself), whose use has not been determined to be something else, and whose form is plant-like or tree-like, and its function to secrete sugar, resin, colouring-matter, &c., that apparatus we may safely regard as the zoo-soteric apparatus which we are in search of.

Now, the hepatic system in animals completely fulfils these conditions. There is evidence of its existence, in its function at least, if not, perhaps, universally as a visible organ throughout the whole animal kingdom. And as to its structure, Kölliker, in his *Microscopical Anatomy*, says, "Kierman was the first to comprehend and to express correctly the relations of the lobules to the hepatic vessels, when he said that they sit upon the branches of the hepatic veins like leaves upon the stalks. . . . Now, since the same arrangement exists in veins of medium diameter down as far as the *venæ interlobulares*, the hepatic veins and lobules may not without reason be compared to a tree whose branches are so numerous and so closely beset by polygonal leaves that the foliage, so to speak, constitutes only one mass." Similarly referring to function, the admirable Prout says (*Stomach and Renal Diseases*, p. 475)—"Long and repeated attention to the functions of the liver in health and disease has satisfied me that this organ in its assimilative function is analogous to or identical with the assimilative functions of vegetables, that the liver, in short, represents the original vegetative system on which in animals the animal system is, as it were, superimposed."

Such, then, is the function of the hepatic system in nature according to our views. That the field is open for discovery cannot be denied. For though either the apparatus itself, or colouring matter bespeaking it, is traceable through the whole animal kingdom, and the apparatus itself holds such a conspicuous place in all the more perfect animals, yet its use has remained a mystery to the present day. It has been proved beyond doubt that animal life cannot get on without a liver. Yet why a liver should be needed in a carnivorous animal is a question which the actual physiology of the day cannot answer. But, according to what has preceded, the answer is most explicit. And if the view advanced be correct, it is altogether adequate. According to that view, the hepatic function is that which serves

to differentiate animal from vegetable tissue, keeping down the latter from universal prevalence, and thus giving an animal kingdom to Nature.

### *The Myo-neuro-cerebral System.*

We thus find ourselves now in the realm of animal life. And seeking, as we have been doing hitherto, for the most eminent results of the cosmical law of unification, the question now is, What are these results here? What is the most eminent effect of the law of unification which it belongs to the animal kingdom to manifest? When viewing that law in relation to its Author, simply as the expression of His mind and will put forth by Him directly in the realm of light, supposing Him to have awarded existence previously to that realm, we have found the issue to be the creation of spirits, the birth in the bosom of the Universal Æther of a spiritual world or hierarchy, of the particulars of which, however, imprisoned as we are in a material envelope, we can know next to nothing except by revelation. When, on the other hand, we have viewed that law as operating under the limitations of finite spaces and times, we have found it giving birth to the elements of matter,—and when operating in matter, giving successively crystals, plants, and animals,—the question is, What does the same law give next? And if there be a synthesis which issues in the birth of a higher order of Beings than the material, where are we to look for such Beings?

Now, as to the latter question, our theory gives us a clue where to look; for that theory gives the law of individuation and diffusion as always co-ordinate with the law of unification; that is, it gives analysis always co-ordinate with synthesis. And therefore we should look for what we are now seeking in that region of the animal kingdom in which extreme synthesis is associated with extreme analysis; in which, in a word, molecular synthesis and molecular analysis simultaneously culminate, that is, the largest molecules are associated with the greatest volume of unified æther.

If, then, there be in the animal organisation any organism which must imply the existence in it of a great quantity of æther acting as an unity, and that, in connection with an apparatus which manifests at the same time the highest synthetic power, we are to expect that there will result in the focus of action of that ætherial structure a new centre of force such that its endowments must



transcend those of matter. We inferred that those ætherial structures, formed in the ætherial spaces, which we denominated nebular specks, did, in virtue of their synthetic action, give birth each in its own centre to a new kind of Being, consisting of more substance, and consequently possessing more power, than the ætherial element itself—namely, the material element. If, then, the uniformity of Nature, according to our conception of it, is to be observed, we are now to expect that, if there be among the highest products of material or molecular synthesis, any ætherial structure which is far more extensive and more powerful than the nebular speck, while yet it retains such unity as to have a centre towards which its action tends, then in that centre as the focus we may expect the birth of a new kind of Being again, consisting of a greater quantity or intensity of substance than the material element, and consequently more highly endowed—and what can this be but a psychical or spiritual Being? Does there, then, exist in the animal frame in which material synthesis culminates, any organ answerable to such a conception?

With a view to expiscate this inquiry, what we are to look to is obviously none of those subsidiary organisms which have fallen in our way hitherto, not the hepatic apparatus, not the nutritive, not the respiratory, &c., but what may be called the myo-neuro-cerebral apparatus—that is, the muscular and nervous system viewed as one. That this apparatus really is an unity, its entire structure and functioning goes to prove. It is differentiated, no doubt, and it could not be an organic unity if it were not. But it is no less an unity—nay, it is the very type of a fully vitalised unity. This it is which emphatically constitutes the animal nature. To this all the other organs are merely accessories.

Let us see, then, whether in relation with the myo-cerebral apparatus we find ground for inferring the genesis of a new order of Being, a new centre of force. Now, this much we at once find in regard to it, that it agrees with all the other individualised organisms which we have noticed, in being more solid in its peripheral parts, less solid in its central parts, nay (confining our observations to man, in whom animal nature and cerebration manifestly culminate in our planet), just as in reference to the nutritive system, which has its intestinal tube with its stomach—the circulating system, which has its heart with ventricles and auricles—the reproductive system, which has its womb and cornua,—so here we have as the central part a brain with its ventricles and cornua

also. We have also the peripheral or muscular part most exquisitely concrete, so that a wonderful tenacity is secured, along with a wonderful mobility; while we have the central part, consisting, to a wonderful extent, of matter in a state of almost ultimate analysis, and though solid, as plainly it must be, in order to keep its place, yet as gelatinous, and hyaline, and aqueous as possible. The brain consists of a very loosely constructed volume of elements, whose atomic weights in the main are no higher than 1, 3, 4, 6, 7, 8, the bulk being constructed by elements whose atomic weights are 1, 6, and 8—that is, hydrogen, carbon, and oxygen.

It will, indeed, seem here as if we were ignoring phosphorus (which is even very characteristic of the brain), whose atomic weight is 31. But phosphorus comes out in our molecular morphology as an undecomposable structure, consisting of hydrogen and boron, which latter we also regard as monatomic, so that its atomic weight is 3 or 4, according as it is reduced or unreduced. Azote, also, we regard as a molecule, consisting of two atoms in union, each uninsulable by itself, so that the elemental weight in azote is not 14, but 7. Sulphur, also, we hold to be a tetratom (not always undecomposable), so that its atomic weight, = 32, is in reality  $4 \times 8$ , as that of oxygen gas, = 16, is  $2 \times 8$ . But even disregarding altogether these peculiar views, it must be granted that the brain consists of matter in a state of extreme analysis, while yet it is certain that each individualised molecule of brain is very large compared with any other known molecule. Moreover the myo-neuro-cerebral apparatus, considered as an organism, is as large as the animal itself.\*

\* If we dare hope that at last Liebreich has obtained the true brain and nerve-axis element, it is eminently illustrative of the views advanced in the text, and of our entire molecular morphology. Thus our cosmical law of assimilation; and the cyclical economy which it implies, leads us to expect that the ultimate and highest product of molecular synthesis, the cerebral element, will be a representative also of the first and lowest. Now where, as in our philosophy, we have to combine only equal and similar forces, the first and lowest, as has been demonstrated by Boscovich, is a tetradic combination of four material elements or units of weight. For each of these four, then, as the ultimate and highest product, let us substitute the most perfect hydrocarbon known, viz., the waxy  $=(C_5 H_8)^{12} = C_{60} H_{60}$  (Melene) introducing into it, however, N instead of 2C, and to protect it from the action of the oxygen which circulates everywhere, let us mail each of the four dodecatoms of which the tetradic combination consists by one atom of oxygen, except the four regions which are secluded from the external oxygen by being in the interior of the tetrad; then let us place an atom of phosphorus on the pole, and we obtain the formula  $C_{232} H_{240} N_4 O_{44} P$ . Now, this is pre-

We have here, then, evidence at once of intense synthetic and intense analytic action. And as the product of the latter we obtain a great volume of organic or individualised æther, supported and determined in its mode of action by a scaffolding of molecules, which scaffolding is all that has been hitherto taken into consideration by the anatomist and the chemist. And as the product of the former, the synthetic action, shall we not expect in the centre or focus of action of this vast ætherial structure, an unification of the æther there into a new unity, an unity constituted by a much greater amount of substance, and consequently much more highly endowed than those unities which we have supposed to be generated in the centres of the ætherial clusters, aggregated without any apparatus in the celestial spaces? The analogy of Nature, according to our conception of it, leads to nothing else.

But here it is well to mark, that when we speak of this Being, whose existence we are led to look for in the brain, we mean only that its centre of force or action will be there; we do not mean that it is really, either physically or metaphysically, limited and confined within the brain. To assign to it a boundary in space, or rather in the æther, is impossible. Even in reference to the ætherial and the material elements, it is impossible to assign a limit where they cease to exist as agents, and therefore cease to exist in the only sense in which existence possesses any value, or can indeed be conceived by us. With regard to all the three, a centralised force or centre of force (which two expressions we regard as the same) is the only conception of a truly simple Being, unit, atom, or monad, to which our intelligence is adequate. Whilst, therefore, we affirm of this new order of Being that its centre of force and action must be in the brain, let no one suppose that we affirm that it is wholly there, or even its centre of force, though normally yet unalterably there. It may safely be regarded as co-extensive in its Being with the ætherial tissue which gives it birth, and of which it is the reciprocal, and consequently co-extensive also with the bodily organisation. But how far beyond the organisation it may exert some kind of agency or other, and therefore exist as an agent of some kind, it is impossible to determine. Nor need the man of science of the popular type grudge

cisely the formula of Liebreich for his brain-stuff (Protagon). But, according to our philosophy, this is only a least element. The "molecule" of cerebro-neural matter, according to its condition, may consist of 4, or 8, 12, 20, or 32 of such elements, the last containing no fewer than 2,154,080 units of weight.



us such a view. It is only that which he himself holds of every atom of matter, when he tells us that every atom of matter gravitates towards the Sun; for such gravitation inevitably implies that in some manner or other every atom of matter extends as an agent to the sun.

Let us not attempt here, however, to ascend the psychical scale. The law of continuity and the law of assimilation conspire to give on those confines of Nature, which lie between the purely Dynamical and the purely Volitional, phenomena which shall be symbolical, and admit of a plausible explanation either way. Observation of the outside of things and Beings merely, such as the senses alone can accomplish, is not adequate for the determination of such a question. An eye in the interior, the power of seeing and of knowing what is going on in the centre of force itself, is needed. Now, that we have in the human organisation, in Self alone. In this limitation, however, there is little to be regretted; for man is undoubtedly the species in which animal organisation culminates in our planet. He is, therefore, all independently of our better means of knowing what is in him, the fittest subject to select with a view to the settlement of the question. Looking to man, then looking to ourselves, what is the answer that we obtain to the inquiry as to the presence of a higher power than that of mere matter in the brain? In answer to this question, it were a mere affectation to ask for evidence—evidence of a force within man of a higher order than the merely material. The conviction of entire humanity ever has been, and is to that effect. The eye within affirms, with all the confidence of which affirmation is capable, that there is a will in man, a *vis voluntatis* which can act against, and to a certain extent overrule the *vis inertiae* proper to the organisation, turning as it pleases the latter against its natural tendencies, and causing the mechanical energy proper to it to flow (within limits of course) in such channels as this inner force pleases.

Moreover, the general conviction also has been, that the central seat of action, the throne of this new power, is in the head. A child of much vivacity, but quite unsophisticated by science or philosophy of any kind, told me the other day, when not getting on well with her lesson, that her “thinker” was not right; and when I asked her where her thinker was, she replied, “in my head.”

The action of such thought, as is calculated to awake emotion,

on the action of the heart and viscera, has, indeed, naturally brought it to pass that the latter organs have often been regarded as the seat of the soul in certain of its powers at least. But it may be said that nothing is better ascertained now than that it is in the brain, in all normal states of existence at least, that this centre of supermaterial force has its residence. Nothing is better ascertained than that it is only so long as the brain functions normally, and all the remote parts of the organisation are kept in what may be called continuous, or transparent, or telegraphic relationship with the brain, that the manifestation of the centralised force within is complete.

And here an interesting inquiry presents itself as to the relations of the ganglia diffused through the organisation to the power which is centralised in the brain. But we cannot enter upon that inquiry here. It may be merely stated in general terms, that under the law of assimilation, we are to expect the parallelism to be complete, and that whatever the ganglions are and do in relation to the brain, they are and do also in reference to the supermaterial agent, whose centre of power we have been led to expect in the brain.

But why persist any longer in the use of such novel and affected terms as we have been just using—"supermaterial," and the like? What we have found as the function of the material or molecular economy in its culminative action, is manifestly nothing else than the birth of a Being whose endowments are those of a Spirit, and whose continued existence in the universe, therefore, if it exist at all, will be secured by virtue of its true unity, when the molecular structure, the organisation which rocked and nursed it, ceases to act, and to hold together any longer. To the expectation of such a Being, we are led by the very same law, and a regard to the very same process as gave us first the ætherial element, and then the material element. And if such a Being do not exist, cosmical law is not completely fulfilled. If synthesis has come to a close with the construction of material molecules and masses (which is the materialistic belief), it will have come to a close when its functioning is defective as to the unity resulting. Now, that is contrary to the expectation of Reason and to the analogy of Nature. In that case also cosmical action will not have been cyclical. That which began in spirit will not have ended by a return into spirit again. It will have broken down half way in something immeasurably in-

ferior to spirit. And the very existence of a creation, or of finite Being, by whatever name we may call it, will still continue an inscrutable mystery; for every one must admit that merely mechanical force, acting according to some mathematical power of the distance, and blind unconscious attractions and repulsions, are infinitely inferior to liberty or free power with thought and feeling as the guide of action. But from all these embarrassments our theory relieves us. Instead of a mystery, our view of things has presented the material universe to us as an intellectual system, as a beautiful and bright cloud in the boundless azure of the spiritual world. Far from being eventually an insurmountable barrier to the creation of spirits by a natural mode of birth, the material system, if our view be accepted, has been made the very instrument of accomplishing that which it threatened at first to prevent altogether, the instrument of completing the cycle of creation, so that what took its rise in spirit may return at its close into spirit again.

The myo-neuro-cerebral organisation in the material economy, more shortly the animal kingdom, is, according to our philosophy, such an apparatus that we may expect in its focus of action the birth, growth, and residence of a psychical, ultimately a spiritual, principle. And in keeping with this deduction, the observation of phenomena, and the consciousness of reflecting men in all ages, have either affirmed or implied the existence of such a principle in man.

The only argument that has even been felt or expressed against its existence is the observed co-ordination which obtains between the manifestation of mental power in the individual and the perfection of his cerebral organisation, as also the continued dependence of the mental powers for all their manifestations (outwardly, at least) upon the state and action of the brain and nerves at the time. There has thence arisen the temptation to infer, and in our own day the inference is very often made, especially by the merely anatomical student, that mental phenomena are merely transient functionings of the brain, destitute of all basis of their own, and utterly incapable of being perpetuated when the currents in the living brain have ceased. Most materialists do, indeed, say that though science gives no countenance to immortality, yet faith is free to believe in such a doctrine. But this is nothing better than a *coup de grace* to the doctrine. Faith is the evidence of things not seen. But here, on the other



hand, our so-called science pretends to see and to let others see also. It excludes faith by usurping its place by a pretended vision. And if, in the next breath, it commends faith, that is only done *pro forma*.

But, according to our theory, the entire argument, so far as it bears against the substantial and possibly separable existence of mind, completely vanishes. According to our theory, the most complete co-ordination and interdependence between brain and mind must exist. The phenomena must be precisely as they are found to be. Regarded from our theory as the point of view, the actual phenomena are all verifications of that theory.

Moreover, that theory also explains spontaneously, and gives as an integral part of itself phenomena which the materialistic theory utterly fails to explain. If, for instance, as materialism maintains, thinking be merely the functioning of the brain, and if memory be nothing more but tracts or traces of some kind in the brain, whether those of Hartley or of Bain, or of some thing or some one else, how could persons in extreme age reproduce, as they often do with exquisite detail, the incidents of their early life? During the interval between childhood and age every atom of the brain has been changed and changed over and over again, no one knows how often; and the modes of action and currents of the brain in age must be very different from what they were in youth. In fact, at one and the same moment a brain may be so defective outwardly, that it cannot receive external impressions so as to enable the mind to retain for five minutes an incident which has just occurred, though perhaps a very interesting one, and yet some incident which occurred long ago, that mind can recall and narrate in all its details with intense vividness. The same mind may have retained, and can repeat an experience whose time of occurrence may have been threescore and ten years ago, while yet it cannot do the same for that which has occurred within the current quarter of an hour! Now, if this be the functioning of the brain merely, without any other basis for memory within the brain, it is surely a very wonderful phenomenon, nay, it is wholly inexplicable and anomalous. Yes; in reference to this and many other phenomena, materialism can only get out of the difficulties which it creates for itself, by supplementary hypotheses invented, not because there is evidence for them, but "to save appearances."

According to our view, on the other hand—which, be it remem-

bered, is that which the common sense of mankind in general has dictated—such a phenomenon in memory as that which has been referred to is precisely that which is to be occasionally expected. The soul within, supposing it to be still in full organic relationship with the organ of speech, and thus, in so far at least, to possess the full power of manifesting itself outwardly, is, by the hebetude of the aged brain, somewhat emancipated from the impressiveness of its environments in the outward world. It is thus more or less relieved from the necessity of attending and of being assimilated to them. Hence, in the exercise of its intrinsic assimilative power, it spontaneously assimilates itself to itself as it formerly existed, and thus brings up into the sphere of consciousness, and animates the socially disposed organ of speech with the reproduction in detail of those states which bring up along with them the still charming aura of early years. And, if there really be a spirit in man, and the inspiration of young life gives him memory, as the inspiration of the Almighty gives him understanding, what more natural? But if there be nothing permanent in man, but an ever changeful flow of atoms, what so incomprehensible? Is it maintained that the brain is of a glandular nature, and ought to have some secretion, then let that doctrine stand, if only it be told us in a reasonable way what that secretion is. If it be so, it will certainly be found that it is neither a liquid nor solid, nor a molecular aggregate of any kind, but a centralised unity or monad, powerful enough to be auto-kinetic and conscious,—not a “thought,” or a thread of consciousness merely, but a thinking thing—a spirit which, viewed in its somatic relations and normally impressed by them, is usually denominated a soul.

The difference between the view of the materialist and that which we advocate is immense in all that relates to the prospects of humanity. If the view of the materialist be accepted, then the existence of the mind as a conscious Being or consciousness, ceases at death, nor can it ever be revived again. If, on the other hand, the view here advocated be accepted, and it has also the vote of humanity in its favour, then the mind is no more transient in its action or destructible in its nature than is the ætherial element wherein it has its source, or the material element which is its nurse. In other words, it is as immortal as the creation itself.

And as to what befalls it at death, the change may possibly not be so great as is often supposed; for that change, according to our

theory, is merely the exchange of a limited and specially formed ætherial medium within, which is upheld by the brain and animal frame as its scaffolding, for the great ætherial medium without, which is upheld by the whole heavens and earth as its scaffolding. The soul is, indeed, at the same time set free from its material organic investiture. But the aggregative and assimilative powers of life, as known to us in the world, lead to the inference that the soul after death will not remain long naked, so to speak, and unsupported by a vehicle, but on the contrary that, if it be as it ought to be, it will forthwith gather around it and be clothed by such an ætherial form as will be suitable to its wellbeing in the new conditions of its existence, and which will bear that relation to the body in which it formerly dwelt, which the cosmical law of assimilation shall determine. Of that law the tendency in the circumstances must, in the first instance, be to mark out individualised forms similar to those which formerly invested the individual spirit. But since the constructive material is merely pure and simple æther, these forms will all be ideals. The reproduction of abortive or monstrous forms is no longer to be apprehended.

Very curious and interesting, indeed, are the inferences to which our philosophy leads in reference to the after-life, and in singular harmony with the teachings of Revelation. But they need not be entered upon now, and our work, in so far as it relates to mind, its powers and capacities, and its relation to matter, may be brought to a close here.



A SKETCH  
OF A  
PHILOSOPHY

*Ἀριστοῦ ὡς Τίμαιε*

PLATON in Tim.

PART I.

M I N D

ITS POWERS AND CAPACITIES.

A SKETCH  
OF A  
PHILOSOPHY  
PART II.  
MATTER  
AND  
MOLECULAR MORPHOLOGY

THE ELEMENTAL SYNTHESIS

ILLUSTRATED BY 75 DIAGRAMS OF MOLECULES IN THE TEXT.



WILLIAMS & NORGATE:

14, HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON, AND  
20, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.

1868.



"I say, then, in short, that, in an opinion, I look upon its being new or ancient, and its being singular or commonly received, as things that are but extrinsic to its being true or false; and, as I would never reject a truth for being generally known or received, so will I not conclude an opinion to be a truth for being generally known or received, merely because great numbers have thought it to be so, nor think an opinion erroneous, because it is not yet known to many, or because it opposes a tenet embraced by many. For I am wont to judge of opinions as of coins. I consider much less, in any one that I am to receive, whose inscription it bears, than what metal it is made of. It is indifferent enough to me, whether it was stamped many years or ages since, or came but yesterday from the mint. Nor do I regard through how many or how few hands it has passed for current, provided I know by the touchstone, or any such trial, purposely made, whether or no it be genuine, and does or does not deserve to have been current; for if, upon due proof, it appears to be good, its having been long and by many received for such, will not tempt me to refuse it. But if I find it counterfeit, neither the prince's image or inscription, nor its date (how ancient soever), nor the multitude of hands through which it has passed unsuspected, will engage me to receive it; and, one disavowing trial, well made, will much more discredit with me than all those specious things I have named can recommend." — BOYLE.

# CONTENTS.

## INTRODUCTION.

	PAGE
A hint of our Philosophy . . . . .	VII—XX

## BOOK I.

Chap. I.	An Indication of the Author's theory of matter . . . .	1
Chap. II.	The ætherial Element . . . . .	4
Chap. III.	Aetherial Elements may be unified . . . . .	6
Chap. IV.	The Material Element or Unit of Weight . . . . .	9
Chap. V.	Chemical atoms their Heat and Tension . . . . .	14
Chap. VI.	Atoms and Molecules their Electro-magnetism . . . .	26
Chap. VII.	The course and consummation of molecular action . .	31
Chap. VIII.	Verifications from the Phenomena of Nebulæ, Comets &c.	36

## BOOK II.

Chap. I.	The Trigonal Pyramid or Tetrad . . . . .	40
Chap. II.	The synthesis of Tetrads into the Atoms or Elements of chemistry . . . . .	45
Chap. III.	The Aggregation of the Elements or Atoms of chemistry unto the Molecules of Bodies . . . . .	59
Chap. IV.	The Non-metallic and the Metallic and their mutual Relations . . . . .	76
Chap. V.	Light, Common, Baric and Barytic Elements . . . .	84
Chap. VI.	Geology and Mineralogy . . . . .	86
	A Table of Elements . . . . .	90
Scholium.	On the Inadequacy of the Chemical Method for what it undertakes to discover. Anticipations . . . . .	90

## SUBSTANCES NOTICED.

---

- Air p. 94.  
Aluminum. 52.  
Alumina. 71.  
Ammonia. 96.  
Anhydrite. 95.  
Antimony. 90.  
Aqueous vapour. 19, 87.  
Arsenic. 71, 90.  
Azote. 61, 96.  
Barium. 90.  
Beryllium. 51.  
Boron. 49, 60, 65, 85.  
Bromine. 65.  
Cadmium. 83, 90.  
Caesium. 83, 90.  
Calcium. 83, 90.  
Carbon. 19, 50, 60, 65.  
Carbonic acid. 95.  
Chlorine. 65, 90.  
C H O, its three forms. 73.  
Diamond. 67.  
Earths crust. 86.  
Elements, classification of. 90.  
Essential oils. 64.  
Gold. 67, 83, 90.  
Gypsum. 95.  
Heat. 14.  
Hydrogen. 18, 46, 60, 84, 87.  
Hylogen. 47, 60.  
Iodine. 65, 90.  
Iron. 67, 83.  
Lead. 83, 90.  
Lithium. 53, 83, 90.  
Magnesium. 52, 83, 90.  
Marsh gas. 23, 65, 81.  
Mercury. 67, 83.  
Metals, classification of. 83.  
Molybdenum. 83, 90.  
Nitric acid. 64, 69.  
Ocean. 94.  
Oxides, metallic. 53.  
Oxygen gas. 22, 30, 47, 49, 61.  
Ozone. 48, 92.  
Phosphorus. 71, 90.  
Phosphorus, chlorides of. 70.  
Potassium. 83, 90, 96.  
Quartz. 71.  
Rubidium. 83, 90.  
Sal-ammoniac. 95.  
Selenium. 90.  
Silica. 54.  
Silicia. 57.  
Silicium. 56, 77.  
Silicon. 54, 76.  
Silver. 67, 83, 90.  
Sodium. 83, 90, 96.  
Specific gravities deduced. 63, 64, 65, 67, 71.  
Sugars. 72.  
Sulphur. 30, 47, 63.  
Tellurium. 90.  
Thallium. 83, 96.  
Tin. 90.  
Tungsten. 90.  
Water. 61.  
Zinc. 83.  
Zote. 95.



## A HINT OF OUR PHILOSOPHY.

---

### THE ACTUAL STATE OF SCIENCE, UNSATISFACTORY.

In the actual state of Science the phenomena of Nature and the Laboratory have been classified to a great extent and referred to Laws. But these laws are very numerous; and this makes the acquisition of Science very laborious. Most of them also rest solely on an inductive or empirical basis, they have been reached merely by observation, they give no account of themselves to Reason; and this places them in a very unsatisfactory position in an intellectual point of view. It obliges the man of Science to content himself with intellectual despair as the only kind of intellectual repose which the actual state of Science allows him.

Is no further reduction of these laws possible? And if they may be reduced in numbers, may not the ultimate laws or law approve itself as a dictate of Reason?

It cannot be denied that such a state of Science were in the highest degree desirable. We are commonly told to despair of it. But why should we? If the law of intellectual progress be admitted generally, why should it be rejected here, and the misadventures of the past be made the rule for the future? Of all theories in connexion with Nature assuredly one of the most respectable is that Nature is a Creation. Now if it be, there is no doubt that in the mind of the Creator Nature is not a multiplicity of things as it is in the

actual Science of our day; there is no doubt, that Nature is one grand Reality; and therefore possibly the whole action of Nature may be expressed by one all-embracing law. Moreover if it be the creation of an Intelligence, and this is implied in its being a creation, there must also be a sufficient reason for everything in it. And why should we despair of finding out the reasons of things so far at least as our intelligence demands in order to its own well-being? It is surely more legitimate to ascribe our still existing failures in finding reasons for certain things to our still existing ignorance of that which we may possibly know hereafter, than to any radical fault in our intellect. Now such a fault would exist if all men tended to ask that which cannot possibly be answered, and the best men laboured to ascertain that which can never be known.

It is now many years since the Author endeavoured to shew that there is one general mode of action which when modified according to circumstances gives all those varied modes of action which are usually regarded as laws of Nature. But he did not then see the reason of that law; and his views, thus incomplete, though printed and placed in a few libraries for preservation, and no doubt accessible to the curious, were not pressed upon the public and are scarcely at all known. They have indeed sometimes been noticed by the flying criticism of the day, but most frequently by writers so ignorant of what they were criticizing that it was painful to see a proper name in connexion with such nonsense.\* The author has therefore on this occasion taken care that contributors to the "Gay Science" shall at least have looked into his work deeper than the title-page in order to find the name of an author to whom they may shew their superiority on the subject which he handles—a subject to which he has devoted the leisure of a lifetime—so fruitlessly in a social point of view—if this be all that awaits him.

But now along with an all-embracing law he is able to see the reason of it. And having thus been enabled to complete the train of thought in relation to it, and having found

\* As quite an exception to this, there must be entered here the name of *The Contemporary Review*. That work, as in reference to the subjects generally which it handles, speaks (July 1866) with great intelligence as to the author's views and altogether in a manner which he has found to be very gratifying and encouraging. There may have been others also.

a philosophy which is of value to himself he naturally desires to present it to others. He has good evidence that there are a few, though at the present moment they may be but a few, who are deeply dissatisfied with the shallowness of that which is only popularly admired as Science, and who are thirsting for a view of Nature which shall both in its application be more adequate to explain phenomena, and in itself more profound and soul-satisfying. It is for these in the meantime that he publishes his results; for others hereafter.

### THE COSMICAL LAW.

The cosmical or all-embracing law referred to has been named from that operation of it which is most important to us, that by which our organisation is reintegrated and our energy maintained from hour to hour, namely, Assimilation. And the reason of it appears on our considering the consequences of that view of Nature which has been already alluded to, namely that Nature is the creation of an Allsufficient Creator — a view which may certainly be characterized as the most natural as well as the most respectable, since it comes most spontaneously to every one and has been most generally held by the most reflective minds of all ages.

From this relation it results that nothing which is quite new in creation is possible; for in the Creator himself all fulness dwells from all eternity. Whatever is not self-contradictory or self-destructive is already anticipated and has already a place in the Divine Mind, either as knowing or as being. In the Divine Mind there is already the archetype of every thing that is possible. Moreover it is incredible that an Almighty Creator should award existence to anything which should not be an expression of His will, anything which should not be responsive to Him and a manifestation of Him. In a word the creation cannot be but a mirror which shall reflect, or a luminary which shall radiate, or a treasury which shall dispense the wealth and the glory of the Infinite. Hence in its Being and its action every created thing, and all creation as one thing, must be assimilated and assimilative. In fine Assimilation must be the watch-word and the law of the creation.

Hence also we are enabled at once to see that the creation



must be, as it is found to be, a Cosmos; for it is the rescript of a perfect Intelligence in whom the love of order cannot but be supreme.

Cosmical Law then at the fountain-head is One only.

But the various breaks in knowledge commonly called branches of Science, which our intellectual weakness and the shortness of life necessitate, render it convenient to have a number of laws to refer to rather than one only. For if one only it might often seem unrelated to the phenomena to be explained and demand many words to connect it with them. Let us therefore here resolve our all-embracing law into three and these in two sets. And let us express them in terms which are applicable to material Nature to which alone the following pages are devoted. The two sets take their rise in the twofold fact that the finite assimilates itself on the one hand to the Infinite, and on the other hand to itself.

I. From the assimilation of the finite to the Infinite we obtain *The Law of diffusion* or expansion on the one hand and *The Law of Individuation* or condensation on the other, and as their harmonized product in the material economy *The Law of the Perfect in Form* (symmetry culminating in Sphericity).

II. From the assimilation of finite objects each to itself and all to each other, we obtain *The Law of the permanence of the properties of matter* and *The Law of Types or Species* on the one hand, and the phenomena of affinity and transformation and *The Law of Generic Resemblance* on the other. And as their harmonized product we obtain *The Law of the conservation of Energy*. Of all of these, continual illustrations will occur as we proceed and they need not be dwelt upon here.

## OF SUBSTANCE.

What now as to Being or Reality which is the postulate of all thought and which our cosmical law of assimilation requires us to ascribe to the creation if we ascribe it to the Creator? Are there between sixty and seventy different kinds even of material substance alone, and in this small planet of ours alone, not to speak of spiritual Beings which are greatly out of favour in the present day, or of aether, the claims of which to the award of existence are in a better way now than

they were during the last century? In a word is created substance of many kinds which differ from each other in their very grounds? Or when viewed ultimately and in its ground is there but one kind of created substance only? Our cosmical law suggests that as the Creator Himself is only one in substance so also will the creation be to which he awards existence. And here let it not be immediately inferred that the extreme simplicity of this deduction, made as it is in the face of all the variety and multiplicity of individualized objects that there are in the Universe, will necessarily involve us in difficulties. Different Beings whether classes or individuals are known to us not by any difference in their substance but only by differences in their attributes. And since Being or Substance and Power or Potentiality differ from each other only in conception, only as the statical differs from the dynamical, it is reasonable, nay in the circumstances it is alone legitimate to suppose that it is not in virtue of some absolute difference in substance (for none appears) but only from differences in the quantity or intensity of substance or power in the individual that different individuals display such different potentialities or endowments as they do display, and come to be justly classified as they are into various orders of Beings. What the best classification of these various orders may be, we who are confined to a small planet with a small orbit in the heavens are not in a good position to determine. But there are three which present themselves on all hands as very distinctly marked and which viewed in the aggregate are The Spiritual, The Aetherial, and The Material.

## OF SPIRIT.

Which of these three orders of Being are we to take as the type, as that in constituting which finite Being culminates and justifies its own existence though finite and therefore necessarily imperfect? This question is not more distinctly answered by the voice of intelligence which is the highest of all than it is by our cosmical law. For in as much as the Author of all is Himself a spiritual Being that law leads us to expect that the type of created Being shall be spirit also. Nor can Being in any object be so attenuated or so far re-

moved from Him who filleth all in all, but it must surely still retain an aura of the spiritual nature.

This inference as to the typical character of Spirit in the Cosmos may be otherwise put thus. An individualized Being is a Spirit when by the preservation of a true unity in his Being notwithstanding its quantity, the intensity or energy of Being which he possesses is such as to impart to him self-directive power, instead of the power of resting merely when he rests or of driving merely as he is driven, that is, when it is such as to impart to him the *vis voluntatis* instead of the *vis inertiae*, and along with this, perception and memory and desire and aversion, instead of a blind receptivity of special impressions only and mere atavism with attraction and repulsion. Since then the Creator is infinite in (the energy or intensity of) his Being and is truly One, creation in obeying the law of assimilation is to be expected to be either wholly a spirit-world from the first, or if otherwise, to tend continually in that direction.

As to the mental powers and capacities of spirits by which they are so fully differentiated from all other orders of finite Being whether material or aetherial it has been shewn in the first part of this work that, with the exception of that autokinetic action which is the characteristic of spirit, they are all phenomena of Assimilation, now to the Creator giving Reason, now to self giving Consciousness, now to the world giving Perception and Memory — the very term “idea” which has been consecrated from a remote antiquity as most proper to the phenomena of the spiritual world meaning “an assimilation”.

We have conceived the existence of an universe consisting solely of spiritual Beings. Now such a conception carries with it an answer to the question in Theodicy why a Being who is absolutely perfect in Himself should award existence, as we see that He has done, to that which being finite cannot but be imperfect; for spiritual Beings are the proper subjects of enjoyment; and assuredly enjoyment is such an excellence that it is a warrant for existence; and an encrease of enjoyment if it be possible is a warrant for creation. But however absolute the fulness of the Infinite, and however perfect His own enjoyment or ever-blessedness, still such is the nature of enjoyment that while One only exists One only can enjoy. By



a creation on the other hand of sentient creatures whose well-being shall imply enjoyment, these creatures being placed in circumstances favourable to their wellbeing, enjoyment may be multiplied without end.

## OF AETHER.

Theodicy and our Theory therefore equally suggest a creation which shall consist wholly of spiritual, psychical or sentient Beings. But such an universe, it appears not obscurely, could not exist under universal assimilation as the cosmical law. For among the attributes of the Infinite there is not only Unity, there is also Immensity. His Being and power are everywhere present. Under the influence of the divine Immensity then finite Being under the law of assimilation must tend to be diffused and to be found in space to the utmost degree possible. It must tend to be everywhere present. Now this it can be, since it is finite, only by being partitioned into the smallest unities of which it is capable. Moreover in being so partitioned it may also obey the law of assimilation in respect of the Unity of the Creator, for each element may itself be an unity.

It is further to be remarked that these diffused elements being all attenuated to the last degree that is possible to finite substance must all be identical with each other, except in the relative positions in space which each occupies. And in this respect as well as in the quantity or intensity of Being in the individual the aetherial world which we are now considering must differ completely from the world of Spirits. With regard to the latter nothing appears to present the individuals which constitute it from possessing different quantities or intensities of Being and consequently different potentialities or powers. Nothing appears to prevent the spiritual world from being a Hierarchy. But the individuals or elements in the world of aether must be everywhere identical.

As to their self-assimilative action it must be next to nothing. But, for the same reason, it is important to remark, that the medium as a whole must be eminently suited for assimilating itself to other Beings and things that are placed in it. It must therefore be eminently suited for representing and for reporting

these Beings and things to each other with perfect truth. It must also for the same reason be most fully dependent on the Creator and suited for manifesting Him as He is. And are not these anticipations fully verified by the phenomena of that medium which is the medium of vision, of light and colours, the realm of all visible beauty and glory?

Nor should we stop here were we to enter upon the subject in detail. In that case we might shew that while the aether aims at assimilating itself by its universal diffusion to the Immensity of the Creator, it aims also by its mode of action at assimilating itself to His Eternity; for eternity is not as we are somnolently apt to suppose a beginningless and endless thread of time extended in a line. Eternity is all time wound up in one; it is an abiding simultaneousness, and its first finite manifestation is a maximum velocity. And thus instead of the existing physical explanations, all of which have hitherto been complete failures, we obtain at least a metaphysical explanation, of the simultaneousness of universal attraction and the extreme velocity of light &c.

## OF MATTER.

But enough and more than enough it will be said of the Spiritual world and the Universal aether, both of which are often regarded as of questionable existence. What of the Material world it will be asked—that world which to the men of science of our day is every thing. To this we reply that in our philosophy the material world far from being the whole universe as is popularly maintained is merely an incident in it, a very beautiful as well as a very vast creation no doubt, but still only of the nature of a beautiful cloud-work or precipitate in the universal aether.

Assuming the aetherial to which we suppose the Creator to have awarded existence to be proceeding towards the spiritual in a non-miraculous way, it appears that the material element must present itself in the first instance, instead of the spiritual. This the inexorable conditions of geometry appear to demand. Nor let it be hastily inferred that in affirming this we are affirming limits to almighty power. For

the first forthputting of almighty power must consist in lighting up itself with perfect intelligence, and geometry is merely intelligence conceiving the relations of finite portions of something when occupying finite portions of space. But hence, in the redemption of Being from its most diffused and attenuated and wholly apathetic state to a state in which sensibility may be restored, it appears that the aetherial elements in the first instance must aggregate and unify into an order of individualities or elements in each of which the quantity or intensity of Being is still too small to have recovered and to be able to manifest autokinetic power or spiritual endowment of any kind. For the evidence of this Chaps III and IV of Book I of the work now in the Reader's hand may be consulted. We are indeed to expect in the individuals of this new order of Being, (in as much as there is more substance in each,) more individuality and higher powers than there are in the aetherial element. Instead of being capable of assimilating itself to other Beings and things merely as to motion and rest, which is all that the aetherial element can do, we are to expect that this new element shall be able to assimilate itself to itself in these respects also, that is, to rest as it rests and to drive as it is driven. We are also to expect in it phenomena which shall be reminiscences and anticipations of spiritual endowments such as are perception and memory, desire and aversion, we are to expect in it, for instance, a receptivity of the action of other things upon it, reintegration of former states, attraction and repulsion. Now these anticipations are realized in the material element.

## THE PASSAGE FROM THE MATERIAL TO THE SPIRITUAL.

Thus as soon as the Infinite comes into relation with the finite, as soon as immensity and eternity manifest themselves in terms of space and time it looks as if by the intrusion of the material element, a barrier were to be thrown up which would prevent access to the realm of spirits beyond, and put a stop to their creation in a non-miraculous way. But it soon appears that there is no danger of this. The material element makes its apparition in nature in virtue of the unifying or synthetic action that is implied in the cosmical law of



Assimilation. But that action cannot and does not terminate here. Nor can we legitimately assign a limit to it until synthetic action in the cosmos has proved itself coordinate in intensity with analytic action. We must look for effects of a synthetic action as perfect as those of the analytic action. And since the analytic action partitions completely Being or substance ultimately into the smallest individualities of which Being 'as such admits (the aetherial elements), we must look in the cosmos for a synthetic action which shall unify completely again these minima into new individualities ultimately of the greatest power, which the individualism of the adjacent individuals permits.

What response then let us ask do we actually find in Nature to such a conclusion? To this it is to be answered that we undoubtedly find the synthetic action of Nature subsequently to the genesis of the Material out of the Aetherial element going on with unabated energy; and we are warranted by the contemplation of Nature no less than by our theory to look for effects of synthetic action as perfect as those of analytic action. Now nowhere within the compass of the purely material sphere do we find the production of perfect unities. Such is the self-conservative power of the material elements that when they unite they unite by juxta-position only, and nothing results but a molecular structure, a structure which can be taken to pieces again. And we are not authorized either by mechanics, dynamics, chemistry or any other branch of science to ascribe to any merely molecular aggregate, whatever its mass or structure, phenomena of quite another order than those which are truly mechanical or chemical. Assuredly we are not authorized to ascribe to it thought and feeling.

But the course of molecular synthesis is extremely interesting and calls upon us to inquire into its meaning. Thus having prepared for itself in the mineral kingdom a ground to stand upon Synthesis marches onwards through the vegetable to the animal kingdom, which by universal consent culminates in our planet in Man. Now any animal and specially man considered as a molecular structure merely, may be justly described as a myo-neuro-cerebral apparatus with its accessories to give nourishment, support, protection &c. Moreover in this organic apparatus which unhappily no shorter name than that which has been given can characterize as an unity

(which it is), and in which molecular synthesis in our planet culminates we also see analysis culminating. The muscular system which is its peripheral part is the triumph of synthesis or structure. The brain which is its central part is the triumph of analysis or volume, under the condition that the result shall still be concrete. The brain consists of elements the atomic weight of none of which exceeds a low number, and they are kept far apart by means of hydrogen. And as might be expected in these circumstances it is so tender that of all the products of material nature it is the first to decompose after it has ceased to live.

And now what as to use? That of the muscular system is obvious. It is to move a system of fulcra and levers and so to effect motion. But what as to the brain? With a view to discover this we may remark in the first place that it is the centre of the entire animated system, every particular muscle and the whole periphery being connected with it, and the action of all led into it by innumerable conducting threads of the same nature as itself. We may safely infer therefore that the brain must be a focus of action of great force, and that force primarily in so far as its environments are concerned, centripetal. In the second place we may remark that compared with what it might have been (but for analysis culminating in it) the brain is very voluminous, and its value obviously depends in great measure on its volume. Now this fact taken in connexion with its highly analysed and readily disintegrating structure seems at first sight strange. But it ceases to be so when we call to mind that in the very degree that it ceases to be a dense mass of heavy molecular matter while yet it is a molecular structure it comes to be a volume of individualized aether. The brain commonly so considered with its fibres and ganglions is according to our view merely a support or skeleton to a large unified volume of a hyaline, invisible, imponderable substance, which however secure it may be of escaping detection by the eye or the balance is yet there, and is such that according to our philosophy it may be expected to fulfil a most important function in nature.

Here in fact we have a repetition on a great scale, and by the use of the material element as the instrument, of that aggregation of aetherial elements in the celestial spaces, from the centripetal action of which we infer (Chap. III) their

perfect synthesis or unification by confluence in a definite small number, and the consequent giving to Nature of a new order of Being, namely, the material element. In this repetition then of the same structure on a much grander scale in the brain, what are we to expect but the perfect synthesis or unification by confluence of aetherial elements again in vast numbers in that organ into a new order of Being transcending the Material? But if so what we obtain can be nothing else but a psychical or spiritual Being, according as the synthetic force of the myo-neuro-cerebral organ which is its mother and nurse, is less or greater — an organ which may obviously be of no less value to its inhabitant, when its efferent or centrifugal action has commenced, for it must serve as an apparatus to it for communicating with its environments, and for placing itself in a relationship of well-being and of well-doing in the world.

Grant this coordination of the synthetic with the analytic force in nature, and our conception of a Cosmos is complete. The power-loom provided by the Creator for weaving the beautiful web of Nature is perfect. The material system which threatened at first to put a stop to the multiplication of spiritual Beings altogether is converted into an apparatus most productive of sentient Beings in all varieties that are capable of enjoying their existence until the soul of man is reached — the soul of man which is not only alive to enjoyment like every sentient nature, but which can also compass self-originated or God-like action. And thus the all-important truth of the immortality of the feeling and thinking principle in man is no longer left as a tenet needing to be held by faith in opposition to the indications of modern science. It is on the contrary placed in the position of that truth towards which all science culminates.

### THE SEEMING CONFLICTS IN NATURE.

Since the Cosmos is finite and the condition of its existence (the cosmical law of assimilation) calls upon it to imitate, even to the impossible undertaking of emulating, the Infinite a seeming conflict in many respects must be unavoidable. Thus the Infinite is at once absolute Unity and ab-



solute Immensity. Now of this the finite conception is that of two opposite extremes neither of which can be reached, one extreme all development and expansion, the other all contraction and concentration. Hence Nature is all in motion in opposite directions, and often seems to conflict with herself. That this is a seeming only might however be inferred from the fact that all these movements originate in one and the same idea, obey one and the same law (assimilation) and aim at one and the same end. Accordingly it forms one of the integral parts of the Philosophy of the inimitable Leibnitz that they never frustrate or extinguish each other, and that the same amount of energy is always conserved in the cosmos — a principle which is now generally admitted, and of which one hears much as a discovery of our own day.

But the incompetence of that which is finite to assimilate itself to that which is at once absolute Unity and absolute Immensity is not the only ground of seeming conflict in Nature. The Author of all is also at once Immutable and Ever-living. And hence phenomena in the creation when assimilating itself to the Creator in this respect, which are in their seeming at least still more difficult to resolve. Hence the stability for ages of the crystal on the one hand, and the changefulness from hour to hour of the sentient creature on the other, and that not merely as matter of fact, but as the conditions of its well-being; for normal changefulness accomplishing itself without effort in a sentient nature affects the sensibility of that creature as enjoyment. But such changefulness is the abolition or the destruction of stability. It is therefore opposed to mechanical excellence. Is then the conflict between the truly vital and the excellently mechanical both real and insuperable? If so then perennial enjoyment can only be secured in the spirit world into which the merely mechanical does not enter at all.

But let us not on that account disparage the mechanical, the material. Can there possibly be enjoyment, at least such enjoyment as is known to us, without the knowledge of its opposite correlative, without the conception at least if not the experience of suffering? It would seem that there cannot. But if so, then the material world instead of merely coming in the way of the spiritual world as a barrier (the point of view in which it presented itself to us at first) implying

as it does a discipline in suffering, may even be necessary to that in virtue of which alone spirit possesses value. Doubtless the conflict here also is only seeming. And so in all cases if they really be part of the economy of Creation, and not products of finite wills. Doubtless in reality and in His own thought the supreme Intelligence of the Great Creator sees harmony only. And possibly the same joy may be in reserve for us also when Science shall have been perfected.

But here as a ground for setting aside our entire philosophy it may be said that these objective conflicts be they all seeming only or be they all real, are no discouragements to speculative philosophy, compared with those subjective conflicts which take their rise in Reason itself, since Reason when venturing on such cosmological ideas as enter largely in such philosophy does not scruple to affirm with equal confidence conclusions which are directly contradictory of each other. This is a very serious consideration. But it has received what to us is a satisfactory solution in our Ist Part (On Mind, its Powers and Capacities). These contradictory conclusions, it has there been shewn, instead of being antinomies of Reason (though the admirable Kant regarded them as such) are only antilogies of consciousness, that is, phenomena of perceptivity not pure and simple, but modified (and generally maltreated) by the presence along with it in the same mind of a personal activity which in itself has no law but that of liberty, and which therefore is always bent on denying, because it finds that all belief binds, and therefore limits the exercise of liberty.

---

# BOOK I.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### AN INDICATION OF THE AUTHOR'S THEORY.

1. It is generally said that of all kinds of knowledge "science" is the most certain. And this is true when by science is meant generalisations which when once reached inductively have been expanded anew mathematically, and every successive equation when it was looked for as a phenomenon has been found to be responded to by observation.

But it is only a very small part of science commonly so called that answers this description. With regard to the bulk of "science", if extreme vicissitudes of belief on the part of "men of science" are evidence of uncertainty, it may be affirmed that of all kinds of knowledge none is more uncertain than "science".

These vicissitudes are strongly shewn by the universal aether itself, through which as the medium of light all men obtain almost all their knowledge, and with which we in particular must begin our atomic and molecular morphology if we are to begin at the beginning.

Reality in constituting the universal aether exists in such an exquisitely attenuated state that it has lost almost all its properties, and among others self-manifesting power to such senses as we possess. Hence a possibility of denying the existence of the universal aether if anything were to be gained by doing so. Now such was astronomy as it came from the hands of Sir J. Newton that it seemed as if the existence of anything whatever in the celestial spaces would make the planets lag in their courses and ultimately fall into the sun. And in a word down to our own day it would retain the theory of the planetary motions in a state of much greater simplicity if the aether were out of the way altogether. Accordingly during the last century the aether



was frankly set aside. The celestial spaces were declared to be a vacuum. And in the equations of astronomy the celestial spaces are assumed to be a vacuum to this day. So are also the interiors of all vessels from which all ponderable substances have been withdrawn. But it is no longer possible to maintain this view as a physical fact. That the movements of the actual heavens should respond to the astronomical equations, though the latter are admitted not to represent reality, is an instructive fact in the logic of science. But at all events the existence of the universal aether is now affirmed, and must be affirmed, as one of the most elementary facts in physical science. Nor is this done with hesitation.

The tendency of the present day is as much to extravagance of affirmation on this side, as it was to the side of denial during the last century. Instead of a vacuum the celestial spaces are now rather represented as a plenum; and sometimes the pressure of that plenum is conceived as tremendous;\* nay sometimes the earth's orbit is spoken of even as "a groove" which our planet has cut and cleared out for itself in a region which is not merely full of aether, but of meteoric matter, and what not. Hence for the present the phenomena of radiant heat and light seem no better than a set of singularities capable only of moving our wonder not of satisfying our intelligence; and astronomy considered as a physical study and not merely as a mathematical exercise has been thrown into a state of complete anarchy.

2. But happily the course of science during the same epoch has not been all in the direction of complicating its data. During the latter part of the last century and the beginning of this, chemists too elate with the great improvements which were then being made in analysis, and too unmindful of the fact that those elements by the use of which Nature weaves the beautiful web of the mineral the vegetable and the animal kingdoms have been previously tested by her as to their stability by the ordeals of the volcano on the one hand and of abyssal pressure on the other (compared with which the analytic processes of the laboratory are but a mimicry) too hastily concluded that whatever substances they could not decompose in the laboratory are to be regarded as essentially undecomposable, solid and simple. Hence according to the

\* Sir J. F. Herschel has shewn in a most recent publication that supposing the aether to be analogous to other elastic media an amount of it equal in quantity of matter to that which is contained in a cubic inch of air (which weighs about one-third of a grain) if enclosed in a cube of one inch in the side would exert a bursting power of upwards of seventeen billions of pounds on each side of the cube while common air exists only fifteen pounds. And the most modern science says similar things about the aether.

chemistry of that epoch (which is still dominant) a long list of between 60 and 70 different kinds of matter in the crust of our planet alone! Hence in a word such a chaos, that not a single phenomenon in mineralogy or mineral geology can be accounted for, except on the hypothesis of the most incredible substitutions, which moreover even granting bring the student no nearer a rational geology than he was before he invoked their aid. Of late however the more philosophically minded among enquirers into the structure of bodies have shewn a disposition to return to the previous belief, a belief which has ruled during almost the whole history of philosophy, namely, that matter in its ground is one and the same in all bodies whatsoever. As to the primal or truly elementary atom or least possible particle of matter, some have supposed that it is a laboratory substance, hydrogen namely, the atomic weight of hydrogen being the lightest of all known substances. But others with more caution and we may say chemists in general at the present moment leave the unit of atomic weight still at large.

**3.** It is the object of the work now in the reader's hand to shew that

By assuming a material element or unit of weight, one and the same in all the 60 or 70 chemical elements, and that unit a centre of force invested by a dynamosphere or environment of such attractive and repulsive agencies as are commonly supposed —

And by adopting for our guidance in the synthesis of these units into molecules the law of symmetry, a law whose dominion in nature is universally acknowledged and which is obtained equally by a most extensive observation of nature and by the conditions of equilibrium among a number of equal and similar central forces when formed into systems —

We obtain a series of molecular structures which represent in every respect in which the two can be compared together the chemical atoms and molecules of nature and the laboratory. Thus —

**a.** Those which we obtain towards the commencement of our synthesis, constituting as they do more simple and symmetrical systems of equal and similar forces, must exist in more perfect equilibrium and must be more stable than all others. Hence they must be undecomposable in the laboratory; for all the reagents applied to them and all the vessels containing them must yield before they do. They may therefore not inaccurately be named, and may possibly represent, the atoms or elements of the chemist.

**b.** In the number of units of weight of which these undecomposable molecules of ours consist they are found to agree with the

chemical elements in their respective atomic weights, as the latter have been determined by the balance.

c. When the same principles of interpreting molecular form and structure are applied to each molecular structure in the whole series, there are obtained for our theoretical elements, atomicities and chemical and physical properties generally, which are perfectly parallel to those of the chemical elements which have the same atomic weights.

d. Those of our theoretic elements whose construction is most direct and easy in dynamics agree in atomic weight &c. with those chemical elements which are most generally differed or most abundant in nature.

e. Our theoretical elements possess certain genetic relationships to one another and indicate certain possible transformations into one another, and these are altogether parallel to the juxta-positions and seeming transformations of the chemical elements in nature.

In a word our molecular structures, whether undecomposable and constituting the atoms of the chemist or decomposable and constituting molecules commonly so called, as also the cohering masses composed of these theoretical elements, represent the objects both of nature and the laboratory in every comparable particular.

But instead of mere assertion let us rather lose no time in shewing that such is really the case — And yet since the impatient reader can easily skip any number of pages,\* let us for the sake of order begin at the beginning.

## CHAPTER II. .

### THE AETHERIAL ELEMENT.

4. Although our molecular theory might have been presented all independently of any specific relation to the aether, and though its validity is not compromised if the relationship as here set forth is rejected, yet in order to exhibit it in all the completeness which belongs to it in a philosophical point of view we must commence with a few remarks — a very few — on the universal aether.

5. First then we affirm the existence of the aether. But on this we shall not dwell; since its existence will not be denied by any one who

\* The chemist who is contented with his science as it exists and desires to come in contact with our elements one by one in detail with a view to try the theory here advanced is advised to pass on to Book III.



can be expected to take a rational interest in what follows. We affirm also, and happily still in common with all men of science that, whilst the aether is truly an universal medium, it consists at the same time of discrete particles of inconceivable fineness and tenuity, all spherical, all equal, and in a word when in a state of repose all identical in every respect, except as to their positions in space.

6. And here many enquiries present themselves as to the modes of arrangement and of action proper to the aether and to the particles of which it consists. Are these particles, for instance, to be regarded as equally dense, or rather equally rare, from center to periphery? Or are they to be viewed as centers of force, at once attractive and repulsive; or either wholly attractive or wholly repulsive, according to the phase in which the material element exists at the moment? moreover are these particles in a cubical or in a tetrahedral arrangement? Or do these two modes alternate with each other, when currents of action are flowing between dissimilar bodies in the aether, as between the sun and our earth for example, giving rise to a rhythm of tension and lapse, light and darkness &c. &c. These and other questions of the same order are interesting. But this field of enquiry is still so preoccupied by a conception of merely mechanical undulation (implying universal and indiscriminate radiation!) that we pass it entirely over here. But when that other kind of undulatory or rhythmical action which is named a polarized current shall have come to be understood a great revolution in this field may be expected. It will be found that here as elsewhere Nature, wherever free to do so, has respect to the law of least action. And we shall be no longer called upon to believe in the doctrines at once of the conservation and of the dissipation of Energy in the universe. But let these things pass. The progress of our special enquiry does not demand any investigation of the phenomena of the aether. We hold that these phenomena are not original and proper to the aether itself, but are merely the repetitions or continuations under the law of assimilation of the phenomena of the Beings and things that exist in the aether. We pass on therefore to the discovery or at all events to the investigation of the form, structure and mode of action of some of those Beings or things, namely, the atoms and molecules of bodies. If in this we succeed, the phenomena displayed by the aether, viz. light and colours, radiant heat, chemical action, magnetism &c., will shew their nature without special study and as a matter of course.

---

•

## CHAPTER III.

## AETHERIAL ELEMENTS MAY BE UNIFIED.

7. *The aetherial units in certain regions of space may aggregate into clusters consisting of unknown but of equal numbers, each cluster being spherical.*

This result follows directly from the cosmical law of unification. That the number of aetherial elements in each group must be unknown to us will be at once granted. And that they shall all be equal to one another, the law of assimilation demands. Nor is it less certain that they will be all spherical. Thus the law of symmetry, which all nature proclaims aloud, when undisturbed from without and operating in a centralized or individualized object, ever tends towards the development of the spherical and culminates in the construction of a spherical capsule, shell or cell. This follows from the fact that the idea of symmetry is that of similarity of relationship in all the parts or particles of any structure to some one plane or line ultimately to some one point in the form. Now that relation culminates when the positions of all the parts or particles are one and the same in relation to one and the same point within the form. The symmetry of a cluster therefore culminates when the constituent particles are all disposed at the same distance around a common centre, that is, when they form a spherical capsule, shell or cell.

This culmination of the symmetrical in the cellular we see abundantly verified in that region where molecular synthesis itself culminates, namely, in those molecular unities of which living bodies are composed. It has been found that when newly constructed and previously to their transformation these organ-forming unities are all cells. Elsewhere also as we descend still farther towards the region of the invisible, spherules are always obtained. Are we to suppose then that nature after having given one type of form and structure throughout the whole region of the visible from the sun in the heavens to the smallest individualized object which the microscope can shew, changes her type when she happens to be no longer within reach of our eye-sight? No surely. Analogy forbids such a supposition. Moreover our cosmical laws, being the same for all nature, lead us to expect on the part of Nature a persevering uniformity of procedure in the midst of that all but infinite variety which she displays. They warrant us in regarding the invisible as in keeping with the visible. What we find to exist

among the later products of molecular synthesis because they happen to be visible to our eyes, we infer to exist at the commencement, though its products there be invisible. We conclude that the whole group of aetherial units as also the nucleus in the centre of the group which we are now considering will be spherical and cellular.

8. *Of these aetherial clusters there is reason to infer that the nucleus will consist of 12 or 20 or of  $12+20=32$  or of  $12+20+12=44$  or some higher number in the same series.* For if you take any number of equal spheres and dispose them around a common centre you will find that the lowest number which gives a structure that can be fairly called spherical and cellular is 12. And after 12 it is 20. These two numbers indeed when viewed in this relation may be regarded as alternate numbers. In both, the body or equatorial region of the group consists of 10. But in the one the poles are real, being constituted by a single aetherial unit each. In the other they are geometrical merely, being determined by 5 aetherial units placed around each extremity of the axis. Further, on inspecting a group of 12 equal spheres placed around a common centre it will be perceived that there are on its surface certain regions suited for the symmetrical accommodation of others, and that these regions are just 20 in number. Thus the heart or nucleus of our aetherial cluster may have a double wall; it may consist of 12 aetherial elements circumscribed or coated by 20. Its entire constituent number will therefore be  $12+20=32$ . Nay it may possibly have another layer superposed so as to impart to it a triple wall. But in this case the number added according to the law of symmetry will be 12, repeating the innermost layer, and thus giving as the number of constituent elements  $12+20+12=44$ . And so on.

9. *Clusters consisting of the numbers 12 and 20 when undergoing simultaneous and equable compression around their common centre develope, in the regions between them, regular pentagons and equilateral triangles rendering conspicuous the numbers 5 and 3 with their multiples.* Suppose 12 equal compressible spheres placed around a common centre to be drawn or pressed towards that centre, it is easy to see that the corresponding regions common to each must tend to be moulded into *pentagons*. The 12 together must therefore mark out the skeleton of a regular dodecahedron. And suppose a group of 20 to be similarly compressed it is easy to perceive that a system of equilateral *triangles* constituting the skeleton of the icosahedron will be developed. Thus by the contact and compression of spheres in the descent of the aetherial towards something more concrete we find as our first numeral manifestations the numbers 5 and 3. And does it not



appear as if even already our as yet undeveloped theory were beginning to vibrate in harmony with material nature?

The individualized objects which our senses enable us to observe in detail are of three orders, animals, plants and crystals. And looking first to the most fully developed animals does not the number 5 or some multiple of 5 constantly shew itself? Is it not to this fact in a word that we owe our very arithmetic itself, which is generally admitted to have been based on the number of our fingers? In the vegetable kingdom the prevalence of the number 5 and its multiples in the more perfect plants, and of 3 and its multiples in the less perfect, has also for a long time served as an element in the most philosophical classification of this kingdom viz that into Exogens and Endogens.

But what it may be asked of the third great class, the class of Acrogens with their tetraspores, their peristomes &c., always displaying the numbers 4, 8, 16, &c. and the corresponding low-organised animals, radiated animals and others, as also crystals, in all of which instead of the numbers 3 or 5 and their multiples the number 4 and its multiples and submultiple predominate? To this the answer is that 3 and 5 are so related that when their difference appears the number 2 is given; when their mean, the number 4; and when their sum, the number 8. Moreover 2 and its multiples are the numbers which directly result from the action and reaction and equilibration of simple forces interacting irrespective of a boundary or a particular form. We may therefore expect these numbers to be manifested abundantly among the less fully individualized members of a dynamic system.

But all this is to anticipate by a great way. It ought however to be a comfort to the reader when he finds that an author to whom he is giving up his time is not altogether in an aetherial region which has no points of contact with nature as visible around us. We have still a considerable way to travel before we reach this region. But a step in this direction is made when we assume that —

**10.** *The aetherial elements which constitute the nucleus of an aetherial cluster may be unified by confluence into a new unity:* This we assume as implied in the extreme attenuation of the aetherial elements and their consequent inability to maintain their individuality under the superincumbent pressure to which those in the centre of a group are supposed to be exposed. We thus obtain Reality as an individualized thing different from aether. What is it then? This question it is the object of the following chapter to answer. Meantime let us state what it is that we have found. It is then a cluster of aetherial elements which have by their own secular compression suc-

ceeded in unifying a definite number of themselves into a new unity which has become the heart of the cluster, while the aether concerned remains attached as an investing atmosphere or dynamosphere. What then is this aetherial cluster with unified nucleus? Or rather let us ask what does it represent more or less perfectly or imperfectly? for in itself it is of course nothing better than merely a conception of a very finite mind—a very poor and blind and naked thing—compared with any Reality which is the work of the great creator.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### OF THE MATERIAL ELEMENT OR UNIT OF WEIGHT.

11. The endowments of any Being or thing which possesses a true unity are according to our philosophy proportional *cet: par:* to the quantity of substance or Reality in that Being or thing. Our nucleus of unified aether therefore in the midst of its still aetherial atmosphere must be possessed of powers greater than those which the merely aetherial elements possess. And it is for us now to enquire what these greater powers are.

12. *Inertia: vis Inertiae.* The aetherial elements cannot detain within themselves force impressed upon them. They instantly transmit it, giving to motion in the aetherial medium velocities, which when compared with all other velocities are marvellous. But in our new, units containing as they do in their nuclei a twelvefold quantity of substance at the least, we may expect a difference in this respect. We may expect that they will be able to detain, as it were, in transitu, and to embody in themselves, action incident upon them. But if so, then an unit of this kind if in motion will press on; and if at rest it will make a stand. It has in a word acquired an appreciable inertia or *vis inertiae*. Until it be put out of its existing state whether of motion or of rest by some force applied it will persevere in that state. The aetherial elements according to our conception merely transmit through the medium which they constitute the motion impressed on that medium as it is impressed. They do not detain or transform it. In the individual aetherial element inertia is no more than nascent merely. In the aetherial medium inertia exists only as a limit. But in the unified clusters of aetherial elements, with their more substantial nuclei inertia is distinctly pronounced.

**13.** But this it may be said is mere assertion. Let us then view the subject more distinctly in the light of our cosmical law of Assimilation, that law which is the basis of all our cosmical laws, the harmonist of the other two, (the law of Individuation and the law of Unification), that which while it maintains analysis, harmonizes it with synthesis, which while it preserves species gives them in genera, and along with all the variety of creation maintains an universal harmony and unity. It is to the effect that "every individualized Being and thing tends in every successive moment of its existence first to assimilate itself to itself; and secondly to assimilate to itself all others within the sphere of its agency; whilst it is of course undergoing in its turn through their action upon it a process of assimilation to them."

**14.** Now it is as a medium only, not as consisting of particles, that aether obeys fully this law. It is as a medium only that it can assimilate itself to other beings and things and so represent them. And because its assimilative power is thus restricted the aether is competent to represent other things with perfect truthfulness. But the new unit of substance possessing as it does more reality or being, and consequently more power, can obey the law of assimilation and manifest that law as an unit or individual. It can assimilate itself in its mode of action this moment to itself as it acted the moment before. If that mode of action consisted in accomplishing an element of motion it continues to move next moment in the same way; and so on forwards and backwards from last to first. And here it is worthy of remark that in the fact of inertia its law also is given by our theory; for the movement accomplished in a moment is a change of place from one point in space to the next point adjacent to it. Now this is and cannot but be an element of a straight line. This movement is also accomplished in a definite moment of time. Hence in assimilating the motion of every successive moment to that of the first moment the mobile element must obviously move forward in a straight line with an uniform velocity. If on the other hand it be at rest it must obviously, in so far as itself alone acts, assimilate itself to itself in this respect and remain at rest. And thus when the requisite amount of material is supplied as a field for its operation, our cosmical law of assimilation gives both the fact of inertia and its law.

**15.** And here it is important to remark that, while our philosophy thus gives inertia as the characteristic endowment of this first kind of substance which results from the confluence of aetherial elements, it assigns it to this order of substance alone. It does not assign inertia as an attribute of Being universally. In the aetherial elements it regards



inertia as nascent merely. And to units or monads possessing a greater quantity of Being than this our first kind it assigns higher powers than inertia higher powers than that of being merely able to rest where they are and of driving as they are driven. If it be asked what these higher powers can be the answer is a very obvious one; for there is only one alternative. If such Beings possessing as they do more reality are not inert, if they are not obliged to rest where they are brought to a stand or to drive as they are driven, they must surely be able to act from within themselves, they must surely be autokinetic, and if so, then surely selfdirective also. In a word they must be alive and free. And if so, what can they be but spirits. But of this higher order of Beings the investigation does not belong to this place.

**16.** *Elements which possess inertia must also gravitate.*

All the cosmical laws and specially the law of unification concur in affirming that all individualities that have been separated from each other, nay all that occupy different regions in space whatever their previous history, must tend towards each other again. But those individualities or unities which possess inertia when engaged in obeying this tendency must also press in the direction whither they are tending. Now this is the same thing as to say that they must have weight or gravitate towards each other. This may also be shewn without invoking the law of unification and simply by a reference to the all-embracing law of assimilation. Thus so long as they exist in different regions they are not assimilated as to the space they occupy. But this, the law of assimilation must ever tend to effect. And this tendency, manifesting itself in particles which possess a *vis inertiae*, must constitute gravitation.

**17.** As to the law of gravitation that also is implied in our cosmical law of assimilation. For this law implies that the gravitating force estimated in the whole sphere of its existence around the centre, shall be assimilated to itself or equal in every successive sphere or spherical shell around that centre whatever the distance from it. In equal areas in the successive shells therefore the gravitating force must be less in proportion as the square of the radius of each shell is greater. Now this is what is affirmed when it is said that gravitation decreases as the square of the distance increases or varies inversely as the square of the radius.

As to the other part of the law of gravitation, viz, that it varies with the mass, this is merely to affirm that it is the same in amount in every ultimate material element or unit of weight, and this also is implied in our view. Already therefore we have found to belong to our elements such properties as entitle us to think and speak of them as material

and this therefore we shall do as occasion occurs especially as it will save the necessity of circumlocution.

18. *These elements must also be perfectly elastic towards one another.* At the moment of the confluence of the aetherial elements in the centre of an aetherial cluster into a new centre of force, so as to transform the aetherial into the material, all the modes of movement, which may have previously actuated the aetherial cluster to which an unified nucleus has now been given, must come to a stand. They must remain anchored as it were to the newly developed centre of force, but not in repose. The systems of movements previously existing must now assume a potential state. A determinate spherical volume and a state of tension must ensue. What this state of tension and energy is it is difficult to conceive mechanically, because it implies, in seeming at least, the two contraries of perfect solidity and perfect rarity. But viewed as a phenomenon it identifies itself with a perfect elasticity and ultimate impenetrability.

19. All independently of imperfect mechanical conceptions however, we may deduce the perfect elasticity of the elements now under consideration from our cosmical laws. Thus they have all been perfectly assimilated to each other. The cosmical law of assimilation has been fulfilled in reference to them. They are all identical. They are therefore perfectly typical subjects for the law of Individuation to take effect upon them. Now the special function of this law is to secure to each individual its proper volume, its proper field in which it may exist. Under this law therefore the material elements (nothing preventing) will thrust each another out of its way, each endeavouring to make good its own proper form and volume. Now supposing the form stable this is only a description of elasticity in other terms.

20. And here we have an instance of the many harmonies which our cosmical laws awake. It thus comes out that elasticity is not a singular phenomenon now or at any moment imposed upon material nature for the first time. Elasticity according to our view is in reference to form and volume what inertia is in reference to substance. Elasticity is the Inertia of form. It is the fulfilment of the law of assimilation in reference to form and volume, as inertia is the fulfilment of that law in reference to movements in space. And in this we see the development of a mode of action which since it rules through all material nature demands our consideration here.

21. *All the movements of elastic elements are rhythmical, that is, pulsatory, vibratory or undulatory.* Since the ultimate elements of which all material aggregates and masses consist are per-

fectly elastic, these aggregates and masses must themselves be more or less elastic. And any motions whatsoever can be propagated through them or constituted in them only according to the mode of elastic action. Now that mode as has been stated is a repetition of the phenomenon of inertia. Suppose any physical point in any quiescent or stable form to have been disturbed, as for instance by having been driven in towards the centre, then as soon as the disturbing force will permit, that form must under the law of assimilation tend to assimilate itself to what it was before the disturbance. But being once in motion in that direction it must under the same law of assimilation (acting now as inertia) persevere in that motion beyond what is needed for the restoration of the form. It must in fact under the same law assimilate the excursion from the centre to that caused by the disturbing force towards the centre. Nor will it be recalled from its tendency to a motion outwards until the form-restoring force is as great in the centripetal as it was in the centrifugal direction. And thus, if the communication of the reciprocating action to adjacent bodies were prevented, the disturbed form must be thrown into a sustained state of action which cannot but be rhythmical or of the nature of ebb and flow, undulation, pulsation &c. And this great fact it is necessary for us to signalize at our very entrance upon the study of the cosmos. But here it will be well to mark that in elementary elasticity and rhythmical action there is more than has been here expressed, more indeed than can be expressed, but which we may thus indicate.

22. *Rhythm in its most elementary state implies two phases, a phase of being as well as of moving, which are the counterparts of each other.* They are such that if one of them be named *Elasticity* or elastic action the other ought be named *Dielasticity* or dielastic action. For this mode of being and of acting, the proper fields are the aetherial medium and the aetherial atmospheres of material elements, the phenomena resulting being those of light and colours, magnetism, electricity, in one word polarity. Moreover the interdiffusion of dissimilar gases, solution, chemical union and the interpenetration of dissimilars represent it among palpable bodies. It can however only be conceived as the counterpart of elasticity, that is, as the counterpart of a stable occupation of space. Now such a counterpart is not non-resistance merely, it is an affection of reality or substance, the opposite of resistance. But this conception being the very counterpart of all that is familiar is unavoidably difficult and very obscure and need not be insisted upon here.

23. *Elements which possess inertia, gravitation and elas-*



*ticity, possess also such self-manifesting power as renders them, when they form sufficiently large aggregates or masses, palpable to sense.* The aether as has been stated is, through want of adequate reality and individualized action in its elements, wholly defective in self-manifesting power. When pure and at rest it is wholly impalpable. And when it is in action it is only a stimulus to perception, not itself a perceptible object. But not so the inert, gravitating, elastic, elements which we are now considering. They have acquired the power of pressing forward and of making a stand. They will not move till they are moved. They will not stop till they are stopt. They act therefore; nor that only. They act in direct antithesis to volition which is the essence of the Ego. They are truly a Non-ego. They do not fall in with mind. They do not conceal themselves in the mind. They stand out from it and opposite to it. Accordingly they are known by the mind as other than itself. They are affirmed as existing externally to it.

24. We have thus arrived at the properties which by general consent are the characteristics of matter viz inertia, gravitation, elasticity and palpability to sense. Moreover we have seen what the place of matter is according to our theory in the economy of the Universe. Matter is not to us what many suppose that it is, a peculiar kind of substance, original, autocratic, eternal. Much less is it the whole of substance. It is merely a modification of Being lying between the aetherial on the one hand which is its mother-element, and the Spiritual on the other, of which in so far as our unbodied spirits at least are concerned it is the nurse.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### OF CHEMICAL ATOMS AND MOLECULES THEIR HEAT AND TENSION.

25. Between "the material element" as existing free in the aetherial medium or anywhere in separate units of weight and "Body" as commonly understood there is a wide difference. The material elements actuated by the law of unification form into symmetrical groups each of which possesses an individuality of its own, like the unit itself though not so perfect; and these group are more or less stable, and are either suddenly or secularly transformable. They are named "atoms" when they are undecomposable in the laboratory, and molecules when

they are. And "body" is the general name for the objects of this atomic and molecular world. And here it requires to be remarked that when the individual elements of matter constitute atoms and molecules many properties are developed which cannot exist in the material elements when separate. Of these, none is more important than "heat" to which we add "tension" as the dynamic correlative of heat.

26. *By heat we understand the pulsatory action of the material elements which constitute an atom or molecule around the centre of that atom or molecule* — an action consisting in ceaseless excursions to and from that centre. We are reminded of it in the beating of every heart, in the flicker of every flame, and in the sounding of every sonorous body. And this may be said to be the theory of heat proper to the Baconian epoch. It was set aside for many years by the convenient but gross conception of heat as a fluid substance. And it differs from the doctrine of heat as now revived in as much as the latter is considered to be the rotation or "swing" in space of the atom or molecule centre as well as surface. And indeed this latter is the only view of heat as a mode of motion which the prevailing hypothesis of solid atoms permits. But according to our view this swing is one of those many modes of reciprocating, undulating, motion which bear the aggregate name of Electricity. Of heat proper according to our view the centres or foci of molecules are the zero or origin. And though the centre or foci of the atom or molecule may, conceivably at least, be neither swinging or rotating at all, still the material units of which the molecule consists may possibly be swinging or flickering round the centre or foci, and if so, then the atom or molecule will be actuated by heat more or less.

27. *Heat secularly acting in an atom or molecule tends to induce many changes in the structure and form of that atom or molecule and of these the ultimate issue or limit would be its reduction to homogeneity of structure and to pure sphericity or cellularity of form.* It may be demonstrated dynamically and it will appear by observation as we proceed that a mode of action, such as we have conceived heat to be, when existing in an insulated system of material elements (in an atom or molecule) must tend to distribute these material elements into positions of maximum symmetry, and therefore to reduce all atoms and molecules generally to homogeneously constructed spherical shells or cells of different weights and dimensions. Or viewing the subject in the light of our cosmical laws we may say that heat is the dynamic apparatus by which the law of assimilation is fulfilled. But it is by a reference to law and not to mechanism that we are com-

pelled to arrive at our conclusions. To shew how cosmical law is realized by a dynamic apparatus (except in a very few steps at first) wholly transcends our powers and belongs not to our day.

28. *When the heat actuating a molecule is prevented from effecting further changes in the structure or form of that molecule, it assumes the form of tension or potential energy tending to partition the molecule either secularly or suddenly, that is, to develope or to explode it.* What becomes of the heat still actuating a system of material elements, that is an atom or molecule, when it has completed its function as to the form and structure of that atom or molecule? Looking to the question in a purely rational point of view one is prompted to say that we may expect heat in that case to be transformed into some other mode of force. Now this expectation is verified when we look with a mechanical eye to the material system, (the atom or molecule,) now constituting a homogeneously constructed spherical cell or shell. How could an system pulsate where no systole and diastole are possible, where the excursions now outwards now inwards must be simultaneous on the part of all the constituent elements? Instead of such pulsation it appears, since force is indestructible, that a state of tension with corresponding volume must result.

If it be asked what will happen then, supposing more heat to be supplied to this system, that is, to this atom or molecule already in a state of utmost tension the answer appears to be that —

a. The molecule must tend to differentiate itself and thus the homogeneity of its structure being destroyed ordinary heat may resume in it, and it may remain concrete.

b. If differentiation be forbid, it must partition into two or a few molecules, unless a perfect homogeneity forbid such a limitation.

c. If its homogeneity be complete, it must at a certain temperature partition into as many parts as it consists of homogeneous particles, that is, it must vaporize simultaneously or explode.


d. Hence ultimately under the secular action of adequate heat in any atom or molecule it must be completely dissolved or resolved into material units each existing free in the aether as at first.

The idea of a state of tension as here set forth is very obscure. But in contemplating force and its transformations we must encounter obscurity somewhere. And though it were possible to frame a mechanism which like heat would represent a state of tension as a distinctly conceivable mode of motion still little would be gained; for the elements of that mechanism would equally stand in need of a mechanism to explain them, and so on for ever.



But here let us illustrate these inferences by viewing some molecules in relation to the heat or tension which must actuate them.

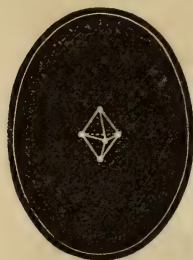
29. *The single unit of matter, and the Tetrad or molecule consisting of 4 units in equilibrio, can possess potential heat only.* The nucleus of a single material element being a centre of force merely cannot pulsate. It can only make excursions to and from some other centre not its own. It can therefore possess actual heat only when it is a member of some molecular system. No reason appears however why its aetherial atmosphere may not expand in volume or contract or acquire tension when it is in relation with heat or cold in other bodies.

And nothing else seems possible for the tetrad or group of 4 material elements constituting a system of 4 equilateral triangles Fig.  whose four aetherial atmospheres are, in the peripheral region, unified or confluent into one. Such a tetrad may no doubt, when transmitting heat, pulsate dissymmetrically. But it must be diathermous in the highest possible degree. It cannot detain the heat passing through it so as to set up and sustain a proper pulsation in itself. All its constituent forces are already in the most statical positions possible. During every moment of every phase of every symmetrical pulsation, they must always be equidistant both from the centre and from each other. And during every phase of every such palpitation the aetherial atmosphere of the tetrad must always be spherical. In so far as its own structure and form are concerned therefore, there is no force in the tetrad either to originate or to sustain a pulsatory action around its own centre. In this respect, as we shall presently see, the tetrad differs from all other molecular structures that we ever meet with.

30. It may indeed be thought that if once set agoing in pulsation the tetrad ought to pulsate until its action is transferred to some other molecule. But such an inference assumes that elasticity is some fixed unalterable and unalienable property of matter and not a form of force merely, which is its nature according to our views. Such an inference forgets the doctrine of the correlative and reciprocal convertibility of all the physical forces. Our theory, as it gives *thermal* and *diathermal*, so does it give *elastic* and *diaelastic* substances. Meantime it is to be remarked that it gives not only the material unit but also the first molecule which is in relation with space in all its dimensions, that is the tetrad, as purely diathermal, when the heat or heat-producing action is applied on one side only. And when that heat or action is

applied on opposite sides or all around, then it gives them as capable of potential heat, or heat of tension, or tension only.

29. *But there are atoms and molecules in endless variety all of which must always possess actual heat.* This may be illustrated in reference to that molecular structure which comes immediately after the tetrad viz. H. In H the conditions of statical equilibrium, determined



H

by the number of elemental forces of which the nucleus of the structure consists call for one form; and the law of sphericity or the constitution of its aetherial atmosphere calls for another form. And thus by the antagonistic cooperation between the central and the peripherical structures in this molecule (and in all except in perfectly spherical and homogeneous molecules) a ceaseless pulsation will be kept up. That pulsation must indeed encrease and decrease with the temperature; but it can never be reduced to zero. Thus in Fig. H (our atom of hydrogen) the position of statical equilibrium of the consituent units of the nucleus is when they constitute on all hands a system of equilateral triangles. Of such triangles, these 5 units when they have disposed themselves in this order, constitute no fewer than 7. A molecule such as H therefore will be very stable. And we may well believe that it will be undecomposable in the laboratory. But this system of seven equilateral triangles, when combined as in H into a trigonal bipyramid implies that the axis of that pyramid is longer than its equatorial diameter is broad. It implies in short that the atmosphere or dynamosphere of which the 5 material units are the nucleus shall in respect of the form of the nucleus tend to be a prolate ellipsoid. But while the dynamosphere thus tends to be drawn up into this ellipsoid by the law of structural equilibrium as realized by the nucleus, it must tend as a whole to be recalled towards the spherical by the law of symmetry and sphericity. H will therefore satisfy both these tendencies by maintaining continually a rhythmical action, in which now the 2 polar and now the 3 equatorial units make reciprocally excursions to and from the centre. Thus will this molecule be ever kept in a state of pulsation or vibration around its own centre, the extent of the excursions depending on the existing temperature.

And as of this molecular structure H, which in our theory is the simplest that fulfils the conditions of insulability, so of all other atoms and molecules generally, unless they have attained to sphericity of form or cellularity and homogeneity of structure. They must all be actuated

more or less by heat. Each will be a punctum saliens after its own make and fashion.

**30.** *The capacities for heat of the nuclei of atoms and molecules which are dissimilarly constructed may possibly be very dissimilar, though their atomic weights may possibly be the same.* Some molecular structures may, in virtue of the way in which their constituent units of weight are related to each other, be better adapted for entertaining a pulsatory action around their own centres than others. For such a mode of action, H for instance, is eminently adapted. And so is such a structure as  $\bar{H}$ , which consists of two tetrads united by their bases, and which is isomorphous with H, but has two units instead of one in each of the three angles of the equator. And if an atom of H were to take into union with itself on each of its 5 angles (3 on the equator, 2 on the poles) an atom of  $\bar{H}$ , so as to give rise to the combination  $H\bar{H}_5$ , and this were to settle down into its structure of maximum symmetry viz. aq (Fig.) in which the six lance-shaped forms all stand up parallel to each other, their poles and indeed their whole forms as free to vibrate as is possible, then here we should have a structure whose capacity for heat like that of H and  $\bar{H}$  would be very great.



H



aq

**31.** But it will afterwards appear that such a structure as aq ( $=H\bar{H}_5$ ) must be dimorphous, that when called upon to enter into union



C



HOC

H  
O  
C

with an element of the pentagonal order of forms, such as C (Fig.) it must part with its hexagonal structure, and the  $5\bar{H}$  in it applying themselves conformably to the pentagonal polar region of C, there must result (in the first instance) the new form HOC (Fig.), in which the middle member O consists of the 5 atoms of  $\bar{H}$  now packed together and applied poles to equators and face to face so as to cohere by no fewer than 60 points. In



a word in this new element O not a single unit of weight is free to vibrate. The capacity of O for actual heat therefore compared with that of aq or of  $\text{HH}_2$  will be very small.



O

Now without laying in any claims at this stage in our development for these structures H, Aq and O, as representatives of anything in nature, it cannot be denied that those deductions of a varying capacity for heat in different kinds of molecules are responded to by experiment. Not but each single particle of any substances whatsoever, when taken at the same tempe-

ature, requires the same amount of incident heat or cold to raise or to sink it to any other temperature. Heat is but a mode of motion acting according to the laws of motion; and this interchange of motion, issuing in equilibrium or equality of temperature, the law of action and reaction secures. But beneath this there is a certain amount of heat in each molecule which is proper to it according to its structure and which tends to be statical in it. And this, though it be difficult to reach by any mere expansion-instrument or thermometer, has been found to be different in different atoms and molecules, and to bear no relation to their atomic weights. Thus the same number of units of weight constructed into atoms of hydrogen, of water, and of oxygen, more shortly the same weights of these substances, in order to be changed through the same range of temperature require quantities of heat represented by 3.4090 by 1.000 and by 0.21751, that is, hydrogen between 15 and 16 times, and water between 4 and 5 times as much as oxygen. The power of aqueous vapour in absorbing and storing up heat has lately been maintained to be enormous; as also that of hydrogen when steadied as hydrocarbon, ammonia &c.

**32.** *Changes as to calorific capacity in the atoms and molecules of bodies modify the phenomena of chemical affinity and*



HO

*union, so that these phenomena cannot be regarded as the functions of molecular form and structure merely, but of the existing heat also. At the moment of the transformation of aq into HO much heat must rush out of O into H; for H has now acquired a higher capacity for heat than it had when existing in aq, and now stands alone as the axis of the*

combination, in perfect aptitude for entertaining a pulsatory action. The first moment therefore that H acquires this axial position it will

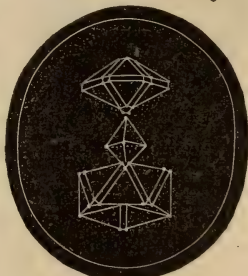
be more hot. In such a combination therefore as HOC (Fig. p. 19) it will tend to go off in the aeriform state, leaving O behind in union with C. Or if this escape of H be prevented, it will tend to go free so far at least as to betake itself to the other extremity of the axis of the combination HOC, and thus (under the law of redintegration as will appear fully hereafter) to redintegrate the simplest hydrocarbon HC (Fig.). Thus HOC (p. 19) will be transformed into HCO (Fig.). Still however on an adequate elevation of temperature H in HCO being terminal of the axis may possibly go off and be lost to the combination of H and O and C. It is well therefore that the law of redintegration has only been partially satisfied when H has been brought into union with C and the primaeval HC has been redintegrated. It is well that for the complete fulfilment of that law, H must also be brought into union with O, and the primaeval HO be redintegrated also. And thus, after HOC and HCO, we shall obtain OHC (Fig.) in which the atom of H is at last lodged in the central region of the combination, and secured by an atom of C on the one pole and an atom of O on the other. Now therefore the escape of H into the aeriform state is in good measure provided against, and we have an ultimate form of this ternary combination of C and H and O which could stand an ordeal that would decompose the others. Moreover we see also how such a ternary combination as  $C + H + O$  may in the course of nature prove itself to be trimorphous and give rise to many different substances.



HC



HCO



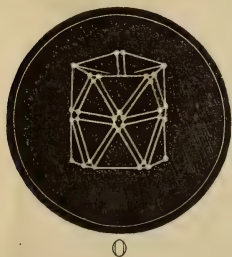
OHC

But here supposing these symbols to have their old chemical significations (which no doubt is tacitly meant) it may be objected that no such combination as CHO— put the symbols in what order you please — is known. Now this is true though viewed in the light of the popular chemistry it must be admitted to be strange; for no reason whatever can be assigned by the chemistry which has established this fact, why it should be so. But our morphology shews at once that it must be so. Thus these three elements H, C, O are dissimilar. Their combination therefore, whatever their order, must constitute a dissym-

metrical and as we may say a heteropolar form. Now such a form is incapable of a statical position by itself. It is uninsulable universally, as we shall fully find as we proceed. All such forms must hurry together into clusters or molecules. We can have CHO only as  $C_n H_n O_n$ .

Moreover our theory shews what the multiple  $n$  must be. Thus the forms of C and O are pentagonal. That of H is trigonal. When either C or O constitutes the centrad pole in the molecule therefore, the form determining the number in the group is a pentagon. The molecule resulting must therefore be the polyhedron of which the joints are pentagons, that is, the dodecahedron. And of CHO when either O (or C rather as will be usually the case since C is so much more fixed than either O or H) is centrad, the molecule will be a dodecatom with either single, double, or triple walls, that is,  $C_{12} H_{12} O_{12}$  or  $C_{24} H_{24} O_{24}$  or  $C_{36} H_{36} O_{36}$  (the last being only reached however when all the oxygen has been eliminated except from the poles, on each of which an atom of C in the laboratory-substance still exists as  $OCO=CO_2$ , giving  $C_{36} H_{36} O_4$  = stearic acid). If H in COH be centrad, the molecule must be  $C_{20} O_{20} H_{20}$ . And this our theory would lead us to look for, along with  $C_{36} H_{36} O_2$  as possibly products of the highest organisations.

33. But though each atom of O has so little actual heat in itself, yet in being set free (as in the decomposition of deutoxide of hydrogen) an atom of O must give out much heat. For each atom of O by itself



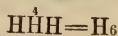
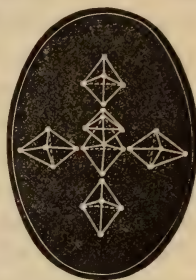
is so oblate that, under the law of sphericity, on going free, such atoms will rush together in couples, a couple (which we may denote by the symbol O) being the aeriform or free unit of this element. Now this *rush* or rapid fall together of two atom of O into one of O, which constitutes their act of coupling, must at the moment of union be transformed into *heat*. And since accompanying

the act of coupling there is no increase of capacity for heat, but on the contrary a further loss of it, this heat which has been generated by the collision must be given out.

34. The dart of H into of O (Fig. § 32) and that shiver of the combination which produces aq (Fig. § 30) must generate heat. But in this change there is a great increase of capacity. And the phenomenon is of more difficult analysis. It fully appears however that if H be made to plunge into O, and the aq generated after having been heated up, is made to play upon some point where it is again transformed into HO, or into H and O, the heat thrown upon that point



must be most intense. — But of these things hereafter. Meantime it appears that aq compared with O is quite a reservoir for heat. It would indeed be surpassed in this respect by  $H_6$  if this hexatom could be obtained constituting a structure isomorphous with aq. But that is not possible. It will afterwards appear however that  $H_6$  as  $H\overset{\uparrow}{H}H$  Fig. forms the body of the atom of ammonia in its most stable form ( $N\overset{\uparrow}{H}N = 2NH_3$ ) Ammoniacal vapour ought therefore like common vapour to be a great reservoir of heat; and this applies to ammonia in either of its forms (of which hereafter). The same is true of H in any of its combinations in which it is at once (1) steadied, so that it may not retreat from radiant action when incident upon it as a single atom of H must tend to do, and (2) so placed, as to be free to vibrate. Thus O (oxygen gas) and  $C\overset{\uparrow}{H}C$  Fig. (marsh gas) are isobaric. But the capacity, receptive or absorptive power of the latter for heat must be vastly greater; and that still more if the tetratom of hydrogen, which forms the body of the hydrocarbon, were still farther steadied as by the doubling of the atoms of C on the poles giving  $C\overset{\uparrow}{C}HCC$  (olefiant gas). And this the law of sphericity must tend to effect, in regions where free carbon in single atoms abounds, since a single atom of C, like a single atom of O, is very oblate so that single atoms must tend to double. And so of all the higher hydrocarbons. Their capacity for heat — the quantity of statical heat which they are capable of entertaining — must be proportionally great. But as we have not justified either the use of these symbols or a reference to these substances we need not enlarge upon the subject here.



**35.** *But all atoms and molecules considered as wholes (that is, as consisting of their aetherial atmospheres as well as their nuclei) must everywhere tend towards the same temperature.* Heat being merely motion in matter must distribute itself according to the laws of motion. It must therefore distribute itself according to the law of action and reaction of which the limit is equality in the bodies interacting. And here it would be prudent for us perhaps to leave this subject, since anything else we have to say upon it being strange, is sure to be repudiated in the first instance.

Yet let us ask what is meant by the familiar term "temperature"?

And who in reply is prepared to say more about it for certain than this, that temperature is the degree of the thermometer? This is certain. But if so, then temperature is a function of a limited volume of matter, it may be of air, or of mercury, or of clay. Further, however, it is not a function of volume irrespective of the manner in which that volume is produced and maintained. It is a function of volume as determined by heat. This also is certain.

What then let us ask do all atoms and molecules tend to as to volume, when they exist in calorific relationship with each other, in other words, what is the equilibrium of temperature? To answer this question a mechanical demonstration at present is out of the question. We must invoke the aid of one of our cosmical laws, or rather the harmonic action of them all, I mean the law of Assimilation. It may indeed be said that this is merely a resort to magic for an explanation. Be it so. But what is there let me ask which when thought of in its fulness does not imply that which in other cases is called magic? Nay, that by which alone all other things come to be known — perception itself! — thought itself! What is it but pure magic? It is merely our familiarity with it that blinds us to its magical character. Now if perception, if thought, be magical, then all percepts, all thoughts must be things of magic. And since it is only by percepts and thoughts, only in the form of percepts and thoughts, that we can know anything, all things must to us be insuperably things of magic. For science to quarrel with an explanation of a phenomenon because it is magical is to quarrel with its own bread and butter, and indeed with itself. Moreover the nearer we ascend to the fountain-head of Being and of action, the more magical must everything inevitably become; for that fountain-head is pure volition. And pure volition, as a cause, is precisely what is meant by magic; for by magic is merely meant a mode of producing a phenomenon without mechanical appliances, that is, without that seeming continuity of resisting parts and that leverage which satisfy our muscular sense and our imagination, and bring the phenomenon into the category of what we call "the natural", that is, the sphere of the elastic, the gravitating, the sphere into which the vis inertiae is alone admitted.

At any rate we must invoke the aid of our law of Assimilation — say provisionally — that we may be free to pass on.

**36.** *Changes of temperature are manifested by changes of volume, and the equalization of temperatures in its limit is the equalization of the volumes of the material unities interacting calorifically.* The law of assimilation viewed in its universal application affirms that all aetherial and all material elements, all atoms

and all molecules, in a word, all material unities whatsoever, must tend towards an equality of volume. But such a tendency in its limit, that is, when fully realized, implies the resolution of all matter into aether again. We have not to do with it therefore in its limit, but as operating in the midst of the existing variety of atoms, molecules &c. which nature displays, and specially as operating in the three familiar states of matter, the aeriform, the liquid and the concrete. Have we then any evidence of the operation of this law of assimilation in the unities which constitute these three states? Yes; it has long been known in reference to all perfect aeriforms that equality of temperature implies equality of volume in the unities of which they consist. It has long been known that equal volumes of different vapours and gases tend to contain equal numbers of unities (atoms or molecules) or at least numbers, of which equality is the limit, such as doubles or halves once or oftener repeated. The prevalent hypothesis at the present moment indeed is to the effect that, with the exception of a few substances (which are on that account said to be anomalous!) all single or elemental atoms occupy one volume, and all compound atoms or molecules two volumes. Nay, to eliminate even this difference, it is presumed that the atoms of elemental bodies also exist in couples, occupying the same volume as a composite atom. We do not find however that in the present epoch of nature the law of assimilation has accomplished its aim so far as this. It is often satisfied with what may be called a dichotomous ratio, giving cleavage planes so to speak in all directions, at equal distances.

37. Further in the following pages it will fully appear that the same agreement as to volume exists also among the unities of which liquids and solids consists. But the unities of bodies in the dense state are usually very different from what they are in the aeriform state. Those of chlorine for instance instead of being  $\text{Cl}$  or  $\text{Cl}_2$  are  $\text{Cl}_{12}$ , that is, dodecatoms. Those of sulphur instead of being  $\text{S}_3$  or  $\text{S}$  are  $\text{S}_{30}$ , that is, icosatoms. Those of silver instead of being  $\text{Ag}$  are  $\text{Ag}_{12+20=32}$  (dodecatoms circumscribed by icosatoms). Those of moisture instead of being  $\text{aq}$  are  $\text{AQ}=(3\text{aq})^{12}=\text{aq}^{36}$  (dodecatoms composed of triple elements). And so of others, though these are the normal numbers.

38. This state of things however and the state of cohesion which exists among condensed ordense bodies prevents anything like a palpable equalization of volume for equal numbers of atoms or molecules. Still when different measures of liquids or different masses of solids at different temperatures (that is, with their atoms and molecules possessing different heat-volumes) are brought into relation with each other,



the atoms or molecules of which the palpable body consists tend to equality of volume. The hot atom or molecule contracts or cools; the cold one expands or heats. And when weights of different substances are taken, which are proportional to the atomic weights of their constituents, or at least equal to that of those calorific unities of which they consist, one set hot, another set cold, and then mixed together, a mean temperature or volume is obtained. When again, as has unhappily been usual, masses of equal weights have been taken at different heats and mixed, when not atomic or molecular weight but avoirdupois weight has been the basis of experiment, no satisfactory discovery was made until it was at last announced that "the atoms of all bodies had the same capacity for heat" — an indifferent expression this, of the phenomenon (which is all that has been observed) that the heat which is necessary to bring equal weights of different bodies to the same temperature is proportional to the number of unities which these equal weights contain. Nor has this been found to be rigorously true or correct in any case, but only approximately true; as might be expected from what has already appeared as to the different capacities of differently constructed atoms and molecules for heat; as also from the utter unfitness of the thermometer for such investigations.

Nevertheless it has been thought that by the indications of the thermometer those of the balance might be controlled, and atomic weights determined by what has been unhappily called "specific heat". But even granting the trustworthiness of the calorimeter, this cannot be done with safety; for we shall find that while some atoms or molecules have only one point of calorific action, others have two, the atoms acting calorifically from two foci, as if each single atom were two; and so on. In a word the phenomenon of calorific action is too complicated to admit of correct interpretation as present. In liquids indeed when compared with aeriforms, and still more in solids, the constituent units are only imperfectly individualized, especially in such unnatural substances as the reguline metals, on which however the principal experiments as to specific heat have hitherto been made.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### ATOMS AND MOLECULES AS TO THEIR ELECTRO- MAGNETISM &c.

The *nucleus* of an atom or molecule consisting of so many element of forces in juxta-position, as for instance 5 in H; 30 in C; 40 in O;

45 in aq &c. must be as nothing in point of size as compared with the aetherial atmosphere or *dynamosphere* investing that nucleus. But to that atmosphere the nucleus must be both helm and anchor, and many, and in the present epoch of science inscrutable, must be the phenomena which must result from the interaction of the nucleus and the dynamosphere, and from the sustained aim of the one to assimilate the other to itself. But of these as one of the chief we may mention that —

**39.** *The statical heat actuating an atom or molecule must awake and sustain in its aetherial atmosphere currents of force rhythmically constituted and as various as the structures of the nuclei of the atoms and molecules themselves.* Such currents must of necessity result from the ever-acting pulsation of the dynamic points or angles of the nuclei. And these currents must possess tension, and be beaded in form or moniliform, and be actuated by a peristaltic motion. And these, it might be shown, must produce molecular motions which must give to the senses ultimately, electro-magnetic or electrical and magnetic phenomena.

**40.** Our external senses are indeed at such an immeasurable distance from the atomic world, and all the phenomena which they are capable of observing are so highly composite, that it is not accurate to use such terms as magnetism or electricity in reference to modes of action so elemental as those which we are now considering. But the invention of new terms is productive of still greater disadvantages. Our only hope of discovery lies in the universality of the cosmical laws, and the ultimate homogeneity of created substances or reality. Herein alone is consolation. Hence however such consistency in nature, that what lies wholly beneath the region of visibility may be safely inferred to be similar to that which is gross enough to be palpable to sense. To support such a conclusion we have more than a merely logical argument of analogy. The evidence may rather be compared to an algebraic function and its development. The invisible develops into the visible, the atomic into the massive, just as  $(a + b)^2$  develops into  $a^2 + 2ab + b^2$ . And would it not simplify science to a marvellous extent if we could shew in our atom, our molecule, existing and acting under cosmical law, all that appears in palpable phenomena! and invest its modes of action with familiar and well-understood names — as if we were to say that every atom in the universe is “*punctum saliens*”! Let this then be said. And more than this; let it be said also that the system of currents in the aetherial atmospheres of a molecule is the vascular system proper to that *punctum saliens*, or rather it is its system of circulating

fluid; for to Nature it is the contents of the vessel that are everything, as to the anatomist it is the vessel itself.

Now as to the structure of these currents it may be said that when atoms and molecules possess angles which are dissimilarly constructed, as for instance in the number or arrangement of the material units or elemental forces of which they consist, then the heat-vibrations actuating these angles must possess dissimilar dimensions. And when molecules possess distinctly pronounced poles and equatorial regions, these currents in their aetherial atmospheres will tend to be closed and to be circular, that is, to sweep round in the dynamosphere and to reenter the nucleus at the region which is dissimilar to that from which they emanated.

41. *And hence an apparatus of attraction, of polar arrangement, and cohesion.* These beaded currents whether they be regarded as electrical or magnetic must when they are closed, that is when they emanate from one region of the molecule as for instance from the poles, and after sweeping round enter at another as for instance the equator, must tend when they actuate a number of molecules which are in each other's vicinity to dispose these molecules into certain definite positions in relation to each other, and having done so, to bind them together or to cause them to cohere more or less. For these currents must possess tension and consist of alternate and successive floods and ebbs of elements of elastic and of dielastic aether in the line of their course. And hence when their dimensions or periods are the same in adjacent molecules they must catch each other like adjacent pieces of rackwork, and phenomena of "affinity" and cohesion must result — phenomena which must be as various as the molecules themselves which are presented to each other. In this subject however we cannot enter now — save only to affirm that after a somewhat extensive investigation we have found that these currents always operate in accordance with the law of symmetry and sphericity, and appear as the apparatus provided for fulfilling that law in the molecular world.

In these currents also there is an apparatus for accomplishing those phenomena which are commonly ascribed to polarity. But on this subject I shall only quote a page of a Work which was published in 1856; the first Edition (in which the same general view is maintained though in a more abstract manner) having been published in 1830.\*

\* See Elements of the Economy of Nature by J. G. Macvicar M. A. Adam Black Edinburgh 1830. Do Second Edition. Chapman and Hall. London 1856.



*In virtue of the Polarity which emanates from them, such Regions or Angles of Molecules as are similar to each other, must repel each other.* — It is not proposed to attempt here the investigation in detail of the polarity, that is, of the currents of undulae in the atmospheres of molecules, caused by those pulsations of the forces constituting their angles, which can never cease to actuate them, so long as they are members in the universe, which is all in motion. This much may be stated as obvious, however, that from those angles which are identical in form and structure, currents whose forms and dimensions shall also be identical, will issue. But such currents will be mutually elastic or repulsive of each other. They will, therefore, succeed in reentering the nucleus, only at those angles which are dissimilar to those from which they issue. And among all those angles in the molecule that are equally dissimilar, they will enter at those which are most distant from the regions whence they issue; for all motion evermore submits to deflection from the right line as little as possible.

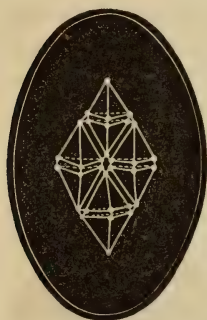
*In Heteropolar Molecules, the opposite Polarities are at the opposite Poles.* — Taking  $\triangle$  as an example of a heteropolar molecule, it follows from what has just been laid down, that the current emanating from any angle or apex, will re-enter by the centre of the base opposite, that is, the opposite pole; while that emanating from this base, or from the  $3\odot$  constituting it, will re-enter at the opposite pole or apex. Such molecules, therefore, realize the idea of polarity as commonly conceived, where P and N are always expected at the opposite extremities of the axis, as in the magnetic needle, a crystal of tourmaline, etc.



*In Homopolar Molecules the Polarity or Circulation of Currents is between the Poles and Equator.* — In homopolar molecules, the poles being similar, the undulae emanating from them must be of similar dimensions, and mutually elastic, or repulsive to each other. That which emanates from one pole, therefore, cannot enter at the other pole. Except in what have been called homogonal molecules, however (that is, such as have all their angles identical), there will be other angles in the equatorial region which are dissimilar in structure to the polar angles. At the equatorial angles, therefore, in homopolar

molecules, the polar currents will enter; and from the equatorial angles in such molecules the currents issuing will enter at the poles. In reference to such forms, therefore, "a polarised axis" as commonly understood, is not an axis of the form, but a terminal edge of it.

This condition of polarity (which is not suspected in the authorised science of the day), brings it to pass that, in the synthesis of smaller into larger, the most undecomposable chemical atoms are often composed of elements united by terminal edges, or, more generally, by equators to poles. Thus, let  $5\text{H}$  meet in the nascent state (or state suitable for union with one another), and free from the influence of other forms, and, consequently, under the influence of the first and third laws of Being only, they can honour both these laws in maintaining the morphological type to which they belong already, by uniting, as the condition of polarity in homopolar molecules requires them to do, viz., by their terminal edges, whence there will result the fine species  $\text{H}_5\text{H}=\text{S}$ . ( $=\frac{1}{2}\text{S}$  auct:)



S

When, again,  $5\text{H}$  unite under the same law of polarity (poles to equators), yet, so as now to cohere by facets and not by edges, and, under inductive influence, tending to develop a form which shall be the supplement of  $\text{H}$  or of  $\text{S}$  (that is, such that, both taken together, shall admit of a spherical atmosphere; and, therefore, such that both shall ever tend to unite; and each, when the other is absent, tend to develop that other), we obtain a species, icosahedral, but with hollow poles, of which much hereafter; meantime, we may call it  $\text{O}$  (nascent oxygen)".



O

42. Hence also (as has been stated in the quotation) an apparatus of separation, of elasticity between similars, and of the aeriform state. The return of the current into the nucleus of the molecule which is the apparatus of cohesion can only take place when there are in the molecule certain angles or groups of material elements possessing a structure dissimilar to certain other angles or groups. When similarity of structure is dominant so that the emanating currents are mostly of the same periods and dimensions, the various currents of the molecule or most of them, will not be able to reenter the nucleus. They will be simply radiant, and being continued beyond the dynamosphere of the molecules into the ambient aether which is

continuous with that dynamosphere, they will thus constitute a general apparatus of repulsion. Each molecule in so far as it is actuated by its atomic heat will tend only to thrust all others of the same kind away. And thus an aggregate of molecules will tend to become aeriform or aetherlike again. And such a tendency, an increase of heat or of the pulsatory action of the nucleus, must obviously favour.

43. Moreover at a certain temperature, different in differently constructed atoms and molecules, but the same in those of the same kinds, it is to be expected that the currents of force, which at lower temperatures were closed or circulated in the atmospheres of the molecules or atoms, will break open and become simply radiant. And in this case a sudden repulsion must take place between all the atoms thus effected, and the aeriform state must be suddenly assumed.

44. These phenomena of repulsion however, according to the theory now advanced, can take place only between molecules which are similar to each other. When the molecular currents have dimensions which are wholly dissimilar so that the rack, so to speak, does not fit the pinion, that is, when the molecules themselves are dissimilar, there will be no such repulsion between them. There will on the contrary be diffusion of one aeriform into another, each urged by the repulsive action of its own particles. Now this is precisely what has been observed in reference to aeriforms by Berthollet, Graham and Dalton, and by the last so felicitously though over-boldly expressed by saying that "dissimilar gases are as vacua to each other".

But let us pass on. We are again trespassing against our resolution to explain phenomena by a reference to law merely and not by an exhibition of mechanism. Only it seemed desirable in passing, to shew how hopeless is the attempt to reduce the phenomena of chemical union to mathematical powers of the distance &c. &c. &c.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

### THE COURSE AND CONSUMMATION OF MOLECULAR ACTION.

The obscurity of the region which we are now traversing, and the prospect of more clear and distinct conceptions farther on, induce us to bring these statements here to a close, simply by following in a few paragraphs the bearing of cosmical law on these material elements,



atoms and molecules which it cannot but be admitted hold out some good promise already of proving themselves to be representatives of the atoms and molecules of bodies. First then we may remark that —

45. *In their original and free state all single material elements or units of weight must contain in their atmospheres or dynamospheres the same quantity of aether.* It will afterwards appear beyond doubt from the phenomena of atomic weights as determined by the balance that the unit of atomic weight, the material element, is the same in all. And this state of things our cosmical law of assimilation leads us to infer a priori. Moreover this original identity in all the units of weight, we are called upon both by that law and by the conditions of genesis to extend, not only to the nuclei but also to the aetherial atmospheres of the material elements. Thus seeing that all the aetherial elements when constituting the aether were identical, the power of aggregates or clusters of them to effect the complete condensation or confluence of the innermost layer, and so to generate a material element would be equal, when the aetherial clusters themselves were equal. Now this condition implies, both that the nucleus shall in all cases consist of the same number of aetherial elements confluent into an unit of a new order, and that the outside cluster still remaining in the aetherial state and constituting the atmospheres or dynamospheres of the nucleus shall be equal also. The aetherial aggregate is the force which condenses and unifies the nucleus. At the moment therefore at which it accomplishes this unification, its quantity must be the same in all. For the material element or unit of weight then we may adopt some uniform symbol, as for instance  $\odot$ , which is in the hands of the printer already as the astronomical sign for the Sun. Its form will serve to remind us that the material element consists of a nucleus which is purely a center of force, and not a body possessing volume or solidity like a shot however small, and that that nucleus is invested by an aetherial aggregate or atmosphere which as it is the seat of all the special actions of matter we may sometimes call the dynamosphere.

46. *The material Elements (like the aetherial element) tend under the law of unification (assimilation as to the space they occupy) to form into clusters or molecules.* It is to ascertain the modes in which this aggregation takes place, and the properties of the specifically constituted molecules which result, that the following work is devoted. Here we lay down merely the fact, on which indeed everything depends and which happily as a fact is universally admitted. As to the means mechanically considered, by which the units of weight come to-

gether and are held together, nothing is possible by way of discovery but interminable speculation, respecting all the result of which it can only be said that they lie beyond the possibility of verification. We therefore rest the fact of molecular synthesis simply on the basis of law, meaning by law what the term normally means, that is, an expression of will acting according to wisdom.

47. *During its molecular career a material element may be stript more or less of its aetherial atmosphere.* Since the aetherial elements which constitute the atmospheres of material units are discrete and individually mobile, it is but reasonable to infer that when material units are grouping, pressing, and wedging together, so as to constitute molecules, then more or less of the aetherial atmosphere proper or native to each may be extruded, and go to attach itself to other molecules in the neighbourhood, whose structure is more open, and whose aetherial capacity is greater. Such a state of things seems to be indicated by those remarkable differences which different molecules display as to volatility and fixity, that is, as to their aptitude for dissolving into the aether and for becoming continuous with it, or for refusing to do so. Thus such solution must demand in the language of R. Hooke "congruity" and in that of Leibnitz "continuity". It must demand that the aether at the top of the aetherial atmosphere of the molecule shall be more or less in the same state as that of the aether generally. Now this would imply its being present in the atom or molecule somewhat in its original quantity. The difference of molecules, though sometimes nearly of the same weight, as to their volatility or fixity, is one of their most remarkable features. Thus azote and silicon are absolutely of the same weight, and they have many analogies besides yet no means have yet been discovered of fixing azote by itself, and no means of volatilizing silicon or of raising it into the aeriform state. What more volatile or bent when free upon the aeriform state than hydrogen, what more fixed than carbon? It looks as if some elemental substances had lost their wings and could no longer fly. And perhaps we shall afterwards see reason for believing that the wings of molecules are their aetherial atmospheres, as also for suspecting that where they have lost their wings, hydrogen is usually the agent that has carried them off and appropriated them for its own use.

48. *But each material element must secularly tend to recover all the investing aether which it possessed at first.* This might be inferred, in ordinary chemical conception, as necessary to the neutralization of the nucleus. But we prefer to ground it on our cosmical laws, specially the law of individuation operating continuously in time,

or the law of assimilation operating retrospectively, or in more familiar language, the law of redintegration or of atavism. So marvellous are the phenomena of the specific development of embryos &c. and the reappearance in organic beings, after long intervals perhaps, of antecedent peculiarities of form, that the veriest materialists are still obliged to admit a law of atavism or redintegration. These phenomena our theory explains, by regarding this law as holding good in reference to all truly individualized forms and structures, and specially in reference to those elemental molecules of which organic forms are composed, and as the ground of all, as holding good in reference to the material elements themselves. According to our view this law never wholly demits its action or influence, but on the contrary the first moment that the conditions of existence allow, it tends to redintegrate and restore the primal type. Hence ultimately when nothing prevents, the nucleus of every material element must tend to recover its primal investiture of aether, the full complement of its aetherial atmosphere.

49. *Hence all substances in the dense, that is, the concrete or the liquid state, must tend to be volatile, and at an adequate temperature may be expected to be aeriform.* All masses, material media, and molecules exist for ever bathed in the aether, penetrated by the aether. Under the law of redintegration therefore the material elements of which these masses and molecules consist must, as circumstances permit, be ever recovering secularly more and more of the aether native and proper to their aetherial atmospheres, of which they have been stript during the epoch of their condensation or concretion. And hence as masses and molecules are opened up by heat either secular or sudden, we are to expect dissociation, dedoublement, partitionment and an universal tendency towards the aeriform. We are led therefore to infer that every individualized molecular mass, every grain of rock, and every crystal, no less than every plant and animal, has a period of growth and development, followed by a period of transformation and partitionment. In one case one hour may accomplish what it may require untold ages to accomplish in another. But still the economy of nature is the same for all.

50. *And all molecules must tend ultimately to vaporise, going into or giving off matter in single elements or units of weight.* This issue follows as a further consequence of the same doctrine, the redintegration of the aetherial atmospheres of the material elements.

51. *During this retreat of matter into the aether in single material elements or units of weight the molecules and masses*



*from which such vaporization into the common vapour of matter is going on, may be expected to be phosphorescent.* As to such phosphorescence it is of course a psychological not a morphological or purely physical phenomenon, and therefore we are not in a condition to insist upon it here. But it is reasonable to infer that single material elements, which are also purely aetherial balls, in being thrown off from the surfaces of bodies into the aether shall awake those undulations in the aether which are productive of vision, and thus render phosphorescent the surfaces of bodies which are thus giving off what we may call the common vapour of matter. There can be no doubt that to nocturnal animals circumambient objects in general are visible or phosphorescent in the absence both of sun and moon. Also there are many substances which are either usually, or may be easily rendered, phosphorescent even to our eyes. And of such substances it will afterwards appear that such is the structure that the surface of their molecules has been already analysed by nature or simplified to the utmost, so that their next step in analysis is to be resolved into single material elements.

**52.** *And ultimately matter when existing free in the aether must tend to dissolve into pure aether again.* Nothing short of such an issue satisfies to the full our cosmical laws. These laws therefore present all cosmical action as cyclical. And this is precisely the economy which our knowledge of the Great Creator would lead us to expect; for He is at once ever-living and immutable. He is the parent of time, while yet He inhabiteth eternity.

But elements which are not as yet fully assimilated to each other (dissimilars) do not repel or tend to individualize each other, but continue the subjects of the law of unification only which is always operating, as we have seen, for the development of the "material" out of the "aetherial" and of the molecular out of the material, and this state of things must postpone this issue of material elements into a diffused aether during a very long epoch in the case of every individual atom and molecule. Moreover in dissimilarly constructed molecules this epoch though long in all must be of different lengths. Hence —

**53.** *The material universe at any one epoch as for instance the present will exhibit matter in all its different states of rarity and condensation; and molecular synthesis and analysis will be everywhere coordinate.* Our theory therefore does not represent the material universe as a self-destructive system either in accordance with Newton's conception which has been long ago invalidated, or in accordance with that most recent conception of the dissi-

pation of energy. But neither does it regard the universe as intrinsically and independently self-conservative for ever, according to the conception of Laplace. Our theory views the material universe as self-preservative only because it is its part to represent, in time and in finite Being, the mind and attributes of the Eternal and the Infinite on whom it continually depends.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### VERIFICATIONS FROM THE PHENOMENA OF NEBULAE COMETS &c.

**54.** What, we may now ask would be the phenomena to sense and physical science presented by a region in the celestial spaces where a synthetic or aether-aggregating action had been instituted or where an ultimate analysis of the material into the aetherial was going on. More simply what should we expect to see if such a process as we set out or concluded with, were really being accomplished in certain regions of the sky? Now to this it is to be answered that such regions ought to display two successive sets of phenomena, the first corresponding to the epoch during which the aetherial aggregates or clusters are still wholly aetherial, and the second corresponding to that in which the aetherial nuclei of the clusters have been fused into material elements or units of weight, or still exist as such.

**55.** During the first epoch there would be a region in space which being dissimilarly constituted to the surrounding space we should expect to be differentiated from that space perhaps visibly, as for instance by the apparition of a certain luminosity in the midst of surrounding darkness. It follows from our views however that such luminosity if it exist at all, must be of a peculiar kind very different from that which is produced either by radiation or reflection from molecular masses or media. It cannot amount even to phosphorescence. It is a visibility realized by the aether merely; and the self-manifesting power of the aether is a minimum. It must therefore be accompanied by a maximum transparency. Do we then find in the heavens anything corresponding to such a kind of luminosity? Yes; Our deduction is completely verified by what is known as nebulous or cometic matter. Through immense depths of such matter when constituting the tails of comets, and when therefore we know for certain that it lies between

the eye and the fixed stars, the latter may be seen shining with undiminished brightness, Arcturus for instance through a breadth of 90,000 miles of the most luminous part of Donati's comet, and small stars through 50,000 miles of Beila's. The luminosity of cometic matter is therefore of quite a peculiar character. It is in short merely a differentiation from the surrounding darkness.

56. During this epoch also (of transition from aether to matter), since there would be an absence of all gravitation in its constituent elements, the nebula would depend for its form, on incident forces merely or thermotic movements within itself. Now the forms of mere nebulae seem to indicate precisely such a state of things. They seem to owe such shapes as they display to no principles more stable and orderly than currents and eddies of an incidental or private nature. Their forms and transformations are as irregular and as fantastical as those of the clouds of vapour or of dust which we see in the atmosphere in unsettled weather.

57. But during the second epoch, that is, when the nuclei of the nebular specks have been condensed into units of matter or of weight, a tendency towards the spherical in form and a manifestation of a brighter region in the centre must be induced upon the nebula. Now to this deduction also do not the phenomena of the heavens respond completely?

58. During this second epoch also the nebula must acquire a certain weight. It is to be remarked however that this weight must be inconceivably small. Thus though the genesis of material elements out of aetherial had been completed through the whole length and breadth and depth of the nebula still the weight of that nebula would amount to no more than a fifth part of an equal volume of hydrogen as this gas exists in the fully expanded state, that is, as it exists in what is commonly called the vacuum of an air-pump. Although therefore a nebula manifested the phenomena proper to a gravitating body, still even of a large nebula the weight as estimated by the balance must be extremely small. Now as to this point also our views are countenanced by observation. That nebulae gravitate or possess weight more or less when they acquire orbits and are named comets is certain. Yet comets are proved to be so light that astronomers when reasoning on this subject can do nothing by calculation but excite our wonder. They speak of comets extending over thousands of cubic miles and yet weighing only a few ounces. And it is certain that Laxell's comet passed right through the system of Jupiter's satellites without disturbing the orbit of the very least of them while it



was itself at the same time, by the gravitation of Jupiter, turned aside into a new orbit. That comet must therefore have been a thing of inconceivable lightness considering its volume. Yet still it certainly gravitated and was therefore material.

59. I only add that granting our views, it does not follow that nebulous matter is always the commencement of worlds asteroids or meteorites. Nebulous matter may also be the last appearance of worlds, when these worlds have completed the cycle of their concrete existence. The vanishing of a nebula, the attenuation and loss of a comet, is according to our views as much in the order of nature, as its maturation and condensation into a star or planet.

60. The spectroscope, by which the inadequacy of the eye for accurate observation begins to be so happily supplemented, gives for the light of planetary nebulae indications that "their constitution is totally different from that of suns, planets and fixed stars". And to them may perhaps be added both the nuclei and the comae of comets (though these are quite dissimilar to each other so far as hitherto observed). Now though our nebulae conceived in this chapter can be but the first commencement or embryo state of any and of all such as are visible in our heavens, yet our philosophy leads us to conclude that the visible in the phenomena to which it gives rise will be assimilated to that which lies beneath. Moreover if it should ultimately be found that the light given forth from these singular objects in the heavens is that of hydrogen and Azote, nothing could be a finer verification of our views as to the genesis and the structure of these two elements; for these are our two "elements" par excellence; hydrogen being that into which a world now dissolving tends to be resolved as also that which is the seminal element of a new world, and thus that which connects two cycles; while Azote comes out in our theory as a residuum, dimorphous indeed, but of such exquisite sphericity and symmetry of structure that its decomposition and even its secular transformation are the most difficult of all.

But let us refrain no longer from remarking that all that has preceded on the relation of aether to matter is speculative merely. Its verification in the full sense of the term is, at this state of our Enquiry at least, impossible. I am anxious therefore to add that what follows is in no degree dependent upon the views which have been advanced up to this page, except in so far as these views furnish us with an unit of weight.

61. Whether the unit of weight be really connected with the aether as I have represented it or not, the views which follow as to

the forms and structures of the atoms and molecules of bodies will stand, if they be fully verified as I maintain that they are, by the discoveries of modern chemistry.

For those therefore who have neither taste nor toleration for such speculations as the preceding let me simply postulate an original atom or unit of atomic weight — not hydrogen as has been supposed and opposed by many — but an element so much lighter, that in one atom of hydrogen, as we have hinted already and shall soon see more fully, there are five material elements or units of weight.

And here notwithstanding our haste we cannot pass on without remarking, what certainly is a very happy coincidence. Hydrogen, which is Nature's ultimatum in her molecular policy as oxygen is her protocol, consists according to our theory in elemental forces of 2 (the axis) + 3 (the equator) = 5 which is its absolute atomic weight. Now 5 or its double may be said to be the basis of the common arithmetic. Hence in our system all atomic weights in so far as least as they are multiples of that of hydrogen are represented by very round numbers, and the conventional system which prevails at present, in which hydrogen is laid down as unity, is very easily reduced to the absolute system, namely, by changing the decimal point one degree to the right and halving. Thus to find the number of units of weight in an atom of oxygen gas its conventional atomic weight being 16.0 we have  $160 \div 2 = 80$ . In fact our series of atomic weights of insul-able elements rises in these numbers 5, 20, 30, 40, 60, 70, 80, 100 etc.

---

## B O O K II.

### CHAPTER I.

#### OF THE TRIGONAL PYRAMID OR TETRAD.

Without attempting here the construction or conception of any mechanism for effecting the aggregation of material elements into molecules, and simply on the strength of our cosmical law of unification, let us now proceed to the construction of molecules composed of material elements or units of weight.

**62.** Our object has been to ascertain and is now to shew, that the synthesis into molecules according to our cosmical laws of our material elements gives stable structures, which in atomic weights and in chemical and physical properties generally represent those least particles, into which bodies have been divided by chemists, that is, the particles which are commonly called the atoms of these bodies. Our theory therefore if accepted places chemistry for the future on the same basis as crystallography, botany, zoology. It brings its phenomena out of the dark into the light. Instead of leaving the chemist to speculate from changes of colour or consistence in a mixture as to what is going on in it our molecular morphology enables him to see it all.

If indeed no more than two or three of our molecular structures were found to represent the atoms of the chemist (which are between 60 and 70 in number), it might be fairly suspected that such a coincidence was due to chance. But if of these 60 or 70 there are only between 30 and 40 which occur in nature in any abundance and play any important part in her economy, and if all of these in an orderly way present themselves spontaneously and unsought for among our successive constructions, if all of these are represented by these constructions, in their atomic weights and atomicities, in their every



chemical and physical feature, the idea of chance surely as our explanation of coincidences is wholly excluded. Yes; and nothing in that case can be needed to secure the acceptance of the new theory but the usual length of time. Let no one suppose however in reference to so great a step in science that that time can be short. Men of established reputation in science cannot afford to cede their prescriptive rights in existing hypotheses — hypotheses which they have themselves probably assisted in rearing. With regard to a wholly new theory the function of the existing generation is to scrutinize it merely. And if the many never get beyond the contemptuous contradicting of it, this is only what the history of science leads us to expect. Even the *Principia* of Newton, the most clearly demonstrated of all scientific works, was in certain high places of science not only not accepted but regarded must contemptuously for half a century after it was published! But to proceed.

**63.** *The first combination of material elements must be a couple.*

In one point of view this proposition may be regarded as a truism. But our meaning is, that two are much more likely to fall together simultaneously than three or any higher number. And as we proceed we shall find reason for believing that material elements never coalesce from the free state in higher numbers than 2, though sometimes perhaps they do in a set of 3, consisting a triangle of forces.

**64.** It is necessary for us therefore to continue the synthesis of a couple only. And the following is the view of that synthesis which our theory gives. On their concurrence, the aetherial atmospheres of both unify into one continuous aetherial ellipsoid having the two original centres of the two units of weight in its two foci existing there in an equilibrium of attraction and repulsion and of pression towards each other. They must be pressed towards each other; for the ellipsoidal form of the atmosphere of the coupled atoms existing as it does under the law of sphericity and aiming as it ever must at the spherical must ever press the two centres of force of the two constituent units towards the centre of the form and therefore towards coincidence and confluence with each other. Now such an issue (confluence) we have assumed to be possible with reference to the aetherial units; when the investing aggregate and its compressing force were adequate. In this way we obtained our material from our aetherial element. But since between all identicals the cosmical law of Individuation maintains a repulsive action; and since quantity of force or power encreases with quantity of Being or Reality; and since in the material element there is so great a quantity of Being compared with what there is in the aetherial element we conclude

that though not the aetherial element yet the material element is competent to maintain its individuality, under all the conditions of molecular aggregation which occur at least in our planet. Consequently we infer that the coupled units of weight now obtained do not become confluent into a new unit of double the weight; but while their aetherial atmospheres unify into an ellipsoidal form, their centers retain each its own individuality in the foci of the ellipsoid.

65. *But a single couple cannot be permanent in nature.* The two balancing forces under which the couple exists, that is, (1) the individuality-asserting or volume-asserting force or mutual repulsion of the two elements whose centres of force are in the foci of the coupled molecule, and (2) the sphere-asserting action of the now unified aetherial atmosphere of the couple, must as has been shewn (§ 29) take on a rhythmical action of going and returning from the geometrical centre of the ellipsoid which remains at rest. The two centres of force in the foci must be in a state of continual pulsation each on its own side of the centre. In a word the couple must be actuated by heat.

If then such a couple be brought into calorific communication with a molecule which is hotter than itself it must itself under the law of assimilation (or of action and reaction which are the same) become hotter also, and that possibly to such a degree, that its two centres of force in the foci during their excursions from the centre of the ellipsoid may recede from that centre so far and render the ellipsoid so prolate, that the sphere-determining law instead of closing them up again into one spheroid, shall cut them into two spheres, that is, into the two material elements out of which the spheroid was originally formed. And thus by the action of heat the coupled molecule will be analysed, dissociated, dedoubled, into the two units which gave it being. The molecular state will be destroyed.

66. *Two couples united symmetrically or crosswise, so as to constitute a tetrad or isometrical combination of four material elements, will be most stable and permanent in nature.*



The tetrad.

The constituent forces in the tetrad are all equal and similar to each other, and they are all placed in relation to each other so as to constitute a system of equilateral triangles. On the well known principles of statics therefore this universally trigonal combination must be most stable. The investing atmosphere must in fact at all times be spherical and the nucleus at all times tetrahedral, whatever the temperature. Even supposing it capable of

pulsation, the departure of all the four constituent elements from the centre of the form and their retreat towards that centre must be in all cases equal and equally distributed around that centre. However expanded by heat or cooled therefore, the form of this molecule must always be the same viz. its atmosphere or dynamosphere a sphere, its nucleus an elementary tetrahedron. The tetrad may therefore be expected to be very permanent in nature. But it cannot be regarded as indestructible. By exposure to adequate heat such a state of tension may possibly be induced, that on the occurrence of the next increment of heat it will explode, that is, the four elemental forces of which it consists will become individualized, the spherical atmosphere of each completing itself, they will spring out from the centre into four separate units of weight or material elements as they were before.

67. Our first permanent molecule with its spherical periphery and its tetrahedral nucleus thus represents within itself the entire geometry of the regular polyhedra of which the first and simplest is the tetrahedron and the last and the limit is the sphere. We shall find as we proceed that it also incloses within its limits the entire series of material molecules (in our planet at least) when they have attained to forms of repose.

68. In the diagram Fig.  $\triangle$  the 4 white dots may be regarded as the positions of the four original centres of force of the four constituent material elements. The four white lines which joint them may be regarded as the last resultants of the forces which keep these centres in equilibrio. It will be observed that they define the edges of a tetrahedron of which the 4 primary centres of force are the four angles. The dark circle around may be imagined as the portion of the aetherial atmosphere most immediately surrounding the nucleus — although indeed it ought to have been shaded more or less according as it is nearer or more distant from the nucleus. It ought also as to its outer boundary to be invisible in order to express our ignorance of the limit of the atmosphere of the tetrad in its confines with the ambient aether. The diagram is in fact very bad. But in consequence of a recent attack on my finger-joints which prevents my drawing new diagrams, I have been obliged, much to my regret, to content myself with old drawings made at a time when my views were only imperfectly worked out.

69. The eminence for stability of the tetrad as well as the claims in this respect of smaller numbers of equal and similar centres of force at once attractive and repulsive have long ago been set forth both mathematically and mechanically by the admirable Boscovich\*.

\* *Theoria Philosophiae Naturalis* etc. Auctore J. Boscovich etc. Pars II, §. 239.



Having described the degree of stability proper to 4 "puncta" when placed in the same plane, he proceeds in these words (omitting clauses which would be unintelligible without his preceding demonstrations): "But when not in the same plane 4 puncta may be placed so that they shall preserve their position with the greatest stability. .... For a regular pyramid may be constructed by them .... Then that pyramid will constitute a certain particle which is most tenacious of its form ..... Out of 4 particles of this kind disposed so as to construct a larger pyramid there may be obtained a particle of a second order, somewhat less tenacious of its form ..... And in the same way from these particles of the second order, there may be constructed particles of a third order still less tenacious of their form and so on, until those are arrived at which are much larger but at the same time much more mobile, and on which chemical operations depend, and of which those same grosser bodies are composed and to which that very thing might happen, which Newton advanced in the last query of his optics, concerning his primary and elementary particles which give rise to other particles of diverse orders."

Newton's particles to which Boscovich refers are however very different from his own. They are merely those of Descartes rendered immutable by a denial of their fragility. The passage to which he refers is probably this.\* "Now the smallest particles of matter may cohere by the strongest attractions and compose bigger particles of weaker virtue; and many of these may cohere and compose bigger particles whose virtue is still weaker; and so on for diverse successions, until the progression ends in the biggest particles on which the operations of chemistry and the colours of natural bodies depend, and which by cohering compose bodies of sensible magnitude.

**70.** Thus both these great philosophers first recognize atoms and then molecules, and of these they specify various orders, filling up the interval between the primary atom and the "minimum visible". Their views we shall find as we proceed are eminently in accordance with nature compared with those of the most modern chemistry, which recognizes only the atom and its double under the name of molecule, and sacrifices everything to the attainment of logical or subjective or rather indeed mere numerical simplicity!

**71.** Boscovich was wise in stopping where he did. Previously to the discovery of atomic weights no such synthesis as his could have been verified. The case is widely different now however when both atomic

\* Newton's Optics. Qu. 31.

weights, specific gravities, and atomicities or multiple combining ratios have been fully determined by the balance in reference to almost every elemental substance. A purely morphological synthesis of molecules, conducted on a priori principles like that of Boscovich, can now be checked at every step. And if such an one has been discovered that when carried straight onwards on its own principles it gives as it proceeds the very atomic weights, atomicities, and phenomena generally, of molecular nature, then, without doubt it is so far as least representative of nature, and for aught that appears to the contrary it may be representative of nature in every respect. And such are the claims of the theory on the development of which the reader is now to enter. If the author may happen sometimes to speak of the atoms and molecules of nature themselves, and not merely morphological conceptions representative of them, this will be excused by all who know the extreme inconvenience of affecting perfect accuracy in ordinary composition.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### THE SYNTHESIS OF TETRAIDS INTO THE ATOMS OR ELEMENTS OF CHEMISTRY.

**72.** In order to its being capable of existence in the free state a molecular form must possess at least the basis of the skeleton of the

\* Besides that of Boscovich I have seen several other attempts at the synthesis of molecules in detail. But of these the most remarkable is an anonymous work of which the entire title-page is "Description des Atomes. De l'imprimerie de Crapelet A Paris. Chez Dessay, Libraire, Rue Hautefeuille No. 4 1813." 8<sup>o</sup>. pp. 385, with 9 beautiful folding plates of the author's atoms and molecules. It is a work of great logical beauty. And in constructing the models, (which the author informs us he did) from which the plates were drawn, infinite labour must have been bestowed. The elementary atoms of the work are 12 or perhaps 13 in number. They are geometrically obtained by definite sections of an elemental cube, and no fewer than 5 of them are tetrahedra of various dimensions. But the author, though so much bolder than Boscovich, had no better means of verification than he. At the date of his Publication many atomic weights had indeed been ascertained, and Dalton's rough notions of the molecular constitution of nature were current through Europe; but our author's only authorities are Fourcroy, Morveau, and Haüy. Who that author was I have no idea. But his name deserves to be perpetuated.

sphere; it must possess an axis with two poles which are similar to each other, and an equator or equatorial region lying between. This, the law of symmetry and sphericity imperatively demands.

Now the tetrad when viewed in relation to any adjacent object is merely a trigonal pyramid. To each of its summits or poles there stands opposite, not another summit or pole on the other side of an equator but a base or equator. The tetrad is essentially a hemiform. It therefore does not fulfil the condition of insulability. Tetrads will not be found in the free state. They must on the contrary like fluorine or the oxygen in ozone tend to fix themselves, to unite and to cohere with anything and with everything in their neighbourhood. Tetrads must in a word be universally parasitic.

**73.** When therefore in any region nothing exists but tetrads themselves, they must tend to aggregate and to cohere in such clusters or molecules as the law of symmetry and sphericity permits. And it will be useful to us hereafter, if we glance here at those clusters of tetrads or elemental molecules which immediately present themselves — only let it be remembered that the modes of genesis, which this homage to present convenience requires us to adopt here, are not those of nature; they are possibilities of genesis merely; as also; that I use the names and symbols of familiar substances, not because I advance anything that is an adequate sanction for their use, but merely to the end that the reader may know where he is, or at least where I am proposing to lead him. The verification emerges only as we proceed.

## HYDROGEN AND HYLOGEN.

**74. *Hydrogen.*** First of all it is to be observed that a single tetrad may acquire the conditions of insulability (that is, two similar

H



Hydrogen.

poles with an equatorial region lying between) by taking into union with itself not necessarily another tetrad or other tetrads but a single unit of matter merely, holding that unit as a part of itself symmetrically suspended opposite any one of its four facets or angles. We thus obtain the trigonal bipyramid Fig. H. Its absolute atomic weight is  $4 + 1 = 5$ . We shall find as we proceed that this elemental structure with the aetherial dynamosphere represents hydrogen in every particular.

**75. *Hylogen.*** Two tetrads may unite base to base as in Fig. H. Such a mode of union is indeed so imminent, that it is not easy to see how any number of tetrads existing in each other's neighbourhood



could in the first instance escape from falling into it, so as to be built up in higher combinations than couples. Accordingly we shall find as we proceed that with the exception which has been already adduced (hydrogen) all the chemical elements and consequently all the molecules and all the masses known to science as they present themselves in our theory are constructed, not of tetrads simultaneously concurring in higher combinations, but by the symmetrical apposition and cohesion of coupled tetrads or bitetrads only.

76. And here the reader who finds himself interested in our incipient investigation may perhaps conclude it to be against our theory that we already require the invention of a new name and appear to be dealing already with an unknown substance. Now to this we answer that since our bitetrad is (speaking generally) isomorphous with hydrogen, and like hydrogen is so light compared with all other molecular structures, we doubt not that when it has come in the way of the chemist in the free state, it has been passed as hydrogen. But according to our theory, it is not much if at all to be expected in the free, isolated, or aeriform state. In aptitude for this state it must differ notably from hydrogen. Thus in hydrogen both polar and equatorial angles consist of one unit only. These regions are therefore similar to each other in the highest degree possible. The tendency of adjacent atoms of hydrogen to unite and cohere will therefore be a minimum and hydrogen may be preeminently expected in the free and aeriform state. But in the bitetrad in the contrary, while each of the polar angles consists of one unit as in hydrogen, each of the equatorial angles consists of two. Its polar angles are therefore very dissimilar to its equatorial angles. Hence under the all-pervading and universally acknowledged law of chemical affinity and union (viz. dissimilarity) bitetrads will tend to unite and cohere, poles to equators, in such groups as the law of symmetry may sanction; and they will be separable by the chemist and known to him only in such groups. The bitetrad therefore in our theory holds the position rather of a genetic principle than of a separate substance. And for this reason as well as to remind us of hydrogen which it resembles in so many features we have named it *hylogen*.

H



Hylogen.

## SULPHUR AND OXYGEN.

77. *Sulphur and oxygen.* If it be asked what are some of those undecomposable molecular structures or chemical elements constructed

of atoms of hydrogen to which allusion has now been made, we may mention the two which first present themselves. Neither 2 nor 3 nor 4 atoms of hydrogen can by their combination with each other produce a symmetrical and stable structure fulfilling the conditions of insulability.

S



Sulph.

But  $5H$  can do so in a two-fold manner, constructing two elemental molecules which exhibit the most interesting genetic and morphological relationship to each other. In both, all the atoms of hydrogen are united and cohere poles to equators. But in one they are united edge to edge, and in the other face to face. And hence two molecular forms which though they have the same parentage differ so much, that they may be said to be the alternate forms of the same matter and of each other.

The former gives Fig. S and we may call it an atom of Sulphur. The latter gives Fig. O and we may call it an atom of oxygen. The former is trigonal or lance-shaped like hydrogen and hydrogen. The latter is pentagonal and may be said to

O



Oxygen.

have the form of a coupling joint or of a life-buoy! The atomic weight of both is the same namely  $5 \times 2 \times 4 = 40$  that is 8 when  $H = 1$ .

78. But S and O are not the states in which these elements must usually be found in nature. S is very prolate in form and wanting in equatorial matter. Moreover in its equator there are just three vacant regions. And these are most suitable for the insertion, the wedging in, and fixing there of three additional atoms of S, their poles applied

 $S^4$ 

Sulphur.

to the centre of the equator of the axial atom. This element therefore will usually be found in nature and will move about as  $S^4$  Fig. its atomic weight  $4 \times 40 = 160$  *i. e.* 32 when  $H = 1$ . The element O in the contrary is very oblate and defective in polar matter. The same law therefore (the law of sphericity) which gives S as  $S^4$  will give O as O Fig. that is, two atoms of O in apposition on the same axis; for the atmosphere

at least of such a coupled molecule may be spherical. The atomic

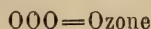
weight of this element in the aeriform state will be  $2 \times 40 = 80$  i. e. 16 when  $H=1$ . Our coupled or natural molecule of oxygen then so far represents an unit of free oxygen or oxygen gas.

*Sulphur vapour.* And here it might be shewn that the continual synthesis of the molecules of bodies is kept up from the first, by that law of which we have an ocular demonstration in the swing of the pendulum. The sphere, the form of repose, in being aimed at, is always passed through, and from prolate the form swings to oblate, and from oblate to prolate. Thus  $S^4$  (see Fig. p. 63) is more oblate than  $S$  (see Fig. p. 30) is prolate. And hence, unless the axis be lengthened by extreme pulsatory excursions, that is, unless the temperature be very high, the law of sphericity will tend to raise up  $S^4$  as



the unit weighing 6 times that of  $O$  or oxygen gas.

*Ozone.* And similarly it may be expected to be possible to get oxygen in the aeriform state as

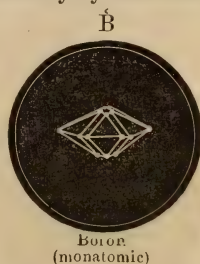


the unit weighing  $1\frac{1}{2}$  times that of  $O$ , ever tending however to partition into  $O + O$ , that is, into oxygen in its normal aeriform and in its most parasitic state at the same time. But there are many Ozones.

## BORON AND CARBON.

**79. Boron.** Neither 3 nor 4 tetrads can unite so as to give a form that possesses the conditions of stability. But 5, united so that one edge of each is the common axis of all, give a beautifully symmetrical structure Fig. B; for since our tetrad is expandible and contractile and always adapts its form to those conditions of equilibrium, which its existing position imposes, 5 tetrads thus placed must generate a form whose equator is a regular pentagon and which is terminated towards each pole by a pentagonal pyramid.

It may be observed however that there are on the equator in each of its 5 angles two units, as in hylogen, while one unit would be adiquate to maintain the symmetry. As our theory then gives us both a lighter and a heavier trigonal bipyramid viz.  $H$  and  $H$ , so does it also give us a lighter and a heavier pentagonal bipyramid, the atomic weight of the former being  $5 + 5 + 5 = 15$  and that

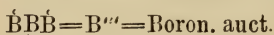




of the latter  $5 + 10 + 5 = 20$ . Consequently, the atomic weight of the first = 3 and of the second = 4 when  $H=1$ . They thus differ by the weight of an atom of hydrogen.

80. To denote such a difference then in isomorphs let us adopt the H of the greek alphabet viz. the spiritus asper, placing it above the literal symbol when it denotes the material of an atom of hydrogen that may be dispensed with, and below that symbol when it denotes an atom of hydrogen that is gone. Thus our general symbol B resolves itself into  $\overset{H}{B}$ , its weight = 20, and  $\underset{H}{B}$  its weight = 15 that is, 4 and 3 respectively when  $H=1$ .

81. Now here we may remark that since B, which may be said to be lens-shaped (as H and  $\overset{H}{H}$  may be said to be lance-shaped) has so short an axis compared with its equatorial diameter, in other words since it is such an oblate spheroid instead of a sphere (which latter the law of sphericity is always calling for) it is to be expected that atoms of B, when they are set free one by one, will place themselves on the same axis so as to lengthen that axis and construct a form which shall (in its aetherial atmosphere) be more spherical than a single atom of B. Now if both  $\overset{H}{B}$  and  $\underset{H}{B}$  be present, the combination of atoms of B on the same axis which best satisfies the law of symmetry is three, viz.  $\overset{H}{B}\underset{H}{B}\overset{H}{B}$ . This therefore we may expect to be the mobile unit or chemical equivalent of B. Its atomic weight is  $20 + 15 + 20 = 55$  that is 11 when  $H=1$ . It therefore represents the B''' of chemistry, that is, Boron considered as a triatomic element



82. *Carbon.* We shall afterwards find that as our theory gives a pentagonal bipyramid having two rows of units on its equator with a lighter isomorph having only one row so does it give another isomorph



Carbon.

also having the units in the equator doubled instead of halved (Fig. C). Its atomic weight is therefore  $5 + 20 + 5 = 30$  that is 6 when  $H=1$ . And here it may be remarked that as atoms of Boron in virtue of their oblateness and dissimilarity may be expected to move about in sets of three, for the same reason (oblateness without dissimilarity) may atoms of this kind be expected to move about in couples on the same axis, giving us the equivalent atomic weight  $6 + 6 = 12$ . This elemental structure therefore so far represently the carbon of chemistry. But its genesis can not be effected directly by the aggregation of tetrads.

It is a residuary element  $=5\text{H}-2\text{H}$ . Let us therefore pass it by here and return to the combination of 5 tetrads which by one mode of combination has already given us Boron. (See Fig. B p. 49.)

## GEM METALS

**83. Beryllium.** Of the combination of 5 tetrads it is important to remark that it is dimorphous. The closed pentagonal bipyramid B may obviously be placed in such a relation that, as a flower-bud opens at the summit and unfolds its perianth so may B open at one pole till it is transformed into Fig. B<sub>e</sub>. And as we have had a lance-shape (H and H) and a lens-shape (B and C) so may we say that we have here a coronet-shape. Its atomic weight is the same as that of B=20 that is 4 when H=1.

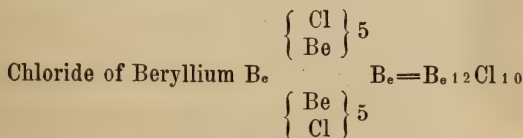


An atom of Beryllium.

**84.** But being heterpolar and disymmetrical Be will not be insulable or separable in single atoms. But it possibly may in its culmination molecule, which since its form is pentagonal must be the dodecatom  $\text{B}_e^{12}$ . (Fig.) And here it might be shewn that the experiments to determine its atomic weight were likely to give  $\frac{12}{10}$  of the true atomic weight that is 4.8 instead of 4. Thus elements which are so light compared with the reagents which are employed to estimate their atomic weight are more likely to take into union with them the reagent on the poles only or on the body only of the molecule than on both poles and body at once. Thus say that the chloride of B<sub>e</sub> is the dodecatom  $\text{B}_e^{12}$  (see Fig.) carrying an atom of Cl on each of the ten members of the body, which we may write thus

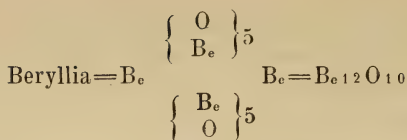


A molecule of Beryllium.



This gives  $10\text{Cl}=355$  and  $12\text{Be}=48$ , i. e.  $\text{Cl}=35.5$  and  $\text{Be}=4.8$  (instead of 4). Now this is what was found by Andejew by this method for Beryllium. We drop altogether the term Glucinum.

In the basic salts again (carbonate, sulphate, nitrate etc.) the poles only are charged with acid, the base being



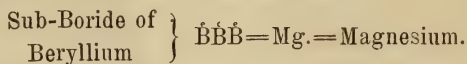
But Boron, and still more Beryllium, are very rare in nature. And why it may be justly asked are they so, if their structure be so simple as it has now been represented? This question finds its answer in the next element which presents itself.

**85. Magnesium** Our Boron and Beryllium though both composed of 5 tetrads are very dissimilar. They will therefore tend to unite. Moreover the atom of Boron has two convex poles, for which the reentrant or concave poles of two atoms of Beryllium when taken together, are precisely a mould. We may therefore expect that the symmetrical combination of Boron and Beryllium will be so stable as to be undecomposable in the laboratory. Its atomic weight must be  $20 + 20 + 20 = 60$  that is 12, when  $H=1$ . Instead of B and Be abundantly in Nature, we are therefore to expect the product of their symmetrical union, of which we shall find as we proceed that the following is the equation, the symbol  $\dot{\text{B}}$  being the same as Be but less perplexing to the eye in a lengthened formula as we shall find hereafter

Mg



Magnesium.

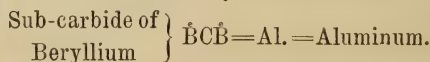


**86. Aluminum.** Since C is isamorphous with B the cavity formed by the union of two atoms of Be placed as in Mg. is also a mould for one atom of C. Our theory therefore suggests another analogue of magnesium namely  $\dot{\text{B}}\text{C}\dot{\text{B}}$ , its atomic weight when it retains all its units, that is, its full weight being,  $20 + 30 + 20 = 70$ , that is, 14 when  $H=1$ . We may therefore state the equation

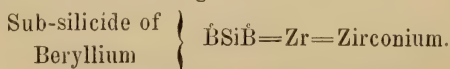
Al



Aluminum.



Similarly were it possible as this stage of our progress to give the structure of silicon, as we have given that of Carbon and Boron, we should obtain the equation to be verified afterwards along with the others



The chemical reader will of course feel annoyed at being called



upon to regard these structures as indecomposable in the laboratory. But it will appear as we proceed that in order to be subject to partitionment on the application of reagents etc., a molecular structure must have much more obvious and open joints than any of the preceding.

87. According to our theory then 5 tetrads when united into the coronet-form  $B_5$  with the aid of Boron, Carbon and Silicon as nuclei, and when the 5-fid or coronet regions are made terminal of the axis, give rise to analogous molecular structures, which so far as we have compared them, represent the gem metals Beryllium, Magnesium, Aluminium and Zirconium.

88. *Aeriform Lithium*. Of all these the type in its simplicity consists of two atoms of Beryllium united by their smooth pentagonal edges. This we might call Biberyllium. But since the letter X somewhat resembles it we shall call it X or Xium and use this letter instead of M as the symbol of a metal generally. When reduced to the structure of greatest simplicity, that is, when there is only one unit instead of two in each of the angles of the equator and we obtain  $\dot{X}$  and  $X$  analogous to  $\dot{H}$  and  $H$ , to  $\dot{B}$  and  $B$ , and to  $C$  and  $\dot{B}$ , it might be called aerial Lithium; for its atomic weight is  $(2 \times 20) - 5 = 35$ , i. e. 7 when  $H = 1$ ; and in our theory it represents the ultimate state of the metal Lithium when it exists in single atoms and retains its metallicity to the last. But this is not the place for considering this element, the parent of all the alkalis.

$\overset{2}{B}_5$  or X



## OXYGEN AGAIN AND OXIDES.

89. But two atoms of  $B_5$  may be applied to each other so that the two coronet-regions instead of being peripherad shall be centrad, and the five teeth in the one shall lock into the intervals of the five teeth in the other. In this case there results the remarkable frustular spondyloid form Fig. O p. 48. It is the same as we have already met with along with S as one of the forms of  $5H$ . The letter O represents it not badly when viewed along the axis. And the figure 8 (which is also its atomic weight on the hydrogen scale) may be taken to represent it in section through the axis. Very singular are its morphological properties. It may be expected, as has been shewn (p. 48), that in the free or aeriform state it will have double the specific gravity which its atomic weight would indicate. Being so defective as to sphericity, which is the form of repose, it must be a very restless active element, especially when it can be obtained in single atoms. Since it is wholly wanting in polar

matter it will try to supply itself with such matter by squatting down on everything. When acting in single atoms it will be universally parasitic and corrosive. Moreover, if metallicity be a function of the surface of molecules, O must be a non-metallic element, for the character of its surface is the very reverse of that of all the metals which have fallen in our way. And it is itself precisely X halved at the equator and then doubled again in the reverse manner. In all these peculiarities as well as in those which were adduced before, this new element represents oxygen. The name is peculiarly unfortunate since although there is oxygen no doubt in most acids, yet oxygen is the characteristic principle for imparting basicity, while hydrogen not oxygen, is that which imparts acidity or sourness.

**90. Oxides.** Since according to our theory the coronets when they couple in one way, namely, with their 5-fid aspects peripherad appear to give rise to metallic elements, and when they couple in the opposite way, namely, with then 5-fid regions centrad and locked into each other appear to constitute oxygen, what we are to expect in Nature according to our theory is, neither masses of metal nor masses of oxygen, but masses consisting of metal and oxygen together, differentiating each other and thus imparting stability to the mass. Now this is precisely what we find. There are only a few metals which, either in consequence of the finely differentiated and yet isometrical structure of their molecules being able protect themselves against the attacks of oxygen, or in consequence of their very great atomic weights being out of relation with oxygen, are found in nature in the reguline state.

### SILICON AND SILICA.

**91. Silicon.** The polar regions of the atom of O are concave, and precisely moulds for the lens-shaped poles of B. While therefore we

BOB or  $\overset{20}{\nabla}$

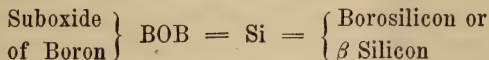


$\beta$  Silicon.

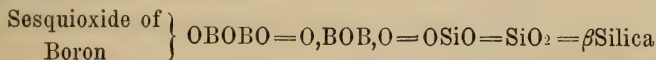
may have the dissymmetrical combination BO in a molecular state viz. as  $(BO)^{12} = 4 (B''''O_3 \text{ Auct})$  we may expect abundantly as a structure insulable by itself a single atom of O of which both poles are filled by one atom of B (See Fig BOB). Its form is a perfect icosahedron. It is perfectly isometrical and the most spherical possible of all simple molecules. It will therefore be most inactive and we cannot expect that

it will be decomposable in the laboratory. It may be compared to an atom of boron or of carbon with a lengthened or prismatic equator. It may therefore be expected to present analogies in its functioning

to boron and carbon. Moreover its atomic weight is  $20+40+20=80$  or  $15+40+15=70$  according as the borons in the poles are atoms of  $\dot{B}$  or of  $\bar{B}$ , that is, its atomic weight is 16 or 14 when  $H=1$ . It will be observed therefore that it represents Silicon. And we shall find as we proceed that it is one of a whole host of molecules, dissimilar in genesis and in structure and uncertain as to atomic weight and indiscernable to sense, which are passed in the laboratory under this name. We may therefore state the equation



**92. Silica.** But the first combination of B and O would doubtless be not BOB but BO. Hence what we are to expect in nature as the insulable element is not BOB, but two atoms of BO united by an atom of O as a coupling joint, that is, OBOBO, the sesquioxide of boron. Now this structure possesses the highest order of symmetry; for the oxygen of the equator is repeated on both poles, while the three atoms of oxygen are bolted together in the most perfect manner. But no such substance is known in the laboratory. How then is our synthesis to be justified as to this substance? To this it is to be answered that if OBOBO the Sesquioxide of boron be subjected to chemical analysis, all that is to be expected is, that the two atoms of oxygen which are terminal of the axis, and which are therefore both exposed to reagents, and are in that region of the molecule in which action is most easily awoken, may be substituted by more powerful elements such as chlorine, fluorine etc. and ultimately be expelled altogether from the combination. But the same cannot be so easily believed with regard to the medial atom of O, which lies concealed in the centre of the combination shielded on both sides by an atom of B. The probable result of analysis may be thus expressed



**93.** But we have here to remark that BOB is one and the same structure as that which results from the simultaneous grouping of 20 tetrads around a common centre. Now 20 is the maximum number of concurring trigonal elements that can be admitted around a common centre; and this therefore is the form in which all such groups culminate. Now the tetrad is trigonal in all its dimensions. The polyhedron proper to it is therefore the icosahedron. With the construction of this molecule therefore further synthesis after this type comes to a close.

**94.** But will the molecule  $\text{BOB}=\text{Si}$ , which we may now write also  $\frac{20}{\nabla}$ , be permanent in Nature? Is it a caput mortuum? Are there



no further transformations in reserve for it? Yes; in order to see that it is not and cannot be immutable it is only necessary to consider (1) that there lies concealed in its centre a group of 20 units of matter or elemental forces, and (2) that the law of symmetry ever works not only to-

$\frac{1}{4} B_0$  or  $\frac{20}{\Delta}$



wards an external but towards a true sphericity. Now this implies cellularity. These 20 units in the centre therefore though secularly and slowly yet will they continuously tend outwards, until having passed through the centers of the 20 triangular openings that are in the surface of the molecule they poise themselves on the outside and remain there constituting the summets of 20 triangular pyramids now reared on the formerly smooth or fenestrated surface of the icosatom. In a word  $\frac{20}{\nabla}$  must be transformed into  $\frac{20}{\Delta}$  the position of each constituent pyramid in  $\frac{20}{\nabla}$  being reverted in  $\frac{20}{\Delta}$ .

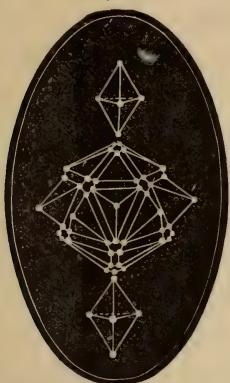
95. And here it may be perceived how I might have avoided that reference to ideal law which is so unpopular in our day. Instead of ascribing the production of cellularity in this molecule simply to the law of sphericity, I might easily have shewn that the discharge of the group of elementary forces from the centre of the molecule must be the inevitable result of the mutually repulsive action operating secularly among these forces in virtue of their specific heat. And similarly it might be shewn that symmetry and sphericity generally are necessarily the products and are the only conditions of statical equilibrium in systems which are composed of equal and similar elastic elements. But though this were done it would only be the solution of a problem in mechanics which would be apt to issue in the neglect of a higher principle in philosophy: for when we obtain a mechanical cause we are ever too apt to forget the First Cause which as Newton says "is certainly not mechanical."

### SILICIUM AND SILICIA.

96. But is the molecule  $\frac{20}{\Delta}$  into which  $\frac{20}{\nabla}$  has been transformed permanent in Nature? No; it has now attained to as great sphericity and homogeneity as it possibly can attain, if it is to continue to consist of tetrads. It is therefore according to our cosmical laws, and in virtue of the mutual repulsion which exists between identicals, on the eve of partitionment, vaporization, or explosion into the aeriform state. But the tetrads of which it consists are not capable of the aeriform state. Instead of breaking up and going off in tetrads therefore

it may (1) partition in some one or other of many ways which are possible to it, or (2) it may differentiate itself so as to recover stability and remain in the concrete state. Thus two of its 5-fid or coronet forms opposite to each other may gather themselves up and become individualized as atoms of hydrogen. This done we obtain, with one atom of

H§H

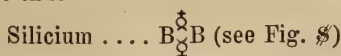


Nascent Hydride of Silicium.

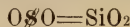


Silicium.

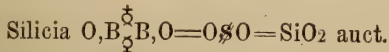
H on each pole, a finely differentiated molecule, its polar regions Boron and its equatorial region an inverted or metallized atom of oxygen. This we may write thus



It differs from Silicon as we shall afterwards find by being semimetallic. It is according to our theory that element towards which Silicon and many other molecules during their secular transformations tend. And it is the ultimate and the most stable of all molecules possessing so great a weight. Its genesis however is such (as we shall see hereafter) as to give it in nature always in union with an atom of oxygen on each pole, namely as



Silicia or Silica.



This indeed appears even adopting the genesis of Silicium, which we have here (for convenience) adduced. That genesis gives Silicium as a bihydride H§H. If then such a hydride come into a region where there is oxygen gas we shall have the equation

Bihydride of Silicium + Oxygen gas = Bihydrate of Silica



97. Hitherto chemists have not entertained the idea that there may be both a Silicon and a Silicium, but rather have differed merely whether the basis of Quartz is metalloidal or metallic. Our view reconciles such differences by shewing that possibly both may be right. Is not our view also full of promise for explaining those differences both in the crystallization and in the optical properties of various specimens of Quartz which are so remarkable?

98. Thus in our first dip into molecular nature under the guidance of our theory we have obtained molecular structures which may possibly represent

Hydrogen

Oxygen and Sulphur

Boron, Carbon, Silicon

Beryllium, Magnesium, Aluminum, Zirconium, Silicium.

99. And we might proceed to develope others in the same way. But that way is not satisfactory. It does not give the elements as they occur in nature, nor does it assign any reason for the mode of their natural occurrence. It gives no reason for instance why Magnesium should occur only as  $MgO$ , Silicon and Silicium only as  $OSiO=SiO_2$  Aluminum only  $OAlOAlO=Al_2O_3$ , &c.&c. Here then let us bring this excursus to a close. It proves nothing. But it is designed to give the reader, who has been willing to follow us so far, a general idea of our atomic morphology.

100. As to objections, a very general one will probably be that nobody thinks of the atoms of bodies as such filigree-work as I have represented them, but rather as round solids like small shot. Now in answer to this it is to be remarked that it is the nuclei of our atoms and molecules only that can be compared to filigree-work. Our atoms and molecules overhead or viewed in their aetherial atmospheres are all spherical or spheroidal. But we do not object to the similitude of filigree however extensively it may be applied. Where let us ask is the smallest sanction for such a conception of atoms as that they resemble small shot! It is certain that what little of one atom is so powerfully repulsive of any other atom as to be wholly impenetrable and to bear the name of solid, has a very small radius indeed, compared with the whole sphere of that atom as an agent. And let the microscope armed with its highest powers be applied to the thinnest slice that can be made of any substance whatever, be it animal, vegetable or mineral, let the observer's eye press in a word as near to the region of the individual molecules of bodies as it possibly can, and may not all let us ask that is visible be called filigree-work as justly as our



atoms? In fine is not all that visible precisely what we should expect, if the invisible which lies beneath, were composed of such atoms and molecules as we have here conceived?

### CHAPTER III.

#### THE AGGREGATION OF THE ELEMENTS OR ATOMS OF CHEMISTRY INTO THE MOLECULES OF BODIES.

101. On recalling what was said (§. 9), as to the figures developed at the common boundaries of a group of *aetherial elements* when undergoing compression in symmetrically constructed groups into *material elements* or units of weight, it will be remembered that these figures were pentagons and equilateral triangles. And from the perusal of the preceding chapter it will be seen that the material elements thus obtained when united into those symmetrical groups which promise to represent the *chemical elements* develop the same figures.

102. Now pentagons and triangles when placed around a common center in keeping with the law of symmetry and sphericity, that is, so as to construct the most spherical polyhedra possible to them, give the two most perfect of the Platonic bodies viz. the dodecahedron and the icosahedron (see the Figures).



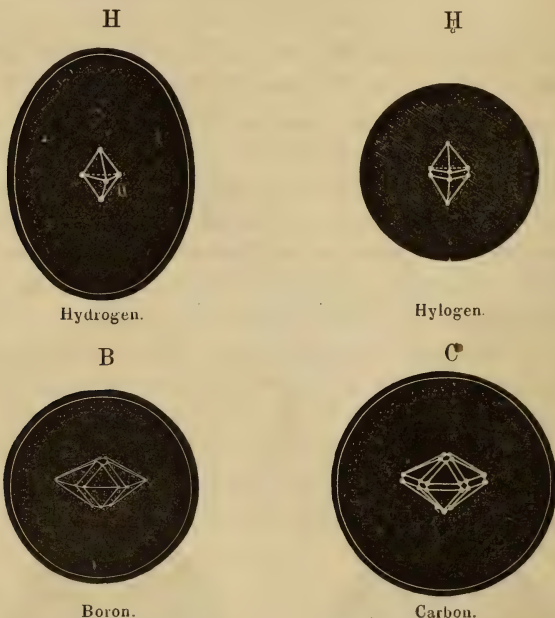
The Dodecahedron.



The Icosahedron.

103. And here it is desirable to remark the following beautiful relation between these two forms. Each of them indicates the other. The dodecahedron with 12 sides has 20 angles. The icosahedron with 20 sides has 12 angles. Hence when around a common center a series of regular polyhedra is constructed of which the first member is either the dodecahedron or the icosahedron, these two forms tend to follow each other alternately in the whole superstructure. Thus if the innermost or first wall be dodecahedral, the second wall must be icosahedral; and the doubled-walled structure will be finely differentiated. The third wall must be dodecahedral again; and in the triple-walled structure the character of the outer surface must be assimilated to that of the central cell. But let us leave geometry for physics.

**104.** As the first insulable type of the trigonal order of forms, that which in aggregating symmetrically gives the equilateral triangle, we may take H or  $\bar{H}$ . And as the most elemental types of the pentagonal order of forms we may take B or C which bear to each other the same relation that H and  $\bar{H}$  do to one another.



**105.** Now both of these and all similar forms of both these classes are obviously very highly angular. And so must all atomic structures be which are found near the commencement of the molecular synthesis of units. Hence under the dominion of the never ceasing law of sphericity these first structures must ever tend to unite together again into molecules of a more composite character, which shall be more nearly spherical. The elements of chemistry therefore or more shortly the atoms of bodies must tend to form into molecules. And of these molecules we have to consider both the volume and the quantity of matter in them, the structure and the form.

**106.** Now as to all these particulars the law of assimilation much speak the first word. All molecules must tend to be assimilated in so far as their constituent atoms will allow, in volume, in quantity of matter, in structure, and in form. And hence with dissimilar atoms as molecular material, different molecules must display great variety of features; for assimilation as to one particular must imply a departure from similarity as to other particulars. Thus if molecules are to be assimilated

as to volume, a group of heavy atoms in aggregating into molecules which shall have the same volume as molecules consisting of a group of light atoms, must contain a much greater quantity of matter. And consequently natural substances are to be expected to display a great variety of specific gravities. If again molecules are to be assimilated as to the quantity of matter of which they consist their volumes will tend to be dissimilar. And hence it is to be expected that molecules as to volume shall not be all exactly equal, but now equal, now in that relation which is most nearly the ratio of equality viz. doubles or halves, simple or multiple 1 : 2 : 4 : 8 : 16 etc.

107. And here the question occurs — what are we to regard as the unit volume which tends to assimilate all others to itself? Now happily the same law which calls for similarity of volume as a result

O



Oxygen gas.

Az



Azote.

AQ

A particle or unit volume of water.  
(each aq flattened.)

of assimilative action answers this question. As to the unit of aeriform volume considering the dominance of nitrogen and oxygen gases, that is, of common air among aeriforms, we are called upon to adopt the volume of the unit of these gases as the unit of aeriform volumes. It will afterwards appear that both these units are molecules consisting of two atoms each. (See Fig O and Az.)

108. As to, dense substances again, that is, concretes and liquids, considering the dominance of the aqueous element in our planet both now and in all geological epochs, we are called upon to adopt as the unit volume, that of the particle of water (see Fig AQ=aq<sup>36</sup>). Moreover we may put this doctrine of unit volumes more scientifically. We



may adopt the volume of the atom of common vapour  $= aq = Az = O$  as the unit volume for aeriforms, and  $AQ = aq^{36}$  as the unit volume for liquids and solids.\* Our theory will thus sanction the use of common language. It will give as light, gases and vapours which rise in air; and as heavy, substances which sink in water. And what now as to the construction of molecules? The law of sphericity operating in atoms or molecules whose regions of union are trigonal must obviously give the following law.

**109.** *Trigonal elements in forming into molecules must culminate in icosatoms.* They may no doubt possibly form also into tetratoms representing the tetrahedron the simplest of the regular polyhedra. But these and all others, when the too volatile character of the material does not prevent, must culminate in icosatoms representing the icosahedron the most perfect of the regular polyhedra.

Thus tetrads, when formed into the most perfect molecule they are capable of, must give Fig.  $\nabla^{20}$  ( $= BOB$  or  $Si$ ) or it inverse Fig.  $\triangle^{20}$ .


 $\nabla^{20}$ 

 $\triangle^{20}$ 

H must give  $\overset{20}{H}$  of both of which Fig.  $\triangle^{20}$  may be taken as the diagram (the 20 units in the interior being not represented).  $\overset{4}{S}$  which is also trigonal in all its dimensions (see  $\overset{4}{S}$  Fig. p. 63) must give  $\overset{4}{S}_{20}$  ( $=$  a molecule of sulphur.)

**110.** And here it may be reasonably asked on what ground do we pretend to advance all this? How do we propose to verify what is an unpardonable innovation in science, or rather indeed a retrogression to the ignorant times of Pythagoras and of Plato? The answer is that taking the ratios of the molecular volumes in their molecular numbers

\* It is of course a great disadvantage that I must here merely postulate  $aq^{36}$  instead of shewing that it is the molecule which single atoms of  $aq$  must construct, when they aggregate according to the law of symmetry and sphericity. But such anticipations are inevitable except in such a work as Euclid's Elements where brevity and convenience are completely neglected for the sake of a strictly logical development. The development of  $AQ = aq^{36}$  is somewhat fully given hereafter.

or weights we obtain the same specific gravities as are found experimentally by the balance! Thus in the last molecule adduced we have  $\hat{S}$  which represents an element of sulphur in its prevailing state = 32 when  $H=1$ . And we have  $AQ=aq^{36}=36 \times 9=324$ . Now

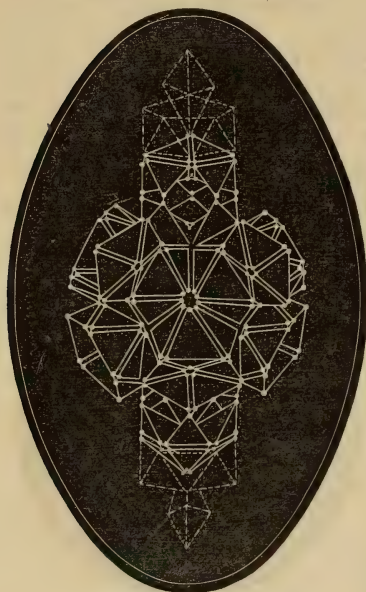
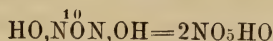
$$\text{Sulphur } G = \frac{\hat{S}_{20}}{AQ} = \frac{20 \times 32}{324} = 1.975 \dots \text{Exp. } 1.96 \dots 2.00$$

111. The experimental determination of specific gravities at different temperatures and in different conditions of substance are of course to a certain extent variable. And in like manner our molecules during their construction, and afterwards under physical changes, are subject to many variations. Thus the molecule of  $\hat{S}$  though icosatomic in both cases is dimorphous; for the 3 atoms of S which are inserted into the equator of the fourth which forms the axis of the tetratom, do not stand at right angles to the axis. And at one temperature the acute angle will be peripherad in the icosatom, at another temperature centrad. At a certain epoch therefore as the temperature of fused sulphur is rising, the molecules of which the liquid consists may be expected to change from the one kind to the other, and thus may be expected to modify the specific gravity. Moreover during the epoch of change many of the grapnel-shaped tetratoms of sulphur must exist single or free, thus spoiling the fluidity and rendering the sulphur viscous, or if cold tough — as is found during experiment. We are therefore to expect rather a general agreement in theoretical and experimental specific gravities than one running far into decimals. And yet in crystalline and stable substances, such substances as are deliberate productions of nature, the agreement often extends to the third place in decimals — as far in fact as experiment is uniform.



112. To shew that when the elements constitutive of the molecule are of an aeriform or very volatile tendency, the molecular synthesis instead of reaching the icosatom closes with the tetratom or the octatom the following examples may be taken. The formula of Nitric anhydride is  $N_2O_5$  (when  $O=16$  i. e. when  $O=O=20$ ).  $N_2O_5$  therefore according to our theory and that of the classic age of atomic weights  $=N_2O_{10}$ . And this written symmetrically as we always do gives  $N \overset{10}{O} N$ , that is, a dodecatom of oxygen its polar elements substituted by two

atoms of nitrogen, the dodecatom being thus differentiated and rendered stable. Now when this molecule is monohydrated symmetrically



Monohydrated Nitric Acid  
(a bad diagram).

Abundant evidence will afterwards shew that this is a tetratom viz  $(\text{C}_5 \text{H}_4)^4$ . And taking the tetratom with  $\frac{1}{2}$  normal volume or forming these elements of  $\text{C}_5 \text{H}_4$  into an octatom we obtain

$$\text{Light Essential oils} \left. \begin{array}{l} (\text{C}_5\text{H}_4)^4 \\ \frac{1}{2} \text{AQ} \end{array} \right\} \text{ or } \frac{(\text{C}_5\text{H}_4)^8}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{8(30 + 4)}{324} = .84$$

Exp. .84....86

The distillers are however often troubled with a heavy oil which even sinks in water. They are troubled with it, because it is of less commercial value, being less fragrant, that is, more stable. This accident is explained by the tendency of the elements  $\text{C}_5\text{H}_4$  to construct a more stable molecule, namely, the molecule of culmination, the icosatom occupying two aqueous volumes. Thus

$$\text{Heavy essential oils} \left. \begin{array}{l} (\text{C}_5\text{H}_4)^{20} \\ 2 \text{AQ} \end{array} \right\} \text{G} = \frac{20(30 + 4)}{2 \times 324} = 1.05$$

Exp. 1.03...1.09

No diagram is here given of the non-oxygenated essential oil Element  $\text{C}_5\text{H}_4$  because it is highly polymorphous. There must be five or more different even homogeneous sorts of such oil which the same formula  $\text{C}_5\text{H}_4$  will equally represent. This may be easily conceived

that is when an atom of HO is fixed in each pole we obtain  $\text{HO}, \text{N}^{\text{10}}\text{N}, \text{OH}$  Fig.  $(= 2\text{NO}_5\text{HO})$ . Both its poles are therefore trigonal. And its molecule which is aiming at equality with the unit volume of water must be one of the trigonal series, that is, it must be a tetratom, an octatom or an icosatom. But it consists entirely of aerial elements. A very open molecule will alone be possible. Let us then try the tetratom. Now Monohydrated }  $\text{G} = \frac{(\text{HO}, \text{N}^{\text{10}}\text{N}, \text{OH})^4}{\text{AQ}}$   
Nitric Acid }  
$$= \frac{4(9 + 108 + 9)}{324} = 1.55$$

Exp. 1.55...1.52

Again the normal nonoxygenated Essential oils have as their normal chemical formula  $\text{C}_{20} \text{H}_{16}$ .



when it is remembered that the skeleton of the essential-oil-element is the atom of Marsh Gas  $\overset{\text{A}}{\text{C}}\text{HC}$ , the three atoms of hydrogen of the equator being still complete with three atoms of C added, in which C



Marsh Gas.

 $\text{B}_{12}$  or  $\text{C}_{12}$ 

and H may be variously united, as also applied in various ways to the axial atom of H. Hence many essential oils.

**114.** *Pentagonal elements must culminate in molecules which are dodecatoms.* The only pentagonal atoms which we have as yet met with are B and C and they are so light and small that  $\text{B}_{12}$  and  $\text{C}_{12}$  are not the molecules which emulate the unit-volume of water. More composite molecules are required to do so. We cannot therefore obtain an immediate verification of the existence of  $\text{B}_{12}$  and  $\text{C}_{12}$  by calculating the specific gravity. But let us take some heavier elements of the pentagonal order and the dodecatom will shew itself. The halogens are such elements; they are heavy; and they give

$$\text{Chlorine (liquid)} \quad \frac{\text{Cl}_{12}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{12 \times 36}{324} = 1.33 \text{ Exp. } 1.33$$

$$\text{Bromine (liquid)} \quad \frac{\text{Br}_{12}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{12 \times 80}{324} = 2.99 \text{ Exp. } 2.99$$

$$\text{Iodine (solid)} \quad \frac{\text{I}_{12}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{12 \times 128}{324} = 4.74 \text{ Exp. } 4.94?$$

Here for reasons which will afterwards appear Chlorine is estimated 5. and Iodine is estimated 1. heavier than is usually done. If the experimental weight of Iodine in the solid state be correct it implies a certain amount of differentiation of the dodecatom as will be presently explained.

**115.** There is no structural fact in Nature, as Nature must be viewed by us, which is of greater importance than this phenomenon of differentiation. It has already received attention in reference to the development of organisation; but it has not as yet been considered in reference to merely molecular structures. Nevertheless it is that by which the latter in a multitude of cases are retained in the concrete state, when otherwise they would have dissolved away or vaporized, just as it is that

by which an embryo may develop as a concrete and maintain its concrete form in the midst of a liquid medium. Thus we have seen that molecules in the very degree that they become more perfect, that is, more nearly spherical in form and homogeneous in structure become more aerial in their tendencies and less capable of continuing in the concrete state. In fact the concrete state is a state of constraint and of defective individuation. To man however in the present form of our Being it cannot but be the most important of all states; for our organs of perception and of manipulation, our brains, our entire bodily frames are concretes. The transition of the concrete into the liquid and the gaseous is death to us. Hence what, after all, is an interference with the normal course of molecular action or at any rate a retardation of it, is of the utmost value to us, — as much in fact as our life is worth, — I mean the differentiation of molecules in form or structure or both, that is, some departure from the isometrical in form or the homogeneous in structure, whereby the fitness of the molecule for the liquid state or for partitionment and the aeriform state is lessened, and that molecule is consequently secured for a longer period in the concrete state.

**116.** And here happily while tending to ascribe all phenomena to laws, all-important though the phenomenon of differentiation be, we have no need of a law of differentiation, on which however physiologists devolve so much. The differentiation of molecules is nothing new. It is nothing but a specific result of the great cosmical phenomenon that similars tend, in respect of being similars to repel, and dissimilars to attract each other and to cohere — a phenomenon, which has long been recognized as the very basis of all chemical action. The differentiation of the molecule or of the organism is simply the introduction of a dissimilarity into it, whence the molecule, instead of liquifying or partitioning vaporizing or exploding, continues in the concrete state, and the organism, instead of dissolving into the fluid which surrounds it or ulcerating, granulates and grows. Now the molecules of which the crust of the Earth consists have had to encounter terrible ordeals in earlier geological epochs. They may therefore be expected generally to have assumed those forms and structures which are most favourable for maintaining the concrete state, that is, they may be expected to be generally differentiated. Both icosatomic and dodecatomic molecules may be expected to be generally differentiated. But of the former class there are so few (only so far as I have gone H, H<sub>2</sub>, S, Se, Te, while all the rest belong to the pentagonal order of forms,) that with the exception of the first mode of differentiation which applies to both, we shall confine our attention to the differentiation of the dodecatom.

**117.** *The icosatom may be differentiated by the dodecatom and the dodecatom by the icosatom; for each tends to circumscribe the other.* We may thus have molecules the numbers of whose constituent members are  $12 + 20 = 32$  or  $12 + 20 + 12 = 44$  etc. etc. In this case the differentiation though very complete is that of structure merely. The molecule with double or triple walls continues to be isometrical in form, as is that with a single wall only. This mode of differentiation therefore implies a very perfect and yet a very stable molecule. As examples we may adduce Silver, Gold, the Diamond, the double walled molecule of the last being still so small that to bring the unit into relation with the unit volume of water the molecules of  $C_{32}$  are formed into dodecatoms again or of  $C_{12}$  into composite molecules each occupying two aqueous volumes.

$$\text{Silver} \dots G = \frac{Ag_{32}}{AQ} = \frac{32 \times 108}{324} = 10.6 \text{ Exp. } 10.5$$

$$\text{Gold} \dots G = \frac{Au_{32}}{AQ} = \frac{32 \times 197}{324} = 19.1 \text{ Exp. } 19.2$$

$$\text{Diamond} \dots G = \frac{(C_{12})^{32}}{2AQ} = \frac{12 \times 32 \times 6}{2 \times 324} = 3.55 \text{ Exp. } 3.55$$

The molecule of the type  $X^{12 + 20 + 12} = X_{44}$  also occurs in Nature though more frequently among the educts of art. Thus

$$\text{Mercury} \dots G = \frac{Hg_{44}}{AQ} = \frac{44 \times 100}{324} = 13.58 \text{ Exp. } 13.59$$

$$\text{Iron} \dots G = \frac{Fe_{44}}{1/2 AQ} = \frac{44 \times 28}{1/2 \times 324} = 7.6 \text{ Exp. } 7.7$$

**118.** And here one is seemingly stopt in the inference which was imminent that metallic masses consisting of molecules of this structure isometrical and yet differentiated tend to be "noble metals" or permanently reguline, since iron is so liable to rust. But such a fact does not forbid the inference. The law of Redintegration (assimilation to its primal state) tends to reduce every product of art, into the state in which Nature gave it to art. The iron of art which is obtained from an oxide tends to rust again and become an oxide, and so in other cases all independently of the morphological rights of the atom or molecule considered as its own universe and as without a history. The cosmical laws affirm prescriptive as well as personal rights.

**119.** *Dodecatoms and Icosatoms when composed of heteropolar members may be differentiated simply by the inversion of some of these members* and without either the addition or the subtraction of matter. By a heteropolar member is meant any atom or

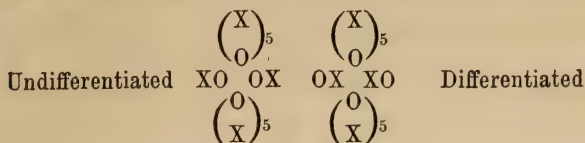


combination whose poles are dissimilar such as HO, HC, HCO (§ 32) and of which we may take XO as the type; X standing for Fig. X (§ 85) or any metal, and consequently XO for an element of protoxide.

Now under the law of symmetry a single element of XO cannot be insulable or mobile by itself. The first insulable or mobile element (that is the first symmetrical element) is  $XOOX = XOX$  or  $OXXO = OXO = X_2O$ , ( $= X_2O$  where  $O = 16$ .) And this is the formula under which protoxides are now often written. But the form of culmination (since O and most generally X are pentagonals) is the dodecatom  $XO_{12}$  or  $OX_{12}$ ; between which the difference is, "that XO represents in our notation a single member of the double-walled molecule in which X is peripherad and O is centrad; and OX represents the same with O peripherad and X centrad, the axis of the molecule being supposed to lie parallel to the lines of the page, and the composition of the molecule being read like any other combination of letters from left to right and from periphery to centre. Thus in  $XO_{12}$  the oxygen is all centrad, in  $OX_{12}$  it is all peripherad. Now in either of these cases all the atoms of O or all the atoms of X are in union with each other, that is, elements which have been already assimilated to each other are in union. The nucleus of the dodecation is also isometrical, and therefore its aetherial atmosphere must be spherical. And viewing XO as an unity the structure of the dodecatom is also homogeneous. If this therefore were really the structure of the molecule of a protoxide it could not possess that stability for which protoxides are often remarkable. It would on the contrary be very liable to solution, vaporization or explosion.

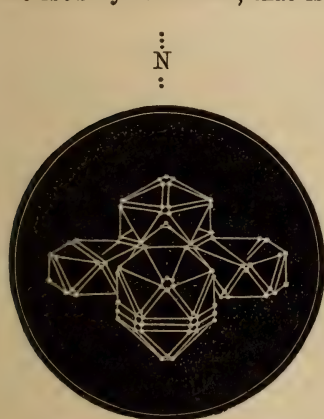
But this cannot be the normal structure of such a molecule. The first movement towards solution, the first tendency to partitionment in the molecule must prevent further progress in the same direction; for dissimilars ever tend to unite in preference to similars. As soon therefore as any elements of XO in  $XO_{12}$  are relieved from their state of cohesion so as to be mobile (and such a change in molecular phenomena generally will take place according to the law of symmetry, that is, not in single elements but in couples) they will invert, and having done so, they will plunge again into the vacancies they had made in the molecule; and thus they will again reconstruct it with greater stability than it possessed before. In a word, by this single act of inversion on the part of two elements in the dodecatom, each of its twelve members is brought into union with an element which is dissimilar to itself. The tendency in the molecule to prolonged cohesion, its power of withstanding an ordeal must therefore be greatly encreased. These two states of the molecule,

that before and that after differentiation may perhaps be in some measure represented in the plane of the paper by writing the formulae thus



In the formula on the left hand the interior of the molecule consists of 12 atoms of O in union with each other. In the right hand formula 2 atoms of X are in union with 10 atoms of O in two sets of 5, so that every atom of O in the dodecation is now in union with X. The molecule therefore must now be comparatively stable while yet the isometrical character of its form is nowise interfered with.

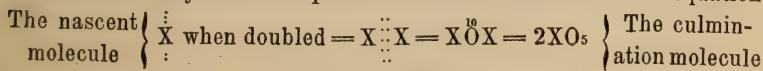
**120.** And thus we see how oxygen though in its own nature tending to be aeriform may be fixed in large quantities. It may indeed possibly be condensed, and it would seem that it has been so condensed though with great difficulty in dodecatomic molecules circumscribed by icosatoms, that is, in molecules double-walled  $\text{O}^{12+20}=\text{O}^{32}$



$\text{NO}_5$

( $\text{O}^{12}\text{O}$ , another ozone being aeriform). But the dodecatom  $\text{O}^{12}$  may be fixed when two atoms of O which are terminal of any one of the six axes of the dodecatom are substituted by some dissimilar element such as N, Cl, As, etc. We thus obtain  $\text{N}^{\text{O}}\text{N}=2\text{NO}_5$ ,  $\text{Cl}^{\text{O}}\text{Cl}=2\text{ClO}_5$ ,  $\text{P}^{\text{O}}\text{P}=2\text{PO}_5$  etc., which are very familiar formulae. Moreover it is to be considered that most elements such as N, Cl, As, etc. being pentagonal and prolate and consequently in want of equatorial matter, five atoms of oxygen fixed around the equator of a single

such element may also be expected. We shall thus obtain the equation

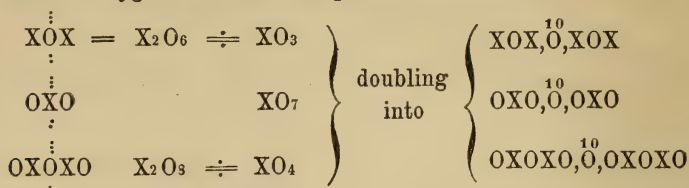


The use of dots as the symbol of oxygen instead of the letter O as is generally done by mineralogists admits of its being shewn that the oxygen is not on the poles but on the equator of X, N, Cl, P, etc.

See Fig.  $\text{N} = \text{NO}_5$ .

**121.** Instead of X simply as the form to which the oxygen attaches we may also obviously have  $\text{XOX}$  the suboxide,  $\text{OXO}$  the deut-

oxide and OXOXO the sesquioxide. Now to these adding as before five atoms of oxygen around their equators we obtain



**122.** Of these in their doubled or culmination forms as given on the right hand, the first especially may be often expected; for it is merely the dodecatom still further differentiated by the addition of an atom of protoxide on each pole. And hence  $\text{X}\overset{10}{\text{O}}\text{X}$  when subjected to an ordeal may be expected often to give this. That is, in the actual notation of chemistry (in which molecules are halved or rather indeed drawn and quartered without mercy)  $\text{XO}_5$  when subjected to an ordeal may be expected to change into  $\text{XO}_3$ . Accordingly while nature gives  $\text{AsO}_5$   $\text{PO}_5$   $\text{SbO}_5$  etc. in a state of union, it gives  $\text{AsO}_3$   $\text{SbO}_3$  etc. as substances stable enough to be insulable by themselves, that is, capable of existing in the free state.

**123.** That these chemical formulae are not the true formulae of such substances, but one of them a half and another a quarter of the true formulae, is very well shewn by the chlorides of phosphorus when submitted to an ordeal such as heat. In that case  $\text{PCl}_5$  is well known to become  $\text{PCl}_3$ . Now both are capable of the aeriform state, and the specific gravity of  $\text{PCl}_3$  (as is supposed) is found to be 4.74 while that of  $\text{PCl}_5$  (as is supposed) is only 3.66. These sp. gr. are consequently thought to be "anomalous" and the aid of a new hypothesis of "dissociation" has to be invoked to account for them. But if we take the simple dodecatom before the ordeal of heat is applied and the differentiated dodecatom after that ordeal, and allow to each molecule of the vapours a volume equal to 8 atmospherical or normal volumes we then obtain

$$\text{Perchloride of Phosphorus } \frac{\text{PClP}^{\overset{10}{\text{O}}}}{8 \text{ Air}} \div \text{PCl}_5 = 3.66 \text{ Exp. } 3.66$$

$$\text{The lower Chloride } \frac{\text{PCl}, \text{PClP}^{\overset{10}{\text{O}}}, \text{CIP}}{8 \text{ Air}} \div \text{PCl}_3 = 4.82 \text{ Exp. } 4.74.$$

**124.** The chemical reader who has adopted the prevalent hypothesis that the volumes of aeriforms generally when these aeriforms are simple gases or vapours are all equals, and the volumes of compound gases or vapours all doubles, will of course be shocked at such a conception as that a single molecule even of any substance however compound should occupy eight volumes. But our theory finds in Nature



far greater variety than the chemical hypothesis allows. Of some undecomposable molecules (the simple substances of chemistry) the forms depart so far from the spherical that they are capable of the aeriform state only in the most perfectly constructed molecules ( $X^{12+20}=X^{32}$  see p. 67) and these structures occupy not eight but sixteen atmospherical volumes. Thus

$$\text{Phosphorus } \frac{\overset{32}{\text{P}}}{16 \text{ Air}} = \frac{32 \times 31}{16 \times 14.4} = 4.305 \text{ Exp. 4.42.}$$

$$\text{Arsenic } \frac{\overset{32}{\text{As}}}{16 \text{ Air}} = \frac{32 \times 76}{16 \times 14.4} = 10.55 \text{ Exp. 10.6.}$$

Our theory thus emancipates science from another of its "anomalies"-phenomena of thought, these "anomalies", which it is always best to regard in their true light, that is, as misconceptions attaching to some Procrustian conception of the human mind, which nature refuses to sanction.

It thus appears that in consequence of the trigonal and the pentagonal in elemental forms, and the reciprocal play of the law of sphericity on the one hand and of stability or differentiation on the other there must be many forms and structures among molecules.

**125.** But since most elements are of the pentagonal order of forms, the most abundant and important molecules at least in the inorganic world must be dodecatoms either isometrical or differentiated. In regions where hydrogen and sulphur abound, as for instance in the organic world and elsewhere, icosatoms also are to be expected. Both the undifferentiated and the most normally differentiated dodecatoms are shewn in the two most abundant constituents of the crust of the Earth, namely in Silica and Alumina. And this we may here shew. But since the eye so soon becomes perplexed when two letters are used as the symbol of a single element; and since when every atom of oxygen is represented by the letter O the formula soon becomes so long as to obscure the symmetry, let us take the eye-catching symbol  $\mathcal{S}$  instead of Si for Silicon or Silicium and A instead of Al<sub>2</sub> for Aluminum as it occurs in Nature. And let us take dots as usual instead of O. We thus obtain as

#### Simple Dodecatoms

$$\text{Quartz of fusion ... } G = \frac{\overset{12}{(\mathcal{S})}}{\frac{1}{2} \text{AQ}} \text{ or } \frac{\overset{12}{(\mathcal{S}\mathcal{S})}}{\text{AQ}} = 2.2 \text{ Exp. 2.2}$$

$$\text{Alumina .... } G = \frac{\overset{12}{(\mathcal{A})}}{\frac{1}{2} \text{AQ}} \text{ or } \frac{\overset{12}{(\mathcal{A}\mathcal{A})}}{\text{AQ}} = 3.82 \text{ Exp. 3.87}$$

## Differentiated Dodecatoms

$$\begin{array}{l} \text{Sapphire} \\ \text{Ruby} \end{array} \left\{ \dots \dots \dots \frac{(\overset{12}{\text{A}})\overset{12}{\text{A}}(\overset{12}{\text{A}})}{\text{AQ}} = 4.01 \text{ Exp. } 4.08$$

$$\text{Rock-Crystal} \dots \dots \frac{\overset{12}{\text{S}}(\overset{12}{\text{S}})\overset{12}{\text{S}}}{\frac{1}{2}\text{AQ}} \text{ or } \frac{\overset{12}{\text{S}}\overset{12}{\text{S}}(\overset{12}{\text{S}}\overset{12}{\text{S}})\overset{12}{\text{S}}\overset{12}{\text{S}}}{\text{AQ}} = 2.59 \text{ Exp. } 2.5 \dots 2.8.$$

$$\begin{array}{l} \text{Silicate of} \\ \text{Alumina} \end{array} \left\{ \text{Kyanite} \dots \dots \frac{\overset{12}{\text{S}}\overset{12}{\text{A}}(\overset{12}{\text{S}}\overset{12}{\text{A}})\overset{12}{\text{S}}\overset{12}{\text{A}}}{\text{AQ}} = 3.34 \text{ Exp. } 3.5 \dots 3.6.$$

$$\text{Fluor Spar G} \dots \dots \frac{\text{FCa}(\overset{12}{\text{FCaCaF}})\text{CaF}}{\text{AQ}} = 3.13 \text{ Exp. } 3.0 \dots 3.18.$$

And here it will be desirable in order to save many words hereafter to tabulate the more important molecules which our theory presents to us, X and O standing for any dissimilars

Homogeneous		Chemical Formulae
Type $\alpha$	$\overset{20}{\text{X}}$	}
- $\beta$	$\overset{12}{\text{X}}$	
- $\gamma$	$\overset{32}{\text{X}}$	
- $\delta$	$\overset{12}{\text{X}}(\overset{12}{\text{X}})\overset{12}{\text{X}}$	
- $\epsilon$	$\overset{12}{\text{X}}(\overset{12}{\text{X}}\overset{12}{\text{X}})\overset{12}{\text{X}}$	
- $\zeta$	$\overset{12}{\text{X}}(\overset{12}{\text{X}})\overset{12}{\text{X}}(\overset{12}{\text{X}})$	
- $\eta$	$(\overset{12}{\text{X}})^{\overset{12}{12}}$	
Heterogeneous		
Type $\vartheta$	OXO	XO <sub>2</sub>
- $\kappa$	$\overset{10}{\text{X}}(\overset{10}{\text{O}})\overset{10}{\text{X}}$	XO <sub>5</sub>
- $\lambda$	XOX( $\overset{10}{\text{O}}$ )XOX	XO <sub>3</sub>
- $\mu$	OXO( $\overset{10}{\text{O}}$ )OXO	XO <sub>7</sub>
- $\nu$	OXOXO( $\overset{10}{\text{O}}$ )OXOXO	XO <sub>4</sub>

126. And now in closing let us illustrate as far as possible our entire doctrine of molecules by some one substance. And for this purpose let us take a substance which seems to occupy the neutral region between the mineral or crystalline world and the living world, a substance which is of immense importance in the latter, namely sugar. Its formula in chemical works is C<sub>12</sub>H<sub>11</sub>O<sub>11</sub> or to get rid of the odd

number 11, it is  $C_{24}H_{22}O_{22}$  (in the notation of the classical epoch of Prout etc. when  $C=6$  and  $O=8$ ). And its specific gravity has been found 1.56 ... 1.6. Why the sp. gr. should be this rather than anything else, why CHO should not be insulable as a substance except as  $C_{12}$  etc. or  $C_{24}$  etc. are it must be admitted perfect mysteries by all the light which the most advanced chemistry can throw upon such subjects. Our theory however affirms that CHO, whatever the arrangement of the elements, in as much as they are all different from each other, must be heteropolar, and therefore cannot be insulable by itself. Moreover it shews happily also how there may be many sugars with the same percentages of carbon, hydrogen and oxygen, nay with the same molecular weight. Thus in successive stages or in differing conditions of existence, from these three elements even when as yet they are not in the molecular state we may have the three eminently differing structures,

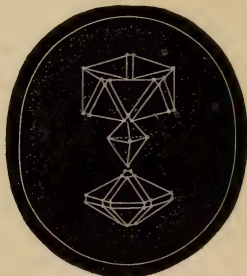
HOC



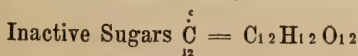
HCO



OHC



Our theory also affirms that if either C or O be centrad in a molecule composed of CHO that molecule must be a dodecatom. It leads us also to infer that since carbon is of a much more fixed and stable nature than either oxygen or hydrogen, C in the molecule after that molecule has undergone any ordeal will be centrad. And therefore the innermost wall of the triple walled dodecatom will be  $C_{12}$  — with regard to which it is in favour of its stability that  $C_{12}$  is cellular, as any one may find by making the model. With regard to the atom of HO which in the first instance belongs to each atom of C in  $C_{12}$ , it may enter into the molecule either as HO or as OH. And thus by being engaged in the one way on the poles and in the other way on the body of the molecule there may be various sorts of molecules all of them somewhat stable, all isometrical and therefore compared with others (which are differentiated as to form as well as structure) all indisposed for action.

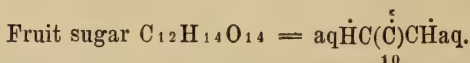
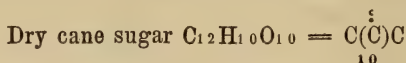


The spiritus asper ' the H of the greek alphabet may perhaps stand for hydrogen, and the point in relation with it for oxygen; thus the the printer will be enabled by means of an inverted semicolon to re-



present HO and so to shorten formulae which is a great relief to the eye.

But this dodecatom must obviously be very subject to differentiation as to form as well as structure. In one case HO on the poles may lapse into aq and go off. In another case (in which the H of HO is terminal of the poles) an atom of aq may be added on each, giving

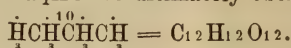


The differentiation under a greater ordeal however such as heat or union with tearing oxides etc. may obviously be carried much farther.



OHaqHO

All the moisture may be symmetrically distributed on the poles (leaving  $C_{12}$  dry) and equally divided between them that, is, 6aq on each pole. Nay  $C_{12}$  may be partitioned into  $\overset{10}{CCC}$  as represented. And thus adopting  $\overset{10}{\underset{3}{H}}$  as the symbol of the beautiful structure OHaqHO we ultimately obtain



Now such molecules being very prolate will aggregate into composite dodecatoms or dodecatoms of the second order, each placing itself in a radial manner around the common centre and thus restoring the spherical in form. The peripheral element of this compound dodecatom will thus be  $\overset{10}{\underset{3}{H}}$ . Under the ordeal of encreasing heat therefore it may go off as vapour leaving the surface carbonaceous and giving

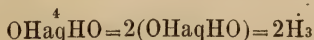


Or under the ordeal of oxide of lead, OPbPbO may substitute OHaqHO giving 2PbO.  $C_{12}H_9O_9$ .

Nay from each dodecatom a second  $\overset{10}{\underset{3}{H}}$  may possibly go off. But then it can no longer be expected that the type shall be preserved; for the ratio then becomes two atoms of Carbon to one of moisture, which is that of quite another class of agents viz. the acetic, tannic, ulmic, humic etc. etc. principles.

But it may now be alleged that I am surely avoiding the encounter with common sugar of which I have already given  $C_{12}H_{10}O_{10}$  as the formula proper to the dry element while chemistry gives  $C_{12}H_{11}O_{11}$  or its double. To explain this difference and at the same time to obtain the specific gravity of sugar it is only necessary to call

to mind that the single dodecatoms must as usual tend to form into second or composite dodecatoms and that each of these must tend to be differentiated on the poles by the beautiful aqueous structure



in the ultimate state of differentiation as we have already seen. Adopting the symbol Su for  $\text{C}_{12}\text{H}_{10}\text{O}_{10}$  then, we obtain of the type  $\text{XOX}^{10}\text{XOX}$  that is the fully differentiated dodecatom

$$\text{Sugar} \dots \text{G} = \frac{\dot{\text{H}}_3\text{Su}\dot{\text{H}}_3(\text{Su})\dot{\text{H}}_3\text{Su}\dot{\text{H}}_3}{4\text{AQ}} = \frac{12(\text{C}_{12}\text{H}_{11}\text{O}_{11})}{4 \times 324} = 1.58 \text{Exp. } 1.56 \dots 1.6$$

Thus we obtain theoretically both the seemingly strange chemical composition of common sugar and its specific gravity as ascertained by the balance. It is not to be inferred however that this is the only structure of the saccharine molecule. When H is centrad the icosatom must result. And there is place according to our theory for all the variety of sugars which nature and the arts exhibit.

And here let us bring these general constructions to a close in order the sooner to come in contact with individual elements in their natural relationships.

#### TERMINOLOGY.

**127.** Chemistry supplies for the particles of bodies only the two terms atom and molecule, while if we are to avoid ambiguity on the one hand or tedious description on the other, our theory obviously requires at least three more. What then is to be done? Shall we multiply strange names or crowd the term molecule with epithets? Rather let us take that term to pieces. It consists of four syllables; let us erect each of these syllables into a separate word, and then along with itself as a whole, the term molecule will supply us with the five terms which we require. Thus we shall obtain

1. Ule or atom (*űlŋ!*) an undecomposable element, as C, H, or O in sugar.
2. Cule (*culot!*) a first combination of atoms, such as CHO.
3. Moleule a group of ules or cules, more or less spherical but not yet the unit volume, as (CHO)<sup>12</sup>.
4. Molecule. The aggregate which is in relation with AQ the unit volume of liquids and solids, as



Integrand } The unit which determines the crystalline form.  
molecule. } Not investigated in this work.

5. Mole or Mass. The visible, palpable object, the number of particles in the "minimum visible" being inconceivably great.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE NONMETALLIC AND THE METALLIC AND THEIR MUTUAL RELATIONS.

128. Tetrads in constructing molecules may unite and cohere in either of two ways, either with their bases or with their summits peripherad. And according as they cohere in that way or in this, the forms resulting must possess very dissimilar surfaces, as for instance, in  $\nabla^{20}$  and  $\triangle^{20}$  (see Fig.)



Now these surfaces must exist under very dissimilar relations to the medium of light in which all molecules and masses are for ever bathed. They must consequently present very different appearances to the eye and they must function very differently.

As to their appearance those molecules such as  $\triangle^{20}$  or  $\text{H}^{20}$  or  $\text{H}^{20}$  (which are isomorphous and which the same diagram may therefore represent) which are constructed of tetrads with summits peripherad, have their surfaces studded or rather hung high with easily illuminated points, with matter in a state of ultimate analysis, with single units each fully invested with its proper atmosphere of aether or the matter of light. Such molecules therefore may be said to be in a peculiar manner wrapt in aether, mantled in light. Those molecules on the other hand such as  $\nabla^{20}$  in which the bases of the tetrads are peripherad have their surfaces formed not by single material elements each fully invested by its complement of aether, but of material elements in groups. There may be as much aether in the interior of such molecules as on their surfaces. The reception therefore which these two classes of molecules will give to the aetherial medium when incident upon them as light may be expected to be very different. In a word, since mutual repulsion between any two atoms or molecules that meet is always strong in proportion as these two are similar to each other, such repulsion will be much greater between the medium of light and such



molecules as  $\triangle^{20}$  than between the same medium and such molecules as  $\nabla^{20}$ . The latter indeed and molecules with that kind of surface may be said to be all windows fronting the incident rays and inviting these rays to enter and pass through to the aether on the under side, and so to continue the ray. But if so then molecules of the kind of  $\triangle^{20}$  will tend to have a lustre of the highest kind and to be opaque while those of the same kind as  $\nabla^{20}$  will have a lower lustre and tend to be transparent.

129. We may therefore hold in the mean time that *atoms and molecules whose polar regions or whole surfaces consist of tetrads with their summits peripherad will display metallic lustre*, while those whose surfaces consist of tetrads with their bases peripherad will be metalloidal merely or nonmetallic. It may indeed be said that this is but a dubious demonstration. But it is cogent enough to call upon us to entertain it as a hypothesis and to look out for verifications.

130. And here a verification of no mean value presents itself at once. Thus it is a familiar fact that those masses which consist of metallic molecules are generally more or less tenaceous or ductile, while those which have no metallic lustre or are translucent, however intimately stable or hard they may be, are usually brittle. Now on inspecting  $\triangle^{20}$  or any of our molecules which are answerable to our conception of the metallic, it will be perceived that all their surfaces or at least their poles — those regions by which union takes place — are formed by systems of pyramidal teeth five in number, and of such dimensions that the teeth in one molecule are precisely adapted to lock into the intervals between the teeth in another molecule. This then they may be expected to do when they come into close contact. And if they do so there will result a mass which must be more or less laminable, malleable or ductile. Thus while inductive science supplies only an empirical connexion between the high lustre and the tenacity of metals, our method shews that both these remarkable properties are functions of one and the same structure and are due to the same mechanism regarded in different points of view. We may therefore say that —

131. *Those atoms and molecules which possess metallic lustre may also be expected to form masses which shall be tenaceous, malleable or ductile.* We shall soon see indeed that molecules may possess a metallic lustre more or less, while yet the mass which they constitute may be



Silicium.

brittle. But these are exceptional cases due to defective metallicity of the atoms or molecules or rather its entire absence on one or both poles. And such molecules might with greater propriety be named semi-metals than metals. Of these Fig. § which is our Silicium is an example.

**132.** From what has just been advanced as to the difference between the metallic and the non-metallic it will be inferred that our theory does not regard these two classes of molecules as separated from each other, either by an impassible line of demarkation or by an eternal barrier. On the contrary it implies that the very same matter may in successive epochs be now non-metallic and now metallic. In a word, according to our theory —

**133.** *The non-metallic when the molecule has matter in its interior must tend secularly to effloresce into the metallic.* A pure sphere is a spherical shell or cell merely and not a solid or a spherical surface including contents. Wherever therefore there is a solid molecule or molecule with contents though it may be as spherical as possible outwardly, the law of sphericity must continue to operate till it has emptied it of its contents. This phenomenon may also be referred to the unremitting action of the specific heat of the enclosed particles in virtue of which in so far as they are homogeneous they must continually repel each other and by so doing tend to part company and gain the surface of the molecule or go beyond it. Our law of sphericity is merely the expression of the general result which heat operating in elements that are elastic and identical ever tends to produce. But to deduce the transformations of molecular forms by the continued operation of their specific heat in detail would require volumes even if it were possible in the present infancy of our science. I therefore content myself in these pages with referring the phenomena to their law, without attempting to explain them mechanically.

Our molecule  $\nabla^{20}$ , an icosatom of tetrads with their basis peripherad, though spherical externally has contents, viz the 20 summits of the 20 tetrads of which it consists, that is, it has 20 units of matter in a group in its center. These then must secularly repel each other. And in doing so under the action of their specific heat, more generally the law of symmetry and sphericity, they may act either in various groups or as individuals and so must produce a variety of results.

1) They may distribute themselves and act as two groups of 5 units each which tend to leave the center along some one axis in opposite directions and one group of 10 units which remains at rest giving  $5 + 10 + 5 = 20$ . In this case we obtain the equation

Icosatom of tetrads  $\nabla^{20} = \text{BOB}$  } Suboxide of Boron (undecomposable)  
 passed as Silicon in the laboratory.

2) They may distribute themselves in four groups of 5 units each which separate from each other by equal distances, that is, in a tetradic manner giving  $5 + 5 + 5 + 5 = 20$ . In this case we obtain the equation

Icosatom of tetrads  $\nabla^{20} = \text{BBBB}$  } Four atoms of Boron (monatomic).  
 The basis of Phosphorus as we shall afterwards find.

3) They may distribute themselves in two groups of 10 each which pursue opposite courses along the same axis giving  $10 + 10 = 20$ . In this case we obtain the equation

Icosatom of tetrads  $\triangle^{20} = \text{C} \curvearrowright$  } Crude or unreduced Azote or two atoms  
 of crude or unreduced Lithium. See hereafter.

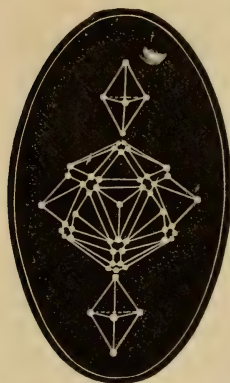
4) Or they may part in a radiant manner one by one, their action equally distributed towards the entire surface of the molecule. Now in this last case, though in this case alone, the molecule  $\nabla^{20}$  will maintain its unity. And the result will be that the equable radiation of the units from the center will be brought to a stand when each of the 20 has penetrated the surface by the center of the area of the 20 triangles which constitute that surface and has gained a position on the outside of the molecule in which it constitutes equilateral triangles with all the units around it, that is, when each of the 20 tetrads of which  $\nabla^{20}$  consists has been as it were inverted and  $\nabla^{20}$  is transformed into  $\triangle^{20}$  that is, according to our theory when the nonmetallic  $\nabla^{20}$  has effloresced into the metallic  $\triangle^{20}$ . (See Figs. p. 76.)

**134.** And here it may be legitimately asked: does this icosatom of tetrads represent anything that is known in Nature or the Arts? And to this it may be as legitimately answered that under our theory we are not to expect to find it anywhere. Its form is as spherical and its structure as homogeneous as it is possible for any combination of tetrads to be. It must therefore be in the highest degree unstable. If it be not somehow differentiated it will be dissolved, break up, or be partitioned; and not  $\triangle^{20}$  but some lesser molecules will be found in nature in its stead. We need not look therefore for any element which  $\triangle^{20}$  shall represent either in nature or the laboratory.

**135.** But under the law of unification  $\triangle^{20}$  will tend to preserve its unity, and if it can differentiate itself it may be expected to do so. Now a mode of differentiation immediately presents itself. Previously to the breaking up of the icosatom it is only to be expected that some 5 symmetrically related units somewhere on its surface (urged by the



vicinity of an atom of oxygen or the like) will gather themselves up and become individualized as an atom of hydrogen. But if this take place on any one region of the icosatom it will also under the law of symmetry tend to take place simultaneously in the opposite region. Thus one of the six isometrical axes of  $\Delta^{20}$  will have become marked by lens-shaped instead of five-partite, by bud-shaped instead of flower-shaped poles, each on its genesis carrying an atom of hydrogen. It



Hydride of Silicon  
(Nascent).

has in fact been differentiated by being demetalized on two opposite poles. And such a molecule so far as appears ought according to our theory to be very permanent in nature; for it is also cellular and it is as spherical as any molecule can be which is at once metallic and non-metallic in different regions. Here then it may be legitimately asked whether we find either in Nature or the laboratory any element which this molecule may represent? To answer this it may be remarked that, unlike  $\Delta^{20}$  or  $H^{20}$  the atoms of which, if they exist, must tend to lock together and form a tenaceous mass, our element when demetallized must tend to be refractory and to form a mass

which however hard must be brittle; for it is by the poles that atoms unite and cohere; and in our semimetallic element, as we may call it, the poles have no five-partite regions which may lock together. Further, the atomic weight is now  $20 \times 4 - 2 \times 5 = 70$ , that is 14, when  $H=1$ . So far therefore this element represents Silicon. And this as is well known is among the most abundant substances in the crust of the Earth. But what we have here specially to notice is that —

136. *The metallic surface if it be not covered and kept up by some fitting element (such as oxygen) must tend to give off its*



*metallicity as hydrogen.* In the instance just adduced the demetallisation is only partial. But it is sometimes entire. Thus had our metallic icosatom  $\Delta^{20}$  not been differentiated, had it undergone partitionment, then as the simplest case of such partitionment that is, dedoublement, we should have had

$$\Delta^{20} = 2X$$

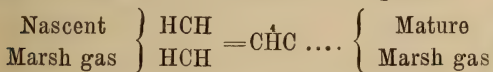
in which X is another metallic element consisting of 10 tetrads. It is also of another type, which in reference to the form developed by a system of tangent planes may be called prismatic. Its atomic weight

is  $10 \times 4 = 40$ , that is, 8 when  $H=1$ . But what we have here to remark of it is that like  $\triangle^{20}$  this new element also under the law of sphericity must tend to discharge, or to throw up into the line of the axis, the 5 units on each of its polar aspects, so as to construct them into atoms of hydrogen. It will thus be wholly demetallized and we obtain the equation

The Metal  $X = HCH$  Hydro-carbon

in which the newly developed element C is isomorphous with B (Fig. p. 49) its poles similar to those of § p. 77. It has for its atomic weight  $8 - 2 = 6$  when  $H=1$ . So far therefore it represents carbon; for the argument by which the atomic weight of carbon has of late often been represented by 12 instead of 6 would also conclude all men to be Cyclopes because vision is single. The law of symmetry requires that light elements such as carbon and oxygen, which usually take their places on the axes of molecules, must come and go and be substituted in couples.

Thus is carbon according to our theory given to nature in union with hydrogen as a hydrocarbon. It does not follow however that we are to expect to meet with HCH either in nature or the laboratory. Under the law of sphericity its axis of HCH is much too long, while by coupling, the primal tetratom of hydrogen may be reintegrated and a molecule exquisitely spherical and cellular and finely differentiated may be constructed. In nature therefore we shall have the equation



Here then by the giving off of hydrogen a metal has been completely demetallized and returned to the class of metalloids. Not that we are to infer its molecular life to be now over for ever.

Since C consists of 10 equilateral triangles each complete in itself and all symmetrically supporting each other, C may be regarded as a peculiarly stable or fixed element. But in the matter of its equator it has the means if the temperature were sufficiently high of secularly developing into the metallic again so as to give the equation  $C = X$ , where X is isomorphous with C but lighter by 2H. Then this light metal in its turn may be demetallized into HBH. And thus we may have the equations

HCH

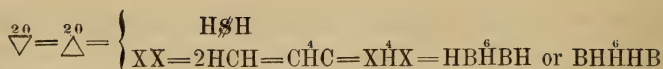


Nascent Marsh Gas

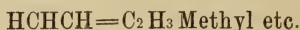
CHC



Marsh gas



Thus according to our theory the normal secular development of the normal molecule of tetrads which consists of 20, that is, an atom of crude or unreduced Silicon or indecomposable suboxide of Boron gives the whole system of chemistry from the most inert of all elements up to the highest structures of the ammonia type, the tetramethyls etc. containing now 4 now 8 atoms of methyl etc. which methyl etc. may be regarded as hydrogen steadied by Carbon, both poles and equators being still hydrogen. Thus



**137.** *As the single material element may be regarded as the common vapour of all molecules considered as material merely, so may hydrogen be regarded as the common vapour of all molecules considered as metallic.* Our theory gives hydrogen as the very essence, may we not say the quintessence of the metallic, and its characteristic function is to be given off. Metallic elements according to our theory are such as have surfaces consisting of matter distributed in single units, each the centre of its own aetherial atmosphere, in consequence of which the entire molecule is in an eminent manner clothed in aether or the medium of light and of lustre. Now hydrogen fulfils this condition completely. And in fulfilling it as to its surface, it fulfils it as to its interior also, for it has no interior save the inner aspect of its surface. It is as the law of sphericity requires respecting an ultimate element, a cell.

But while hydrogen is thus the very essence of the metallic, its metallicity may be said to be locked up in it; and hydrogen may be described both as the common vapour of the metallic and the carrier of metallicity. It demetallizes the surface which it leaves, and it metallizes that on which it fixes and becomes expanded. Thus just as the metal X tends (p. 80) to be demetallized into HCH, so in other circumstances the non-metallic C having received an atom of H on each pole tends by the falling down of these atoms of H into 5 units placed like a coronet on each polar region of C to be metallized into X again.

Hydrogen, our first insulable element of the trigonal order of forms, is thus eminently mobile and transformable.

Our first element of the pentagonal order of forms again (which in the meantime we designate by the symbol B isomorphous with C) presents itself, as does also C, as the very essence of the fixed and unchangeable the residuary or dead.



*Tenacious metals.*



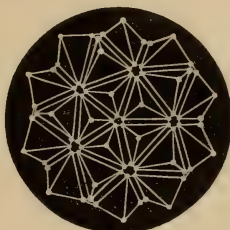
**I. Heteropolar**

Iron, Nickel, Cobalt,  
Lithium, Beryllium etc.



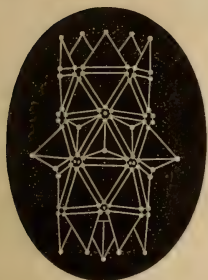
**II. Prismatic**

Sodium, Potassium, Rubidium, Caesium, Magnesium,  $\alpha$ Calcium, Strontium, Baryum, Aluminium, Tungsten, Molybdenum,  $\alpha$ Mercury etc.



**III. Spherical**

$\beta$ Calcium,  $\beta$ Mercury, Zinc etc. but mostly differentiated into the next type.



**IV. Sphero-prismatic**

Cadmium, Tin, Lead, Thallium, Silver, Gold, etc.

*Brittle metals or Semi-metals.*



**V. Sphero-pyramidal**

Silicium, Titanium, Manganese, Arsenic, Antimony, Bismuth etc.

## CHAPTER V.

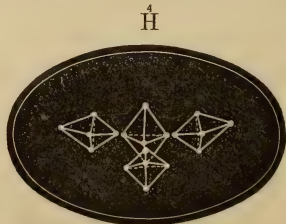
## OF LIGHT, COMMON, BARIC AND BARYTIC ELEMENTS.

138. Our theory though it claim to embrace all nature consists only in the varied repetition of a few ideas. The tetrad — our cosmical brick — in as much as it is a four-fold unit evolves during its synthesis into molecular structures four classes of substances two of which contain within the same forms quadruple the quantity of matter which is contained by the other two, giving to nature isomorphic elements in sets of four or rather of two couples, their atomic weights as 1:4. The basis of one couple is hydrogen and that of the other couple is hylogen. And they differ from hylogen and hydrogen in this that each angle in them is represented by four or a tetradic group of material units instead of a single unit only. Their genesis may be regarded either as primal, or as resulting from the compression or unification of tetratoms of hydrogen and hylogen, so constructed that the axes of the four hydrogens or hylogens which constituted these tetratoms were in such relative positions as to be liable to be reduced to a common axis by interpenetration. We thus obtain as the smallest symmetrical or mobile elements of these four orders of substances

	Symbols.	Atomic weights.	
Hydrogen	H =	5. Light	Substances.
Hylogen	⋮ =	8. Common	
Baric hydrogen	⋈ =	20. Baric	
Baric hylogen	⋮̄ =	32. Barytic	

139. *Baric and Barytic elements tend to develope into such as are light or common.* And from this development it appears that very beautiful transformations must result.

Thus when an atom of **H** unfolds into 4H and when 3 of the atoms of H have placed with their axes at right angles to the fourth as in  $\overset{4}{\text{H}}$



Tetratom of Hydrogen.

relapse into **H** will be prevented. And the permanency in nature of this tetratom will be secured, if it be duly differentiated and spherified

as for instance by the fixation of an atom of Carbon on each pole. We shall thus obtain  $\text{CHC}=\text{C}_2\text{H}_4$  which as has been already hinted and as we shall afterwards find represents the very important hydrocarbon named Marsh Gas. The tetratom of  $\text{H}$  cannot secularly exist free in the form in which it is represented in the diagram.

**140.** *The trigonal order of forms may be transformed into the pentagonal from the very first.* Supposing the tetratom  $\text{H}$  to exist as in the diagram it is destined according to our theory to undergo a most interesting secular transformation. For however cold and indisposed to part company the four atoms of  $\text{H}$  in the tetratom may be, still if that tetratom exist alone or free they must arrange themselves in a tetradic position. The four external poles of the four atoms of  $\text{H}$  must come to four points which are equidistant on the surface of the circumscribing sphere. This the law of sphericity calls for. But when 4 atoms of hydrogen are in this position they have a tetrad as their nucleus and are in reality one and the same thing as 5 tetrads in positions which may be regarded as those of an aerial symmetry. Since then the genesis of the tetrad is anterior to that of hydrogen, it is to be expected under the law of redintegration, that when the conditions of existence favour condensation these 5 tetrads will come together symmetrically so that an edge of each may be a common axis for all. Now, this done, a primal combination of trigonal forms, is transformed into the first form of the pentagonal order, and we obtain the secular equation

Baric hydrogen  $\text{H}=4\text{H}=5\triangle=\text{B} \dots$  Boron (monatomic).

Thus by means of an atom of Baric hydrogen as our primary datum, which is supposed secularly to expand into a tetratom of common hydrogen, or by the latter, or by 5 tetrads, these last being supposed to be unified symmetrically under cosmical law, we are enabled to connect together by a method of morphological transformation our trigonal and our pentagonal orders of form.

**141.** Now we shall find as we proceed that just as light and common metallic elements in being demetallized give off hydrogen so do Baric and Barytic elements give off Boron. Not that the excretion is met with as Boron: for as the  $\text{H}$  when given off is usually caught by  $\text{O}$  and  $\text{aq}$  results, so is the  $\text{B}$  caught by  $\text{O}$ , and there results as the oxide of saturation the sesquioxide, of which the middle part  $\text{BOB}$  being





undecomposable in the laboratory we obtain the chemical equation  
 Sesquioxide of Boron ..  $O, BOB, O = OSiO = SiO_2$  ... Silica

**142.** And here let us remark though we cannot here give its genesis that as B has 2 units on each of the 5 angles of the equator so is there another isomorph which has only one unit in each of these angles, and which consequently bears to B the same relation that hydrogen does to hydrogen.

But now the chemical reader will naturally ask if we really mean the element we are now developing to represent Boron. And our answer is that we do. And that in order to this nothing more is necessary than to remove the Boron of chemistry from its wholly exceptional position of a triatomic metalloid and to regard it as monatomic.

## CHAPTER VI.

### GEOLOGY AND MINERALOGY.

**143.** Here the question presents itself as to what orders of substances, light, common, Baric, or Barytic our theory leads us to expect to prevail in our Planet? Now to this the only possible answer appears to be, that we are to expect all of them more or less, the lightest uppermost and the Baric and Barytic beneath, the density of the molecules in any region being always proportional *cet. par.* to the superincumbent pressure.

And what as to the interior of our planet? Its small specific gravity as a whole, compared with that which experiments on the compression produced by pressures would lead us to expect, can best be explained by supposing that its interior consists only of matter in the state of very hot dense vapours. Nor are we disposed to reject such an inference; for this is precisely the state of things which the law of sphericity, seeing that that law is also a law of ultimate cellularity, would lead us to expect. Hence the following inferences as probable.

1) That on the inner vault of the Earth's crust there will be a varied sublimate of Baric and Barytic elements; and these will reach the surface here and there, and from age to age, where there are fissures or such rocks as may serve for filtering-beds, to permit their ascent.

2) That the crust of the Earth, at least in its accessible parts where the superincumbent pressure is inconsiderable, will consist of

elements, developed or effloresced out of Baric and Barytic elements, that is, of those which we have called elements of common density.

3) That in the canopy over our heads there will tend to exist substances of the lightest order, that is, hydrogen and its products. And what are these products?

If the cold of the upper regions be such that hydrogen can exist there in hexatoms which is the typical aerial molecule of hydrogen, then, since in these regions we may suppose that there are abundance of free units of matter each in the centre of its aetherial atmosphere, the 5 atoms of H in  $H_6$  which surround the central atom will tend each to take into union with itself 3 units in the 3 angles of its equator; for thereby the sphericity of each of these atoms of H and of the hexatom as a whole will be increased. Thus in the upper regions  $H_6$  will be transformed into  $HH_5$ . But the latter on the occurrence of any concussion tends to symmetrize itself into aq, that is, into common vapour. In the canopy over our heads then our theory leads us to expect the genesis of cloud, (along with meteoric substances no doubt), and the return to the earth's surface in the primal and fresh form of rain of the waste matter exhaled from the planet as hydrogen or matter still more attenuated. Thus does our theory completely satisfy the demand of Newton in his article on Comets in the Principia when he contemplates the economy of nature and urges the necessity from some source or other of continually fresh supplies of moisture.

**144.** *Light and common elements by accretion interpenetration or pressure tend to give rise to Baric and Barytic elements.* This moisture according to our theory since its form is hexagonal and therefore also trigonal must like hydrogen itself tend to aggregate in the first instance into tetratoms also. And such is the form of the atom of aq that these four =  $\overset{\cdot}{a}q$  when in union must be in parallel positions, three around one in the axis. And this we may perhaps call an atom of Azure. Here then is precisely the material for giving by interpenetration, when the four axes of the four atoms of aq are reduced to one, Baric hydrogen and hydrogen associated as in aq. Moreover aq is the most fertile of all forms in producing others. And thus from hydrogen merely, when the quantity is such as to generate

 $H_6$ 

An aerial molecule of hydrogen.

aq



Common vapour.

adequate pressure and through common vapour in the first instance, there may result a composite world whose interior shall consist of Baric and Barytic elements. And such will be the ever recurring cycle, that is, from light and common to Baric and Barytic and from the latter to the former again. But for such a speculation as an unquestionable deduction, our theory is not yet sufficiently matured.

**145.** These views imply that a system of molecular morphology in order to be truly scientific, or at least analogous to biology when it commences with embryology, ought to begin with Baric and Barytic substances; for these are in our theory as it were mineral embryos, though for their full development (Blessed creatures!) they require no food, but heat only. But the present is not a moment for such an attempt. It would throw our theory infinitely farther than it is at present (which is far enough) from the sphere of the authorized chemistry of the day, and would require us to begin with certain substances which, as they exist only in the bowels of the earth cannot be got into the laboratory and would therefore be little better than symbols containing under them so much, that like the symbols of the calculus, the number of students who would venture to encounter them would be very small. But when the conflict with ignorance is over, and established misconception requires no larger to be respected, it will be lawful to begin at the beginning. And then chemistry as a science will become very simple, and geology will be entitled to the name.

**146.** Thus suppose we were to set out with Baric and Barytic combinations, a normal Telluride, or a Sesquiselenide, of tungsten, for instance, and to developpe them into elements of common weight, observing the laws of morphology while doing so, we should obtain as the result of the development, Molybenite, Magnesia, Manganese, Iron and Lead along with Tungstic and Molybdic ochres. In the same way from a still simpler formula (for which however there are no symbols) by the same process we should obtain, from a certain barytic mineral a definite oxide of Uranium and along with it Lead, Arsenic, Iron, Manganese, Lime, Magnesia, Silica, Water, in a word, the very "impurities" found along with Uranium oxide in Pitchblende. But such developments belong to an advanced state of our science, of which the alphabet alas! is more than most people will consent to learn at present.

But here lest circumstances should interrupt the further publication of my researches, I give in p. 90 the elements so far as I have satisfied myself about them, and so far as they admit of being classified into isomorphous groups, according as they are Light, Common, Baric or Barytic. Not that each set of four is strictly isomorphous. Its members are only



generally and superficially isomorphous. Still less is the functioning of the isomorphs to be expected to be in every case wholly analogous. The functioning of a chemical element or of any educt of the laboratory depends not altogether on its form and structure, but also on the mode of its genesis in nature and the state of union in which nature presents it to the chemist. All elements tend to redintegrate their primal states of union. Thus Silicon and the dodecatom of Carbon (the elements of Quartz and Diamond) though when morphologically considered they are the very types of repose or inactivity, yet when heated to a certain degree become accessible to the attacks of oxygen, or indeed of anything that can represent oxygen, because all Silicon was previously Silica, all Carbon was previously Carbonic acid.

Moreover it is not to be expected that the atomic weights of our four isomorphs shall always be precisely in the ratio of 5 : 8 : 20 : 32 which are the ratios of  $\text{H} : \text{H}_2 : \text{H} : \text{H}_2$ . Our theory of the structure of chemical atoms or undecomposable molecules implies that, during their construction and maturation under the law of symmetry, they may sometimes lose 2 or 5 or even  $2 \times 5$  units of weight, and thus be  $\frac{2}{5}$  or 1 or 2 on the hydrogen scale lighter than the theoretical number. It is therefore rather in favour of our theory than against it that atomic weights as experimentally ascertained are in point of fact often somewhat lighter than ours. Thus as to our column III, when we come to the construction and maturation of fluorine it will appear that in order to improve its morphological condition and produce the combination HF analogous to HO it must tend to emit from its own substance an atom of H. Its own atomic weight will therefore be reduced from 20 to 19 which experiment gives. And so of others though not to a great extent.

In the following table precisely one half of the elements as at present tabulated in chemical works have been introduced. But with a few exceptions the other half consists of substances which are very rare and of little interest in the economy of Nature. The exceptions referred to are indeed very important since they include Azote, Silicon and Iron, Mercury and Platinum. But the first three come out in our theory as undecomposable doubles (Az and Si) and quadruple (Fe) of one and the same element which according to its mode of genesis and its unfitness or fitness (when doubled) for the aeriform state may be called Lithium or Zote =  $\frac{1}{2}\text{Az}$ . Mercury comes out a dimorphous element now isomorphous with potassium now with Zinc, and in the latter case,  $\text{Hg} = (\text{HH})^{20}$ . As to Platinum and its associated metals they occur in an outfield, the relations of which to molecular nature in

general have as yet been so imperfectly explored that their molecular structure can only be conjectured.

### ELEMENTS IN ISOMORPHOUS GROUPS.

	I.	II.	III.	IV.	V.
<i>Light</i>	Hydrogen	Boron	Phosphogen	.....	$\alpha$ Calcium
<i>Common</i>	Hylogen	Carbon	Oxygen	Sulphur	Zinc
<i>Baric</i>	Barihydrogen	Bariboron	Fluorine	Selen	Selium
<i>Barytic</i>	Tetrahydrogen	Tetracarbon	Tetroxygen	Tellur	Tellium

	VI.	VII.	VIII.	IX.	X.
<i>Light</i>	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
<i>Common</i>	{ Magnesium Aluminium	Sodium	$\beta$ Calcium	Potassium	Chlorine
<i>Baric</i>	Yttrium?	Tin?	Strontium	Rubidium	Bromine
<i>Barytic</i>	Molybdenum	Tungsten	Baryum	Caesium	Iodine

	XI.	XII.
<i>Light</i>	.....	Phosphorus
<i>Common</i>	{ Cadmium Tin?	Mellic anhydride (decomposable)
<i>Baric</i>	{ Silver Lead	Arsenic Antimony
<i>Barytic</i>	Gold	Bismuth

Groups I and II are genetic of all the others. Groups III and IV are composed of group I in sets of 5. Group V is group I in icosatoms.

Groups VI and VII result from the doubling or dedoubling each of the corresponding members adjacent on the left or right.

Groups VIII and IX result in like manner by the doubling and dedoubling of adjacent members.

Group X is group IX demetallized, the alkaline metals having given off their metallicity as hydrogen or boron.

Group XI is constructed by group V for body, with group VI locked on as poles. It contains sphero-prismatic metals.

Group XII is constructed of groups II and III piled into a prismatic form, with boron or lens-shaped poles.

### SCHOLIUM.

The molecular theory which has been sketched in the preceding pages stands in direct opposition to that which is being built up in chemistry at the present moment with no small labour and ingenuity

on the part of the chemist. The adept therefore will have no toleration for what is presented to him here. To the Author himself indeed it seems to lay claim to too deep insight into nature and in a word to be too good news to be true. But he cannot refrain from accepting it, nor from believing that sooner or later it will force itself upon the minds of others as it has forced itself upon his own. The pleasing and instructive trains of thought in connexion with Nature and her economy which it suggests, and the incidental verifications which present themselves on all hands day after day compel the belief that in some important features, if not in all, the theory here advanced represents the inner structure and working of material nature.

But if so, then there is no occasion for the despair on this subject which even the admirable Gerhardt felt, which led him and after him most other chemists, instead of attempting to discover the positions of the constituent elements in a molecule, to write down in all formulae their literal symbols in the order of the alphabet merely, thus proposing that in this department science should be kept in its Primer.

This break down and detention of molecular morphology on the very threshold has mainly arisen from the neglect on the part of chemists of the law of symmetry. To the mineralogist, the botanist, the zoologist symmetry is everything. It even points out to him the objects to which he is to address himself. But as if there were a complete break and departure from continuity and analogy in Nature as soon as she retires out of our eye sight, as if the forms and structures of the individualized products of Nature when they are large enough to be visible to our eyes were determined by quite another principle from what they are in the molecules of which these very objects consist, the chemist takes no account of symmetry! Nay it looks as if to avoid the considerations of symmetry, he were willing to forget that very principle which is the very foundation of his own science, the union and juxtaposition of dissimilars; for that principle cannot be attended to in the construction of molecules but symmetry soon shews itself. Thus the constant recurring chemical formula  $\text{CO}_2$  if written as the law of the union and juxtaposition of dissimilars demands immediately becomes  $\text{OCO}$ . And here symmetry at once appears. And as an immediate reward it may be observed that along with symmetry the principle properties of carbonic gas as compared with oxygen gas appear also. Thus in  $\text{OCO}$  we see that the atom of carbon is enclosed between two atoms of oxygen and as we may say secluded in oxygen. Although therefore the oxygen in this gas, since it has its stomach already filled with carbon, must behave very differently towards carbon from what it would do if its stomach were



empty, that is, if it were pure oxygen, yet in other respects we are invited to think that this carbonic dioxide will function more or less like oxygen. We are prepared to find that there will be, as there actually is, a series of carbonates holding much the same place in Nature as a series of oxides does, that both gases will be parasitic &c. &c.

But the neglect of the symmetry of molecules has been productive of more serious consequences than mere ignorance. Thus Light elements such as O or C or aq when they do not mail or encrust a molecule all over as they very often do, are seldom or never found in smaller numbers than two, one atom on each of the two poles of the molecule. Hence they move simultaneously and enter and depart in couples. Now in the neglect of this consideration which the law of symmetry imposes two atoms have been naturally construed as one; and hence in the table of atomic weights, the atomic weight of O is given at 16 instead of 8, that of C at 12 instead of 6, and that of aq at 18 instead of 9. Oxygen gas is confounded with oxygen.

But the formula of the aqueous element cannot but be very important in every system of theoretical chemistry, and as the volume of H in aq is double that of O, it has come to pass that almost everything in the most modern chemistry has been made to turn upon  $H_2O$ , the oxygen being regarded as one atom only. This formula has been regarded not as incidental or individual but as typical and generic, nay worthy of being doubled, tripled, &c. as a fountain of type upon type. Hence a maze of formulæ which have no response in Nature, and indeed no value beyond the walls of the laboratory in which the relative experiments are conducted, or the mind of the chemist who enjoys the privilege of being their creator, or of having mastered the difficulty of conceiving what they mean. and of putting the letters in their right places upon paper. Accordingly very small are the numbers who take an interest in scientific chemistry now compared with what they were half a century ago. It is to be hoped however, and even already it looks, as if it could not be long before experiments in ozonising\* oxygen must convince

\* In our theory even the most seemingly capricious phenomena of ozonisation fully and beautifully explain themselves. Take for instance the seemingly strange fact that when 100 vols of oxygen gas are subjected to the ordeal which ozonises them most completely they always contract into about 92 vols when the process seems to be completed and they cannot be made to contract farther. It forms an integral part of our molecular morphology (see p. 71) that when subjected to an ordeal an isometrical molecular structure whether aerial or concrete must tend to differentiate itself. And an element of the pentagonal order of forms such as oxygen differentiates its proper molecule most simply, when an atom places itself on each of two opposite regions of

every one that an unit volume of oxygen gas contains not one but two atoms of oxygen bound together as one, the two when united satisfying the activity which each has when separate. Whence to produce aqueous matter only  $\frac{1}{2}$  a volume of oxygen gas is required for a whole volume of hydrogen; and the  $\text{HO}=\text{aq}$  of the classical epoch of chemistry must be received as the true formula of Water-gas.

There are few facts in science more interesting than that equal volumes of non-condensing aeriforms at the surface of our planet undergo equal variations when the variations of pressure or of temperature to which they are subjected are equal, and that the constituents of the more elementary compounds when separated and brought into the aeriform state under the same temperature and pressure occupy volumes which are in some simple ratio to each other. But to infer from these facts, as is done in the most modern chemistry, (1) that the separate particles of which all such aeriforms consist are universally equal in number in equal volumes, and (2) that these separate particles are universally each a molecule consisting of 2 atoms neither more nor less, or something that represents two atoms, is an extreme generalisation which the phenomena of the laboratory only partially countenance and which is quite unlike Nature. It is as if one were to affirm that a pound weight in one scale could only be balanced by a pound weight in the other scale, whereas in point of fact it may be balanced just as well by 2 half-pound weights, or 4 quarter-pound weights, or 8 two ounces weights, or 16 ounce weights, or 32 half-ounce weights. The identity assumed in the reigning chemical theory of aeriforms is indeed under the law of assimilation the limit of their constitution. But limits at least at the surface of our planet are very seldom reached by Nature. And even if this limit were reached, it is contrary to all analogy and therefore to all likelihood, that in every case the unit volume should be determined by two atoms or their equivalents neither more nor less.

the dodecatomic aerial or concrete group which forms the molecule so as to develope poles upon it, when in a word  $\overset{12}{\text{O}}$  becomes  $\overset{12}{\text{O}}\text{O}\text{O}$  or  $\overset{3}{\text{O}}\overset{10}{\text{O}}\overset{3}{\text{O}}$  which is the same. Now if each molecular group in the ozonised oxygen gas is to maintain the same volume as in ordinary oxygen gas, this implies a loss of volume amounting to one out of every thirteen of oxygen gas, and therefore a contraction of 100 to 92.3 as found in experiment. According to this view moreover we see why the 100 volumes of the oxygen gas cannot be diminished beneath 92. The ozonised oxygen is not a mixture. It is an organically changed medium all through. We see also that when returning to the state of normal oxygen  $\frac{1}{13}$  part must be transiently set free in the quick or intensily parasitic state, that is, as single atoms of O.

In the most modern chemical works things are indeed shaped so that every page seems to give evidence that such is the fact. Substances having such and such formulae when raised into the aeriform state are shewn to have such specific gravities as indicate that each molecule occupies one volume (or two or four according to the unit volume adopted). The reader is not reminded, and the writer appears often to forget, that the formulae yielding these aeriforms were constructed and controlled by this very hypothesis. It would be strange indeed if they did not verify it.

Meanwhile physicists are proposing another theory of the constitution of aeriforms — a sort of emanation theory in bottles — a game at gas billiards — which reduces the whole to chaos.

Very different is the view which our theory has led us to with regard to the structure of an aeriform medium. It suggests the belief that when the medium is in a state of repose the constituent particles point to one another symmetrically in the aeriform state so as to give at aerial distances in expanded forms the very same structures as they give when condensed. According to our views it comes out that our atmosphere, for instance, far from being either a chemical or a merely mechanical mixture of gases is, or tends everywhere to be, an exquisitely symmetrized or organic medium, each molecule or aerial integral of which consists of the following elements.

*A normal Integrant of the atmosphere.*

36×	{	$12 \times 12 \times 12 \times 12 \times Az$	76.223	..	Azote
		$12 \times 12 \times 12 \times 3O$	22.680	..	{ Oxygen gas Ozone
		12O}			
		$12 \times 12 \times 3aq$	1.021	..	Common vapour
		$12 \times OCO$	0.069	..	Carbonic gas
		Am	0.005	..	Ammoniacal vapour.

Similarly our theory of the development and differentiation of molecules when applied to water gives the following as

*A normal Integrant of the Ocean.*

		Theory	Experiment	
36×	{	14. $AQ^{14}$	968.5	.. 968.5 . Water
		14. $(NaCl)^2$	25.2	.. 24.6 . Chloride of Sodium
		2. $(MgCl)^2$	2.9	.. 2.6 . Chloride of Magnesium
		$(MgSaqS)^2$	2.1	.. 2.1 . Sulphate of Magnesia
		$CaSaqSaq$	1.3	.. 1.1 . Selenite.



These constituents in both cases result from each other and are in a manner necessary to each other. They are generated in the same orderly and beautiful manner as tissue, in those individualized objects to which the dissecting knife can be applied under the eye.

The last constituent given in these tables is in the centre of fluid or loose open molecule. And when all is in repose, all the other constituents are distributed symmetrically around. It cannot be a single atom of Ammonia or of Selenite however that forms the nucleus of the atmospherical or oceanic integral. It must be the normal molecule of either substance. Now while it may be shewn that Anhydride has both poles pentagonal, and must have a dodecatomic molecule, which if differentiated as usual must give its specific gravity = 2.95, Selenite is a very different species of far greater maturity of structure. Anhydride according to our theory is a Sulphurate of lime, while Selenite is a Sulphate, deposited around or encrusting all over a particle of water. In each particle of selenite there are  $36 \cdot \text{CaO}, \text{SO}_3 \cdot 2\text{HO} = (\text{CaOSO}_3\text{HO})^{36}\text{AQ}$ . In our notation

$$\text{Selenite} \dots G = \frac{(\overset{i}{\text{CaSaq}})^{36}}{4\text{AQ}} = \frac{36(28+19+9)}{4 \times 324} = 2.39 \text{ Exp. } 2.3 \dots 2.4$$

Hence the initial multiple of 36 in the integral of the Ocean.

As to Ammonia which is given as the central element in the atmospherical integral, it is dimorphous. In those cases which require an atom of hydrogen to effect a stable union with it, it is aquaform. The atom of ammonia is isomorphous with aqaq, that is, 2aq on the same axis. Its molecule in that case is therefore  $\text{am}^{36}$  like  $\text{aq}^{36} = \text{AQ}$ . To verify this, the specific gravity of bicarbonate of Ammonia, or rather that of the characteristic combination may be adduced. Thus

$$\text{Sal Ammoniac} \dots G = \frac{(\text{ClHAm})^{36}}{4\text{AQ}} = \frac{36(36+5+17)}{4 \times 324} = 1.5 \text{ Exp. } 1.5.$$

But as aq is transformed into HO so may Am be transformed into  $\Xi\text{H}\epsilon$ , in which when it is decomposed the  $2\Xi$  couple as  $\epsilon\Xi$  (see Fig. Az in p. 61) giving as the educt of the decomposition  $3\text{H} + \text{Az}$ . Then this Az in which the two parts only touch each other when subjected to abyssal pressure locks up into Si (see Fig. p. 54). In these modes of combination the 5-fid or metallic aspect of  $\Xi$  or Zote as we may call it, is centrad, the nonmetallic peripherad. Consequently Azote and Silicon are nonmetallic.

But the metallic aspect of  $\Xi$  may also be peripherad. Thus we shall have metallic and nonmetallic substances from the same element. And here I may remark that of all our elements this  $\Xi$  is the most highly

genetic. In its nascent state it is  $\text{H}^5$ , its atomic weight  $5 \times 8 = 40$ , i. e. 8 when  $\text{H} = 1$ , and therefore the same as that of Sulph and Oxygen. But in order to secure internal symmetry it must emit an atom of H from the 5-fid pole. Its weight then becomes 7 when  $\text{H} = 1$ . Now an un-reduced  $\ominus$  in one pole and a reduced  $\ominus$  in the other pole of an atom of oxygen as the coupling joint being a dissymmetrical structure must be undecomposable. This gives in our theory Sodium; and by doubling the poles Potassium. But  $3\text{H}$  with 3 equatorial supports of any kind, and  $6\text{H}$  (see Fig. p. 87) without any supports may also form an equatorial body for  $\ominus$  and  $\ominus$  as poles — only in this case we are plainly to expect the resulting substance to be volatile and decomposable. Adopting as usual the differentiated dodecatom as the molecule we thus obtain the following scheme of the common alkalis.

$$\ominus \quad \text{Lithium} \dots\dots \text{G} = \frac{\text{Li}^{14}}{\frac{1}{2}\text{AQ}} = \frac{14 \times 7}{\frac{1}{2} \times 324} = .60 \text{ Exp. } .59$$

$$\ominus \ominus \ominus \quad \text{Sodium} \dots\dots \text{G} = \frac{\text{Na}^{14}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{14 \times 23}{324} = .99 \text{ Exp. } .97$$

$$\ominus \ominus \ominus \ominus \quad \text{Potassium} \dots \text{G} = \frac{\text{K}^{14}}{2\text{AQ}} = \frac{14 \times 39}{2 \times 324} = .84 \text{ Exp. } .86$$

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} \ominus \ominus \text{H} \ominus \ominus \\ \ominus \text{H} \ominus \end{array} \right\} \text{Ammonia} \quad \text{G} = \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \frac{\text{Am}^{14}}{2\text{AQ}} = \frac{14 \times (2 \times 17)}{2 \times 324} \\ \frac{\text{Am}^{14}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{14 \times 17}{324} \end{array} \right. = .73 \text{ Exp. } .7+$$

As to Rubidium and Caesium they are baric and barytic Potassiums respectively; while Thallium comes out an icosatom of Sulph, a Sulphurium (analogous to Selium, or metallized Selen or Selenium) with an atom of Sodium locked on each pole ( $\text{Tl} = \text{NaSNa}^{20}$ ). Its molecule appears to be that which is most prevalent in the mineral kingdom viz. a compound dodecatom occupying 8 aqueous volumes. Thus

$$\text{Thallium} \text{ G} = \frac{(\text{Tl})^{12}}{8\text{AQ}} = 11.44 \text{ Exp. } .11 +$$

A SKETCH  
OF A  
PHILOSOPHY.

*Ἄριστα ὦ Τίμαιε.*

PLATON in Tim.



PART I.  
M I N D :  
ITS  
POWERS AND CAPACITIES,  
AND ITS  
RELATION TO MATTER.  
PRICE 6s.

PART II.  
M A T T E R  
AND  
MOLECULAR MORPHOLOGY:  
THE ELEMENTAL SYNTHESIS.  
ILLUSTRATED BY 75 DIAGRAMS OF MOLECULES IN THE TEXT.  
PRICE 3s. 6d.

*(Sold Separately.)*

A SKETCH  
OF A  
PHILOSOPHY

PART III.

THE CHEMISTRY  
OF  
NATURAL SUBSTANCES.

ILLUSTRATED BY

TWO FOLDING PLATES, AND 150 FIGURATE DIAGRAMMS  
OF MOLECULES IN THE TEXT.

BY

JOHN G. MACVICAR, LL.D., D.D.



WILLIAMS & NORGATE:  
14 HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON, AND  
20 SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.

1870.





# ANALYTICAL CONTENTS.

## CHAPTER I.

### MOLECULAR MORPHOLOGY.

PAGE

The discovery of the forms of the least particles of bodies ought not to be regarded as hopeless. Some conception as to form is inevitable, when the existence in space of anything that is finite is conceived. It were strange if all such conceptions, while they are inevitable, must be inevitably wrong. Reason concludes in favour of the sphere,	1
Outwardly (that is, in the isodynamic boundaries of their ætherial atmospheres) all insulable atoms and molecules are either spherical or spheroidal. Inwardly (that is, in their central forces, or nuclei) they possess manifold forms and structures, determined by the laws of equilibrium acting in the conditions of their existence,	2
All these laws (chemical affinity, aggregation, &c.) resolve themselves in the last analysis into a nîsus at the construction of the symmetrical in form and structure; this culminates in the development of the spherical and the homogeneous; the first step on the presentation of dissimilars to each other being their union, so as to merge their differences in the genesis of a new molecular species,	3
Many thousands of molecules have been decomposed by chemists, but between 60 and 70 resist their experiments to decompose them, and are usually named atoms,	3

## CHAPTER II.

### THE RELATION BETWEEN THE MATERIAL ELEMENT AND THE ÆTHERIAL.

The material element may be regarded as a nebulous speck of aggregated ætherial elements, of which those in the centre, urged by the centripetal pressure, have become confluent into an unity of a more substantial order,	4
---	---

	PAGE
As the centrad pressure depends on the number of ætherial elements in the aggregate, and must be the same when that number is the same, the genesis of the nucleus in all will occur when the quantity of æther in the aggregate is the same; and that nucleus will consist in all of the same quantity of substance, and, in a word, all material elements in the last analysis, all units of weight, will be similar to one another, . . . . .	5
More generally, and without any hypothesis as to the relation between ætherial and material elements, it is to be concluded, in virtue of the cosmical law of assimilation (which is the watchword of this Philosophy), that all material units in the last analysis are every way similar to one another, . . . . .	5

### CHAPTER III.

#### MOLECULES.

PRIMAL ELEMENTS.—The synthesis of material units, according to the law that has been stated, gives as the first stable group or molecular element, four of them, a tetrahedron, or <i>tetrad</i> (Pl. I. fig. I, in which the white points may be regarded as the positions of the 4 constituents, the white lines joining them as the resultants of the attractive and repulsive forces by which they are kept in equilibrio, and the black region around as the portion of the ætherial atmosphere, or dynamisphere nearest the nucleus, which, however, ought to have been shaded off towards the circumference), . . . . .	6
But tetrads, when presented to each other, must, under the law of symmetry, tend to clap together base to base, giving the <i>bitetrad</i> , or <i>hylagen</i> (fig. II.), . . . . .	6
In our planet all atoms and molecules whatsoever, are constructed of no other elemental forms but these two, the tetrad and the bitetrad ! . . . . .	6
ULTIMATE ELEMENTS.—The analytic action of nature, on the other hand, does not give the tetrad itself (which is a pyramid or hemiform, and is essentially adhesive or parasitic), but the tetrad carrying another material element or unit of weight along with it, symmetrically poised opposite one of its 4 bases (fig. III.), thus constructing it into a <i>trigonal bipyramid</i> , a form with two poles, which are similar to each other, and an equator evenly placed between them, and which therefore is capable of going free in the æriform state, and is of exquisite stability. It represents hydrogen. The true or absolute atomic weight of hydrogen, therefore, in this system, is 5, . . . . .	6
The ultimate analysis of nature in certain cases gives also a group of 5 tetrads, united so that an edge of each is the common axis of all (fig. IV.) This represents boron (monatomic). It is a <i>pentagonal bipyramid</i> , . . . . .	6
But there is a lighter element of the same form having only 5 instead of 10 units in the equator, so that there are two borons, bearing to	

each other the same relations as hylagen and hydrogen. (The boron of chemistry may be regarded as representing the simplest symmetrical combination of both  $BBB = B''' = 20 + 15 + 20$ , *i.e.*,  $4 + 3 + 4 = 11$  when  $H = 1$ ), . . . . . 6

BARIC AND BARYTIC ELEMENTS.—In regions of intense condensation the unit of molecular construction, instead of being a single material unit, is a tetradic group. Hence, besides molecules of common weight, isomorphs result, which are four times their atomic weight. And these, according as they are constructed of baric hydrogen or of baric hylagen (which is heavier), are here called baric and barytic elements. Thus, bromine is baric; iodine, barytic chlorine: selenium is baric; tellurium, barytic sulphur: strontium is baric; barium, barytic calcium, &c. . . . . 7

MOLECULES.—Most elemental molecules or chemical atoms, as also their first combinations, are usually very defective as to sphericity. Hence they tend to aggregate into larger molecules, which shall be more nearly spherical, . . . . . 7

ISOMETRICAL MOLECULES.—Since the regions suited for union in all molecules are either trigonal (as in  $H$  and  $H'$ ), or pentagonal (as in  $B$ ), it follows that, when aiming at the construction of a spherical or isometrical group, they must all tend to construct *either icosatoms* (figs. v. and vii.), or *dodecatoms* (figs. vi. and viii.) . . . . . 8

DIFFERENTIATED MOLECULES.—The constituent particles of molecules, when the latter have fulfilled the law of assimilation (sphericity and homogeneity), are fit for a completed existence, that is, for occupying each its full complement of space, that is, for the aeriform state. But this state is postponed, and matter is largely preserved in the concrete state by a phenomenon resulting from the first step of the perfected molecules towards the aeriform state, namely, the differentiation or destruction of the spherical and the homogeneous in the dodecatoms, &c., which survive. Thus when the perfected molecules are dissolving or vapourising, the small individual particles escaping from them being dissimilar to the large concrete molecules which still remain entire, are obliged to attach themselves to the latter, and so they differentiate them either in form, or structure, or both, and so tend to keep them in the concrete state, . . . . . 9

COMPOSITE MOLECULES.—And now, being differentiated and having one eminent axis, they must tend to unite into isometrical molecules again. There thus result composite icosatoms and dodecatoms, even the latter consisting of not less than 156 of those binary, ternary, or quaternary combinations, which chemistry regards as individualities! . . . . . 10

ATOMIC WEIGHTS.—The atomic weight of hydrogen being 5, while that of the same element in the conventional scale usually adopted is unity, the old scale may at once be changed into the new, by removing the decimal point one cypher to the left and halving. Thus azote, 14.0 old scale, becomes  $\frac{140}{2} = 70$  new scale, &c., . . . . . 11



- Shall we endeavour to reach the elements of chemistry by the analysis of matter taken in its most dense state, as in the abyss?—or by its synthesis in its state of greatest rarity, as in the celestial spaces? . . . 11
- The importance of water in nature and science invites us to try the latter first; especially as our theory enables us to deduce the specific gravities of liquids and solids, in the same way as chemists have long deduced those of aeriforms, and water ( $AQ = aq^{36}$ ) (fig. xvi.) is universally taken as the unity for specific gravities. Thus  $\frac{(NaCl)^{12}}{AQ}$ ,  $\frac{S^{20}}{AQ}$  &c., when stated in their atomic weights (without any reference whatever to the complicated and unsatisfactory hypothesis of atomic volume as advanced in the popular chemistry), give the sp. gr. of common salt, sulphur, &c., . . . . . 12

## CHAPTER IV.

### THE NORMAL SYNTHESIS OF MATTER IN THE CELESTIAL SPACES, AND ITS FIRST PRODUCTS.

- Four tetrads poised symmetrically opposite the four angles of one tetrad which occupies the centre, are the same thing as— . . . 13
- A Tetratom of Hydrogen* (fig. ix.)—Also a single tetrad taking into symmetrical union with itself a single material unit, is an atom of hydrogen. In the celestial spaces, therefore, when sown with material elements, or charged with the common vapour of matter, we may expect both tetratoms and single atoms of hydrogen, . . . 14
- A Hexatom of Hydrogen* (fig. x.)—Under the law of sphericity the tetratom of hydrogen is equatorial or oblate, and in want of matter on its axis. To each pole of the tetratom, therefore, a single atom will be added, giving a finely constructed hexatom, which, as it conserves the original points and structure of the single atom on a large scale, we may regard as the typical aerial molecule of hydrogen, . . . 15
- Overheated Vapour.*—The single atom of H is prolate. It is in want of matter on its equator. In a region containing matter in single units, therefore, we may expect that every atom of H will take into union on the three points of its equator three single units additional. Now, by this the atom of H is transformed into an atom of  $H_6^1$ . But the central atom of H in the hexatom is secure from this change. Hence  $H^6 = HH^5$  will be transformed into  $H_6H^5$  isomorphous with  $H^6$  (fig. x.), 16
- Oxygen.*—Now, if these six bipyramids be dissociated and the atom of H be thrown out, then the  $5H_6^1$  remaining must tend to clap together by their faces and their most dissimilar parts, that is, poles to equators. But if so, they must construct a form (fig. xiii.) which shall be the very counterpart or complement of H under the law of sphericity, i.e., as equatorial or negative as H is axial or positive, and consequently its properties also will be the counterpart of those of H. Its atomic weight =  $5 \times 8 = 40$  when H = 5, i.e., 8, when H = 1! . . . 17

- Common Vapour.*—When  $\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}^5$  is not dissociated into H and  $\ddot{\text{H}}_5$  as O, but cools and contracts, it must lapse into an exquisitely symmetrical structure (fig. XI.) This is an atom of common vapour. But  $\text{HOOH} = \text{H}_2\text{O}$  when  $\text{O} = 16$  may also possibly exist in the aeriform state, . 19
- WATER.*—An atom of overheated or fully expanded vapour  $\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}^5$  tends to gather 5 similar structures around it, and the hexatom thus constructed to gather 5 around it. This done the combination is ready to condense into a triple-walled dodecatom, consisting of  $(\text{OHaqHO})$  (see fig. xv. Pl. II.), or into the exquisite capsule AQ (fig. xvi. Pl. I), . 22
- The minim rain-drop.*—But the smallest natural particle of water, is the differentiated dodecatom  $\text{AQ}(\text{AQ})\text{AQ}$ , which is still capsular. It consists of 22680 units of weight, . 25
- Ice.*—When a particle of AQ fills the central cavity of this minim drop, the ice molecule results, that is, 15AQ occupying 16 volumes, sp. gr. = .9375, . 26
- FLUOR.*—Hydrofluoric acid, HF, is baric moisture, HO, fluorine being baric oxygen. This acid tends to be transformed secularly, and to find repose in nature as fluor, for calcium, when perfected in structure, is  $\text{H}^{20}$ . 27

## CHAPTER V.

## ABYSSAL, PLUTONIC, VOLCANIC ACTION, AND ITS FIRST (SULPHURIC) PRODUCTS.

- When  $5\ddot{\text{H}}$  are united by their facets, they give an atom of O (fig. XIII.) When united by their edges, an atom of S (fig. XVII.) These two are complimentary forms. But as O, under the law of sphericity, doubles into  $\odot$  (fig. XIV.), so S forms into tetratoms (fig. XVIII.) which are atoms of sulphur. The single atom being here named sulph, . 31
- The atom of sulph is prolate in form, or positive like hydrogen. The atom of sulphur is intensely oblate, or negative like oxygen. Hence this element, sulphic and sulphuric, unites both with oxygen and hydrogen, &c. As the form of sulphur is trigonal, its molecule is the icosatom. Its sp. gr., as deduced from its molecule, is 1.96. Exp. 1.98, 32
- Viscous Sulphur.*—In liquid or melted sulphur, it may be shown that when the temperature attains a certain range, the icosatoms will break up and undergo inversion. And during this process it is to be expected that the sulphur will not be fully liquid but viscous, . 33
- Sulphur Vapour.*—A single atom of sulphur is so oblate that three on the same axis (fig. XXI.) accord better with the law of sphericity than one. When, therefore, sulphur is rising as vapour, an unit volume may be expected to contain three atoms. As also is the case with oxygen when constituting one of the ozones, . 33
- Sulphuretted Hydrogen.*—The proper element for carrying up sulphur into the aeriform state is not an atom of itself on each pole, but of hydrogen (fig. XIX.) The molecule of this combination, in the dense state, must also be the icosatom and its theoretical sp. gr. 1.05. Exp. .9 + . 34

<i>Sulphurous Acid</i> .—Sulphur and oxygen gas, as also sulph and oxygen in single atoms, unite in equal weights in many forms, and give products, now acid, now basic, now ready to absorb, now to give off oxygen. Hence sulphurous acid, and sulphous acid, and sulphurous gas, &c. The last on the access of moisture and oxygen changes into sulphic acid, or oil of vitriol (fig. xx.), . . . . .	35
<i>Sulphates, or rather Sulphurates</i> , are the ultimate products of mineral nature, in the disposal of sulphur. Anhydrite ; its theoretical sp. gr., 2·95. Exp. 2·90. Celestine, 3·97. Exp. 3·95. Barytes, 4·64. Exp. 4·70, . . . . .	38
<i>Sulphuric Anhydride</i> , which has been obtained, though with difficulty, by the chemist, appears to exist in nature in the taurocholate of the bile, and elsewhere. It results from the doubling of the sulphuric acid of the sulphurates, which is $\text{S}^{\text{O}} = \text{S}^{\text{O}^6}$ , giving the finely differentiated dodecatom $\text{S}^{\text{O}^{12}}$ . Its theoretical sp. gr. 1·97. Exp. 1·97, . . .	39
<i>Sulphic Acid—Oil of Vitriol</i> .—Sulphuric anhydride, when normally hydrated, must partition into 4 atoms of glacial oil of vitriol. Its theoretical sp. gr. 1·79. Exp. 1·75. When developed in nature it is usually united with lime, and gives selenite or gypsum. Its theoretical sp. gr. 2·39. Exp. 2·3... 2·4, . . . . .	40
<i>The Strongest Oil of Vitriol</i> of the boiler consists of 12 atoms of monohydrated acid, holding on by the 12 summits of an atom of aq, which forms the nucleus. Its theoretical sp. gr. 1·843. Exp. 1·843, . . .	42
<i>Sulphides and Sulphurides</i> .—Both exist. Blende is a sulphuride (fig. xxii.) Galena a sulphide. This is shown by their sp. gr., as experimentally determined, which agree with those deduced from this hypothesis, . . .	43
<i>Selenium, Tellurium</i> .—These are baric and barytic sulphurs, . . .	44
Though they are molecular, yet sulphur, oxygen, &c., are undecomposable in the laboratory, because the chemist's analytical appliances are not so powerful as those of the central heat, the volcano, &c.—the ordeal of which these elements have survived before they came into his hands, . . .	45

## CHAPTER VI.

## THE ALKALIES AND ALKALINE EARTHS.

As the 5 bitetrads in the sulphic form are united by their edges only, while in the oxygen form they are united by their faces, the latter are the more stable and enduring of the two in the ordeal of the seething abyss ; and though both in union may escape into the aeriform state, and thus the abyss have an atmosphere of sulphurous gas over it, yet within the abyss itself we need not look for matter in the sulphic form in union with oxygen, for the same 5 bitetrads which constitute sulphic atoms are capable of another form, viz., . . . . .	46
<i>Lithium</i> (Pl. II. fig. 1.), which is more compact, and which, though incapable of existing free, is yet such that the hollow polar regions of an atom of oxygen are perfect moulds for its lens-shaped pole, . . . . .	46



- Sodhium—Kalhium.*—Accordingly, what we are to expect as a first individualised element within the seething abyss, are atoms of oxygen, with both their poles packed with this new element (fig. II.), as also others in which this new element is doubled on each pole (fig. III.); for this new element, which, meantime, we may call lithhium, is such that the 5-fid, or metallic pole, in one atom, is also a mould for the metalloid or lens-shaped pole in another atom. Thus, as earliest constructions in the seething abyss, we shall have two molecular species one after the other, both metallic, and highly analogous in form and structure; the atomic weight of the first 120, and of the second 200, *i.e.*, 24 and 40 when H=1. Let us, in the meantime, call them sodhium (fig. II.), and kalhium (fig. III.) The letter H inserted in the familiar names, implies that they are heavier by an atom of hydrogen than the known substances, and enclose the material of such an atom in their structure, which may possibly be extruded as an atom of H, . 46
- Magnesium, Calcium, Strontium, Barium.*—Sodhium and kalhium will be protected from the further attacks of oxygen when they are capped by an atom of oxygen on each pole, and become dioxides. But now their axes are much too long. Under the law of sphericity, therefore, they will secularly dedouble by the opening up or unlocking of the medial atom of oxygen (which consists of two groups of tetrads, composed of 5 each) into two atoms of beryllium (fig. IV.) Hence, instead of dioxides of metals weighing 24 and 40, there will be found in nature protoxides of analogous metals weighing 12 and 20. They represent in every feature, and in all their relations, magnesia and lime, 47
- When the polar matter in the potassium-form is baric, and when it is barytic, isomorphic metals must result, and these in atomic weight, &c., represent strontium and barium. As to the dedoubling of the sodium form, when baric and barytic, it is difficult of verification, in consequence of the very recurrent atomic weights which result, . 48
- As magnesium and calcium thus usually result by dedoubling, so do they, as in other similar cases, under the law of redintegration or atavism (assimilation to their former state), tend to go in couples with one centre of calorific action, &c., and a seemingly double atomic weight. Theoretical sp. gr. Mg = 1.76. Exp. 1.75. Ca = 1.59. Exp. 1.5...1.6 . 50
- Epsom Salt* is as usual a differentiated dodecatom, the body consisting of aqueous matter, the differentiating matter an atom of magnesia on each pole, in union with one of glacial oil of vitriol; the molecule aquæform; its theoretical sp. gr. 1.708. Exp. 1.7...1.8, . . . . . 50
- Sodium, Potassium, Rubidium, Cesium.*—When these metals (kalhium, &c.) exist in the molecular state, the length of axis will not tend to produce dedoublement, for then each atom is but a radius in an isometrical molecule. But still a development must take place. Thus each element of the metallogenic form, lithhium (fig. I.), is dissymmetrical in the structure of its axis. In its 5-fid pole there are twice 5 units of weight, while in its lens-shaped pole there are only 5. From the former, therefore, 5, as being supernumerary to the symmetry, will be

secularly emitted, and that in the form of an atom of hydrogen. Moreover, that emission will take place on the periphery of the molecule at one epoch, and in the centre at another epoch. Hence our sodium and kalium will now weigh less than before, by an atom of hydrogen. They will weigh 23 and 39 when $H = 1$ . And as representing the primal dioxide, there will, of course, be generated the mono-hydrate of the protoxide, the hydrate of soda, the hydrate of potassa ! The theoretical sp. gr. of sodium is .99 ; Exp. .97 ; and that of potassium occupying a double volume = .84 ; Exp. .86, . . . . .	52
This form—lithium,—if baric or barytic, when symmetrising its axis, does not give off hydrogen, but boron, its atomic weight, 4 or 3, when $H = 1$ , . . . . .	53
This boron, in union with oxygen, finds repose in nature as sesqui-oxide, which passes in the laboratory for silica, and in the case of light boron is one and the same with silica, . . . . .	53
Baric and barytic potassium give metals agreeing in atomic weight, &c., with rubidium and cesium. And they are accompanied by silica, . . . . .	54
<i>Lithium</i> .—When the medial body or coupling joint in the primal metallic structure of the abyss (fig. II.) is not a single but a double atom of oxygen, then this less compact structure, when both poles are capped by oxygen as before, tends to dedouble at once. And each member of it, when the axis of its metallic element is symmetrised by the emission of an atom of hydrogen, gives the hydrate of the protoxide of a metal whose atomic weight is 7 when $H = 1$ . It represents lithium in every particular. Theor. sp. gr. .60. Exp. .59, . . . . .	56
The fixed alkalies, then, are first and second suboxides of lithium. They are undecomposable in the laboratory, because the medial atom of oxygen forms such a fast coupling joint for the polar lithiums ; and because that before they have come into the hands of the chemist at all, they had withstood the infinitely more severe ordeal of abyssal pressure, primal heat, volcanic action, &c., . . . . .	58
<i>Ammonia</i> .—When the medial part of the structure is not oxygen but hydrogen (fig. VIII.), the alkali is, as might be expected, not fixed and undecomposable, but both volatile and decomposable. And now is the most important to life of all substances. And to secure it from the dangers of the abyss, there has also been provided for the same metallogenetic element, which, when of abyssal origin, has been named lithium, an ætherial and aerial genesis, implying an aptitude for the aeriform state, at least when the single atoms are coupled (fig. IX.), as in the case of its companion oxygen. Hence, instead of lithium, the alkaligenetic element may now be called zote, and the coupled atom azote. Hence, from the decomposition of ammonia into gas there are obtained hydrogen and azote = $H_3N$ . But ammonia is a very different thing. It is exquisitely dimorphous (figs. VIII. and X.). Of these the latter is capable of taking into union on its poles only trigonal elements, such as H in HO, &c. The former can exist in the free state, only doubled as $NH^6N$ , in which its functioning must resemble that of potassium, . . . . .	58

## CHAPTER VII.

## THE HALOGENS.

PAGE

- While the temperature continued sufficiently high, potassium, &c., might continue in the aeriform state, each atom individualised. This is possible even in the laboratory, where potassium is known to constitute a green vapour. But secularly this vapour must undergo a change. Thus potassium had, in giving birth to the hydrate in the molecular state, emitted an atom of hydrogen from one pole only. Hence— .. 63
- Chlorine*.—Now that each atom has to exist by itself, it must, under the secular operation of the law of symmetry, emit another atom from the other pole. Its atomic weight will then be reduced to 38 when  $H = 1$ . But its axis is as overlong as ever. But it cannot now dedouble as before, because each half is not symmetrical on both sides of its own middle point. The long form may, however, be brought into better keeping with the law of sphericity, if the 5 units on each pole which render its poles 5-fid (fig. III.), are gathered up into atoms of hydrogen and go off. But after this it will be metalloidal instead of metallic, and its full atomic weight will be reduced to 36. It is a green vapour still, and represents chlorine (fig. XI.) But it may be condensed into liquid dodecatoms, sp. gr. 1.32. Exp. 1.33, . . . . . 64
- Hydrochloric Acid*.—The atom of chlorine contains concealed in it, as a medial coupling joint, an atom of oxygen; hence as a magnet, though other matter be interposed, attracts and holds a needle, so in order to reintegrate the primal HO, the atom of chlorine attracts and holds, when it can get it, one atom of hydrogen. The theoretical sp. gr. of the condensed gas is 1.26. Exp. 1.27. But the liquid molecule of this hydracid which is most stable is a differentiated dodecatom with aqueous body and poles. Theor. sp. gr. 1.111. Exp. 1.111, . . . . 65
- Oxides of Chlorine*.—Though neither chlorine nor oxygen are metallic, yet being so dissimilar in form and structure they unite. The protoxide forms dodecatoms by itself, while the suboxide, sesquioxide, the simple element, and the dioxide, as polar bodies, form dodecatoms with 10 atoms of oxygen in all cases as the equatorial body, giving, when Cl is reduced to unity, as is usual in chemistry,  $\text{ClO}_3$ ,  $\text{ClO}_4$ ,  $\text{ClO}_5$ ,  $\text{ClO}_7$ , . . . 68
- Sea Salt*.—As the axis of potassium is so much longer than that of sodium, it exists far more in violation of the law of sphericity. Hence it is shortened, and potassium is demetallised, and reduced to the halogen state at an epoch during which sodium still continues to exist as a metal. Hence, as a product of primeval action, not an alloy of potassium and sodium or their oxides, but chloride of sodium, . . . . 65
- The Sea* is not an incidental mechanical mixture depending on the soluble matters in its bed. It is a self-developing, self-restorative, liquid-crystalline, and in a sense organic medium. Its constituents are descendants or kindred to one another. It is meet to be teeming with life, . . 68
- Bromine and Iodine* are baric and barytic chlorines resulting from the demetallisation of rubidium and caesium, . . . . . 66



## CHAPTER VIII.

## CARBON, HYDRO-CARBONS, OXY-CARBONS.

	PAGE
As undecomposable structures (the halogens) result from the demetallisation of the potassium-forms, so do decomposable structures, which prove to be carbon in union with oxygen, result from the demetallisation of sodic and lithic forms, . . . . .	72
<i>Cyanogen</i> is a chlorine which wants the coupling joint of concealed oxygen, and is therefore decomposable, . . . . .	75
<i>Marsh Gas</i> .—Lithium or zhote always occurs in nature in couples. A single atom, when symmetrised both in the axis and on the polar region by the development of two atoms of hydrogen, is transformed into an atom of nascent marsh gas (fig. XII.) And the couple of such, when they double so as better to satisfy the law of sphericity, give an atom of mature marsh gas (fig. XIII.) It is a tetratom of hydrogen with an atom of carbon on each pole, . . . . .	73
<i>Olefiant Gas</i> .—The single atom of carbon like that of oxygen is very oblate, hence atoms of carbon tend to go in couples, the atomic weight of each couple = 12 when H = 1. Olefiant gas is marsh gas with the polar carbons in couples. It is a tetratom of hydrogen with a coupled atom of carbon on each pole, . . . . .	75
<i>Rock Oils</i> are differentiated dodecatoms, the polar elements being generally atoms of marsh gas, which being negative, like oxygen, repel the atmospherical oxygen, and protect the rock oil from its attacks, . . . . .	76
<i>Essential Oils</i> have for their least element a tetratom of hydrogen with an atom of carbon, not only on each pole, but on the three hydrogens of the equator also. These carbons may be applied in so many different ways, that there must be many species of nonoxygenated essential oils. The usual unit is the tetratom $4(\text{C}_5\text{H}_4) - \text{C}_{20}\text{H}_{16}$ , . . . . .	77
<i>Camphor</i> has for its least element two atoms of essential oil, united on the same axis by an atom of oxygen as the coupling joint, . . . . .	78
<i>The Hydro-carbon of the Bile</i> is the essential oil element of the vegetable kingdom with CH added on each pole, giving the hydro-carbon ( $\text{C}_7\text{H}_6$ ). And these are formed into dodecatoms around a particle of sugar as a nucleus, and the poles variously differentiated by ammoniacal or sulphuric matter, . . . . .	79
<i>The Hydro-carbon of the Alkaloids</i> is a single atom of hydrogen charged with carbon on each of its 5 points, just as a tetratom of hydrogen is in the essential oils, &c., = $\text{C}_5\text{H}$ . This combination lies concealed from the chemist in "carbonaceous residua." In nature it occurs as oxide or hydrate, . . . . .	80
<i>Naphthaline</i> .—When another atom of hydrogen is added, giving $\text{C}_8\text{H}_2$ for its least element, it may be sublimed in coupled atoms $\text{C}_{10}\text{H}_4$ . But the tetratom $\text{C}_{20}\text{H}_8$ is the least concrete molecule. It gives also $\text{C}_{60}\text{H}_{24}$ for the dodecatom when C is centrad; and, possibly, $\text{C}_{100}\text{H}_{40}$ for the icosatom when H is centrad.—The chemical formulæ as usual giving half molecules, . . . . .	81

<i>Alcohol</i> (vinic) is an atom of marsh gas with a saccharine element (CHO) on each pole; hence its poles are trimorphous. In the liquid state it exists as dodecatoms and icosatoms in equal numbers. Its theoretical sp. gr. is '796. Exp. '795. On drenching any suitable substance with alcohol, the peripheral atom of HO in the alcohol lapses into aq and goes out of the way, leaving in union $C_4H_5O$ and giving ethers, . . . . .	82
<i>Acetic Acid</i> is a very polymorphous agent in nature. Its ultimate principle is a spherical form COC, its atomic weight $30 + 40 + 30 = 100$ , carrying an atom of H on one pole. It is to sodium what hydrochloric acid is to potassium. It has a very extensive and important range in the vegetable kingdom. It is the characteristic at once of vernal sap and of humus. It is a great colorific agent. In common acetic acid it is coupled and combined with aqueous matter, . . . . .	83
<i>Acetyl, Ethyl, Methyl, &amp;c.</i> , are structures in which both the equatorial and the polar members are atoms of hydrogen, and which, therefore, function like single atoms of hydrogen, and are more handy in the laboratory, being less volatile and more slow in their movements, . . . . .	86
<i>Laboratory Ammonias</i> are ammonia-forms, generally doubled, maintained by the insertion of the preceding hydro-carbons instead of hydrogen on the equator, as also by the use of phosphorus, arsenic, &c., on the poles, instead of nitrogen, . . . . .	88
<i>The Vegetable Acids.</i> —The series of these acids commences in the saccharine element CHO, and rises by repetition of carbon and oxygen atoms on the same axis to the succinic element $\ddot{C}_4$ . This, when hydrated on both poles, and then doubled, so that there is a tetratom of H for the equator, gives tartaric acid. When formed into a differentiated dodecatom by $O^{10}$ for the equator, it gives carbonic acid properly so called; each such molecule of acid tending spontaneously to break up into eight atoms of dioxide of carbon or carbonic gas $CO^2$ , . . . . .	90
<i>Silicic, Carbonic, Phosphoric Acids</i> , when severally used for supporting the soft forms of animals, are all isomorphous and of the same structure, . . . . .	94

## CHAPTER IX.

## THE TISSUE ELEMENT.

The fixed character of carbon, together with its atomic lightness and lenticular form, renders it suitable as a solder for fastening together and detaining in the concrete state those quick molecules (the aqueous and ammoniacal vapours) which alone possess mobility enough for rendering them answerable to sentient life, . . . . .	96
The primæval combination of an atom of hydrogen with one of aqueous vapour on each of its 5 points for union, that is, $Haq^5$ (which is genetic of ammonia), together with a single atom of molecular carbonic acid, that is, $\ddot{C}_4O^{10}\ddot{C}_4$ , supply precisely all the material wanted for the construction of an element of flesh $C_8H_8NO_3$ (C. Schmidt), . . . . .	96
They give also as a residue, a molecule of what may be called normal	

- stimulant or ozonohydric acid  $\text{HO}\overset{12}{\text{C}}\text{OH}$ , which is also probably the molecular structure speedily attained by the oxygen gas of the air after it has been absorbed in respiration, . . . . . 99
- If the protoxide of iron come in the way of this acid, it may be shown that all the oxygen of its body will be carried off by 2 atoms of protoxide, thereby making it peroxide. And in that case there will remain 2 atoms of hydrogen with 3 atoms of oxygen to each. Now, these three oxygens may possibly fix themselves on the 3 equatorial edges of the atoms of hydrogen, giving a peroxide of hydrogen which may be (as has been supposed) one of the ozones, and which, at any rate, must be another very powerful stimulant of life, . . . . . 97
- The dimorphism of the atom of ammonia, which in one of its forms (fig. viii.), has its axis much longer than in the other (fig. x.), illustrates the contractility of tissue, . . . . . 98
- The tissue element, when formed into molecules, gives the proteine-formula of Scherer or of Mulder, according as we take it in dodecatoms or icosatoms, and halve or quarter as usual, . . . . . 99
- The most ready product of the normal breaking up of the tissue-element must be uric acid, and where there is every facility for the formation and escape of water, urea, . . . . . 101
- Chitine*.—The play of the dimorphism of the two vapours (common and ammoniacal) in tissue may be prevented, and great stability imparted to the structure, by the insertion of a saccharine (CHO) in all their poles. This done, the exact formula of chitine is obtained, . . . . . 101
- Cellulose*.—The cell, when constructed of such aqueous-ammoniacal matter as has been described, and which is quick, tends to be encrusted all over by another tissue, in which the ammoniacal matter is substituted by aqueous matter kept concrete by carbon. This simpler tissue is comparatively stable, but it is unfit for humouring sentient life. Hence it has been provided by the hepatic function that it shall be decomposed as fast as it tends to form in the animal frame. Thus is an animal kingdom secured along with a vegetable kingdom, . . . . . 102
- The Albumenoid Bodies*.—The true tissue element is exquisitely dimorphous; and by a reciprocal change of form, that is, a change of the aqueous element into its oxyhydracid form, and of the ammoniacal element into its aquæform, while the 8 atoms of carbon directly embrace the latter as axis, the whole structure becomes so compact and stable that it may be stored without change for an indefinite time, 102

## CHAPTER X.

BORON; PHOSPHORUS AND ITS ISOMORPHS, ARSENIC, VANADIUM,  
ANTIMONY, BISMUTH.

The law of sphericity tends secularly to dedouble one atom of carbon into two of (light) boron. Also one atom of lithhium or zhote by the closing of the 5-fid pole, becomes two atoms of (heavier) boron; and



these two borons, which belong to the pentagonal order of forms, are analogous to hydrogen and hylagen, which belong to the trigonal. And just as the great source of hydrogen in nature is its emission from common metals during their reduction to metalloids, so of boron from baric and barytic metals. And just as hydrogen appears in nature almost solely in union with oxygen as water, so does boron appear almost solely in union with oxygen also as silica (literally the sesquioxide of boron, of which, however, only the oxygens on the poles can be detached in the laboratory, the central suboxide passing as silicon), . 103

*Boric Acid*.—When the carbon of the carbonic dioxide, which streams up in volcanic lakes, is secularly expanded or dedoubled, and being duly hydrated, is retained below in the molecular state, sassoline results. That this is the genesis of the lagoon is shown by its sp. gr. theoretically deduced, = 1.48. Exp. 1.48, . 105

*Borax*.—Sassoline consists of elements which are reduced to an extreme degree, and except the hydrogen of the hydrating matter, it is wholly metalloidal, or non-metallic. Therefore a more fully differentiated molecule, in which there shall be metallic matter, at least on the poles, may be expected. Now carbon and boron are both reduced lithium; and the sub-oxide of lithium is sodium. Hence, for that metallic matter, it is sodium which we are to expect on the poles of the boric dodecatom. Such is borax. Theor. sp. gr. 1.73. Exp. 1.72, . 106

*Phosphorus, Vanadium, Arsenic, Antimony, Bismuth*.—These elements are isamorphous, and possess the same structure, viz., 3 atoms of the oxygen-form, and 4 of the lens-form, applied to each other in the same axis like convex and concave lenses in an achromatic arrangement; but this structure is undecomposable, except in the case of mellitic anhydride, which is not yet, in the present epoch, sufficiently mineralised. Their constituent borons or carbons and oxygens are either light (phosphorus), common (vanadium), mixed (arsenic), baric (antimony), or barytic (bismuth). The inversion of the tetrads constituting the oxygen-forms in all but the first, in which the oxygen-form ( $H^5$ ) does not supply sufficient material, imparts to the four last a metallic lustre, 107

*Phosphoric Acid*.—In their most stable state of union with oxygen, most of these elements affect the most highly differentiated dodecatom

$XOXOXOX = X^4O^{12}$ , which, when drawn and quartered as usual, gives the formula  $XO^3$ . But phosphorus affects the simpler dodecatom

$POP = 2PO^5$ . Phosphorus has either an abyssal, a meteoric, or an organic genesis. Its organic genesis is here given, as an alternate result with terhydrated ammonia. The phosphoric structure culminates in the construction of bone element, as the ammoniacal structure does in the construction of the tissue element, . 110

*Antimonic Acid*.—One atom of antimony tends secularly to develop into four atoms of phosphorus; and one atom of antimonic acid in which the oxygens are barytic, into four atoms of phosphoric acid, . 110

## CHAPTER XI.

## THE ATMOSPHERE—NITRE, NITRIC ACID, ETC.

	PAGE
As soon as the outer crust of the earth is oxydised, free oxygen, or, at least, free oxygen gas in the air, becomes possible, . . . . .	114
The same molecular structure as gives chlorine below breaks up when coming above, and gives common air, . . . . .	114
All the azote (fig. ix.) that exists in the air is needed as the guard of the oxygen when rising, that it may be let go free in the aeriform state, . . . . .	114
The inactive or reposing nature of azote also prevents the air from being too stormy for life, . . . . .	114
Besides azote and oxygen gas, the integrant molecule of the atmosphere contains also oxygen in single atoms, moisture, carbonic dioxide, and ammonia, in definite and ascertainable quantities, . . . . .	114
If through defect of oxygen, moisture, or other normal constituent, the azote of the air ☉ should become excessive, it is to be apprehended that the whole would differentiate itself by the inversion of some atoms, that is, by the genesis of antizote ☿, which is probably very injurious to life, though not discoverable by chemistry, . . . . .	118
<i>The Oxides of Nitrogen</i> are manifold, very unstable, and difficultly determinable, except the simply differentiated dodecatom ( $\overset{10}{\text{NON}} = 2\text{NO}^5$ ), towards which they all culminate, . . . . .	119
<i>The Nitres.</i> —Their genesis is very interesting, and their value in the economy both of nature and art is very great. That of nitrate of ammonia is here given, . . . . .	121

## CHAPTER XII.

## IRON, NICKEL, AND COPPER.

Iron, like phosphorus, may have a meteoric, a mineral, or an organic origin. In reference to the first, it might be called tetrazote; and, in reference to the second, tetralithium; in reference to the third, oxyphorus. In the atom of iron the 4 zotes or lithiums which constitute it are welded into each other thimblewise. It has, therefore, a long axis, and is heteropolar. Hence it is eminently magnetic, . . . . .	122
<i>Nickel</i> is imperfectly reduced or hurriedly constructed iron, two atoms of hydrogen being retained in it which have been given off from iron, . . . . .	123
<i>Copper</i> results from the dedoubling of an atom of suboxide or sesquioxide, or oxysulphide of iron, the medial atom of oxygen opening or unlocking into two metallic coronets or berylliums (fig. iv.) The genesis of copper, in reference to iron, is therefore analogous to that of magnesium and lime, in reference to lithium when constituting sodium and potassium, &c. Its atomic weight must be heavier than that of iron by 4 when $\text{H} = 1$ ; its distribution in nature must be much the same, but its relation to magnetism must be quite changed, . . . . .	124

<i>Iron-Oxides</i> .—These are very interesting. When in the molecular state, and exposed to varying supplies of oxygen, iron-oxide must give a play between protoxide and peroxide; now attaching and now setting free oxygen in such a way, that the process might be said to be a kind of respiration, . . . . .	127
The oxygen must be set free in sets of ten atoms at a time, that is, in the quantity necessary for the construction of the body of a molecule of carbonic acid in the blood, which, gaining the lungs, will break up into carbonic gas, and be given off to the vegetable kingdom as its food, . . . . .	127
<i>Green Vitriol</i> .—The genesis of green vitriol, from moisture and pyrites, is here given. It is a <i>sulphate</i> of iron, . . . . .	129
<i>Blue Vitriol</i> is a <i>sulphurate</i> of copper, . . . . .	130

## CHAPTER XIII.

## ALUMINUM, SILICON, AND SILICIUM.

Two atoms of zote or lithium, when merely touching equatorially by their 5-fid poles, and of aerial genesis, constitute an atom of azote (fig. ix.) When locked into each other they constitute an atom of silicon (fig. xviii.) Now this must tend secularly to be metallised in the equatorial region, and would be rightly named silicium (fig. xix.) Its genesis implies that it shall occur as a dioxide (fig. xx.), . . . . .	131
Two atoms of zote, when touching equatorially by their lens-shaped poles on the other hand, and pressed together so that each may penetrate the other, and the axes of both be reduced to a common axis, must generate a fine metallic element. It represents aluminum (fig. xvii.), its genesis implying that it will occur in nature as a sesquioxide, . . . . .	132
When molecular synthesis takes the shortest cut towards merely formal perfection, without regard to the demands of sensibility, then, instead of organic elements (saccharine matter, &c.), silica results, . . . . .	133
But the course of mineral nature is from silica to alumina with moisture, producing fitness for vegetable life. Pure clay, halloysite, cryolite, . . . . .	134
Quartz, Graham's soluble silica, alcogel, glycerogel, &c., . . . . .	138

## CHAPTER XIV.

## THE DEVELOPMENT OF ROCKS.

As germinal matter <i>in situ</i> differentiates and develops from day to day, so does a rock from epoch to epoch, . . . . .	139
The antithesis between matter and space (atomic weight and atomic volume), actuated by one and the same law of assimilation, opens up mineral matter, under the sustained operation of the specific heat, and gives mineral molecules room for development, . . . . .	139
A dodecatom, consisting of the two simplest but most general of the genetic elements of the mineral kingdom, viz., oxygen and lithium,	



	PAGE
when completely differentiated, gives an unit of felspar (orthoclase) ! Its theoretical sp. gr. 2·59. Exp. 2·53...2·62. When the polar elements carry soda instead of potass, there results a soda-potass felspar. Theor. sp. gr. 2·55. Exp. 2·55, . . . . .	140
From the dedoublement of its constituents, &c., mica results, . . . . .	146
From the dedoublement of certain constituents of mica (KO and NaO), hornblende results, . . . . .	146
By further differentiation, talc, olivine, serpentine, &c., . . . . .	146
Thus our philosophy places the study of mineralogy on the same scientific basis as that of botany and zoology, . . . . .	148
As to the external form of the individual, crystal, plant, or animal, in reference to none of these is the science of morphology so far advanced as to be able to determine it. But the grand principles of this science, the types and laws of form, are the same in all, . . . . .	148

## CHAPTER XV.

### THE DEVELOPMENT OF METALS.

The action of molecular nature is radiant, while logical thought is confined to a single line. Hence the impossibility of a true representation of nature in a systematic book. A step aside is here taken to trace the development of some metals, because they are important in the economy of art, though not of nature, . . . . .	149
The metalloidal tends to become metallic under the law of sphericity, in either of two ways—(1.) by external spherifaction ; (2), by internal spherifaction or cellifaction, . . . . .	149
By the former process operating secularly there are obtained from the trigonal or lance-shaped elements, hydrogen, sulphur, and selenium, and the matter with which the molecules of these elements were previously united, the metals zinc, indium, cadmium, tin, lead, thallium, silver, mercury, &c., . . . . .	150
By the latter, silicium, along with gold, &c., . . . . .	155
The investigation of the platinum group of metals is postponed, . . . . .	155
Revision. Matter is merely a precipitate in the universal æther, necessitated by the conditions of the existence of the finite in space—a beautiful cloud-work woven in the realm of light. Both above and below, it is bounded by a world of spirits—those which were before it, and those of which it is the mother and nurse. All things owe their being to a Supreme Intelligence, an ever-blessed One. Existence has been awarded to the finite for the sake of multiplying enjoyment. “The struggle for life” is a struggle for enjoyment. There is nothing of which it can be said that it is altogether and for ever dead. As all is the creation of an ever-living One, so all tends towards life, . . . . .	156
(For the origin and action of the cosmical law of assimilation, see Part I. <i>passim</i> .)	

## CHAPTER I.

### MOLECULAR MORPHOLOGY.

COULD we but see clearly in the mind's eye the actual forms and structures of the various atoms and molecules of which crystals, plants, animals, and their organs consist, how precious the knowledge !

We frequently hear of a chess player who, though he has lost his eyesight, yet sees in his mind's eye all the pieces and the course of play so clearly, that he often wins and thoroughly enjoys the game. And so in like manner, if we but knew the normal structure and action of our organism as well as the chess player knows his game, and saw as clearly in the mind's eye that disturbance or departure from the normal structure and action which was causing us an ailment, might we not fairly hope to win the battle with that ailment, nay, even to enjoy our engagement with it while we were restoring our health !

In the advancement of the economic arts also, and the increase of the enjoyments of life, how rapid our progress if in chemical processes we actually saw what we were doing, and were no longer obliged to grope in the dark—making all kinds of experiments; no longer obliged to guess merely what is going on within—from changes of colour, or of state, or of weight; which is all that can be done at present. Nay, though we were in perfect health, and perfectly content with the amenities of life which have fallen to our lot already, what more delightful than “to see” (as Faust proposes) “all the springs and seeds of production, and drive no longer a paltry traffic in words.”

That such knowledge is most desirable will not be denied. But it will be said that it is impossible to be attained. In reference to this judgment, however, let us call to mind the remark of Bacon, when discoursing upon the possible reach of discovery. They are ill discoverers, says he, who, when as yet nothing but sea appears, conclude that there is no land beyond. The truth is, that the very constitution of intelligence itself is a standing protest against such a despairing conclusion; for it

is impossible to think of any particle of matter, or of anything whatever that occupies a position in space, without being obliged, even in thinking on it, to assign to it some form or other. We may indeed call it a physical point merely. But if by physical point we mean anything different from mathematical point, we can only mean a small sphere or some other definite form. Some morphological conception is inevitable, when finite existence in space is conceived.

If, then, we are to continue to think in a simple and natural way in the region of physics and chemistry at all, let us not attempt to evade this spontaneous and unavoidable judgment which affirms "form" to be a necessary attribute of every object that is at once real and occupies space to a finite extent, however finite that extent, however minute that object. Nay, as to the SPHERE let us honour the conclusion of the spontaneous intellect in favour of this form as the last word of morphology, as that form which it is most rational to assign to every fully individualised object, provided there be nothing either within or without that object to prevent its assumption of the spherical.

In a word, and to be frank, what we are now bent on showing is, that it is not only possible to discover the forms of the atoms and molecules of bodies, but that these forms,—if the atoms and molecules which possess them are capable of a fully individualised or separate existence,—are either precisely spherical or the next thing to it, that is, spheroids either oblate or prolate.

But it may be said that there is nothing new in this, that it has been often thought, often said already, as by R. Hooke, for instance, long ago, and more lately by Dr Wollaston, who has maintained it, even to the extent of showing that on this hypothesis all the forms of crystals may be explained. Now all that is true. But there is a peculiarity in the view advanced in these pages, which, so far as I know, has not been anticipated, and which, therefore, leaves our molecular morphology without any historical authority to stand upon, and so to struggle into favour on its own merits; and it is this—Atoms and molecules we hold to be spherical or spheroidal only overhead, that is, when viewed in reference to their ætherial atmospheres or dynamospheres.

In each atom and molecule, according to our view, there is a nucleus consisting of a certain number of elemental forces, material elements, or units of atomic weight; and that nucleus in different atoms and molecules possesses very different forms and structures, from the spherical on the one hand, down to the tetrahedral on the other.

An all-embracing diagram, therefore, showing the limits between which the forms of all perfected molecules should be contained, would consist of a spherical superficies with a tetrahedral centre. Or, as we might say, it would have the regular polyhedron with a maximum number of



sides for its periphery, and the regular polyhedron with a minimum number of sides for its nucleus.

Moreover, we maintain that the course of nature, in so far as molecular *synthesis* is concerned, is a progress from the tetrahedral towards the spherical.

We maintain also that the course of molecular *analysis*, ever taking place in like manner, according to the same law (that is, a homage to the spherical), during the dissociation, partitionment, or dedoublement of molecules, ever tends to provide that the parts or products of analysis shall be more spherical than the antecedent whole.

Such is our doctrine of the chemical elements as well as others; that is, those molecules which possess such stability that they are not broken up by such analytical agencies as the chemist can bring to bear upon them. Hence these elemental molecules may be conveniently named "atoms," as they usually are. Not that they are undecomposable either in themselves or in the secular course of nature; but they are so stable that all the vessels and reagents of the chemist go to pieces or suffer decomposition before they do, and thus they prove to be undecomposable to the chemist, and are "chemical atoms." They are at present about seventy in number, the heaviest (bismuth) being about 210 times the weight of the lightest (hydrogen).

I have succeeded in satisfying myself as to the structure of the nucleus in all those whose names are here given, in which there will be found almost all those which are of much interest in the economy of nature.

NON-METALLIC, . Oxygen, Fluorine.

METALLOIDAL, . { Boron, Carbon, Silicon, Nitrogen.  
Chlorine, Bromine, Iodine.  
Phosphorus, Arsenic, Antimony, Bismuth.  
Sulphur, Selenium, Tellurium.

{ Molybdenum, Tungsten.  
Manganese, Uranium?  
Platinum? Osmium?  
Iron, Nickel, Cobalt, Copper.  
Tin? Silver, Gold, Mercury.

METALLIC, . . { Zinc, Indium, Cadmium, Lead, Thallium.  
Lithium, Sodium, Potassium Rubidium, Cæsium.  
Magnesium, Calcium, Strontium, Baryum.  
Beryllium, Aluminum.  
Hydrogen.

## CHAPTER II.

### THE RELATIONS BETWEEN THE MATERIAL ELEMENT AND THE ÆTHERIAL.

It will be held to be against our molecular philosophy that we begin with a hypothesis which does not admit either of an experimental or an observational verification, namely, the genesis of the material element out of the ætherial. But though this relationship be denied or ignored by the student of this work, nothing of what follows is compromised or falls to the ground. This view is stated here merely for the sake of that gratification which one always experiences when, in any exposition which he undertakes, he begins at the beginning. If the reader prefer it, he may pass over this very short chapter and begin with the next, where the material element is the only postulate without any hypothesis as to its origin.

This postulate is always granted. Matter consisting of very small particles is always admitted by the physicist. But let us here remark, that if the reader who intends to give his mind for a time to the following pages proposes to do so now, and to pass over our views as to the relations between the ætherial and the material, he must consent to bring along with him some more considerate conception as to the nature of the material element than that which is popular at present. He must consent to think of the material element as something else than a very small shot or millet seed, with attractions and repulsions on the outside, obeying unknown laws and modes of action, in a region which is otherwise mere vacuum or nothingness, or else a mere interpenetrating medium of unconnected æther. This, or something like it, appears to be the common hypothesis. But when Thought, which is sufficiently severe and accurate for scientific purposes, is applied to such a notion, it falls to pieces. And for steady scientific progress and rational satisfaction in scientific pursuits, it is felt that quite another conception as to the nature of the material element is required. The following,

which postulates only the pre-existence of the universal æther, is now proposed.

Let us suppose that the æther consists of equal and similar elemental forces, or centres of elemental force, or minims of reality, and that a law determining their aggregation is imposed upon them, so that in certain regions of the celestial spaces they aggregate into nebulous specks. And, further, let us suppose that in the centre of each of these specks, when that speck has attained a certain bigness, in virtue of the centripetal pressure, a nucleus is generated which, consisting in all, as it must do, of the same number of ætherial elements now confluent into one, namely, into a new centre of force, or centralised force, possesses new powers answerable to the greater quantity of substance or reality of which it consists, and we obtain a conception of that of which we are now in want. For an exposition of the argument in favour of this synthesis, with a certain degree of detail, I must refer the reader to the earlier parts of "A Sketch of a Philosophy," as also for the origin and the action of the law of Assimilation, the cosmical law which implies the law of aggregation here presumed, and on the strength of which alone we explain everything.

Suffice it to say here, that this nucleus with its atmosphere or dynamosphere of generating and attached æther, we regard as the material element or unit of atomic weight.

By assuming such units, every way similar to each other, we maintain that so many of the phenomena of the material world may be explained even now, that it is legitimate to infer that in the due course of discovery they will all be explained hereafter.

For the development of our views as to the relation of the material world to the spirit-world, I must refer to the work that has just been named, Part I. It is there maintained, *first*, that the place of the material world in the universe is that of an exquisitely beautiful precipitate or varied cloud-work in the universal æther, determined (while yet the individuals which compose its elements are so attenuated as to be devoid of all feeling) by a geometrical necessity, that is, by the operation of perfect intelligence when applied to finite elements of reality occupying finite portions of space; and *secondly*, that though at first sight material nature thus looks like a barrier preventing the return of being (when yet in the most attenuated and apathetic state) to that state in which the individual shall have recovered sensibility, and be capable of enjoyment, yet it is not really so, inasmuch as material nature tends to culminate in organisms whose special function is to be the mother and nurse of spirits, and thus to complete the cycle of being, carrying up creation again to the spirit-world and towards the fountainhead.



## CHAPTER III.

### MOLECULES.

**Our Primal Elements.**—Our least molecule is that which has been already indicated, namely, an ætherial sphere with a group of four material elements constituting an elementary tetrahedron as its nucleus (see Plate I. fig. I.  $\Delta$ ). Viewed in reference to any particular region in space, as, for instance, the ground beneath our feet, or the bottom of the plate on which the diagram is the first figure, it is a trigonal pyramid. And in this point of view it is represented in the diagram. As to the lines joining the centres of the four constituent forces in that diagram, they may be regarded as the last resultants of the attractive and repulsive agencies of these forces, as they are constituted in the dynamisphere or ætherial atmosphere of the tetradic combination.

And now, let me lose no time in adding that, happily for our progress and for the simplicity of the science of molecular morphology, in so far as our planet at least is concerned, all molecules are constructed by the *synthesis* of elements of this kind, either single or coupled base to base (see Plate I. fig. II.  $\mathbb{H}$ ). No others are found or required.

These, our primal architectonic elements, then, let us shortly name the Tetrad, and the Bitetrad or Hylagen.

**Our Ultimate Elements.**—Similarly our molecular *analysis* gives as its least separable particles not a group of four indeed, but yet of no more than five units, or else five tetrads united by an edge in each as the common axis of all (see Plate I. figs. III. H, and IV. B). For five units and five tetrads so united (the last, however, having ultimately only five instead of five couples of units in its equator) are the smallest numbers after the bitetrad itself, which possess the skeleton of the sphere, that is, an axis with two poles which are similar to each other, and an equator evenly placed between the poles.

**Light, Common, Baric, and Barytic Elements.**—In all the elemental molecules just referred to, the units constituting them exist separ-

ate, invested within the molecular structure as well as outside of it by their proper æther. It is conceivable, however, that under intense pressure, or other unifying action, the four units in the primal tetrad may be brought and may continue to exist close together, all the æther having been extruded from between them. Now, when this has occurred, this condensed tetrad may become a genetic unity in the construction of molecules, like the single material element itself. Thus we shall have isomorphous elements (chemical atoms) of two classes, the atomic weights of the atoms in one class being four times that of the other, while at the same time their atomicities and general modes of functioning may be expected to be highly analogous.

As the lighter sort of molecules is by far the most abundant in this planet in the present epoch of nature, we may call it the common sort, while we may call the other the baric sort. Moreover, since  $H$  and  $H_4$  are already isomorphous, it will save words if we call the heavy sort of  $H$  (say  $H$ ) Baric, and the heavy sort of  $H_4$ , which must be still heavier (say  $H_4$ ), Barytic—a word which looks like a superlative, and suggests a substance (barytes) which belongs to this order.

As illustrations of these different orders of elements, it may be mentioned that selenium is baric, and tellurium is barytic sulphur; that antimony is baric, and bismuth is barytic phosphorus, while arsenic is a hybrid between light and baric; that bromine is baric, and iodine is barytic chlorine; that rubidium is baric, and cæsium is baryticpotassium, &c.

Such, then, are all the elemental forms and structures and orders of elements which the student of molecular morphology has to keep in his mind's eye, as the beginnings and endings, and the continually recurring forms in the science.

**Molecules.**—But we cannot remark too soon, that from the fundamental operation of our cosmical law as the law of the spherical, these elemental forms, and indeed molecular forms generally, are to be expected in nature and the laboratory, not single and free one by one, but aggregated and clustering together into groups or molecules. Scarcely any elemental structure taken by itself is spherical. Most elemental molecules are, therefore, under the law of sphericity still active, and more or less active according as their forms are more or less defective in the spherical. And the mode of their activity is to improve their sphericity. Now this they can only do by coming together into groups or molecules, which shall be more nearly spherical than the single elements when existing each by itself. Thus atoms of  $H$  and  $H_4$  will tend to aggregate into a molecule such as  $H_{20}$ , and atoms of  $B$  will tend to aggregate into a molecule such as  $B_{12}$  (see Plate I. figs. v. and vi). Thus are our principles of molecular synthesis as definite as those by which we obtain the

single elements. And here we have to note three kinds of molecules—1st, Isometrical molecules; 2d, Differentiated molecules; and 3d, Isometrical molecules composed of those which have been differentiated, and therefore themselves composite isometrical molecules.

**Isometrical Molecules.**—As to these we may remark, what will be seen immediately on inspection, that one of our forms (see fig. B) is a *pentagonal* bi-pyramid; while the others (see figs. H and H<sub>1</sub>) are *trigonal* bi-pyramids; the equator in B being a pentagon, and in H and H<sub>1</sub> a trigon or triangle. Now, it so happens that if we include in the trigonal order the hexagonal, to which the trigonal gives rise in a few cases (see Pl. I. fig. XI. aq), all molecules whatever, as they successively come forth, show themselves to belong either to the pentagonal or to the trigonal order. And as soon as an element is met with, it is of the first importance to mark which of these orders it belongs to. For under the law of unification most chemical atoms tend, as has been stated, to betake themselves into the molecular state. Moreover, the resulting molecule ever tends, under the law of sphericity, to be as spherical as possible. And therefore all the separate atoms of which it consists tend to point their axis to a common centre. Now, when pentagons or pentagonal forms do this, geometry shows that 12 must concur in order to complete the system, thus developing the regular *dodecahedron* of geometry (see fig. VIII.), the *dodecatom* of molecular science (see fig. VI.). When, on the other hand, trigonal forms concur, then the same geometry shows that 20 are required to complete the isometrical structure when most nearly representing the spherical in form, and there results the *icosahedron* (fig. VII.) and the *icosatom* (fig. v.). Thus our element B in the molecular state gives B<sub>12</sub> (see the figure). Our element H or H<sub>1</sub> gives H<sub>20</sub> or H<sub>1</sub><sub>20</sub> (see the figure), and of these the skeletons or lines of union give the dodecahedron and icosahedron respectively (figs VII. and VIII.)

**Differentiated Molecules.**—An isometrical molecule having been constructed into an unity, nay, any molecule while being constructed, is, of course, when considered as an unity, “dissimilar” to the single elements or members of which it is being constructed or is constructed. The synthesis, therefore, under the general law of chemical affinity (that is, the tendency of dissimilars to unite with one another), tends to go on after an isometrical molecule has been constructed; and thus there result differentiated molecules of many kinds.

Of these one of the most interesting is that in which the *structure* is differentiated while the *form* continues to be isometrical. Thus, with regard to the two regular polyhedrons towards one or other of which almost all molecules, according to our views, tend to conform, namely, the dodecahedron and the icosahedron, geometers show that their salient parts are so related to each other that each tends both to circum-



scribe and to inscribe the other symmetrically. Suppose, then, that a dodecatom has been constructed, it may be differentiated symmetrically by the apposition of 20 elements of the same kind in its surface, so that it becomes double-walled—the inner wall consisting of 12, the outer wall of 20 similar elements. And the same will tend to be the case should the inner wall be an icosatom; in that case the coating will be a dodecatom. In both, the number of elements in the molecule will be  $12 + 20 = 32$ , and the molecule is differentiated while yet it continues isometrical. Hence a fine stable molecule—

$$X^{12+20} = \overset{32}{X}.$$

But another case is no less frequent. Thus, an isometrical molecule, such as  $X^{12}$ , having been constructed, a single element is added, giving

$$X\overset{12}{X} = \overset{13}{X}.$$

But this combination, like the tetrad itself, is heteropolar, dissymmetrical, pyramidal. It therefore cannot exist separate, but must move about till it rests on something else. Now, the simplest case of rest will be when one such simply differentiated molecule applies itself to another of the same kind, and they continue united, as it were, base to base. We thus obtain

$$X\overset{12}{X}X\overset{12}{X} = \overset{26}{X}.$$

And such is our first formally differentiated molecule. We shall find that they are many both in the crust of the earth and in the laboratory of the chemist. But when single elements or single atoms of  $X$  are supplied in good number compared with molecules of the same, such as  $X^{12}$ , another result is to be expected. In this case, very soon after an atom of  $X$  has attached itself to one point of  $X^{12}$ , another atom of  $X$  will attach itself, through the operation of the law of symmetry, on another point of  $X^{12}$  directly opposite to the first. And thus there will result

$$X\overset{12}{X}X = X^{1+12+1} \text{ or } \overset{14}{X}.$$

Now, in either of these cases the molecules thus differentiated are no longer free to act in the line of any one of their six axes. They are determined by their now prolate forms, both as to their own modes of action, and as to their position in relation to those adjacent to them. Moreover, their activity is increased; because this development of eminent poles is a departure from the spherical. So also is their cohesion or stability increased for the same reason; for they are differentiated, or made to consist of dissimilar parts to a greater extent than before. We are therefore to expect that most molecules, as they are

met with in nature, most of which have undergone the ordeal of planetary development, will be differentiated, that instead of  $(X)^{12}$  for instance, we shall usually meet with  $X^{12}X^{12}$  or  $X(X)^{12}$  or  $Y(X)^{12}Y$ , or  $YX^{10}Y$  or the like.

**Composite Molecules.**—But isometrical molecules, when thus differentiated, have departed from the spherical form, which they possessed before. They have become axial or prolate. They must therefore, as has been just stated, have acquired activity under the law of the spherical. And it is easy to see that they will tend to aggregate again into larger molecules; for in these larger molecules they may hold the position of radii, and thus the whole structure be spherical, notwithstanding the axial or prolate form of each of its constituents. Thus, beyond differentiated dodecatoms and composed of them, we are to expect composite dodecatoms consisting of twelve of the former disposed around the common centre. And beyond differentiated icosatoms when they have trigonal poles, we are to expect isometrical composite icosatoms. But confining our attention here to the differentiated dodecatom, after  $X^{12}$ , we shall have the large but isometrical molecule

$$(X^{12})^{12} = 168 X.$$

And such, we shall find, are the molecules which are most generally met with in the crystals of the mineral kingdom, the volume of each occupying 8 or 16 aqueous molecules, or rather a half or one ice volume. But these facts will appear most plainly as examples occur. Let us, therefore, rapidly pass on that we may meet with examples as soon as possible.

**Atomic Weights.**—Since hydrogen holds such an eminent place in the chemistry of the day that it is taken as the unity of atomic weight, and since, therefore, atomic weights cannot be deduced and compared with the tables in chemical works unless we know the true atomic weight of hydrogen, we may mention here that our H (see fig. III.) is the hydrogen of our system. Nor is it drawing very largely upon the credulity of the reader to ask him to believe this in the meantime if he is afterwards to believe any part of our molecular morphology at all. For the hydrogen of the laboratory is at once the lightest and the most elastic or mechanically perfect of all known elements. And so is our H the lightest molecule which, according to the principles of our system, can be separable from others and insulable by itself; for since each of its poles is a single unit only, and its equator consists of three units only (which is the smallest number of points that can determine a plane), H is the simplest molecule that can possibly have two poles which are similar to each other, and an equator lying evenly between them. For the same reason, also, its mechanical perfection, and, consequently, its

resilience under strain, and therefore its elasticity in general, must be most perfect as will soon appear.

As to the tetrad (see fig. 1.), it is only a hemiform or pyramid, not with two similar poles opposite to each other, but with a base opposite to each pole, and therefore, as we shall see, formed for resting on and adhering to something else, not for rising into the aeriform state by itself. The atomic weight of our hydrogen, then, is  $1 + 3 + 1 = 5$ . And this, according to our system, is not a conventional number. It is an absolute atomic weight. And that the atomic weight of our hydrogen should be 5, while the conventional atomic weight of this element (which is the usual basis of the tables of atomic weight in the authorised systems of chemistry) should be unity, is a very happy coincidence ; for  $2 \times 5 = 10$

and  $\frac{10}{2 \times 5} = 1.0$ . In order, therefore, to convert the tables of atomic weights in chemical works, their numbers being taken at the lowest, into the absolute scale of this work, the decimal point requires only to be removed one cypher to the right and these numbers halved. Thus magnesium, whose lightest atomic weight on the conventional scale is 12.0, becomes on the absolute scale  $\frac{120}{2} = 60$ . Silicium from 14.0 becomes

$\frac{140}{2} = 70$ . Calcium, from 20.0 becomes  $\frac{200}{2} = 100$ , and so on.

These things premised, let us no longer delay to enter upon the elemental synthesis of the molecules of bodies, and that not when viewed in their purely morphological relations, but in their genetic relations, that is, in the order of their natural development and association. They have been presented to the student in their morphological relations in our "Sketch of a Philosophy" Part II. ; and there also, and in Part I., the law of Assimilation (whose origin we have traced to the relationship between Creator and creation), and whose operation alone we invoke to explain all the phenomena of Nature, has been so fully illustrated that we need not recur to an explanation of it here, but may proceed at once to apply it.

But here a difficulty presents itself as to a commencement of our proposed synthesis of molecules. There are two formative principles in the cosmos equally aboriginal, and which appear to be everywhere co-ordinate, namely, analysis and synthesis (see A Sketch, &c., Part I. chap. vi.) But they are the opposites of each other, and suggest states of things at the beginning which are the opposite of each other. They suggest, as the product of a complete antecedent synthesis, matter in the densest and most massive state—a state in which single material elements are packed as closely together as possible. They suggest, also, as the educt of a complete antecedent analysis, matter in the rarest and most



diffused state possible—a state in which each material element has secured its own individuality, and its legitimate volume or proper sphere in space in which it may exist. Now, since both the operations which work towards these states are simultaneous in Nature, and the actual web of Nature is the weaving of both, it follows that in order to reach and to represent Nature truly, it would be necessary to begin with both simultaneously. But this is impossible; we must, therefore, make an election between the two. Now, as that which is most in accordance with chemical habits of thought, and which holds out a greater likelihood of verification, instead of soaring for a long time in the sky and dealing with matter in the rarest and most fully analysed state, becoming concrete only in meteoric matter, it would be desirable rather to descend into the Plutonic abyss, where we might assume it to exist in the most condensed state.

But as an important point in the verification of the views here advanced consists in the power with which our theory invests us, of deducing, independently of the use of the balance, the specific gravities of liquids and solids, as well as æriforms, and as this deduction requires the knowledge of the atomic weight of an unit volume of water, and if possible of ice also, it will be well, first of all, to determine these points if we can. And for this let us make an ascent for a short time into the azure, or rather, indeed, into the celestial spaces.

Let not the reader recoil if from this hint he infer that as we have presented to him the first elements of material nature disseminated in the æther, so are we now to introduce him to aqueous matter in the same region as the finest and most abundant product of primal synthetic action there. No doubt, if he be wedded to the existing philosophy of the chemistry of the day, he will say that such an idea is absurd. But science and philosophy down to the age of Newton, and Newton himself, did not say so. And we may say safely, that however deeply disparaging to the interpretations of Nature by modern chemists our molecular philosophy may be, and however unmeasured the disparagements which they may throw upon it, yet, looking to the whole history of philosophy, it is not our view, it is their interpretations, that are exceptional. It is the conception of some 70 different kinds of matter essentially distinct from each other, and neither in any time nor in all eternity transformable into each other, that is the novelty in the history of philosophy. And yet on such a conception the whole of modern mineral geology is built!

## CHAPTER IV.

### THE NORMAL SYNTHESIS OF MATTER IN THE CELESTIAL SPACES AND ITS FIRST AQUEOUS PRODUCTS.

**The Tetrad** (see Plate I. fig. 1.)—Let us suppose that in the celestial space which we now contemplate, the æther is sown with matter existing in the state of single material elements, or, as we may say, the common vapour of bodies. Then, under the law of Assimilation (as to the space they occupy) mutual attraction will ensue; the material units will come together. Moreover, when their primal diffusion is most perfect, and their commencement of synthesis most simple, they will, of course, first come together in couples. Thus as we assume that the individuality of the material elements is such as to prevent them, when they are as near to each other as they may be, from fusing together and becoming confluent into one, we obtain, as the first product of synthesis in the celestial space, a couple of material elements, unified, indeed, in their ætherial atmospheres, but as to their centres distinct—these centres thus marking the two foci of an ellipsoid which is constituted by their united ætherial atmospheres, and therefore by the couple as a whole.

But the form of this couple, this ellipsoid, is inevitably prolate, while molecular synthesis ever aims at the spherical. What, then, will the next step in the synthesis be? Plainly, it will be the union of two such couples symmetrically or crosswise; for when they are so united, then, by the unification of their ætherial atmospheres as before, an isometrical or spherical surface is obtained; while, as to its nucleus, as defined by the position of the four centres of its constituent units, it must be a tetrahedron, also an isometrical form. And thus, as the product of the first fit of synthetic action, in the circumstances which we have conceived, we obtain what we have shortly named the Tetrad, its absolute atomic weight = 4.

But this tetrad exists in a region where there are also single units of matter, and other tetrads. With either one or other of these, therefore, according as it first meets the one or the other, this first tetrad

must, when a synthetic phase of action exists in that region, unite, and, under the law of symmetry and sphericity, it must place itself in symmetrical relationship with them.

**Hydrogen** (see Plate I. fig. III.)—Now, with respect to the single material elements should they first come in the way of the tetrad, this symmetry is effected when a tetrad and a unit unite, so that the unit may be poised opposite the centre of one of the four facets of the tetrad, at the same distance as the unit in the tetrad on the other side.

From this union there results a bi-pyramidal nucleus (figure H). Now, this is a molecular structure of singular mechanical perfection ; for while it consists of no more than five equal and similar forces held in position, and moved by equal and similar attractive and repulsive agencies, these five forces are so disposed, in the structure which they form, as to constitute no fewer than seven triangles of forces ! The stability, therefore, the resistance to strain, and the resilience, more familiarly the undecomposability and elasticity of this element, must be extreme.

We shall see, as we proceed, that it represents the hydrogen of chemistry in every particular.

But is the mode of synthesis which we have now traced the only one possible in the circumstances which we have conceived ? After two units have come together so as to constitute a couple, may not a single unit, it may be asked, instead of another coupled unit, as we have supposed, enter into union with the given couple, so as to give a triangle of forces instead of a tetrad as the first product of synthesis after the couple ? Be it so. The issue will forthwith be the same as before. This triangle of forces, which, under the law of sphericity, is only an equator, not a complete form, will, under that law, immediately unite with two other units, one on each side of itself ; in other words, it will adjust to itself another couple, so that that couple may be an axis, or at least give poles to the equatorial form, consisting of three units. But such a combination of five units is the very same as that which we obtained before, viz., H.

Thus, as the first step towards the condensation of the common vapour of matter, the formation of hydrogen presents itself to us.

**Hylagen.**—But there is one incident that must prevent this result, an incident which may be expected to occur very frequently, and that is when, instead of a single material element entering into union with a tetrad, so that, taken together, they shall constitute an atom of hydrogen, or, instead of tetrads arranging themselves in sets of four around one in the centre, which gives four atoms of hydrogen, two tetrads, just generated beside each other, clap together base to base. From this there must result a new kind of hydrogen, with two units instead of one in each of the three equatorial angles (see Plate I. fig. II. H<sup>II</sup>).



**Hydrogen transformed into Hylagen.**—But such a contingency, such a result, does not disturb our synthesis. Nay, where matter in single elements, or the common vapour of matter abounds, as in the region of space which we are now contemplating, atoms of hydrogen—their atomic weight 5—must ever tend to grow into this heavier sort whose atomic weight is  $2 \times 4 = 8$ , instead of 5. Thus, the form of the atom of hydrogen, considered irrespective of the action of heat, and viewed in reference to its circumscribing ellipsoid is prolate, the axis being to the equatorial diameter nearly as 10 to 7. In order to fulfil the law of sphericity it is in want of more matter on its equatorial region. Wherever, therefore, matter in single units and sufficient repose or cold exist in the ambient, an atom of H may be expected to attract to itself three units, one on each of the three angles of its equator, thus making each angle of that equator to consist of a couple of units. Moreover, these added units, according to the existing conditions of existence, will place their axes either parallel to the equator or to the axis of the atom of hydrogen into which they have entered.

And thus hydrogen, if existing alone, in the circumstances which have been mentioned, will tend, sooner or later (or as we say “secularly”), to be transformed into bitetrads or hylagen.

**The Tetratom of Hydrogen** (see Plate I. fig. ix.)—There is one case, however, in which this transformation of H into H<sub>4</sub> will be prevented. On inspecting the atom of H it will be seen that there are on it five points, where other atoms of H or H<sub>4</sub> may enter into union with it. Now, where existing heat does not forbid such union, and where atoms of H abound in the nascent state, the three points on the equator of an atom of H will be immediately supplied, not by three units, so as to generate an atom of hylagen, but by three other atoms of H coming on and remaining attached by their poles; for the equatorial angles of an atom of H are constituted by four edges, while the polar angles are constituted by three only; these polar and equatorial parts are, therefore, dissimilar to each other, and, like dissimilars in general, they must tend to unite. Thus, to a central atom of H three atoms of H will tend to be added, extending their arms in the equatorial plane of the primary or central atom. We thus obtain the tetratom of hydrogen (see fig. H<sub>4</sub><sup>4</sup>).

*Its normal Genesis.*—But here, let us remark, that while our theory thus provides for the genesis of tetratoms of hydrogen in detail, it also provides for their genesis all at once, and in a much more elegant way. Thus, let the entire medium in the celestial spaces which we are now considering have resolved itself into tetrads. If these are prevented from clapping together into couples, base to base, so as to generate the bitetrad (fig. H<sub>2</sub>), or in sets of five, by an edge of each as a common axis for all, so as to generate an atom of our boron (fig. B), if they continue

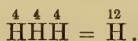
separate and arrange themselves under the law of symmetry in the simplest manner possible, then four will place themselves around one in the centre, so that a base of each of the four may be symmetrically poised over each of the four angles of the central tetrad. Now, when this arrangement has been established, the five tetrads thus tetradically grouped is one and the same thing as a tetratom of hydrogen! And as soon as three of the atoms of H have placed their axes in the equatorial plane of the fourth, as in our diagram of  $H^4$ , then



Thus we are led to regard hydrogen as normally given in the tetratom.

*Its Importance in Nature.*—And this is important to remark, because we shall find the tetratom of hydrogen to be a molecular structure of such importance that the very existence of the vegetable kingdom seems to depend upon its functioning. Thus, viewed in its ætherial atmosphere, the tetratom of hydrogen is no better (when considered in reference to the law of sphericity) than an equatorial annulus. It is intensely oblate or negative. Now, we shall find that oxygen agrees eminently with it in this respect. Hence, in virtue of the repulsion which operates between forms which are similar to each other, the tetratom of hydrogen tends to repel oxygen as much as the single atom of hydrogen tends to attract it. Accordingly,  $H^4$  appears to have power to expel oxygen from carbonic dioxide, and to deliver its carbon in the uncombined state into the vegetable, there to constitute a tissue or tenuous structure which continues concrete, while its aeriform part (oxygen) is given off to the atmosphere. But from the consideration of such phenomena we are yet far distant.

*The Triple Tetratom of Hydrogen.*—Still it is good to be remarked here, at the very commencement of molecular synthesis where we now are, that the functioning of the tetratom of hydrogen must be of such a kind as has now been specified. But further, from the oblate or negative form of the single tetratom it follows, under the law of sphericity, that one tetratom will tend to place itself on each pole of a central tetratom, so as to give the Triple Tetratom



And this, considered as existing in a very expanded state, and merely as the basis of arrangement of free atoms in an aeriform, is probably that in which hydrogen, when in a state of repose, usually exists.

**The Hexatom of Hydrogen.**—But in as much as the single atom of H is prolate, while  $H^4$  is oblate, these two will tend to unite. An atom of H will place itself on each pole of an atom of  $H^4$ , thus generating  $H^6$  (see Plate I. fig. x.) The mode of synthesis is the same as we

have met with already when a single unit of matter placed itself on each pole of a triangle of units, so as to generate a single atom of hydrogen.

We thus obtain the hexatom of hydrogen (fig. x.  $H^6$ ). Viewed in reference to the law of sphericity, its form is the same as that of the single atom; and no improvement in respect of sphericity can be made by any further addition after the same mode. Wherever synthetic action is strong, therefore, and there are no single atoms of hydrogen present, what we are to expect is that these hexatoms, as perfected structures, will unite with each other as their symmetry determines, that is, so as to give a hexatom of hexatoms, and after that a hexatom of these composite hexatoms, that is,  $6 \times 6H^6 = 36H^6$ , &c.

**The Hexatom Transformed into fully Expanded Vapour.**—Suppose now, these hexatoms to exist in a region where matter in single units also exists, what we have here specially to remark is, that in each and all the hexatoms the central atom of H is secured against the incidence of three units of matter on its three equatorial angles, these angles being engaged already by the atoms of H, which are in union with them. The central atom of H in  $H^6$  is therefore secured against transformation into an atom of  $H\dot{H}$ . In a celestial space, then, impregnated by the presence in it of material elements, all of them existing in a separate state, or as the common vapour of matter, after the genesis of hydrogen itself, we obtain the following secular equation, in which the astronomical sign of the sun is used as the symbol of the single material element, or unit of matter—

$$6 \times 6H^6 \text{ or } 6 \times 6HH^5 + (6 \times 6 \times 5 \times 3 \odot) = 6 \times 6H\dot{H}^5 = 36H\dot{H}^5. \text{ (See for fig. } H\dot{H}^5 \text{ fig. } HH^5 = H^6, \text{ which is the same in form).}$$

Now this structure,  $H\dot{H}^5$ , so long as it possesses the form of genesis, that is, so long as it carries an atom of  $H\dot{H}$  on each of the five points of union of the central atom of H, for a reason which will presently appear, we may call fully expanded vapour, or superheated or wholly uncompressed steam.

**Expanded Vapour Collapses into Common Vapour** (see fig. xi. aq).—This hexatom of  $H\dot{H}^5$  is capable of assuming a variety of forms. There is one form, however, which in symmetry and sphericity far transcends all the others, and in which, therefore, all the other forms must culminate; and that is when all the six isomorphous elements of which it consists have come close together, and so as to place all their axes parallel to each other and to the geometrical axis of the combination, and all their equators in the same plane (see fig. aq). From this there results a structure which, viewed in its ætherial atmosphere, is eminently spherical and symmetrical—which, viewed in its peripheral



aspect, is positive, while, viewed in its central aspect, it is negative—which is so well adapted for vibration or palpitation that it must be a perfect storehouse of heat—which is so finely differentiated by the insertion of one atom of H into the circle, or rather the regular hexagon of which the other five members are atoms of  $\text{H}_2$ , that in free space it must be very stable, while yet it is so easily transformable that it must be very tender. In short, here we have a molecular structure, which in every physical feature possesses such morphological eminence that, if our theory be truly representative of Nature, we have not only to look for, but we must find some material agent in Nature holding the place of a primæval substance, and characterised by such properties as immediately present themselves to the eye on the inspection of this our molecule of aq.

But what as to the atomic weight of this exquisite structure—which, does it not at once remind us of the form of a minim snow-flake or “ice flower?” Since it is  $\text{H}_2\text{H}_2^5$ , it is  $5 + 5 \times 8 = 5 + 40 = i.e., 1 + 8 = 9$ , when  $\text{H} = 1$ . Now this, it is well known, is precisely the specific gravity of common vapour when that of hydrogen is taken as unity.

And what as to our two forms of this structure, both of them symmetrical, and therefore both capable of the fully insulated or æriform state, the one that which we have indicated under the names of fully expanded vapour or superheated steam, and the other as common vapour or steam? It is only to be expected that the former shall occupy at least double the volume of the latter. If, then, steam imprisoned in a boiler should be raised to a continually increasing temperature, what we are to expect, according to this view, is that it will begin at a certain temperature to observe a rate of expansion much greater than that proper to æriforms in general, and, in fact, as soon as it has acquired the heat requisite to maintain it in its new form, will rapidly expand into at least double its volume, thus bursting vessels which would have been strong enough to confine it in its common form. Now, does it not look as if here we have an explanation of that bursting of boilers which often occurs, which is so unlooked for, so fatal, and unaccountable on ordinary views?

**Aq transformable into HO** (see Pl. I. fig. XII. HO).—But what is the other easy transformation of  $\text{H}_2\text{H}_2$  to which I have alluded? So long as it is let alone in free space an atom of aq ought to be, as has been stated, very stable in the hexagonal form. But suppose there come into the field in which it exists, and near enough to it, an atom of the pentagonal order of forms, such as B (see Pl. I. fig. IV. B), then, in consequence of their dissimilarity, aq and B must tend to unite, and that, in the first instance, on the same axis, as the readiest mode of union under the law of symmetry. But on the same axis they cannot unite, for aq is hexagonal on its polar regions, and B on the same regions is pentagonal.

What, then, will happen? On a minute inspection of the structure of the atom of aq, it will be seen that it can adapt itself beautifully to a pentagonal pyramidal form, such as is the polar region of the atom of B. It will be seen that the five atoms of  $H^1$  in  $HH^5$ , which is the primal representative of aq, can—and that by one movement—unite with each other, poles to equators, and face to face, and apply themselves to B, so that the polar regions of the latter shall be a perfect model for them in their new form, that new form symmetrical (see Pl. I. fig. XIII. O), yet such that it is wholly in want of an axis—a want which, however, the atom of H, thrown out of the circle of 6 in aq, can admirably supply. Thus aq, when it enters into union with a molecule of the pentagonal order, will be transformed into HO (see the fig.), and when coupled  $H\odot H = H^2\odot$ . Auct.

**Oxygen** (see Fig. XIII. O).—And what, let us ask, does this new element, which we have denoted by the letter O, represent? If it be to nature what it looks like, it will be what the blood disk is to the animal, what the life-buoy is to him who without it would be drowned. It is a double concave-lens-form. Both its poles are re-entrant. They are wholly in want of matter. When existing in single atoms, therefore, it will tend to unite, to squat down upon almost anything that does not repel it by being mailed in it already, for it cannot be so ill-conditioned in a morphological point of view, as when it is existing free and alone. Moreover, in every morphological feature O is obviously the very counterpart of H, and its atomic weight, which is that of  $H^5$ , is  $5 \times 8 = 40$ , that is 8 when  $H = 1$ .

**Oxygen Gas** (see fig. XIV. ©).—But a single atom of O is very oblate, while two on the same axis give a form whose atmosphere at least may be spherical. On rising into the æriform state it may, therefore, be expected that atoms of O will couple, so that an unit volume of oxygen gas corresponding to an unit volume of H or of Aq, will have a specific gravity of 16 when  $H = 1$ . Let these remarks suffice, in the meantime, for showing that this new element O represents oxygen, and its coupled molecule © oxygen, gas.

I will only add that HO is, like the primal tetrad, dissymmetrical and heteropolar. By itself, therefore, it is uninsulable. But a couple when united by the atoms of O, which are their bases, are (like a couple of tetrads united by their bases into a bitetrad), symmetrical, and therefore mobile, and possibly insulable. And thus our theory justifies both the old and the new view of the experimental chemist; it justifies both the formula HO and  $H_2O$ , where O in the first is 8, and in the second 16 when  $H = 1$ .

What a marvellous thing, then, if this molecular morphology, which it has fallen to me to propound, is no more than a mere imagination,

really deserving of no better treatment at the hands of the chemists than that which it receives! Can the legitimacy, nay, the necessity, of the constructions and transformations which I have placed before the reader be denied if the first principles of our theory, nay, the law of symmetry only, be admitted? No. And if they cannot, what is to be thought of such a crowd of coincidences, presenting themselves all at once, in connection with our  $\text{aq}$  and  $\text{HO}$ , and the well-known properties of common vapour, and the oxygen and hydrogen into which our atom of  $\text{aq}$  may be resolved? Is it said that these coincidences are merely accidental? Such a peculiar atomic weight as 45 or 9 accidental! and its normal resolution into two elements, whose atomic weights are 5 and 40, or 1 and 8, also accidental! Its intensely vibratory or palpitative structure, that is, its capacity for heat compared with other elemental molecular structures, compared with  $\text{O}$  for instance, accidental! its hexagonal structure and form, so like a minim snow-flake, or the inflorescence of plants of the monocotyledonous order, in which an aqueous tissue predominates, accidental! If these, and all the other coincidences which might be pointed out, of our theoretical structure, with the properties of the aqueous element, as known in nature and the laboratory, be merely accidental, then here, assuredly, is a greater miracle than any of those of Egypt. But miracle or no miracle, it appears that the chemists of the present day don't and won't give their mind to it. But to proceed.

**Why  $\text{aq}$  is so stable.**—In consequence of the fact that one of the six elements constitutive of an atom of  $\text{aq}$  is an atom of  $\text{H}$ , while the other five are atoms of  $\text{H}$ , the structure of  $\text{aq}$  is differentiated, or consists of dissimilar parts. And, therefore, under the general law of the union and subsequent cohesion of dissimilars, these parts hold together, and the whole structure is more stable than it would have been had all the constitutive parts been identical with each other.

**Why  $\text{aq}$  is a Vapour and not a Permanent Gas.**—But this differentiation implies at the same time a want of symmetry in the structure of  $\text{aq}$ . In fact, having on one side an atom of  $\text{H}$ , whose atomic weight is only 5, while on the five other sides it has atoms of  $\text{H}$ , whose atomic weight is 8, every atom of  $\text{aq}$  has what we may call a weak side. Atoms of  $\text{aq}$  will, therefore, tend to lean against something which can supply the want of matter in the atom of  $\text{H}$ , and impart strength to it. And if nothing else be supplied on which they may lean, they will lean upon one another—the weak side in one atom upon the strong side of the adjacent atom. And thus a molecule of aqueous matter will form; and this molecule, being no longer capable of the fully individualised or æriform state, will condense. In short,  $\text{aq}$  will be a vapour and not a permanent gas—not such a gas as we may conceive  $\text{H}$  or  $\text{O}$  to be



capable of constituting—at least in the absence of overpowering pressure, or a degree of cold incompatible with the æriform state. With regard to both H and  $\odot$ , neither displays any weak side or dissymmetry which may determine towards condensation. But with aq the case is different. And the question for us now to ascertain is, on what way atoms of aq will condense, and what will be the molecular forms that will result?

Now, this we shall state in the fewest words possible, because the forms referred to are adapted to eye-sight, and ought to be represented by diagrams. And when that is not the case, no description, however detailed, proves satisfactory; while to procure the requisite diagrams, there must be a concurrence of purchasers with author, else the cost is too much.

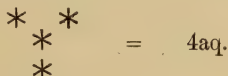
**Our New Symbols.**—Meantime something may be done to assist the eye by the use of types already in the printer's hands. Thus, let us take—

‡ or † A dagger, placed up and down on the page, instead of the letter H, for hydrogen.

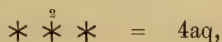
$\infty$  A figure 8, with face equally broad all over, which is the atomic weight of an atom of oxygen where H = 1, and which when placed horizontally as  $\infty$ , at the same time somewhat resembles a section in the plane of the axis of an atom of oxygen, instead of the letter O.

\* The astronomical sign for a fixed star, for an atom of vapour, which it resembles in its hexagonal structure, instead of the two letters aq, which are very inconvenient.

**The Tetratom of Vapour.**—As to the molecular structures, then, which the aqueous element, or common vapour, will give during a normal or gradual process of condensation (since its structure is hexagonal and therefore trigonal also), the first group, as in the case of the material unit itself, and of hydrogen also, will be the tetratom which, when the poles of the atoms of aq are supposed to be directly under the eye, may be thus represented—

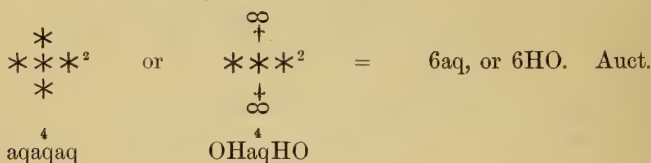


Unhappily, when this tetratom is held up so that the axis of the combination is vertically before the eye, or in the plane of the paper, it can only be represented, if it is in any measure to exhibit the symmetry, by substituting  $*^2$  for  $**$ . Thus—



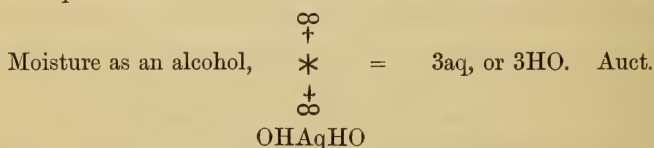
the fourth aq being supposed to be behind the central atom.

**The Hexatom of Vapour or Moisture.**—But, like the tetratom of hydrogen, this tetratom of vapour is very oblate, very much in want of more matter on the poles. As in the case of the tetratom of H, therefore, by the incidence of an atom of vapour on each pole, we shall immediately have the hexatom. But here the dimorphism of the aqueous element may come into play. The element of moisture added on each pole may exist either as aq or as HO, for the trigonal pyramidal form of H is conformable to the hexagonal (and therefore also the trigonal) re-entrant poles of aq. Thus, in different conditions of existence, we may have—



Now, of these, the latter being finely differentiated and compactly built, must be comparatively stable; and this we shall find as we proceed that it is.

**The Triatom of Moisture.**—In fact, when the three loosely attached atoms of aq on the equator of aq<sup>6</sup> are driven off by the drying of the chemist, previously to his analysis of the substance in which the moisture exists, the axial structure is so stable that it survives a considerable ordeal. In the diagram (see Pl. I. fig. xv.) the last lines of this beautiful structure are given. With our adopted symbols it may be thus represented—



**Dead Water.**—But such a structure taken singly is highly axial or prolate in form. If, then, it cannot restore its own sphericity, each by laying hold again of 3aq for an equator, so as to become OHaq<sup>4</sup>HO, they will aggregate into a group around a common centre, in which, each being a radius, its prolate character when by itself will not interfere with the sphericity of the whole. And what will the structure of that group be? To this it is to be answered, that since both the poles of OHaqHO are pentagons, the group, when completed under the law of symmetry, must consist of 12, and the oxy-hydro-aqueous molecule resulting must be a dodecatom, of which the following figure profile may give some conception.



Thus we obtain a molecule composed of aqueous elements which both at the core and all over the surface is *mailed* in oxygen,—nay, oxygen already in union with hydrogen, and that hydrogen so fixed or *nailed* into the atom of aq that it cannot readily lapse along with the oxygen with which it is in union into aq. Such a molecule, then, is secure from the further attacks of oxygen. It must also possess considerable stability. Moreover, its whole surface is adapted for receiving into union with itself, or for going into union with elements of the pentagonal order of forms, such as carbon, nitrogen, phosphorus, &c. It is truly a sub-hydrate of oxide of hydrogen in the molecular state.

**Living or Flowing Water** (see Pl. I. fig. xvi. AQ).—If, again, the two atoms of aq on the poles of the tetratom have not been transformed into HO, but continue in the form of aq, so as to give as the hexatom aqaq<sup>4</sup>aq, the molecule resulting must be entirely different. In this case what is to be expected is a composite hexatom, in which six hexatoms place themselves around a common axis, with their axes parallel to that common axis. But, this done, it is further to be expected that the six atoms of the poles will rush together to form poles for the whole combination, while the remaining four atoms in each of the hexatoms will unfold themselves in a linear series between the two poles, and so that all shall be exquisitely unified, symmetrised, and spherified into an exquisite aqueous capsule, which will be spherical or spheroidal, prolate or oblate, according to the temperature, thus displaying curious changes of volume with changes of temperature, and of which the diagram, AQ (see fig. xvi.), may serve to give some, though a most inadequate, conception. Like the former molecule, it obviously consists of thirty-six atoms of aq; and since it is wholly analogous to the single atom of aq in form, we may designate it by the same letters as capitals.

Perhaps this description of the genesis of AQ is too brief to be intelligible. But there are also other modes of the aggregation of atoms of aq, which must all culminate in this same molecule, and to enter into



detail would be unsuitable here. It will easily be discerned by the student himself that such is the laminar form of the atom of aq, that no fewer than 36 are sufficient to admit of that bending round which is necessary to constitute a spherical structure. Nay, he will be willing to admit that such bending round and such a spherical structure are compatible only with a low temperature, and that, too, only when assisted by pressure; for the single atom of aq, morphologically considered, is more perfect as an individualised object than the particle  $AQ = 36aq$ . But the weak side of the atom of aq enforces a social nature upon it, and constitutes it a condensing vapour, instead of a permanent gas, and hence we have in nature not dry vapour merely, but moisture and water, and, in a word, a medium and a material for organisation, at least when carbon is applied to assist the weak side, and to render aqueous matter content with the molecular and concrete state.

Thus, according to us, just as the single atom of common vapour is dimorphous, so is the aqueous element in its condensed and liquid state dimorphous. And of the two forms the functioning generally, and specially in the living body, must be extremely different.

*The Dimorphism of Aqueous Matter a cause of Animal Heat and Cold.*—When they are at the same temperature  $(OHAqHO)^{12}$ , and  $AQ$  must differ not a little as to their capacity for heat. And hence very interesting phenomena must result. Thus  $AQ$  is far better suited for entertaining that pulsating or palpitating action wherein heat consists than  $(OHAqHO)^{12}$ , for in the former all the angles, or at any rate 12 in every atom of aq in the 36 are eminently free to pulsate, while in the latter they are in great measure bound down. Supposing, then, that  $AQ$  is an element of water as it exists in outward nature, or as it is taken into the stomach as food when the organism has need of food, and that in the organism it undergoes the transformation from  $AQ$  into  $(OHAqHO)^{12}$ , the loss of capacity of heat which this transformation implies must be accompanied by a considerable disengagement of heat in the region where such transformation is taking place. When, on the contrary, aqueous matter which has been thus transformed is lapsing into common water, that is, when  $(OHAqHO)^{12}$  is lapsing into  $AQ$  there must be great absorption of heat; there must be coolness, coldness, or chill, and the resulting sweat will tend to be cold.

These phenomena which attach to our physiology I mention here, though out of place, in order to suggest a caution in the discussion of animal heat. At present that phenomenon, and all its differences and variations, are supposed to be explained by combustion taking place in the body between oxygen, carbon, and hydrogen; and it is amusing to observe to what an extent figures may be made to quadrate with that hypothesis. But it explains nothing, or next to nothing, and neces-

sitates a constant reference to the action of the nervous system—the general safety-valve of all pathological hypotheses. From our views of the aqueous element, however (which constitutes not less than three-fourths of the whole body), it appears, that its particles are capable of two forms, which must be so dissimilar in their functioning, that, viewed in certain respects, the one, namely, AQ, might be called Living Water; and the other, namely (OHAqHO)<sup>12</sup>, might be called Dead Water,—one very important relation between the two being this, that the former, in being transformed into the latter, gives out its heat. But whether that heat shall go to assist in sustaining the genial glow of healthy action, or to produce inflammation and fever, must depend upon circumstances which we are not now in a condition to inquire into. One thing plainly appears, however, and that is, that the transformation, though excessive, need not be necessarily fatal; for the dead body in this case may be brought to life again, and will indeed revive spontaneously, as soon as it recovers for itself the heat with which it has parted to the surrounding tissue when dying.

But to proceed. Already our attempts at diagrams, by the use of symbols, fail us. We cannot represent anything like AQ with our new symbols. We shall, therefore, not proceed with the synthesis of aqueous elements in detail, further than to say, that in coming so soon as we have done to the two molecules, consisting each of 36aq, we have cut across the course of nature. That course gives successively—

1. *The Azure*.—Perhaps laminae, or most tenuous world-embracing shells of tetratoms of aq, all poised symmetrically in the sky, but at a distance from each other.

2. *The Serene Cloud*.—Laminae of vapour, composed of tetratoms more close together, of limited extent, and decussating and interwoven into a cloud-tissue, which we shall afterwards find to be the first type and foreshadowing of organic tissue.

3. *The Rain Cloud*.—When there is a disturbance in the cloud, so that some tetratoms break up, and the single atoms of vapour thus set free go to form the still unbroken tetratoms into hexatoms, the latter, by running into molecules of AQ, would give rain.

4. *Vesicular Vapour*.—An indefinite number of hexagonal forms, when symmetrically adjusted to each other, tend to form laminae of indefinite extent, and not individualised groups. But under the law of individuation, of symmetry and sphericity, tetratoms of vapour, like single atoms, may form into a spherical group, constituting a finestrated vesicle of exquisite tenuity, an ærial balloon of vapour consisting of a definite quantity of vapour.

5. *The Rain Drop*.—And when these vesicles are disturbed, so that some are broken up into single atoms of vapour, while others survive, the

atoms of vapour set free will go to place themselves on the poles of the tetratoms constituting the vesicles, thus loading these vesicles, so that they may be expected to condense. Now, when they do so, each vesicle thus loaded must give a differentiated dodecatom of AQ. And in this we arrive at the true natural unit of water, whether falling through the atmosphere, or resting in the fountain, the lake, or the ocean. We may thus in symbol represent it—

$$\text{The Rain Drop, } \text{AQ}(\overset{12}{\text{AQ}})\text{AQ} = \text{AQ} \overset{\text{AQ}^3\text{AQ}^3}{\text{AQ}} = 14\text{AQ} = 504\text{aq}$$

This, as we shall afterwards find, when the least particle of chloride of sodium which is symmetrical and capable of existing by itself (that is  $\text{ClNa}^2\text{Cl}$  or  $\text{NaCl}^2\text{Na}$ ), is introduced into its hollow interior, constitutes a unit of sea water. And when urea occupies the same position it constitutes that liquid which Nature supplies at the opposite end of her action. Thus, the best experiments in the most open sea give the quantity of chloride of sodium to water (and the other ingredients are in comparatively small quantity), at about 2·5 per cent.; and our saline molecule, which neglects those other salts, which in small quantity substitute chloride of sodium, gives

$$\text{Sea Water, } \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{AQ}(\overset{12}{\text{AQ}})\text{AQ} = 22680 = \overset{\text{per cent.}}{97\cdot48}\dots\text{Water.} \\ \text{ClNa}^2\text{Cl} = 586 = 2\cdot52\dots\text{Salt.} \end{array} \right.$$

As to urine, the normal quantity of urea is estimated at the same percentage; and as the atomic weight of table salt and urea (when both Na and Cl are estimated at their full) are the same, this implies the same molecular structure. But the atom of urea is symmetrical by itself. In the centre of the aqueous molecule there may, therefore, possibly be only one atom of urea, and this appears to be the case in healthy reposing children; there may, however, be two; but of these things hereafter.

**The Ice Molecule.**—When, instead of an element of salt or of urea, another particle of AQ gains the interior, the aqueous medium tends to concrete. The molecule, composed of  $15\text{AQ}$ , acquires a true unity which it had not when existing as  $14\text{AQ}$ , that is, in the liquid or living state. Consequently, under the law of volumes, it now occupies 16 instead of 15 aqueous volumes, the latter number being incompatible with that law of volumes which allows only of the simplest ratios—namely,  $1 : \frac{1}{2} : 4 : 8 : 16$ , &c. Thus we obtain the specific gravity of ice—

$$\text{Ice}\dots\text{G} = \frac{15\text{AQ}}{16\text{AQ}} = \frac{15}{16} = .9375 \text{ Exp. } 94 \frac{+}{-}$$

Since the poles are beautifully hexagonal, we also see why ice should give those beautiful hexagonal forms which the snowflake, hoar-frost, and



ice-crystals display, as also those beautiful dendritic forms on the windows with angles everywhere of  $60^\circ$  and  $120^\circ$ . Moreover, since adjacent ice molecules may not merely touch each other, but to a certain extent lock into each other at the points of contact, we see also how ice must be capable of regelation, and how glaciers may move down valleys as if the ice were plastic.

But all these things by the way and in haste. In this chapter I only proposed to show the atomic weight of the unit volume of water and of ice, which are the unities in the table of specific gravities, namely,

Unit volume of water,  $AQ = 36 \times 45 = 1620 = 324$ , when  $H = 1$

$$\text{Unit volume of ice, } \begin{array}{c} \begin{array}{cc} \overset{3}{AQ} & \overset{3}{AQ} \\ \text{AQ} & \text{AQ} \end{array} \text{AQ} = 16 \text{ AQ} \\ \begin{array}{cc} \underset{3}{AQ} & \underset{3}{AQ} \end{array} \end{array}$$

**Fluoric Moisture.**—At this part of our molecular morphology as the opposite pole, fluorine vapour and moisture present themselves. As the heaven-descended aqueous element tends to supply and conserve the siliceous crust of the globe, so does the fluorine element tend to dissolve it. But so little is known of this destructive agent that a verification of our theory of it is an elaborate investigation which it would be quite unsuitable to enter upon here.

But it may be mentioned that the baric oxygen which our theory calls upon us to seek for (see p. 6), leads us to fluorine. Thus, given an unit of baric oxygen gas, then in order to supply its poles with an atom of  $H$  in each, as we have seen that the unit of common oxygen gas tends to do, it will not need to wait until free hydrogen come into the ambient. Thus, since the atom of baric oxygen consists of  $5H$ , and each atom of  $H = 4H$ , the baric oxygens can supply their own poles with hydrogens from their own interiors. And thus there will result, as an atom of baric oxygen gas, a couple of baric oxygens, the atomic weight of each being—

$$(5 \times 4 \times 5) - 5 = 100 - 5 = 95, \text{ i.e., } 19 \text{ when } H = 1,$$

which is the atomic weight of fluorine. Hence—

Baric oxyhydric acid... $HOOH = HFFH$ ...Fluohydric acid.

This, however, as might be shown, finds repose in nature only as—

$$\text{Fluor...G} = \frac{FCa(CaF\overset{12}{F}Ca)CaF}{AQ} = \frac{26 \times 195}{1620} = 3.14 \text{ Exp. } 3.0...3.18$$

As to the light oxygen, consisting of  $5H$ , and the barytic oxygen of  $5H$ , which attach to our theory, we have found them; and they are of great interest; but they are not for this place.

## CHAPTER V.

### ABYSSAL, PLUTONIC, VOLCANIC ACTION, AND ITS SULPHURIC PRODUCTS.

LET us conceive that, in virtue of adequate pressure or otherwise, there is a mass of matter consisting of material elements or units of atomic weight, lying all as near to each other as may be, and at any rate all equally near or equally distant, so that the whole is uniformly dense. And as an analysing or partitioning influence, let us suppose an adequate heat to be awoke in it.

The question is, What are the simplest unified groups or elemental molecules which will be determined in the seething mass or medium, and attain to individuality, and possibly escape in the æriform state, or remain and be found in the concrete mass below, if the fire should abate? To this it is to be immediately answered that there will be found—

**The Tetrad** (see Pl. I. fig. 1,  $\Delta$ ).—It may be shown that though the analysing force were so powerful as to expand and separate the mass or medium to such a degree that the constituent units should exist in no higher combinations than couples, yet these couples would immediately place themselves crosswise to each other, two and two, the one couple above the other. For, by so placing themselves, they at once satisfy the law of symmetry and sphericity, and out of four units of weight or elemental forces there is constructed a system of four “triangles of forces,” a combination whose stability must be insuperable. Now, such a structure is that which we have met with already, and named the tetrad. This, then, we find in the abyss to be the last, as in the sky we found it to be the first, of all molecular elements. It is primal, ultimate, untransformable, monomorphous, and, in a word, the basis of all molecular systems.

And since such is the pre-eminence of the tetrad, in order to keep the conditions of our molecular aggregation as simple as possible, we

may assume that in the abyssal region, in so far as there are individualised molecules at all, there are tetrads only. Given the mass or medium in tetrads, then, what shall we have next? To this it is to be answered that, under our ever-operating law of symmetry and sphericity, we shall forthwith have—

**The Bitetrad** (see Pl. I. fig. II. H).—The tetrad, when existing alone, is symmetrical only when viewed in reference to its own centre, or as its own universe. When viewed from any point without itself, that is, as a member in a system, it is as crystallographers have long ago determined only a hemiform. It is a pyramid, a form shaped to rest upon some other form.

The degree of analysis, therefore, conceived in the preceding paragraph, in which the seething mass or medium is supposed to be resolved into tetrads existing singly, is rather to be regarded as a limit than as a reality that will ever exist. However powerfully the analysing and dissociating force may operate, the tetrads, as fast as they are individualised, will clap together, and rest on each other in couples applied base to base. Thus, instead of single tetrads, we obtain the mass or medium as consisting of bitetrads. And in the bitetrad we have a form which, unlike the single tetrad, is capable both of mobility and stability: *mobility*, because it has two poles which are similar to each other, and an equatorial region lying evenly between them, whence it can be actuated by heat (that is, can pulsate or palpitate symmetrically) without self-destruction or transformation; and *stability*, because it is finely differentiated, each angle of the equator consisting of two, and each pole of a single force, whence poles and equator will tend to remain in union, that is, the bitetrad to be conserved; for this is the condition or universally acknowledged law of chemical union and cohesion, namely, the union and subsequent adhesion of dissimilars. No doubt, in the popular chemistry, this law is applied only to entire atoms and molecules when they are dissimilar, whilst we apply it to different parts of the one and same atom or molecule when they are dissimilar. But taking into account our views of the structure of atoms and molecules, this extended, or rather, indeed, this more close application of the law, is obviously legitimate.

We are not, then, to expect the single tetrad to be found as a chemical element, that is, as a kind of matter which can be separated from other kinds of matter, or, if not separated, at any rate moved from union with one kind of matter into union with another kind, so as to render its existence certain, and its properties more or less cognisable.

Single tetrads, whenever they are not permitted to cohere in larger numbers, will in every case cohere as bitetrads. Are we, then, to look for the bitetrad among chemical elements? Have we reason to infer that



in such a seething mass or medium as we have now conceived, bitetrads will escape singly out of it, and thus constitute a gaseous medium, and give to nature a certain kind of gas? To this question the proper answer appears to be, that if the heat applied were most intense, bitetrads, in whatever molecular states cohering, might be expected to be dissociated and escape one by one. Now, suppose they did, what should we have? Plainly, we should have a new sort of hydrogen gas, its weight to the true hydrogen as 8 is to 5, and therefore still very light, and having a spectrum which would, no doubt, be analogous to hydrogen, but not identical with it. Those, then, who have learned to clear out the jumble of the natural eyesight by the use of the prism, should study the chromosphere of the sun, with a view to consider whether the view here advanced as to there being possibly two kinds of hydrogen there, may not explain observed phenomena. Perhaps in our own planet, small though it be, and comparatively moderate every known heat, this kind of hydrogen, which for a reason presently to appear we have called hylagen, may also be detected in the proper quarters.

But the structure of the bitetrad leads us rather to expect that bitetrads, when they have been formed in a mass or medium, will not leave that mass or medium one by one, but on the contrary, cohering together in such numbers, and constituting such molecules, as the law of symmetry dictates. This inference is grounded upon the fact, which has been already stated as the ground of the stability of the bitetrad itself, namely, that the equatorial angles of the bitetrad consist each of a couple, and its polar angles of a single unit only. Hence, as possessing dissimilar parts, bitetrads will tend to unite and to cohere poles to equators, thus giving birth in the seething mass or medium to molecules, consisting of such groups of bitetrads as the law of symmetry builds up. This is all the more to be expected, because when thus united, the entire regions of union between the adjacent tetrads must consist of triangles of forces, constituted of the two forces proper to the equator in the one bitetrad, and the one force proper to the pole of the other, which is dragged along and retained in union with it. Thus we see our way to the construction of a system of molecules consisting of triangles of forces, which, therefore, on well-known principles of statics, may be very stable. Their atomic weights, also, must obviously be quite definite; also their favourite combining ratios; for these must be functions of their forms; also their physical properties when investigated on the same principles applied to all. We have, therefore, ample means of verifying the inquiry, whether our bitetradic structures be representatives of the elements known to chemists, or whether they be creatures of fancy merely, which nature refuses to sanction.

What then, let us ask, are the simplest groups of cohering bitetrads

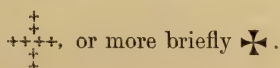
which we may expect to be individualised in, and to escape from a material mass or medium existing in the circumstances which we have conceived? To this question we obtain a very definite and surely, it will be admitted, a very remarkable answer. And to find what that answer is, let the candid reader, neglecting the blackfaced letters which are here made to introduce the paragraph for the sake of future reference, read on.

**Oxygen and Sulphur.**—Neither two, nor three, nor four bitetrads can construct a molecule which shall be symmetrical and mobile, and possibly insulable. Elements possessing the absolute atomic weights of 16, 24, 32, that is, 3·2, 4·8, 5·4, when  $H = 1$  are excluded by the law of symmetry. But five bitetrads can form either of two sorts of symmetrical molecules, both of which have poles, which in the same molecule are similar to each other, as also an equatorial region lying evenly between these poles,—both of which molecules may therefore be possibly both mobile and insulable.

In both, the constituent tetrads cohere poles to equators. But in one (Pl. I. fig. XIII. O) they cohere by their facets. In the other (Pl. I. fig. XVII. S) they cohere by their edges only. And hence there results such a complete difference in form and structure, that these two may be said to be the alternate forms of the same matter.

And here let us remark, that as we have even already found advantage in substituting for the symbol of a single atom of oxygen the numeral 8 in one position or another, so shall we find it of great advantage to adopt as the symbol of this new element, instead of the very complicated form S, some simple form, also in the printer's hands already, such as the double dagger ( $\ddagger$ ). The analogy of this new element to hydrogen (which we shall find to be very great), will thus be indicated by its symbol, that of hydrogen being the single dagger ( $\dagger$ ).

But are we to expect either O or S to be usually met with either in Nature or in the laboratory in single atoms? No; the form of the one (O) is very oblate; that of the other (S), is very prolate. The former is altogether in want of matter on its poles. The latter is in want of matter on its equator. If, then, each by entering into union with its own atoms (supposing only one kind to be present), can remedy this defect, it will do it. Now the first, O, can briefly supply this defect by coupling into  $\textcircled{O}$  (see Pl. I. fig. XIV.), and the last, S, can supply its defect when three other atoms of the same plunge into the three vacant spaces in the equator of the first by their poles (see Pl. I. fig. XVIII.), constituting a tetratom =  $S^4$  or  $\textcircled{S}$ , for which, when it occurs in a figurate formula, we may substitute—



Such, then, are the molecular states of these elements, in which, if such structures exist in nature at all, we are to expect to find them when in the free state.

And here, viewed in this state as compared with that of their genesis, namely, that of single atoms, a very remarkable phenomenon presents itself. Thus we have said that the atom of O, as compared with that of S, is such that they may be regarded as alternate or reciprocal forms of the same matter, the single atom of O being eminently oblate or negative, and the single atom of S eminently prolate or positive. But when O has coupled into  $\odot$ , it has become much less negative; nay, its dynamisphere overhead may be spherical, so that O in coupled atoms shall no longer display that restlessness or activity which will be inevitable to it when existing in single atoms. And S, when it has quadrupled into  $S^4$ , instead of being any longer positive, is as negative as the single atom of O itself. Atoms of S, in arriving at a combination which shall be spherical, have in the first attempt quite passed through the spherical, and given birth to a form having the opposite morphological defect to that which was possessed by them on their genesis. The form of repose has been passed through. The pendulum has swung quite to the other side. And this is a phenomenon which we shall be very frequently meeting with. It is, indeed, that institution by which the molecular life of Nature is mainly sustained, and that universal stereotype to which the principles of statics universally point indefinitely postponed. It will be granted that it is in perfect keeping with all that we see and know of visible nature.

Here, then, in this structure S, we see remarkable morphological, and, consequently, functional powers. In its single state it is analogous to hydrogen, and must function like hydrogen. In its ordinary state it is analogous to oxygen, and must function like oxygen.

But let us proceed no further till we inquire what are the atomic weights of these two elements which thus meet us so early in the seething abyss. In their single state they are obviously the same in weight, and since each consists of  $5H$ , that weight is  $5 \times 8 = 40$ , that is, 8 when  $H = 1$ . But in their usual modes of occurrence O, when existing in coupled atoms, as  $\odot$ , must obviously weigh  $2 \times 40 = 80$ , *i.e.*, 16, when  $H = 1$ ; and S, when existing in tetratoms, as  $S^4$ , must weigh  $4 \times 40 = 160$ , *i.e.*, 32, when  $H = 1$ .

Let it not be concluded, however, that at one and the same temperature, whatever that may be, the one shall just weigh double the other in the æriform state. Here, in fact, at comparatively low temperatures, we may expect an experimental verification of what was advanced as mere theory in reference to the tetratom of hydrogen (see p. 16). We may expect that molecules of  $S^4$ , in rising into the



æriiform state, will not rise single, but, on the contrary, each in consequence of its extremely oblate form carrying along with it another in each pole. Thus making the unit volume of

Sulphur vapour..... $S^4S^4S^4$  (see Pl. I. fig. xxi.),

obviously weighing six times that of oxygen gas.

But here the reader may justly complain of my using names which take for granted the very thing to be proved. Surely it will not be denied, however, that even already these molecular structures of atoms represent to a wonderful extent those unknown bodies which go by the name of oxygen and sulphur? How shall the chemist arm himself against the suspicion, at least, that our structures really may represent these bodies, but by throwing this book into the waste-paper basket?

But let us proceed. It is not atomic weights merely which our theory enables us to deduce, but specific gravities also. Thus, we have seen that the unit of water occupying an unit volume of this liquid =  $AQ = aq^{36} = 36 \times 45 = 1620$  units of weight. It may also now be seen with regard to  $S^4$  that since it is trigonal in all its dimensions, its molecule must be the icosatom (see Pl. I. fig. v. and p. 8). Supposing, then, that through the unceasing operation of the law of assimilation, the unit of water,  $AQ$ , and the molecule of sulphur,  $(S^4)^{20}$ , have come to be isovoluminous,—a condition towards which we shall find all individualised molecules tend in the concrete and liquid state, no less than in the æriiform (which has been long known),—we obtain the equation—

$$\text{Sulphur...G...} \frac{(S^4)^{20}}{AQ} = \frac{20 \times 4 \times 40}{1620} = 1.96 \text{ Exp. } 1.98 \dots 2.00.$$

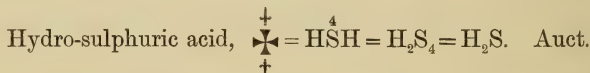
Here, then, is another verification, and one to which the chemistry of the day, which is also that of the dark, is a perfect stranger. If, then, I be not as yet permitted to regard our tetratom  $S^4$  as representing an atom of sulphur, may I not be allowed to designate our single atom  $S$  by the name of sulph?

And here another verification. On inspecting minutely the symmetry of our molecule of  $S^4$ , it will be perceived that the axes of the three equatorial atoms of  $S$  do not lie in the plane of the equator, but all incline to one and the same pole. Hence, in the molecular state, this element must be dimorphous. Both its molecules must, indeed, be icosatoms. But in one of these molecules the acute angles formed by the equatorial elements with the axial elements will be peripherad, in the other they will be centrad. Now, though we are as yet at an immense distance from those resultant forms and forces which must determine the forms and structures of visible objects, such as crystals, yet it is only to be expected that these two kinds of molecules, in constructing

crystals, will yield two sorts which shall be unlike each other. Now this is observed in sulphur.

Again, each of these two icosatoms will be proper to a certain temperature, and when the temperature changes through a certain range, the one will change into the other. Now, during the period of change it is only to be expected that many single atoms of  $S^4$  will be set free and exist singly among the icosatoms new and old. Considering, then, their grapnel-like shapes, it is only to be expected that they will prevent the perfect fluidity of the hot substance, and keep it in a viscid state. Now this is known of sulphur.

**Sulphuretted Hydrogen, Hydrosulphuric Acid.**—Having fallen into a remark on the subject of sulphur in the æriform state, it may be here added, that obviously the proper morphological correction of the very oblate form of the atom of sulphur, so that it may be capable of a fully individualised or æriform existence, is not an atom of sulphur on each pole of a central atom, which manifestly both over-extends and overloads the poles, but an atom of hydrogen only, giving (see Pl. I. fig. XIX.)—



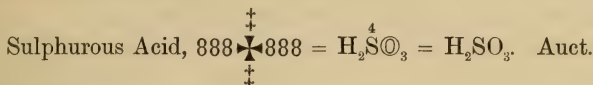
This is, accordingly, the state of union in which sulphur escapes spontaneously into the atmosphere, when bodies which contain it along with hydrogen are undergoing decomposition. Happily it is not inveterately æriform. It may be condensed even in the laboratory, and the liquid has been found to have a density of about .9, while the solid is heavier, so that we may regard it as about 1. If, considering its great volume, we allow it two aqueous volumes, we obtain—

$$\text{Its Crystals, G... } \frac{(\overset{4}{\text{HSH}})^{20}}{2\text{AQ}} = \frac{20(5 + 160 + 5)}{20 \times 1620} = 1.05 \text{ Exp. } .9 \dots 1.$$

But we have now to consider sulphur, not in relation to hydrogen, but to oxygen, which we regarded as formed in the abyss along with it, or rather, indeed, before it.

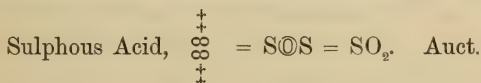
**Sulphurous Acid.**—And here a very beautiful structure presents itself, though, considering the demand of H and O when they meet to lapse into aq, it is not easy to believe that it is ever constructed in the rapid and rude processes of the laboratory. The tetratom of sulphur, which forms the body in the atom of sulphuretted hydrogen (see Pl. I. fig. XIX.), has three sulphic arms, which stand out from the axis naked, while yet, from their dissimilarity to oxygen, they must tend to be covered or capped by this universal parasite. If, then, the oxygen present do not first carry off the hydrogens of the poles, and lapse along with them into moisture, we may possibly have a sulphuretted hydrogen

or hydrosulphuric acid, its equatorial region mailed in oxygen. Its formula must be that of the sulphurous acid of the unitary chemistry, and a very fine acid it must be.



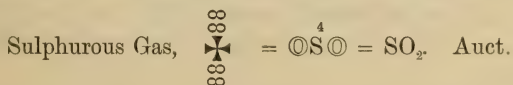
But if we are uncertain about admitting this beautiful acid as a chemical, there is another which obtrudes itself upon us, though only in a transient way, yet as most certain, and, as we shall find, justly entitled to the name of an acid, though it be not "a salt of hydrogen."

Thus the forms of S and O are no less dissimilar to each other than those of H and O, to which they are, in fact, highly analogous. Given an atom of S, then, to an atom of O, they will unite, as H and O unite. But while HO lapses in aq, SO can experience no such change. The single atom of SO is, however, dissymmetrical, and cannot exist in the free state. But it is to be remembered that oxygen does not exist in the free state in single atoms, but in doubled atoms. What we are to expect in nature, then, is not SO in single atoms, but in coupled atoms. Now, these are symmetrical, and may exist in the free state. They obviously consist of equal weights of sulphur and oxygen—



Now, here we have an æriform element whose poles are trigonal or lance-shaped, the same as if they were atoms of hydrogen; and beneath these poles there is oxygen. Since, therefore, such a molecular structure in the case of hydrogen implies acidity, we infer that this is an acid, that is, it will change vegetable blues to red, and have a taste which, unless covered by some stronger taste, will be more or less sour.

But such a molecule is in a high degree prolate. Under the law of symmetry and sphericity, its axis is much too long for its equator. May it not, then, by doubling, or else by dedoubling, improve its condition in this respect? Plainly, it may do so by doubling. The four atoms of S, in two atoms of S@S, may assume the molecular state of S<sup>4</sup>, which may become the body of a doubled molecule, while the atoms of @ will betake themselves one to each pole. Thus we shall have—



Here, then, we have another æriform element more stable than the last, not only in consequence of being more spherical, but in consequence of having its poles capped by oxygen, and consequently protected from the further attacks of that corroder. Like SO and S@S, it consists of



equal weights of sulphur and oxygen; and if, when in the æriform state, each unit of oxygen gas retains its own volume, and the intermediate atom of sulphur lie between, its sp. gr. will obviously be double that of oxygen gas; as is the case with sulphurous gas.

It must differ now, however, materially in its functioning from what it did before it doubled. It is now no longer an acid. It is rather a deutoxide, with the terminal or peripheral atom of oxygen only loosely engaged. Instead of reddening vegetable blues, it may, therefore, be expected to bleach vegetable colours, and perform those offices generally which result from the impartation to coloured substances of oxygen in single atoms, that is, oxygen in the most active state. But in doing so it must lose the æriform state, and then, doubtless, an acid form will soon again appear.

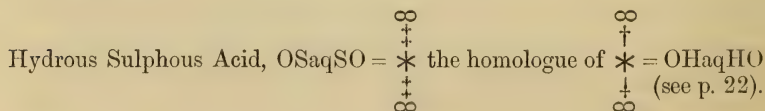
If from the first the æriform state should be forbidden, or if by cold, or pressure, or both, it should be abolished, there would then result this substance in the molecules proper to its element, SO. Now, of that element one pole is pentagonal, and the other is trigonal. Its molecule may, therefore, be either the dodecatom or the icosatom. And when fully differentiated and most stable in structure, a mass may consist either of dodecatoms and of icosatoms in equal numbers, or of the one sort as a nucleus, and the other circumscribing it according to the law of symmetry, which expresses the relations of these two polyhedrons as long since set forth by geometricians. In either case, we obtain, as the equation of specific gravity—

$$\text{Concrete Sulphous Acid, } \frac{(\text{SO})^{12+20}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{32 \times 80}{1620} = 1.58. \text{ Exp. ?}$$

Now, sulphurous gas has been forced down into a liquid, and that has been solidified. The specific gravity of the liquid has been found to be 1.45, and that of the solid heavier. And, altogether, may we not fairly ask whether these views of this substance do not go much farther than all the knowledge that we otherwise possess in explaining the seemingly anomalous properties of the first products of burning sulphur.

In our theory nascent sulphurous, or sulphous acid, SO, is the homologue of HO, and in its genetic power it is scarcely less important. It is the beginning of mineral nature, as HO is the beginning of organic nature.

And here it will be legitimately asked, If SO be analogous to HO, are we not, then, on the access of moisture to the fumes of burning sulphur, to expect that—



as also that the aqueo-sulphous combination shall possess greater stability than the purely aqueous?

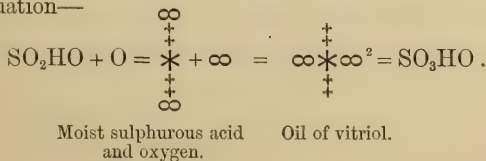
To this it is to be answered, that immediately sulphurous fumes are admitted to water, this appears to be the combination which is first constructed, and it has been obtained in cubical crystals. Its unitary formula is  $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_3$ , which, contrary to what is usual, is the double of what it ought to be, and which we have seen to represent a very different substance (see p. 35).

But not the nascent sulphous acid, but the full bodied sulphurous acid also combines with water, and in this case not with moisture merely, but with water in particles. Thus when moist sulphurous fumes are passed through a freezing mixture, nitre-like crystals are obtained, having the seemingly strange formula,  $\text{SO}_2 \cdot 9\text{H}_2\text{O}$ . Now, when this is unravelled and doubled (as is usually necessary with chemical formulæ, because they are cut to a single polar element as the controlling substance, instead of two, as ought to be), we obtain simply a particle of water aq<sup>36</sup>, with an atom of mature sulphurous gas,  $\odot\text{S}\odot$ , on each pole, —the form of the particles of water being, no doubt,  $(\text{OHaqHO})^{12}$ , so that the whole is a differentiated dodecatom—

The Nitre-like Crystals,  $\odot\text{S}\odot(\text{OHaqHO})^{12}\odot\text{S}\odot = 2(\text{SO}_2 \cdot 9\text{H}_2\text{O})$ .

It is to the nascent hydrate, however, that the chief interest attaches. These things, therefore, we hurry over, leaving it to the reader's candour to observe how many seeming arbitrary phenomena of the laboratory they explain.

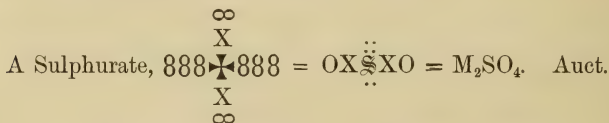
**Sulphous changes into Sulphic Acid** (Pl. I. fig. xx.)—In the hydrous sulphous acid,  $\text{OSaqSO}$ , the axis under the law of sphericity is obviously much too long. The poles are also obviously overloaded by the oxygens which they carry. A transformation may, therefore, be expected, and a translation of the polar oxygens to the equator. But the polar oxygens are only two in number, while the symmetry of the hexagonal equator demands three oxygens, one on each alternate segment of the atom of aq. What is wanted, then, and all that is wanted in order to the accomplishment of this transformation, is the supply of a third atom of oxygen. Now this, nature is ever ready to supply in many ways; and this it is which art makes its point to supply in the usual method of converting the fumes of burning sulphur into oil of vitriol by the use of nitre. Thus sulphous becomes sulphic acid according to the equation—



But of these things hereafter. Here let us rather consider the course of nature in fixing the fumes of burning sulphur without partitionment of the sulphur.

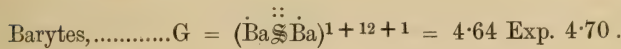
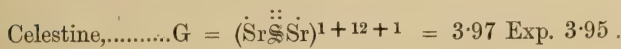
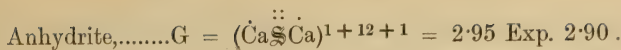
**Sulphates, or rather Sulphurates.**—In the atom of sulphurous gas ( $\odot \S \odot$ , p. 35), it has been stated that the terminal atoms of oxygen are only loosely attached, and in excess of what is needed there, while the three sulphic arms of the equator are naked and in want of oxygen. A change, therefore, in the distribution of the oxygen may be expected. But in order to effect such a change consistently with the law of symmetry, a larger supply of oxygen is required. In a word, what is wanted to impart a true stability to the combination is the differentiation of it by the introduction of metallic matter in the axis and the capping (so as to protect from the further attacks of oxygen), the three naked equatorial sulphic arms, by oxygens.

Instead of the coupled atom of oxygen, then, on each pole, let us substitute for one of the atoms of this non-metallic element some metallic element which we may denote by the symbol X, letting the remaining atom of oxygen be ultimately terminal; and let us add, as has been purposed, three coupled oxygens on the three sulphic arms; and then, undoubtedly, we shall have a structure which is finely differentiated, being composed in part of non-metallic, metalloidal, and metallic elements; which it is protected both on the equator and the poles from the further attacks of the oxygen of the world; and which overhead, may, in point of general form, be regarded as spherical. Our figurate formula is but a poor representative of such a structure; yet even by inspecting that formula these things appear; as also that its composition is that of one atom of a Sulphate, which we, however, must call



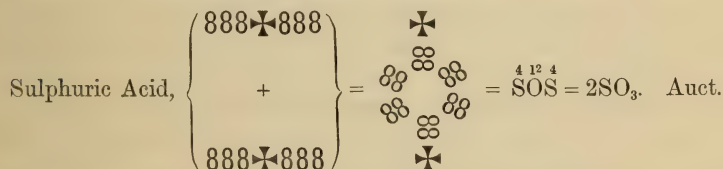
When such a structure is considered, it will be seen that its stability cannot but be great. There are many such in nature. And here we may mention three which are products of the action which we are now considering, the first of which, indeed, we might have constructed in detail but for the lengthened investigation which it required. They are all three, isomorphs—the first common, the second baric, and the third barytic. Supposing that their molecules are all the differentiated dodecatom, which is by far the most abundant in the crust of the earth, we obtain their specific gravity thus—





The higher synthesis which takes place in organic nature succeeds not unfrequently in doubling the sulphuric structure which forms the body of these mineral elements. This also appears to be frequently effected by the chemist. Hence—

**Sulphuric Acid**—The combination  $\text{S}\text{O}_3$ , that is, sulphuric acid commonly so called, possesses a form so oblate, that if more than one such element were ever neighbours in the free state, they would certainly unite in couples; for in that case there would result a beautifully differentiated dodecatom consisting wholly of oxygen, with an atom of sulphur on each pole. It appears to exist in the taurocholate of the bile and elsewhere in nature. The chemist also has succeeded in obtaining it, though always in a very impatient state.



Here in the figurate formula on the right hand, representing the element of anhydrous sulphuric acid or sulphuric anhydride, that element is represented as a differentiated dodecatom, the body composed of twelve atoms of oxygen, the poles consisting of an atom of sulphur each. But it must not be inferred that that formula gives an accurate idea of the structure. Thus it represents the body of the molecule as double-walled. Now, this is not the case. It requires twelve atoms of a pentagonal form, such as oxygen, to complete the dodecatom all round. To make it double-walled twenty-four are required. The only advantage gained by giving the formula as has been here done, is that, by simply counting the constituent elements, we can immediately ascertain their actual number. As a general rule, however, it will be better to content ourselves as to this point by looking to the numerals in the literal formula, and to construct our figurate formulæ as disks of molecules merely, giving generally, indeed, all the elements in the axis of the molecule, but as to the body of the molecule, giving only two of the radial parts on each side instead of all the ten.

As to the specific gravity of sulphuric anhydride, it appears to attain to

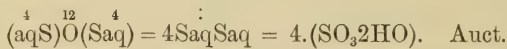
a normal volume, when the first group in the trigonal series of regular polyhedra has been constructed instead of the last, that is, when the tetratom has been constructed instead of the icosatom—a state of things which we shall afterwards find in the case of nitric acid, &c. Thus—

$$\text{Sulphuric Acid, } \frac{(\overset{4}{\text{S}}\overset{12}{\text{O}}\overset{4}{\text{S}})^4}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{4(160 + 480 + 160)}{1620} = 1.97 \text{ Exp. } 1.95 \dots 197.$$

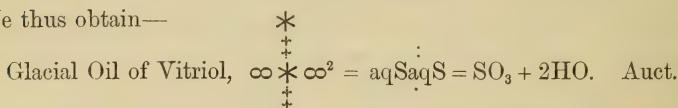
**Sulphic Acid—Oil of Vitriol** (Pl. I. fig. xx.)—It is obviously only under very peculiar circumstances that such a molecule as the sulphuric anhydride just described could be constructed and conserved in this terraqueous globe where moisture exists everywhere. Let such a molecule (especially if it has been obtained by the expulsion of water) be exposed to the access of moisture, and a rush of the latter may be expected to both poles. Now, each pole being a tetratom of sulph, and having four summits, free and terminal, will immediately fix four atoms of aq, and there will result at the moment



But now the structure has become so wanting in unity that its longer cohesion may be suspected, especially as the sulphur poles, by opening up into single atoms of sulph, and distributing among themselves the water and the oxygen, may give rise to a new molecular species of exquisite structure and symmetry. In a word, we may have the equation—



We thus obtain—



Now this structure is dissymmetrical. It is, therefore, not capable of existing alone in the free state. Such elements, when they exist in the same region, will hurry together into the molecular state. And as neither pole is pentagonal, but one hexagonal or aqueous, and the other trigonal or sulphic, we may expect them to form around either the one or the other, and we may say the latter when the molecule is to be most stable. We may expect the molecule, therefore, when most stable, as, for instance, when it has withstood a severe ordeal such as long continued ebullition, to be the icosatom like that of sulphur itself. We shall thus have, as the equation for its specific gravity—

$$\text{The Glacial Acid, } G = \frac{(\overset{\cdot}{\underset{\cdot}{\overset{\cdot}{\underset{\cdot}{\text{aqSaqS}}}}})^{20}}{2\text{AQ}} = \frac{20(45 + 245)}{2 \times 1620} = 1.79 \text{ Exp. } 1.75.$$

Here, then, as usual, we are able to deduce the specific gravity as nearly as is to be desired—for the second decimal place depends on the temperature.

But it is obvious that our glacial sulphic structure may also form into molecules with the hexagonal or aqueous pole centrad, in which case the molecule, instead of consisting of twenty, must consist of thirty-six members. Can we then obtain any evidence of this? To this it is to be answered, that plainly it is not in high temperatures that we are to look for such a molecule. Neither are we to look for sulphic acid in nature in its active undifferentiated state. We are to look for it in union with some metallic oxide. Let us, then, suppose a molecule of the glacial sulphic acid, with its aqueous pole centrad to be formed in the cool of nature, and let us encrust it all over with oxide of calcium or lime, the oxygen of the lime on the periphery of the molecule, and we shall obtain a combination which must be neutral, and, up to a certain temperature, stable. Now, as to composition, this is obviously that of gypsum or selenite; and since it is so large and heavy, let us allow it four normal or aqueous volumes, and see what its equation of density gives us.

$$\text{Selenite, G...} \frac{(\text{CaSaqSaq})^{36}}{4\text{AQ}} = \frac{36(140 + 290)}{4\text{AQ}} = 2.39 \text{ Exp. } 2.3...2.4.$$

Hence we are easily able to understand how this substance should be so abundant in nature that scarce any land, scarce any fountain, but contains more or less of it. Hence, also, we are able to see why anhydrite, secularly exposed to moisture, must be transformed into gypsum and selenite.

But returning to the laboratory, may not a stronger oil of vitriol than the glacial acid be obtained by longer continued ebullition? The glacial molecule is still moist all over. May not that surface-moisture be completely driven off by boiling? To this it is to be answered, that the best chemists have found that they could not wholly drive off the second atom of water. Nay, curiously enough, that when they have done their best in this direction there still remains about  $\frac{1}{12}$ th of an atom of water for every atom of monohydrated acid. This seems a very capricious result. But in the light of our molecular morphology, does it not beautifully explain itself? Thus, an atom of water has just twelve summits or points of adhesion for such a structure as an atom of oil of vitriol. What, then, more likely that when the heat and the boiling have been urged in a way which the icosatom of the glacial acid can no longer endure, that molecule, when broken up, shall distribute its elements around atoms of water as nuclei, twelve of them fixed on every atom of aq. This would explain the phenomenon of residuary water



found by Marignac, &c. But let us test this theory as usual by deducing the specific gravity—

$$\text{Strongest Oil of Vitriol, G...} \frac{(\text{SaqS})^{12} + \text{aq}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{(12 \times 245) + 45}{1620} = 1.843 \text{ Exp. } 1.843.$$

The power of oil of vitriol of uniting with water, and of detaining it in the liquid state in opposition to its tendency to spontaneous evaporation, is very great, and many are the interesting hydrates which may be produced.

Thus, when exposed a sufficient length of time in a moist atmosphere, instead of a *single atom* of vapour attaching itself to every element of the sulphic molecule, as in the glacial acid, a *particle* of water does so, the whole molecule being thus enclosed in a liquid sphere, consisting of as many particles of water as the molecule consists of elements of oil of vitriol. This implies that a quantity of oil of vitriol, when exposed to a damp atmosphere, increases its weight between six and seven times (as found by Newmans), and is reduced so as to contain only 13.13 per cent. of acid.

The ultimate hydrate (which possesses an organic structure also), is, when a single element of acid lies as a nucleus or axis in the centre of a differentiated dodecatom of water, which implies no more than 1.07 per cent. of acid. And this is certainly the hydrate which ought to be used for therapeutic purposes. But it remains to be ascertained whether the icosatomic molecules can be broken up or digested in water; and, consequently, whether such a hydrate as this can be prepared. That they can, by boiling till the density of the liquid reaches 1.843, has been shown. Perhaps by swamping acid of this density with water the reconstruction of icosatomic molecules might be prevented.

**Sulphides and Sulphurides.**—As the Plutonic element, which we are now considering, is intermediate in form and structure between non-metallic on the one hand, and metallic on the other, it unites readily with both classes of substances. And here it is interesting to observe, that as nature gives both sulphic and sulphuric oxides, so does it also give metallic sulphides and sulphurides. This we are able to ascertain for certain by applying the test of specific gravity.

Thus, if we take one element of sulphur vapour (Pl. I. fig. XXI.), and conceive it to exist in the free state secularly, while the law of symmetry and sphericity is taking secular effect upon it, the ultimate issue must be the spherifying of its over-extended and over-loaded poles; in a word, the transformation of  $\text{S}^4$ , which is  $4\text{H}_5$  into  $\text{H}_{20}$ , that is, as might be shown, the ultimate substitution for an atom of sulphur of an atom of the crackling combustible metal zinc, thus giving

ultimately to nature, instead of an indefinite continuance of sulphur vapour, an element of blende (Pl. I. fig. xxii.) Now, supposing this beautiful structure to concrete, as usual, in differentiated dodecatoms, each occupying a normal volume, we obtain, as the equation of its density—

$$\text{Sulphuride of Zinc, } G \dots \frac{(\text{ZnSZn})^{1+12+1}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{14(160 + 160 + 160)}{1620} = 4.15 \text{ Exp. } 4.16.$$

Blende thus contains an atom of sulphur, and is a sulphuride or sulphuret. But that all combinations of metals with this element are not so is shown by another beautiful mineral, galena. Thus the specific gravity of galena is known to be 7.4. Now, either the formula  $\text{PbS}^4\text{Pb}$ , or  $\text{SPbS}$ , suits equally well the conditions of the analysis of galena. But the former having pentagonal poles, must form into dodecatomic molecules. Now these, if differentiated as usual, would give,

$$G \dots \frac{(\text{PbSPb})^{1+12+1}}{\text{AQ}} = 10.34, \text{ or possibly } 5.17 \text{ if occupying two volumes.}$$

But of  $\text{SPbS}$ , both poles being trigonal, the molecule must be the icosatom. Now, trying this, we obtain—

$$\text{Sulphide of Lead, } (\text{SPbS})^{20} = \frac{20(40 + 520 + 40)}{1620} = 7.4 \text{ Exp. } 7.4.$$

Let these remarks, then, suffice on the most interesting but very formidable element, sulphur, which meets us so early in our research. I suppose chemists, notwithstanding their present contempt, will be obliged to look into these matters by-and-by.

**Selenium, Tellurium.**—The possible occurrence, in regions of great compression, either past or present, of tetradic tetrads, or tetrads each of whose four angles consists of four material units, instead of one only, as has been already explained, leads us to look in nature for two other isomorphs of sulphur—one composed of baric hydrogens, and the other of baric hylagens, instead of common hydrogen and hylagen. As to a sulphur-form composed of common hydrogen, indeed, it is not known, nor need we expect to find in the free state, at the surface of so small a planet as ours, an element the cohesion of whose parts must be so slender as this. But including it in the series, for the sake of completeness, our molecular morphology gives us as the sulphic series of forms the four following, to which, in the last column, I have added names of elements from the common tables which have the same atomic weights.

	Structure.		H = 1	
Light Sulphur,	4 {	5 H	= 100	= 20 (Phosphur.)
Common do.		5 H	= 160	= 32 Sulphur.
Baric do.		5 H	= 400	= 80 Selenium.
Barytic do.		5 H	= 640	= 128 Tellurium.

The third is four times the weight of the first, and the fourth four times that of the second. As to the fact that the experimentally determined atomic weight of selenium is usually given at 79·5, instead of 80, this is in no degree adverse to our views. From all molecules, and especially from baric and barytic elements, single, and sometimes even several, units are apt to go off, and so to be missing when the substance comes to be weighed. In the state of vapour, when hot enough to exist as  $S^4$ ,  $Se^4$ , and  $Te^4$ , their densities are, as nearly as could be expressed in the theoretic ratios, thus—

	Exp.	Theory.
Sulphur vapour, . . . .	2·23 . . . .	2·25 . . 8
Selenium vapour, . . . .	5·68 . . . .	5·6 . . 20
Tellurium vapour, . . . .	9·00 . . . .	9·0 . . 32

Also in the concrete state, could they attain, as sulphur does, to the molecule of culmination, that is, the icosatom, the density of selenium should be 4·92. Now, it has been found 4·8, indicating a mixing in the mass of lesser molecules. Tellurium in icosatoms should weigh 7·88. But this rare substance has, as yet, been found only with a density of 6·32, the structure of the molecule giving which need not be set down, as experiment is wanting.

And here, though it is insupportably tedious, and wasteful of type, to be reminding the reader of every verification as it presents itself, may I not ask whether, in this view of the nature of selenium and tellurium, we have not as perfect a theory of these rare substances, and of their relation to sulphur, as could be desired? And if it be found that this is not a solitary case, but that other groups of substances, similarly analogous among themselves,—such as chlorine, bromine, and iodine; potassium, rubidium, and caesium; calcium, strontium, and barium; phosphorus, arsenic, vanadium, antimony, bismuth—are also similarly common, baric and barytic, or mixed isomorphs of the same structures, there must be something in these views which is more than mere imagination. Besides, let the reader be as blind as he finds himself to all the insight and beauty which appears to the author to belong to the theory of molecular nature, which is here unfolded, and as averse to every attack on the existing philosophy of chemistry as he may be, what is to be made of our deduced specific gravities?

It is said in opposition to such a view of the nature of oxygen and



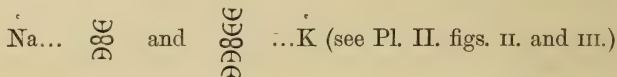
sulphur, that both these elements are undecomposable and simple, while these structures of ours are molecular, and ought to be decomposable. The answer is, that oxygen and sulphur have been found to be undecomposable only under a certain ordeal, that, namely, of the chemist's laboratory. But that ordeal, when compared with Plutonic or abyssal volcanic fire, is as nothing. Now, oxygen and sulphur, before they have come into the hands of the chemist at all, have withstood and escaped undecomposed from the Plutonic action and the volcano. Surely, then, they are not to be expected to break up in the hands of the chemist ! The inference that the particles of bodies are undecomposable in their own nature and simple, because chemists have not hitherto succeeded in decomposing them, is a manifest fallacy, which it is wonderful that it should ever have obtained the currency which it has obtained. Is it said that such an inference is a legitimate induction, and that the soundness of the inductive logic is not to be questioned ? Be it so. That same logic on this occasion presents to us a set-off against itself,—a set-off which leads distinctly to the inference, that comparatively heavy elements, such as oxygen gas and sulphur, are not undecomposable in their own nature, though chemists, in the present confessedly imperfect and advancing state of their art, may not be able to decompose them. Thus, as the analytical apparatus of the laboratory has been improved, more and more substances, previously found to be undecomposable, have yielded to decomposition ; so that now out of many thousands only between sixty and seventy resist. Does not the inductive logic, then, call upon us to infer that as our analytical appliances are further improved, more and more of these residuary substances will yield also, and among these oxygen and sulphur perhaps ? Thus, this popular logic contradicts and so corrects itself. But it were a better use of it to say, that since man, with his merely mimic appliances, and his merely momentary experiments, can decompose or transform so many of the particles of bodies, it is only to be expected that Nature, with her tremendous forces operating during untold ages, will decompose or transform them all,—ever providing that the form and structure of each shall always be in statical harmony with the dynamical conditions of its existence.

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE ALKALIES AND ALKALINE EARTHS.

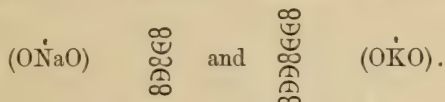
It has been supposed that oxygen might possibly be constructed in the seething abyss of bitetrads, and escape in a free and uncombined state. But in all ordinary circumstances, at least, it is obvious that this is not to be expected. It is obvious, on the contrary, that in all ordinary circumstances the empty hollow poles of every atom of oxygen, as fast as that atom is formed, will be packed with the bitetrads which are swarming all around; for each hollow oxygen pole is precisely a mould for five bitetrads when united by a terminal edge in each as a common axis for all (see Pl. II. fig. 1.  $\Psi$ ). What we are to expect, then, in the abyss in the first instance, is not oxygen in the pure or free state, but oxygen with atoms of this new element, packed and welded into its poles (see Pl. II. fig. 11. Na).

**Magnesium, Calcium, Strontium, Barium.**—When oxygen is still scarce, we may also expect this new element,  $\Psi$ , doubled in each pole of the medial atom of oxygen; for in this new element the metallic or five-fid pole is also a mould for its own metalloidal or lens-shaped pole, as well as for the poles of oxygen. We shall thus have—



Now both these may be expected to be undecomposable in the laboratory—(1.) Because the medial element, oxygen, is such a perfect coupling joint for the polar elements; (2.) Because both a single and double atom of  $\Psi$ , such as exists in 'K, is dissymmetrical and heteropolar, and incapable of separate existence; and (3.) Because where the axis of a molecular structure, when compared with the equatorial diameter, is, so long as in these elements there must exist, under the law of sphericity, a powerful force in the axis to shorten it, and, consequently, to press and weld all the constituent parts together.

But these new structures are not to be expected to be found in nature in this naked state. As has been shown elsewhere at length (see A Sketch, &c., Part II. p. 76), such five-fid poles are metallic, while oxygen is wholly non-metallic. As atoms of the latter, then, are further developed in the abyss, they will, in virtue of their dissimilarity to the newly constructed metallic elements, unite and cover their metallic poles, and thus secure our new structures from the further attacks of oxygen (in virtue of the repulsion which exists between identicals). We shall thus obtain—



And in these structures we see a great degree of symmetry along with admirable differentiation, and a complete protection from the further attacks of oxygen, the distribution of that element in the structures being perfect already. Thus, there is one atom in the equator and one on each pole. And such, generally, is the perfection which attaches to the “sesquioxide,” a combination which exists in nature to a far greater extent than is commonly observed.

But both these structures, especially that with double polar elements, have the great fault of existing in opposition to the law of sphericity; the axis in both, especially the latter, being much too long for the equatorial diameter. When, therefore, they exist in the æriform state, or single, or are anyhow prevented from placing themselves as radii in an isometrical molecule, they will tend to dedouble, or part into two, at the equator; so that when halved, each half may be more nearly spherical than the whole.

In order to success in dedoubling, however, these two conditions are necessary—(1.) The equatorial element must be capable of opening up symmetrically; and, (2.) Each half, when separate, must be symmetrical on both sides of its own equator. Now, both these conditions may be here fulfilled. The equatorial element in both is an atom of oxygen; and though we have hitherto viewed the atom of oxygen as consisting of five bitetrads leaning on each other face to face, yet it may be equally viewed as consisting of two coronet-shaped elements (see Pl. II. fig. iv. Be), each composed of five tetrads, and both locked into each other. And it may be shown that into two such coronet-shaped elements, the atom of oxygen, in its secular transformation from the non-metallic into the metallic, tends to unlock and dedouble.

Our two metallic elements, then, ‘Na and ‘K, in the circumstances stated, will dedouble, and will be transformed into two new elements, both the poles in each similar to the other, and both elements similar to each other, only that the one—namely, that resulting from



the dedoubling of 'K—will have a longer axis than the other, corresponding to its greater atomic weight.

As to their atomic weight, it will obviously be in

$$\frac{^{\circ}\text{Na}}{2} = \frac{40 + 40 + 40}{2} = 60, \text{ i.e. } = 12, \text{ when } H = 1 = \text{Mg}.$$

And it will be in

$$\frac{^{\circ}\text{K}}{2} = \frac{40 + 40 + 40 + 40 + 40}{2} = 100, \text{ i.e. } = 20, \text{ when } H = 1 = \text{Ca}.$$

Our elements obtained by the dedoubling, then, of 'Na and 'K have the atomic weights of magnesium and calcium.

Further, as to their specific gravities. Supposing that under the law of redintegration being dedoubled elements, they tend to go in couples, when forming into dodecatoms, and that as hitherto obtained in the laboratory, the dodecatom of magnesium is undifferentiated, and that of calcium differentiated in the slightest manner, we obtain the following equations :—

$$\text{Magnesium, } G... \frac{(\text{MgMg})^{12}}{\frac{1}{2}\text{AQ}} = \frac{24 \times 60}{\frac{1}{2} \times 1620} = 1.76 \text{ Exp. } 1.75.$$

$$\text{Calcium, } . G... \frac{\text{Ca}(\text{CaCa})^{12}\text{Ca}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{26 \times 100}{1620} = 1.59 \text{ Exp. } 1.5...1.6.$$

Their relations to oxygen, also, in their dedoubled state, as compared with their original state, is very interesting. Thus, taking for them in their original state any strange names (since in that state they are not to be expected in nature), as, for instance, for that with single metallic poles the name Sodhium, and for that with double metallic poles Kalhium, and using, as we have done already, the spiritus asper (the h of the Greek alphabet) in the literal symbols as equivalent to the same letter which we have introduced into the familiar names, we obtain—

Dioxide of Sodhium,  $\text{ONaO}$  or  $\text{NaO}_2 = 2\text{MgO}$ , Monoxide of Magnesium.

Dioxide of Kalhium,  $\text{OKO}$  or  $\text{KO}_2 = 2\text{CaO}$ , Monoxide of Calcium.

Thus our theory, while it gives us very early in the Plutonic abyss magnesium and calcium, gives them as protoxides, that is, as they occur in nature. And this we hold to be no slender verification of our views, since silica and carbonic acid occur as dioxides, and alumina and iron as sesquioxides, that is, as structures analogous to those in their nascent state, from which magnesia and lime have been here obtained by dedoubling.

And now our theory awakes a most interesting suggestion with respect to calcium. Thus, as now obtained (by the dedoubling of potassium), it is a bi-polar metal, with a non-metallic equatorial region. Its molecular structure, therefore, morphologically considered, is by no

means perfect. But its atomic weight is 100. It therefore consists of the material of 20 atoms of hydrogen. Now, 20 is precisely the number of atoms of hydrogen which is required to construct a most perfect icosahedral metallic molecule (see Pl. I. fig. v.  $H_{20}$ ). Under the sustained operation, therefore, of the law of symmetry and sphericity, our theory leads us to infer that the atoms of calcium will undergo a secular perfectionment, so that at any epoch there may exist in nature two varieties of calcium, whose properties will be by no means the same in every respect. Moreover, since they are so dissimilar, they will tend to unite when they meet, and thus there will result a third variety of calcium, of double the atomic weight, and a much more powerful agent than either of the others. These inferences it is for chemists to inquire into, when they shall think it worth their while.

But an inference that is more interesting than any of these must not be omitted here, for, from these views, it follows that if nascent hydrogen could be condensed into its culmination molecules, that is, into icosatoms, and to these molecules a solidarity, which should prove to be invincible in the laboratory, could be imparted, then the condensed hydrogen would constitute calcium. And here it might be shown that such conditions as might be expected to produce such solidarity, exist in organised, especially in animal structures. With these, however, we have nothing to do at the present stage of our progress.

But this is the place to call to mind that the poles of the median atom of oxygen in the sodhium and potashium forms may be packed by baric and barytic elements, as well as by common elements; and now let us ask what shall we obtain by dedoubling in that case? And here we may confine our attention to potashium, partly because, in consequence of the great length of its axis, its dedoubling may be depended upon, and partly because the atomic weights of baric and barytic sodhium, and then halves resulting from dedoubling, are in such simple ratios with one another and with common sodium, that it does not appear how they could be experimentally distinguished from one or more atoms of the same element.

Baric potashium, then, when dedoubled, must give a metallic element, which must be analogous to calcium in its properties, and whose atomic weight must be—

$$\frac{100 + 100 + 40 + 100 + 100}{2} = \frac{440}{2} = 220, \text{ i.e. } 44 \text{ when } H = 1.$$

It therefore represents strontium.

Similarly barytic potashium must give an analogous element, whose atomic weight must be—

$$\frac{160 + 160 + 40 + 160 + 160}{2} = \frac{680}{2} = 340, \text{ i.e. } 68 \text{ when } H = 1.$$

It therefore represents barium.

Moreover, under the law of redintegration, the atoms of both of these metals, like those of magnesium and calcium, will tend to go in couples, so that they also will seem to have double their true atomic weights, and will have only one calorific focus for a couple of atoms. They will also be given to nature as protoxides. And thus, like the other members of the group, we may expect them in union with sulphuric, or sulphic, or carbonic, or other acid.

Magnesia in union with sulphic acid and water, when the quantity of aqueous matter which it tends spontaneously to include in its structure, when crystallised below freezing is present, constitutes a very beautiful and typical molecule. It is most shortly written by chemists  $Mg_2SO_4 \cdot 12H_2O$ , where S represents a tetratom of S according to our views, and O two atoms of oxygen. The formula, therefore, becomes to us,  $Mg_2S_4O_8 \cdot 24HO$ . Now, separating this chaos into those combinations which are known to tend to form in nature when such elements meet together in such numbers, that is, separating them into magnesia  $MgO$ , glacial sulphic acid  $SO^3 \cdot 2HO$ , and water of crystallisation, we obtain immediately a finely differentiated dodecatom, the body consisting of  $(HOaq)^{10}$ , the poles constituted by two atoms of magnesia, each surmounted by an atom of glacial acid. Adopting the astronomical symbol of the last sign of the zodiac to stand for an atom of magnesium, we may thus give a figurate formula of this beautiful structure, which may show something of it to the eye.



But this is the element of Epsom salt when in solution. Its form, it will be seen, is eminently prolate. When, therefore, the aqueous mantle by which it may render itself spherical in solution evaporates, these elements must place themselves as radii in an isometrical molecule. And what must be the structure of that molecule? To this it is to be



answered, that both poles are atoms of aq ; the molecule, therefore, must be aquaform, that is, it must consist of 36 parts, each similar to the one here figured, with the omission of the 10aq on the body. Now, in that case, allowing its volume to be that of the molecule of ice ( $= 16\text{Aq}$ ) we obtain the following equations of sp. gr.—

$$\text{Epsom Salt, G...} \frac{(\text{Mg}_2\text{SO}_4 \cdot 7\text{H}_2\text{O})^{36}}{\text{ICE.}} = 1.708 \text{ Exp. } 1.7...1.8.$$

Here then, besides obtaining the specific gravity of this salt *a priori*, we have a verification of the structure which we have assigned to the particle of water (see p. 23) ; as may also be obtained by constructing the molecule of gypsum, sal-ammoniac, &c.

An inspection of our figurate diagram serves also to explain the well-known relations of this salt to aqueous matter under variations of temperature. Thus it has been found, that when crystallised at several degrees below the freezing point, instead of 14, as usual, it contains 24 atoms of aqueous matter. In that case plainly the body of the common salt is expanded by the incidence of an atom of aq on each of its ten atoms of HO. In this state, as the most perfect, it is represented in the diagram. When, on the other hand, the solution is concentrated, and crystallisation takes place when the solution is warm, the crystals contain only 12 atoms of aqueous matter, that is, the two atoms of aq on the two poles are omitted as those on the body are, except at a very low temperature. And when sufficient heat is applied, it is found that all the water may be driven off except two atoms, that is, the aqueous body consisting of  $\text{HO}^{10}$  is dispersed, and only the two atoms of aq, which form the nuclei of the two atoms of sulphic acid, and which are necessary to its existence, remain.

The same rationale applies to other sulphates, &c. And surely it will not be denied by any one who has followed what has now been advanced, that our molecular morphology gives an insight into such matters which it is delightful to possess. But the chemist, it appears, has no toleration for it. Well, at any rate, let us proceed. There is a time to come.

Another remark, however, respecting our atom of calcium may here be made. Suppose it does not attain to an internally symmetrical structure, by being transformed into the isometrical icosahedron  $\text{H}^{20}$ , Pl. I. fig. v., it may yet become internally symmetrical as a bipolar metal, by the transformation of its polar atom of  $\text{U} = 5\text{H}$  into an atom of O, also  $= 5\text{H}$ . Now this is often to be expected in the secular course of nature, and in this case the wholly metallic nature of the atom of calcium will, under the law of differentiation, tend to effect it. And now, suppose this transformation of  $\text{U}$  into O to have been effected, what have we obtained ? Plainly, we have obtained an atom of magnesium, in union with one of oxygen.

The Atom of Calcium...Ca = MgO...An Atom of Magnesia.

And thus our theory explains why magnesia is so generally associated with lime, and why there should be in the world so many dolomite beds and mountains.

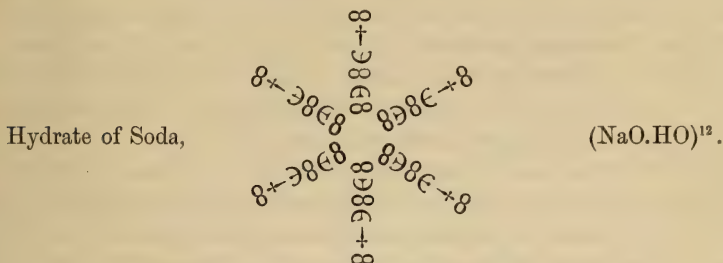
**Sodium, Potassium, Rubidium, Cæsium.**—In order to the genesis of magnesia and lime in the way which has been supposed, it is necessary that the dioxides of what I have called sodhium and potashium, should exist in single elements, and not in the molecular state. When they exist in this latter state (and into this state they must hurry as soon as the temperature permits), quite another issue must result. In this state there will no longer be a prevailing tendency to dedoublement, because each element of dioxide being in the position of a radius in an isometrical molecule, the law of sphericity has no fault to find with it.

But if the internal structure of the element of dioxide be anyhow dissymmetrical, it will tend secularly to become symmetrical. Now, on its genesis there is disymmetry in every atom of  $\Psi$  (Pl. II. fig. 1.), which, for the sake of reference, we may call by the strange name of Lithhium. Thus, an atom of  $\Psi$  consists of five bitetrads united by a terminal edge of each as the common axis of all. Consequently, at one end of that axis, in the centre of the five-fid pole, there are twice five units in a group; while at the other end, in the centre of the lens-shaped pole, there are only five. A group of five units, therefore, in the five-fid pole does not enter into the symmetry, and is supernumerary. It is also identical to the second group of five units immediately subjacent. It will, therefore, be repelled by the latter, and tend to be rejected from the structure. But five units are precisely the material of an atom of hydrogen. In being repelled, therefore, and rejected, they will be individualised as an atom of hydrogen. We thus obtain the secular equation—

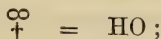


Now, both poles of the atoms equally of sodhium and potasshium are constituted by atoms of  $\Psi$ . Both poles, therefore, will tend to give off an atom of hydrogen each, and to be transformed into  $\begin{array}{c} \dagger \\ \downarrow \end{array}$ . But both the sodhium and potashium considered at present exist in the molecular state. Now, the conditions of molecular action at the circumference and at the centre of a molecule must be very different. This development, therefore, of hydrogen will not take place simultaneously at both regions; but, on the contrary, it is to be expected that an atom of hydrogen will be given out during one epoch in the peripherad pole, and during another epoch in the centrad pole. Taking, then, for

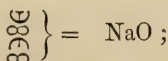
figurate illustration the molecule of dioxide of sodium as the simpler of the two, and supposing that it is the peripheral pole which is first symmetrised by the emission of hydrogen, we obtain as its diagram—



Now, here we have all over the surface of the molecule, and on each of the twelve constituent elements (of which only the half are seen in the diagram), an atom of



and between this peripheral moisture and the centre we have in each of the twelve constituents—



for the atomic weight of the metallic element now is  $35 + 40 + 40 = 115$ , *i.e.*, 23 when  $H = 1$ . Its atomic weight, therefore, is that of sodium.

In the same way, in the case of the analogous metal with double lithic poles, its atomic weight is now  $35 + 40 + 40 + 40 + 40 = 195$ , *i.e.*, 39 when  $H = 1$ . Its atomic weight is, therefore, that of potassium. And both may be permanent in nature, for each is dissymmetrical in opposite sides of its equator, and, therefore, cannot dedouble. Also, both, according to this theory of their genesis, are given to nature in the first instance as hydrates. Moreover, as to the pure metals, taking them in differentiated dodecatoms, as is most usual, and allowing one normal volume to that with single metallic poles, and two normal volumes to that with double metallic poles, we obtain the following equations of specific gravities—

$$\text{Sodium, } G \dots = \frac{(\text{Na})^{1+12+1}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{14 \times 115}{1620} = \cdot 99 \text{ Exp. } \cdot 97.$$

$$\text{Potassium, } G \dots = \frac{(\text{K})^{1+12+1}}{2\text{AQ}} = \frac{14 \times 195}{2 \times 1620} = \cdot 84 \text{ Exp. } \cdot 86.$$

Here, then, have we not such a theory of these two so highly analogous metals as satisfies all that we know of them? It is, indeed, true that they do not occur in nature as hydrates, which is the condition of their



genesis according to the preceding theory ; but this, as we shall soon see, arises simply from the tenderness of (the oxyhydric acid) HO, and its liability under the least pressure to lapse into aq, as, for instance, by the incidence upon it of carbonic dioxide, chlorine, nitric acid, &c. But of these things hereafter. Meantime, may I not ask whether anything more satisfactory in a scientific point of view could be desired as to the relations between sodium and potassium when compared together, and both when compared with magnesium and calcium ? How many geological phenomena which, on the popular views, seem wholly unaccountable and anomalous, explain themselves most felicitously if we admit this process of doubling and dedoubling as the mode by which the one is transformed into the other, so that each, by the use of the other, can always make its appearance in nature when it is needed ! And then as to the protoxides and hydrates, which our theory of the development of these elements necessitates, and which nature either presents to us, or ever tends to revert to in the laboratory, what more strange if this be all imagination ! The precise atomic weights, too, which our theory cannot avoid, but which, as it happens, are precisely those which the balance has determined ! But let us proceed.

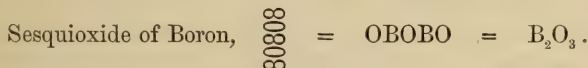
And what now, let us ask, as to baric and barytic sodium and potassium ; or rather, let us say, baric and barytic potassium only ; for in reference to the atomic weights of the sodiums the same ambiguities exist as have been already referred to, rendering experimental verification ambiguous also. We have to remark, then, that our theory having led us to strontium and barium as elements resulting from the dedoubling of baric and barytic potassium, or full weighted potassium leads us also to expect analogous elements corresponding to the entire structures when these have been rendered dissymmetrical on opposite sides of their equators, so that they cannot partition or dedouble.

But here an interesting fact which attaches to our theory requires to be kept in mind, and it is this : From the five-fid pole of baric and barytic lithhium we are not to expect an atom of baric hydrogen and of baric hylagen to be given out, as we have had an atom of common hydrogen from the pole of an atom of common lithhium. The baric and barytic forms contain disposable units sufficient in number to be developed and given off as elements of the pentagonal order of forms, that is, as forms of the same order as lithhium itself. This, therefore, they will do, because such development is more symmetrical and simple than if the disposable units had to shape themselves into the form of hydrogen, which, whether common or baric, is always trigonal. In the dissymmetrical pole of the atom of baric lithhium there are, in fact, fifteen disposable units, and in that of the atom of barytic lithhium there are twenty. Now these, when given off symmetrically in a form

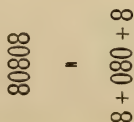
of the pentagonal order, constitute our two borons (monatomic),—the one with five, the other with ten units in the equator, the analogues in the pentagonal order of forms of hydrogen and hylagen in the trigonal order of forms (see Pl. I. fig iv. B, for the heavier sort of boron).

Instead of HO (oxyhydric) elements, then, according to our theory these baric and barytic alkaline elements, when undergoing reduction, will give out BO (boric) elements.

But here it will occur as an objection to this deduction, that such borates do not present themselves in nature in this connection,—nay, that all borates are very scarce. Now, this is true ; but here, as in all other cases, our molecular morphology emancipates itself from the objection by appealing to the analogy of nature, and becomes a beautiful illustration of it. Hydrates of the common alkalies are not found in nature in greater quantities than borates. The atoms of HO, as has been shown, when given in this connection, lapse into atoms of aq, thus going to increase the aqueous element on which the mobility and life of molecular nature mainly depend. In the development of the baric and barytic alkalies, the atoms of BO cannot, like those of HO, change their form ; but they will unite, one in each pole of an atom of oxygen as the coupling joint. And what do they then give to nature ? Using as its symbol a skeleton-faced cypher, which somewhat resembles a section of the atom of boron along the axis, and may remind us of its lightness, we thus obtain—



Now, when the structure of this combination is considered, it will be seen that there is no chance of its undergoing decomposition according to the mode of its construction. There is no chance of its being resolvable in the laboratory into OB + O + BO. The poles of the medial atom of O are perfect moulds for those of the atoms of B which have plunged into them, and doubtless BOB will thereafter be inseparably welded together, especially since, when thus existing as one form, they constitute an exquisite icosahedron, the most perfectly spherical of molecules. If decomposition can be effected in the laboratory at all, it will be merely separation of the terminal atoms of oxygen, which render the axis of the combination too long. Thus, as the equation of decomposition, we shall have



Now, the atomic weight of the undecomposable icosahedron, when its poles are fully reduced borons, is  $15 + 40 + 15 = 70$ , *i.e.*, 14 when  $H = 1$ . Also, from its exquisite sphericity, it must be a very reposing or inactive element. And it occurs in nature in combination with two atoms of oxygen. These facts indicate the equation—



Thus, according to our theory, while the hydrating matter developed during the genesis of the common alkalies goes to increase the aqueous element on which the mobility and life of the earth's surface so much depend, the boric matter developed during the genesis of the baric and barytic alkalies goes to increase the siliceous element on which the stability and security of the earth's surface as a theatre for life so much depend.

But what, let us now ask, must be the atomic weight of our baric potassium, when, by the emission of matter more or less, one of its poles has been rendered dissimilar to the other, and the whole dissymmetrical, so that it cannot dedouble into two atoms of strontium, as it must tend otherwise to do? It will be found on inspection, that all the matter it can part with, provided it leave five units for a central group to the five-fid pole, is one atom of light boron, its atomic weight 15, *i.e.*, 3 when  $H = 1$ . Now, we found that the full atomic weight of baric potassium (= to 2Sr.) was 440, that is, 88 when  $H = 1$ . When diminished by the departure of the atom of light boron, that is, by 3 in the hydrogen scale, its atomic weight will therefore be 85 on the same scale. Now, this is within a decimal of the experimentally determined atomic weight of rubidium.

Similarly, it may be shown that barytic potassium, in becoming dissymmetrical on opposite sides of its equator, so that it cannot partition into barium, must give off an atom of full-weighted boron, its atomic weight 20, *i.e.*, 4 when  $H = 1$ . Since then its original atomic weight was 680, *i.e.*, 136 when  $H = 1$ ; it will now, in its permanent non-partitioning state, be  $136 - 4$ , that is, 132. Now, this is within an unit of the experimentally estimated atomic weight of cæsium, which is usually given at 133.

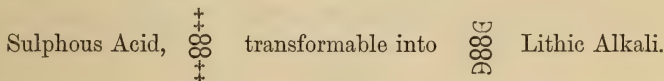
According to our theory, then, these recently discovered alkaline metals, rubidium and cæsium, are in reference to potassium what strontium and barium are in reference to calcium. And I do not see that a more scientific conception of their place in nature can be desired, or a genesis that could explain better both themselves and their circumstances.

**Lithium.**—In what has preceded, it has been supposed that single atoms of oxygen, as fast as they were formed in the seething abyss, were



packed with the bitetrads which were swarming around, and thus there resulted a series of alkaline earths and alkalies of which magnesium and calcium, sodium and potassium, may be regarded as the *terrestrial* types.

The next step is, when, previously to being thus packed, the single atoms of oxygen had succeeded in coupling, after which the external poles were packed as formerly. This we have already found when considering the development of sulphous acid (p. 35), and the same we now find when considering the development of an alkali which may indeed be considered as the ultimate form of sulphous acid when it is prevented from doubling.



In reference to this new structure, there can be no new elements obtained by dedoubling, for the whole merely consists of two identical structures in apposition, and each by itself more readily than both together will form into dodecatoms. But whether united or separate, their naked metallic poles will forthwith be capped by oxygen. And then, as formerly, an atom of hydrogen will be given out from the centre of the five-fid pole of the atoms of lithium, and thus, as before, we shall have as the figurate formula—



By the egress of the atom of H, the atomic weight of the metallic element is lowered from  $H^5 = \Psi = 40$  to  $\Psi = 40 - 5 = 35$ , that is, 7 when  $H = 1$ . It, therefore, in atomic weight represents lithium. Moreover, as to specific gravity, assuming as usual the differentiated dodecatom and that it is so small that it occupies half a normal or aqueous volume, we obtain the equation—

$$\text{Lithium, G...} \frac{(L)^{1+12+1}}{\frac{1}{2}AQ} = \frac{14 \times 35}{\frac{1}{2} \times 1620} = \cdot 60. \text{ Exp. } \cdot 59.$$

Further, it is worthy of remark, that as the single atom of lithium is dissymmetrical and heteropolar, this alkali, in the purely metallic state, can only exist as a dodecatom either isometrical or differentiated. Its

atomic weight, therefore, must be no less than from 84 to 98 on the hydrogen scale, intermediate between that of rubidium and caesium, and not far from that of lead. Hence we are enabled to explain the remarkable solvent power of lithium, as compared with sodium and potassium.

And thus the entire series of the fixed alkalies presents itself to us as a system of extreme simplicity. Sodium is an undecomposable suboxide of lithium. Potassium is the same with the lithic elements on its poles doubled. Potassium may be called double-flowering sodium. All the others are their baric or barytic isomorphs, as has been shown.

With regard to thallium, it appears to owe its alkaline analogies to its possession of sodium poles, the body being the sulphic icosatom—



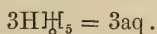
This gives the atomic weight on the hydrogen scale,  $23 + 160 + 23 = 206$ ; or if both the atoms of lithium, in the sodiums, be reduced  $22 + 160 + 22 = 204$ , the last being the atomic weight agreed on by experiment. This theory explains, also, why this metal is found among sulphides. But to proceed.

**Ammonia**—Anything like a scientific or continuous transition from the fixed alkalies to the volatile has hitherto been an impossibility in science. Between Na and K on the one hand, and  $\text{NH}_3$  on the other, there seems absolutely no agreement at all, and yet it is certain that all the three act in a manner which is highly analogous. Our molecular morphology solves this mystery, showing, as it does, that the volatile alkalies are merely the hydrides of that same element of which the fixed alkalies are oxides.

But the conditions of the genesis of the two sorts of alkali, as indeed their functioning in nature, are widely different; and to find a primal or primæval genesis of ammonia, we must leave for a time the Plutonic abyss and reascend into the region where we first found the aqueous element.

When bent on the genesis of that element, in a region where hydrogen alone was to be found, we stopped when we had obtained the hexatom of hydrogen (see Pl. I. fig. x.  $\text{H}^6$ ). But it is needful now to consider that, if in a region where all the hydrogen is disposed in hexatoms, a single atom of hydrogen be anyhow introduced or disengaged, then it is to be expected that on each of the five points for union, in the latter, a hexatom of hydrogen will perch. If the entire medium of

hydrogen had been revolved into hexatoms, we have seen that these would group into hexatoms again, and that only aqueous matter would result. But if, along with hexatoms of hydrogen there be, in the medium, single atoms of hydrogen also, then, just as hexatoms do, these single atoms will gather five hexatoms around them. Now, in this case, we must obtain other products. And first, we are to expect that in order to the differentiation and stability of the combination, the five atoms of H, in the hexatom on the poles of the nuclear atom of H, which place themselves around the central atom, will do so by an equatorial instead of a polar angle. We thus obtain a beautiful open or aerial molecule of hydrogen, consisting of five times six atoms around one in the centre, that is, thirty-one in all. Of this a figurate diagram, omitting one of the three equatorial hexatoms, is given in Pl. II. fig. VII.  $H_{31}$ . Now, as was supposed when giving the genesis of the aqueous element (see p. 17), let this elemental air-plant fructify by the incidence of single units of matter supposed to be diffused in the ambient on all the points of the equators of the atoms of hydrogen, which are free to receive them. This, it has been shown, the law of sphericity will tend to effect. And from this it will result that the  $3H_6$ , which constitute the equatorial arms of this combination, will be secularly transformed into—



But with regard to the 5H which surround the sixth atom of H in the polar hexatoms of  $H_{31}$ , since one of their equatorial angles is engaged already (being the point by which they are held in the combination), they can take on from the ambient only two instead of three units each. Instead of being converted into normal hylagens, they can only give rise to hylagens which want an unit in one of their equatorial angles, the atomic weight of each being seven instead of eight. This new element, then, we may represent by our symbol for hylagen inverted, thus,  $\bar{H}$ . Now, there are five of them on each pole of  $H_{31}$  in that condition; and that condition is such that it forbids their separating from each other, for each is dissymmetrical and incapable of separate existence. Nay, their dissymmetry requires that, at the first possible moment, they shall arrange themselves in such a group that each may supply the equatorial defect of the others. Now, this will be effected when they all bring their defective equatorial angles to the centre of the combination, thus forming in that centre a circle of five units. But the form at which we thus arrive, is precisely that with which we have been familiar since we began the investigation of the alkalis. It is precisely an atom of lithium! And the axial part of the structure, resulting from the synthesis which we have now followed, that is, from the aerial growth of hydrogen, in hexatoms around a single atom, in the celestial spaces,



consists of two atoms of lithium as poles united by an axis, consisting of three atoms of hydrogen (see Pl. II. fig. VIII.  $\text{H}^3\text{H}\epsilon$ ). And the whole structure is taken into account when the middle atom of hydrogen in the axis is buttressed by an atom of aq on each of its three sides.



Suppose now that this structure is shivered to pieces by electricity or otherwise, what, let us ask, shall we obtain as products of the decomposition? That we shall obtain three atoms of moisture and three atoms of hydrogen, is obvious. But what as to the polar elements? I have said that in structure they are identical with lithium. But their mode of genesis is very different. Their genesis is aërial, nay ætherial, and they are in no degree residua. Lithium, on the other hand, has not only an abyssal origin, but before it has attained to a true individuality and undecomposability, it has given off an atom of hydrogen. Now, it appears that hydrogen when given off in that way carries along with it the wings, the æther, or, more generally, the aptitude, of the structure which it leaves for assuming the æriform state except at high temperatures. But with regard to our lithic structures here considered, everything leads us to infer that when they couple symmetrically, as—

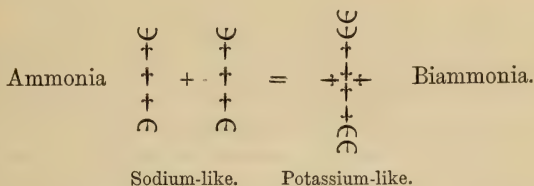


they will be eminently suited for the æriform state. Now, of such an æriform the atomic weight is  $2 \times 35 = 70$ , *i.e.*, 14 when  $\text{H} = 1$ . It is also eminently spherical. It will therefore be eminent for its repose or inactivity in the laboratory, while yet it consists of two halves, each of which cannot but be active in the highest degree if existing singly. All these features mark this new æriform as azote. And thus neglecting the moisture, what we obtain from the decomposition of our aërial alkali are, three atoms of hydrogen and one of azote. Our alkali, therefore, represents ammonia.

Is it asked why I retain the term azote, which has been deemed worthy of a remonstrance against its use by a highly accomplished adept in chemistry? I answer that that term is happily expressive of its repose and inactivity. It also invites us to name its half, which cannot but be intensely active, “Zote;” and this term admits of changes corresponding to the various ways in which these elements may possibly combine with one another, *viz.* :—



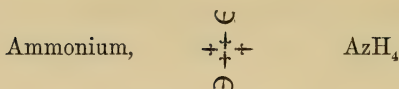
We shall find that all of these occur in nature, and more especially the last. Thus, bearing nearly the same relations as sodium and potassium, we may have—



And here let us remark that the single atom of ammonia, unless the middle atom of hydrogen assume the coronal form, or in the trigonal form, be buttressed by three atoms of water or of carbon, or something else, cannot be permanent. It must undergo a most remarkable transformation, analogous to that of HO, when it lapses into aq, but much finer—a transformation which explains at once the eminence of ammonia in the economy of nature, and the seemingly anomalous modes in which it functions in the laboratory.

Thus the five atoms of  $\text{H}_2$ , which at present constitute the terminals of the axis of the atom of ammonia, have, as they exist at present, their axes standing obliquely to the geometrical axis of the structure. They will, therefore, under the law of symmetry, tend to place themselves parallel to it. But this implies the opening up of the closed poles of the atoms of zote, which are in contact with the atoms of hydrogen of the axis, so that the atoms of hydrogen might be received within their poles if there were any force which tended to press the opened zotes towards the centre of the structure, and so to shorten the axis. Now, the law of sphericity implies such a force, for the axis of the structure, as it stands, is much too long for the equatorial diameter. The consequence must be the introduction of the two extreme atoms of hydrogen into the group of the five atoms of  $\text{H}_2$ , and the genesis, along with them, of two aquaform elements, which will remain bolted together by the medial atom of hydrogen, the resulting form being identical with that of two atoms of aq united by their poles (see Pl. II. fig. x. am). Hence the ammoniacal, like the aqueous element, is, in our theory, eminently dimorphous, and its functioning in the one form must be not a little different from what it is in the other.

Thus, when it exists with zotic poles (Pl. II. fig. VIII.), it will behave like another alkaline metal. But when it exists in its aquaform (Pl. II. fig. x.), both its poles being re-entrant and negative, it cannot unite on the same axis with anything but by the intervention of an atom of hydrogen, or possibly of sulph. Now, in this form it exists very often, and hence the conception of—



a structure which, when thus composed, is not defective in a morphological point of view, but which the law of redintegration appears to forbid, causing it to lapse into ammonia with discharge of hydrogen, and which, at any rate, is not the ammonium of chemistry.

That the atom of ammonia possesses, sometimes at least, the aquaform, is well shown by the hydrochlorate, its characteristic salt. Thus, to obtain the specific gravity found by the balance, it is necessary to make the following construction :—

$$\text{Sal Ammoniac, } \frac{(\text{ClHam})^{36}}{4\text{AQ}} = \frac{36(180 + 5 + 85)}{4 \times 1620} = 1.5 \text{ Exp. } 1.5,$$

that is, the molecule must be aquaform.

That the single atom of ammonia is sometimes aquaform is shown also by another natural salt, though the molecule be a dodecatom—

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{The Bicarbonate} \\ \text{of Ammonia,} \end{array} \right\} \frac{(\text{OCO, OHamHO, OCO})^{12}}{2\text{AQ}} = (\text{HO.H}_4\text{NO.2CO}_2)^{12} = 1.46$$

and others. Indeed, it forms a pleasing study to observe how am, in its aquaform, plays the same part in reference to a heavier class of compounds, that aq does in reference to a lighter class, as is beautifully seen by reference to Fremy's roseo and luteo-cobaltic chlorides, and others.



## CHAPTER VII.

### THE HALOGENS.

FROM potassium common, baric, and barytic,—that is, from unreduced or crude potassium (see Pl. II. fig. III.), possessing an atomic weight of 200, *i.e.*, 40 when  $H = 1$ , and in the same way from the others, symmetrical on both sides of their equators, and protected from the further attacks of oxygen by carrying already an atom of oxygen on each pole—we have obtained by their dedoublement, under the secularly sustained operation of the law of sphericity, the alkaline-earth-metals, calcium, strontium, and barium, and that in the state of protoxides as nature presents them to us. And when the temperature has permitted the as yet entire potashic forms to assume the molecular state we have obtained, by the symmetrising of the axis of either the peripheral, or of the central polar lithic element in all, the true alkalis, namely, potassium, rubidium, and cæsium, and that in the state of hydrated or silicated protoxides.

**Chlorine, Bromine, Iodine.**—We have now to inquire what elements will be given to nature if the temperature be secularly sustained so as to forbid these alkalis to leave the æriform state, or to resume that state if they have existed in molecules before. This we know may be done with concrete potassium, even in our own laboratories. It may be raised into a green vapour. But when it is in this state, it cannot remain for ever as it is, that is, with one of its poles unlike the other, and heavier by an atom of hydrogen. Its axis must be symmetrised. The heavy dissymmetrical lithic pole must emit an atom of hydrogen as the other had previously done. When, therefore, it has remained long enough in the æriform state, its atomic weight will no longer be 39 but 38 when  $H=1$ . But its axis is as overlong as ever. Is there, then, no way in which it can bring itself

more into harmony with the law of sphericity? It cannot do so by partitionment, as it could have done when its atomic weight was 40 ; for each half would now be dissymmetrical in reference to its own equator, which it was not when the atomic weight was full. But yet, it may plainly bring itself into better keeping with the law of sphericity, if not by shortening its axis, at least by getting rid of the five-fid or metallic expansion of its matter, which extends beyond both the poles of that axis. In a word, the five units, which, by being spread out in a circular manner, render it now a bipolar metal, may be gathered up into an atom of hydrogen on each pole, and thus, from being a bipolar metal, it will become a metalloid. Its poles, instead of being any longer five-fid, will be lens-shaped, and its polar elements isamorphous with B (see Pl. I. fig. iv.) Adopting, then, as has been already proposed, for this lens-shape, as a symbol, a compressed cypher, which somewhat resembles its cross-section parallel to the axis, we obtain for this new metalloid the symbol—

Chlorine,  $\infty$  (see Pl. II. fig. xi. Cl).

As to its full atomic weight, it is  $30 + 40 + 40 + 40 + 30 = 180$ , *i.e.*, 36 when  $H=1$ . But it will be observed that there are still in the interior of each atom two unreduced lithiums. Each of these, therefore, in order to the symmetrising of its axis, has an atom of H which it must ultimately yield. The ultimate atomic weight of our new element, therefore, shall be  $36 - 2 = 34$  when  $H=1$  ; and it seems not improbable that the dodecatom may be differentiated by having as its poles atoms of this lighter sort, while those of the body of the molecule are full weighted. This would give the mean atomic weight  $35\cdot6$ , which is, as nearly as could be desired, that conventionally adopted for chlorine ; and we should have, as the specific gravity of this element when condensed into dodecatoms—

$$\text{Condensed Chlorine, } G = \frac{\text{Cl}(\overset{10}{\text{Cl}})\text{Cl}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{170 + (10 \times 180) + 170}{1620} =$$

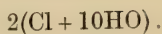
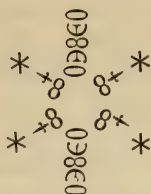
1.32 Exp. 1.33 .

But, doubtless, the normal atomic weight of this element, as long ago determined, is 180, that is, 36 when  $H=1$ , which, indeed, the specific gravity of liquid chlorine rather indicates.

This liquid chlorine, however, is not natural to the surface of our planet, and cannot be obtained but by considerable pressure ; but about the temperature of freezing water it tends to form, by the aid of moisture, into yellow crystals, the structure of the body of the chlorine dodecatom being the same as that which we have seen in the sulphate

of magnesia molecule when crystallised at a low temperature, namely  $(aqHO)^{10}$ .

Hydrate of Chlorine,



The activity of this new metalloid, like that of the metal from which it is derived, must also be very great, because its departure from the spherical is so great, its axis being so long. So far, therefore, our new element represents chlorine (which, considering such a genesis, we might well write Klorine), and we shall find as we proceed that it does so completely. Meantime, we may remark that, like Kalium, from which it is derived in the state of vapour, it is of a green colour, whence its name.

**Rock Salt.**—Chlorine is not metallic, at least on its poles, while yet its poles are conformable to those of metals in general. It will, therefore, tend to hurry into union with metals. And more especially as it follows from its shorter axis, that sodium will be surviving as such, in the primæval abyss, during the epoch in which potassium shall have been demetallised into chlorine, it follows that, instead of an alloy of sodium and potassium, as a product of that abyss, we shall have chloride of sodium, or rock salt.

Supposing this salt to exist in isometrical molecules, we obtain as its specific gravity—

$$\text{Rock Salt} \dots G = \frac{(NaCl)^{12}}{AQ} = \frac{12(115 + 180)}{1620} = 2.18 \text{ Exp. } 2 \dots 2.22.$$

**Hydrochloric Acid.**—But when existing in regions where heavier metals are not to be found, the atom of chlorine, notwithstanding the length of its own axis, must tend to retain in union with it one of the atoms of hydrogen which it has given out, or more generally one atom of hydrogen; for among light elements there is no such strong affinity in nature as that of hydrogen for oxygen, atom for atom. Nor is there any molecular combination in nature which possesses the same interest and importance as the primal HO. Now, an atom of O is the coupling joint, the equatorial element, of an atom of chlorine; and though there is matter in union with that atom of O on both its poles, yet that matter



in each pole is similar and equal, and, therefore, both sides balance each other, leaving the atom of O still with its demand for an atom of H, on one pole or the other. The intervening matter, in fact, is no more to the affinity between H and O, than a table with a needle lying on it is to a magnet held beneath that table. Thus do we obtain HCl or ClH, and in the smallest symmetrical combination—

Chlorhydric Acid,  $\text{HClClH} = 2\text{HCl}$ . The least molecule.

And it is an acid; for this is a class of substances of which, though it cannot be said universally that they are salts of hydrogen, yet it may be said universally that if they have a sharp and sour taste, then, at least, one terminal of their axis is a lance-shaped form, such as H or S, as was, indeed, long ago divined by Lemery.

As to the specific gravity of hydrochloric acid in the dense state, it follows that since one pole of the acid is trigonal and the other pentagonal, it may form into two kinds of molecules, the one being the icosatom, and the other the dodecatom. Moreover, in order to the most complete differentiation of the still unstable liquid, we are to expect that it will form into both kinds of molecules in equal numbers. In this way its stability will be helped as far as possible. Now, if this take place, and if we allow (as we shall find that we usually have to do) two normal or aqueous volumes for the larger molecule, the icosatom, and one for the smaller molecule, the dodecatom, we obtain—

$$\text{Condensed Chlorhydric Acid, } G = \frac{(\text{ClH})^{20}}{2\text{AQ}} + \frac{(\text{HCl})^{12}}{\text{AQ}} = 1.26 \text{ Exp. } 1.27.$$

This acid has, as might be expected, a great demand for water; and it has been remarked that all weaker and all stronger acids may be reduced by boiling to an acid which has the seeming arbitrary and capricious formula of  $\text{HCl} + 16\text{HO}$ , its specific gravity = 1.111. Our molecular morphology shows, however, that there is nothing really arbitrary or capricious in these numbers. Thus we have found that the most stable form of aqueous matter is the dodecatom  $(\text{OHaqHO})^{12}$  (see p. 23). Now, when we differentiate this aqueous dodecatom by substituting for the polar elements atoms of simply hydrated chlorhydric acid, we obtain—

$$\text{The most stable Acid, } \frac{\text{aqHCl}(\text{OHaqHO})^{12}\text{ClHaq}}{2\text{AQ}} = \frac{2(\text{HCl} + 16\text{HO})}{2.\text{AQ}} = 1.111 \text{ Exp. } 1.111.$$

**Bromine and Iodine.**—And now, what as to the other halogens—bromine, its atomic weight 80, and iodine, its estimated atomic weight

127, when  $H = 1$ ? This question our theory easily answers. Thus it led us to look for a baric and a barytic potassium as well as a common potassium, though in comparatively small quantities, in our planet; and we found rubidium and cæsium precisely answering our anticipation. We have now to make the same remark respecting chlorine. We have to look for a baric and barytic chlorine, and what do we find? Chlorine we have found to be demetallised potassium, that is, potassium when the five units previously so disposed as to render its poles five-fid or metallic, have gathered themselves up into an atom of hydrogen on each pole and gone off. We are, therefore, to expect two metalloids corresponding to rubidium and cæsium, derived from them in the same way. In this case, however, as has already been shown (see p. 54), in order to abolish the flowering five-fid or metallic poles, it is not five units merely that must go off, but five units, each of them a tetradic group, that is,  $5 \times 4 = 20$  units from each pole. Now, this gives the following equations:—

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Demetallised Rubidium} &= 440 - (2 \times 20) = 400 \stackrel{H=5}{=} 80 \stackrel{H=1}{=} \text{Bromine.} \\ \text{Demetallised Cæsium} &= 680 - (2 \times 20) = 640 = 128 = \text{Iodine.} \end{aligned}$$

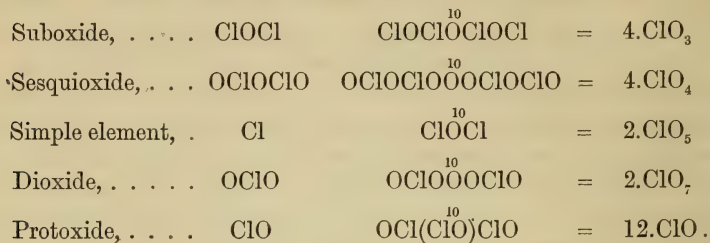
As to their specific gravity, bromine appears to have been obtained, like chlorine, in simple dodecatoms, while in the case of iodine some of the molecules appear to have been differentiated in the mass or crystals that have been weighed. Thus—

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Liquid Bromine,} \quad \frac{\text{Br}^{12}}{\text{AQ}} &= \frac{12 \times 400}{1620} = 2.99 \text{ Exp. } 2.99. \\ \text{Solid Iodine,} \quad \frac{\text{I}^{12}}{\text{AQ}} &= \frac{12 \times 640}{1620} = 4.74 \text{ Exp. } 4.94? \end{aligned}$$

The long axis of the halogen elements, and their consequently great departure from the spherical, invests them with great chemical activity. It also gives rise to a double series of compound forms, in which the ratio of the constituents is the same, namely, a nascent form in which the addition is made on the equator of a single atom of the halogen, and a culmination form in which the former have doubled into dodecatoms more or less differentiated. These have been obtained to the largest extent when the halogen has been combined with oxygen; for though oxygen be non-metallic like chlorine and the other halogens, at least on their poles, yet oxygen and a halogen may be made to unite, and the combination even isolated, at least when something metallic exists in the molecule, such as the atom of H in HO. But the proper metalliser is K, giving in the culmination form  $2.\text{KO}.\text{ClO}_5 =$

$$\text{Chlorate of Potass, G} = \frac{(\text{OKClOClKO})^{12}}{4\text{AQ}} = 2.0 \text{ Exp. } 1.99.$$

**Oxides, &c.**—The various oxides begin to form in the usual way as suboxide, sesquioxide, and dioxide, all of which are symmetrical. Thereafter these, as also the pure atom of chlorine, lay hold of five atoms of oxygen to surround their equators and improve their sphericity, and ultimately these, by doubling, give us the series of dodecatoms—



The different halogens, though isomorphous, being dissimilar in structure and weight, may also be made to unite with one another. Thus the first form of differentiated molecule here given may be constructed of chlorine instead of oxygen, and iodine instead of chlorine, giving, when drawn and quartered by the chemist,  $\text{ICl}_3$ , &c.

**The Sea.**—Leaving these creations of chemical art, also the chemist to take care of his eyes when dealing with such forced substances, which are ever tending to find their way back into nature, even with explosive violence, it may be now remarked that we are in some measure able to understand the composition of the ocean. It is commonly looked upon merely as a dilute solution of such mixed salts as happen to find their way into it from the solid bed on which it rests. Our theory presents quite another view. Our theory leads us to regard an unit of the ocean as in some sense an organic unity, possessing generally and tending to possess everywhere an exquisite symmetry of structure, and no doubt generally also a self-conservative and restorative power. This we cannot show here, indeed, in detail and convincingly, because that would demand many pages, and not a few elaborate diagrams. But we may show that such a conception belongs to the unity of our molecular philosophy, and thus we can put the reader in the way of understanding it, and of believing it if he is disposed.

The first question comes to be, Why is there such a large quantity of chloride of sodium in the sea, when compared with other saline ingredients, which are much more abundant in its bed? Now, to this it is a most philosophical answer, that chloride of sodium ministers to the life of the world much more than any of the other salts, being indeed indispensable to our own life. It is also a good reason to assign that its presence in sea-water to the extent to which it exists retains the sea in a liquid state, when, but for its presence, the sea must have frozen.

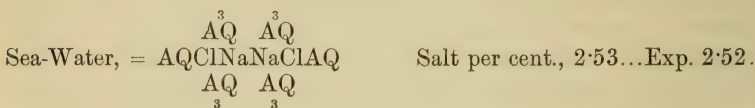


And there are other reasons of the same class, all of which are, as I have said, rightly entitled to the name of good and philosophical, because they lead the mind at once to that which must ever be the highest pursuit in science and the last word in philosophy, namely, the relation of the creation to the Creator. But the aims of the student of molecular science should be to discover, if he can, how such benignant designs have been practically accomplished, and how they are secularly maintained by the ordinary working or weaving of nature. Now, this is what our theory enables us to do with respect to sea salt and the sea generally. We have not, indeed, sought the genesis of sodium and potassium in the aqueous element, but, on the contrary, in a Plutonic abyss, in which there was no reference to water. It will be seen, however, that, granting a vapoury, ultimately an aqueous, medium to have condensed into a globe of sufficient mass, there would be found our Plutonic abyss in its central parts, and that seething medium of bitetrads from which we obtained sodium and potassium as primal elements. And let this remark suffice here, for preventing the conception, on the part of the reader, of any discontinuity, according to our views, between the waters of the ocean and the salts that are in it.

But why have we not potassium as well as sodium salts, in such abundance as would be seemingly natural in the circumstances? That is the question. Now, it is answered by the fact, that the axis of the atom of potassium is much longer than that of sodium. It exists in violation of the law of sphericity to a much greater extent. Hence, during the same epoch in nature, it undergoes demetallisation in much greater quantities; and while sodium is still retaining its metallic state, potassium has been demetallised into chlorine. Now, since these two elements are metallic and metalloidal respectively, and therefore dissimilar, they will enter into union with each other when they meet, and there will result an atom of table-salt. If the sodium existed previously in the state of oxide, that will be no hindrance to this combination; for the potassium, when transformed into chlorine, must be given to nature as chlorhydric acid, of which the atom of H will rush into the atom of O of the oxide of sodium, both lapsing together into aq, and leaving the simple chloride NaCl. Here, in fact, we have a phenomenon which is of very frequent occurrence, especially in organic chemistry, viz., the power which a combination manifests of shortening its axis by the union of H and O, when they meet in the same axis. Lapsing together into aq, they generate a hexagonal form, which is no longer conformable to the positions in the axis where H and O were before, and which, therefore, must be thrown aside.

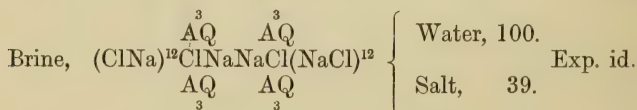
Thus we shall obtain abundance of chloride of sodium for the ocean.

But to what extent shall it be introduced? We have already seen (see page 26), or, at any rate, by a sufficient number of the relative diagrams, it may be shown that the atoms of the aqueous element tend to go on aggregating in nature until a differentiated dodecatom of AQ is constructed, which I have referred to as a minim rain-drop. Now, in its centre there is a vacant space every way suitable for giving permanent and secure lodging to a saline element. Let us, then, take the smallest portion of chloride of sodium which is symmetrical, and, consequently, capable of existing separate, or out of the molecule state,—that is, let us take a coupled molecule,  $\text{ClNaNaCl}$ , and let us place such an element in the centre of the composite aqueous particle referred to, and do we not obtain chloride of sodium and water in the very ratios in which they exist in—

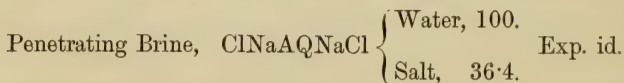


Nay, not only do we by this construction obtain the percentage of nature, but we see why it requires a greater degree of cold to freeze sea-water than to freeze common water. The double molecule of salt forms an axis for the molecule, which keeps it stretched, and assists in excluding from that centre the atom of AQ, which must find its way there before the ice molecule can be formed, and the liquid congeal (see page 27).

It may here be remarked, however, that this marine molecule may be differentiated by a dodecatom of salt on the poles, instead of a particle of AQ. In that case we obtain—



By the discharge of the salt in the axis, this molecule may also exist, and be partitioned into twelve, each of them symmetrical—



At certain temperatures, one kind of brine molecule appears to prevail; at certain temperatures, the other. At any rate, the reader will remark that these are the very limits to which water can be charged with common salt at the surface of our planet.

But what is the structure of an integrant molecule of the ocean?

According to what has been just stated, its original materials are sodium and potassium, along with water, in minim rain-drops.

We have also seen how, instead of potassium, if it do not dedouble, we are to expect chlorine.

But both sodium and potassium, when possessing the structure proper to their genesis, may dedouble—sodium into magnesium, and potassium into calcium. These metals, therefore, we may expect in sea-water.

And, moreover, those metals we have found to be brought into great harmony with the molecular conditions of the surface of the terraqueous globe, when, by the aid of sulphic acid, they have attained to the state of Epsom salts and selenite. Now, in the abyss there could be no want of sulphic acid, for its very first issue is  $\text{SOS} = \text{SO}_2$ ; which,

on the supply of moisture, tends to construct  $\text{SaqS} = \text{SO}_3\text{HO}$ . We have also seen that both of these salts tend to form aquaform molecules (see pp. 31, 41). Such sulphic molecules, therefore, in an aqueous medium such as the ocean, would be in perfect harmony with their environments. The law of assimilation bearing on them from the aqueous particles of the surrounding medium, vast though its quantity be, would have no tendency to change them. For aught that appears, both might be secularly stable, if encased in lime or magnesia.

Let these sulphic molecules then be so encased, then surrounded by composite molecules, each of them a differentiated dodecatom, consisting of fourteen of the primary differentiated dodecatoms, in the centre of each of which the chloride of sodium nestles, and let each of them have also an atom of chloride of magnesium on each pole, and let the whole aqueous medium consist of such molecules, in equal numbers; and both the structure and its differentiation of that medium are very perfect, and it may be expected to be very stable.

At any rate, an integrant molecule of it—which, however, without diagrams, is perhaps wholly obscure—gives the very percentages which are found in analysis in ocean water.

	Water.	Theory.	Experiment.
36 {	$14\text{AQ}^{14}$ , . . . . .	968·5 . . . .	968·5 Water.
	$14(\text{NaCl})^2$ , . . . . .	25·2 . . . .	24·6 Table Salt.
	$2(\text{MgCl})^2$ , . . . . .	2·9 . . . .	2·6 Bitter Salt.
	$1(\text{MgOSaqS})^2$ , . . . .	2·1 . . . .	2·1 Epsom Salt.
	$1\text{CaOSaqSaq}$ , . . . . .	1·3 . . . .	1·1 Hard-Water Salt.



## CHAPTER VIII.

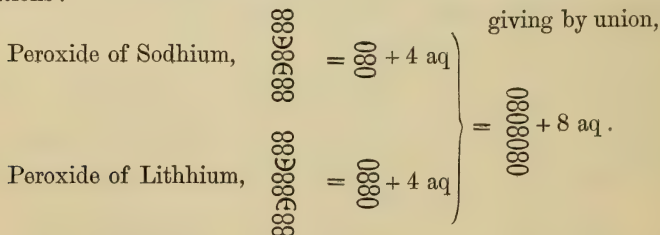
### CARBON, HYDRO-CARBONS, OXYCARBONS.

By the secular demetallisation of the polar elements in the potassium-forms, then, we obtain the halogens. We have now to inquire what we obtain as the result of the same process in the sodium-forms, along with which we may take the lithium-forms, since they differ from the sodium-forms only in this, that the oxygen-form in the latter is coupled instead of single, so that the structure is always ready to open into two—



And as, in reference to potassium, in order to obtain its reduction to chlorine, we assumed the existence in the first instance of the peroxide, let us now do the same with the sodhic and lithhic bodies.

In this way, by the emission of two atoms of hydrogen from each pole, the first to symmetrise the axis of the polar atom of lithhium, and the second to demetallise it (both hydrogens lapsing, along with the two atoms of oxygen on each pole, into aq), we obtain the following equations :—



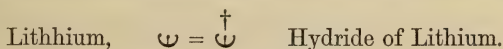
Now, of these reduced forms, the lower, having two atoms of oxygen for its medial body, must tend to open ; and it is to be observed that the latter when opened is the morphological complement of the other, so that if it open and receive the upper, the latter will fit

into it as a mould, and we shall obtain a structure of great perfection, not without analogy to a halogen, as in the diagram on the right. Its form, like that of a halogen, is axial or cylindrical, and its poles are identical with those of the halogen. It differs only in embodying no metallic element. It is, consequently, less fully differentiated, and must be less coherent or stable, and, therefore, may possibly in some cases be decomposable. (For its determination see p. 88, *et seq.*)

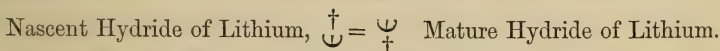
But what are these lens-shaped polar elements? They are obviously isomorphous with boron, and we have already seen them in the poles of the atoms of chlorine. Here, however, we find them not only on the poles, but in the interior of our quasi-halogen also.

**Marsh Gas.**—Neglecting for the present the light, the baric, and the barytic isomorphs of this lens-form, and attending to that species only which is obtained from the reduction and demetallisation of lithhium, we shall ascertain most easily what it represents in the laboratory, by following out the symmetrising and demetallisation of a single atom of lithhium taken by itself.

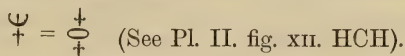
First, then, as has been already shown, we obtain the equation—



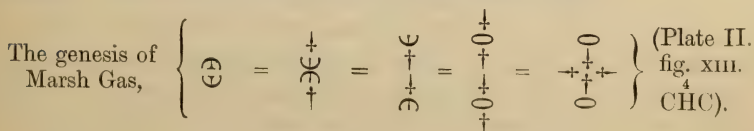
But the atom of hydrogen thus emitted, in order to symmetrise the axis, stands in the centre of a metallic region. Being itself metallic, it will therefore be repelled from this region, and betake itself to the other—the lens-shaped or metalloidal pole; we shall thus obtain—



And now the atom of lithhium may at once symmetrise both itself and the whole structure, by gathering up the five units which constitute its five-fid pole into another atom of hydrogen. We thus obtain—



But of this symmetrical combination the axis is too long. Under the law of sphericity, therefore, such structures will tend to double. Now, this they can do, and by so doing produce an exquisitely spherical and finely differentiated molecule, as we shall presently see. But first, let us remark, that atoms of lithhium, being dissymmetrical and heteropolar, never can exist single. The smallest number which can be isolated is a couple. Let us take a couple, then, and we shall obtain—



That is, two atoms of this new lens-shaped element, united by a tetratom of hydrogen, as the body of the combination.

**Carbon.**—What then, let us ask, is this new element? As to its atomic weight it is obviously  $\Psi - 2H = 5Hf - 2H = (5 \times 8) - 2H = 40 - 10 = 30$ , *i.e.*, 6 when  $H = 1$ . It is, however, so oblate that when atoms of this kind are free to do so, they will tend to go in couples, like oxygen, &c., the atomic weight of which will, of course, be 12 when  $H = 1$ . Moreover, this new element has, during its genesis, given off no less than two atoms of hydrogen; carrying, as we have already seen occasion to believe in other cases, an aptitude for the æriform state along with them. We may expect this element, therefore, to be of a peculiarly stable or fixed character.

**The Spiral Filament.**—And what as to the molecules which it must form? First, it appears that if atom is united to atom by a terminal edge in both cases, and as symmetrically as the system admits of, there results a spiral filament (Plate II. fig. xiv.)

**The Diamond.**—Secondly, it appears that as soon as twelve atoms have been united, they may spherify into a dodecatom of exquisite solidity (Pl. I. fig. vi.) And what will be the molecule which we may expect to be in volumerical relation with the unit volume of water? Indicating, for convenience, in the meantime, this lens-shaped element by the letter C, we may expect, in consequence of its extreme minuteness, the dodecatom will at once cover itself symmetrically with another layer of atoms, that is, as we have seen, with 20, thus giving an exquisite molecule, at once isometrical and differentiated, and therefore very stable. Now let these small bodies, of such mechanical perfection, form into dodecatoms, as they must—since they belong to the pentagonal system—and we obtain an unit, having the sp. gr. of—

$$\text{Diamond, G... } \frac{(C_{32})^{12}}{2AQ} = \frac{12 \times 32 \times 30}{2 \times 1620} = 3.55 \text{ Exp. } 3.55.$$

And suppose that at the requisite temperature this molecule is exposed to oxygen gas, so that the icosahedral coating of the dodecatoms should go off in burning, we should then obtain a molecule agreeing completely in sp. gr. with that of the—

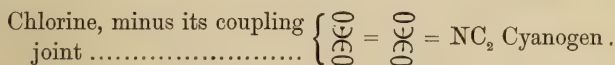
$$\text{Unburnt Residuum, G... } \frac{(C_{12})^{12}}{AQ} = \frac{12 \times 12 \times 30}{1620} = 2.67 \text{ Exp. } 2.67.$$

This new element, then, isomorphous with boron, represents carbon. It is, indeed, true that a majority of chemists at present give the atomic weight of carbon, not as 6, but as  $2 \times 6$  when  $H = 1$ . And this the estimating of the atom of oxygen at  $2 \times 8$ , instead of 8, necessitates. The farther we proceed, however, we shall see more clearly that the law of



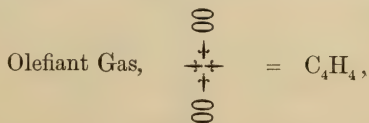
symmetry, which ever calls for a couple of atoms in the axis of a molecule, except in the case of the central atom itself, must, as long as it is disregarded, lead chemists to mistake double for single atoms, as also their tendency to go in couples, when forced to do so, as best fulfilling, when thus coupled, the law of sphericity.

**The Relation of Chlorine to Cyanogen.**—Having thus determined that our second lens-shaped element is carbon, we are now able to understand the analogies of chlorine. Thus it will be seen that in chlorine the polar elements are carbons, and they are grasped, both of them, as we may say, in the talons of lithhiums or zhotes. Omitting, then, the consideration of the concealed atom of oxygen in the middle of the atom of chlorine, which forms the coupling joint of the functioning parts, what we obtain, as these parts, is a couple of carbo-zotic elements, which, if separated from the coupling joint, would give an isomorph of cyanogen.



Thus does our theory incidentally explain most satisfactorily what has hitherto been deemed a wonder in chemistry, namely, the great similarity in the functioning of chlorine and cyanogen.

In the giving of carbon to nature, then, every atom is given in connection with two atoms of hydrogen, which are, as it were, its offspring, and it is re-established in all its rights, and exists in admirable harmony with the laws at once of symmetry, sphericity, and stability, when two atoms have become the poles of an aërial body, which consists of a tetratom of hydrogen, that is, when the hydro-carbon has attained to the state of marsh gas. In this state, indeed, it is so perfect, that if undisturbed from without it seems well-nigh unalterable under cosmical law. An atom of carbon consists of ten triangles of forces leaning upon each other between the equator and the poles of the pentagonal bipyramid which they form, so that each set of five roofs in the other; and though it may possibly be developed into a coupled atom of light boron, so that an atom of marsh gas should be transformed into a hydride of boron isomorphous with olefiant gas.

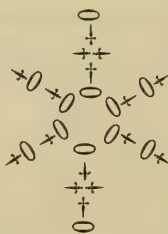


yet such a transformation would be extreme; and marsh gas presents itself to us not only as one of the most stable of structures, where the heat does not partition it, but as one of the ultimate products of nature.

It is stable, not only in the sense of mechanical perfection, but in respect of the repose which its sphericity and differentiation secures to it, as also because of the fact that between the poles, which are the regions most liable to attack in all molecules, there lies a tetratom of hydrogen. Now, of this structure, the form, as has been shown (p. 16), is so oblate or negative that it warns off oxygen whenever it comes near it. Hence, though the poles of the atom of marsh gas are single and naked atoms of carbon, they are secure against the attacks of cool oxygen. Now we know, in point of fact, that marsh gas can survive the decomposition of all tender molecules, and exist in the midst of all the moisture and the oxygen of the terraqueous globe, both in the crust of the earth and in the atmosphere.

**Rock Oils.**—It is important to remark how well marsh gas can defend itself against the attacks of oxygen, even when the oxygen is assisted by moisture. That it can do so is implied in its name; nay, it appears that those naphthas and rock oils which now begin to be found in such abundance and to prove so useful, in so far as they are permanent, consist of molecules whose poles are atoms of marsh gas; and on this ground it is that they are protected from the attacks of oxygen and moisture. Thus the most abundant and stable constituent of these natural oils has been found to have the chemical formula of  $C_{12}H_{14}$ ; and, doubling this formula, as is generally necessary with respect to formulæ, which are estimated in reference to a single atom of chlorine, &c., that is, in reference to one pole instead of two, we obtain  $C_{24}H_{28}$ . Now this immediately bespeaks a differentiated dodecatom in which the body is a double wall of  $CH = (C_2H_2)^{10}$ , and the poles atoms of marsh gas  $= 2(C_2H_4)$ . And so with the other members of the series to which this molecule belongs. Their poles are always atoms of marsh gas. As the three hydrogen arms of the terminal atoms of marsh gas in this structure extend beyond the central atoms of carbon, its ultimate or composite molecule may be, and appears to be, that of the trigonal order, namely, the icosatom occupying an ice volume.

Rock Oil,



$2(C_{12}H_{14})$ .

$$\text{The distillate G} = \frac{(\overset{4}{CHC}(\overset{10}{C_2H_2})\overset{4}{CHC})^{\overset{20}{20}}}{ICE} = \frac{17200}{16 \times 1620} = \cdot 664 \text{ Exp. } \cdot 669.$$

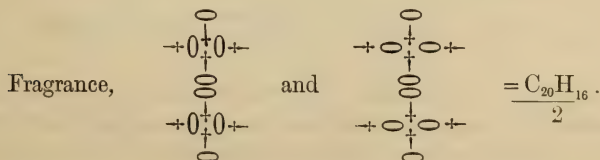
In many cases, however, where there are trigonal poles, plainly the tetrahedral molecule is to be expected. It is only where the whole liquid is somewhat homogeneous that the icosatom can be constructed. With regard to the rock oils in their natural state, doubtless the liquid is differentiated in a very high degree; and it is therefore only what is to be expected that, by effecting distillation at varied temperatures, quite a series of hydrocarbons should be obtained. Their general characteristic, however, as has been stated, if they be permanent in nature, is that their polar elements are atoms of marsh gas, single or doubled.

**Essential Oils.**—It is only from the inorganic or disorganised regions of nature that marsh gas is to be obtained. Living nature is not so prodigal of her hydrogen as to let a tetratom escape with its three equatorial arms naked. In constructing the marsh gas type, living nature usually gives atoms of CH instead of H only for the three equatorial arms; and hence of this type a great variety of forms, for the atoms of CH may themselves be constructed in three ways, and these may be applied to the axial atom of H in several ways also. Omitting one of the three equatorial carbons, which cannot be introduced in our method of type diagrams, we obtain as tetratoms of hydrogen, fully charged with single atoms of carbon, the following diagrams:—



Now, of all of these the actual forms, though not the diagrams, are very oblate or negative. While, therefore, they will ward off the oxygen which they may happen to meet with, and will thus be permanent in nature, and may be useful in the vegetable tissue in decomposing dioxide of carbon, as has been hinted already, and as will be considered more fully hereafter, they will not be insulable each by itself, any more than a single atom of oxygen or of carbon.

But no reason appears why they may not be insulable in couples on the same axis, and thus coupled attain the æriform state. Now, if we assume that they rise in this coupled state, and that a couple occupies the normal atmospherical volume, that is, the volume of an element of aq or Az or  $\text{O}$ , we obtain—





The sp. gr. of the vapour,  $\frac{C_{10}H_8}{\text{Air}} = 4.7 \text{ Exp. } 4.7.$

When the vapour condenses, since its equator is trigonal, and extends so far beyond the poles, the molecules resulting must be those of the trigonal series, the first and simplest of which is the tetratom, and the most perfect the icosatom. Now, the tetratom being  $4(C_5H_4) = C_{20}H_{16}$ , and this is the usual formula for the non-oxygenated essential oils, and allowing a half normal volume to a single tetratom, or a normal volume to a couple of such, we obtain—

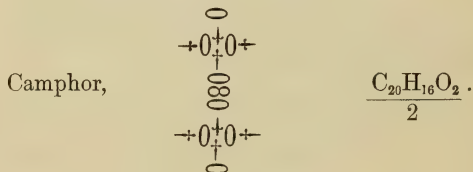
$$\text{Light Essential Oil, } G = \frac{(C_5H_4)}{\frac{1}{2}AQ} = \frac{4(150 + 20)}{\frac{1}{2} \times 1620} = 84 \text{ Exp. } 85.$$

It is well known, however, that the distiller in obtaining these oils is troubled with a less fragrant, that is, a more stable kind, whose chemical formula is the same, but which is heavy enough to sink in water. Now, the same hydro-carbon element wherein icosatoms must be more stable, and in that case as to the sp. gr. of this.

$$\text{Heavy Essential Oil, } G = \frac{(C_5H_4)^{20}}{2AQ} = \frac{20(150 + 20)}{2 \times 1620} = 1.05 \text{ Exp. } 1. +$$

The single element ( $C^5H^4$ ) is, however, capable of assuming so many forms (figurate formulæ have been given of five) that the isometric molecules which may possibly be constructed of it may be very many.

**Camphor.**—But here it may occur to the reader that if the single elements are apt for being coupled on the same axis, as we have supposed they are in the case of the ordinary æriform element, are we not to expect them to occur coupled permanently in nature by nature's usual coupling joint—namely, an atom of oxygen? This is plainly to be expected. Now, this gives the composition of



Supposing it to form into tetratoms like the light essential oils, of which it is the first oxidation (the sub-oxide), its formula of sp. gr. gives

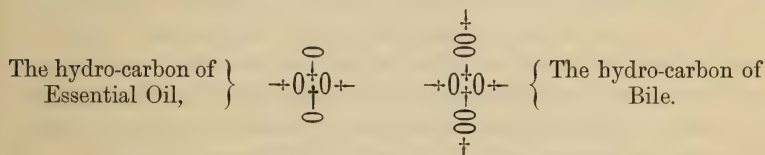
$$\text{Camphor, } G = \frac{(C_{10}H_8O)^4}{AQ} = \frac{4 \times 380}{1620} = .938 \text{ Exp. } 98.$$

This hydro-carbon element, then, ( $C_5H_4$ ) we may regard as the characteristic hydro-carbon of the vegetable kindom. It is that molecular structure to which that kingdom mainly owes its fragrance, and I have hinted that

it may possibly perform a very important function in the vegetable kingdom—namely, the decomposition of carbonic acid, and the delivering of single atoms of carbon in the free state into the vegetable tissue.

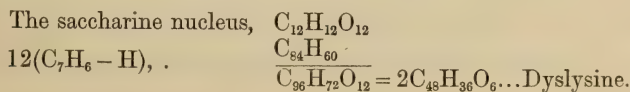
**The Hydro-Carbon of the Bile.**—And here we may cursorily inquire whether any analogous hydro-carbon is to be found in the animal kingdom. If we are to find it, of course we must look for it in the cells of some region of the animal organism which is analogous to the cells of the parenchyma of the foliage or barks of plants. Now such, I think, are the cells of the hepatic organism, and there, it is well known, that we do, in point of fact, find resins and oily matter highly analogous to those of plants, which indeed, by chemical purification and reduction, may ultimately be rendered fragrant like those of plants.

Do we, then, find in bile any characteristic hydro-carbon analogous to that which we have found in the vegetable organism? To this it is to be immediately answered that we do. In a word, we find the same hydro-carbon, only that in the animal its poles are doubled, or rather CH is added to each, so that the biliary or animal, when compared with the vegetable essence, is what potassium is to sodium, or what acetene is to marsh gas.



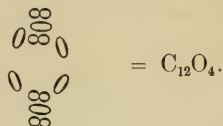
Its chemical formula is  $\text{C}_7\text{H}_6$ , but there is not much chance of its being isolated. In the biliary fluids it seems to exist always as a dodecatom, twelve atoms being studded around an atom of hepatic sugar as the nucleus, the two polar elements at the same time being variously differentiated, especially by such ammoniacal and sulphuric matter, as on its individuation, gives glycocine and taurine.

**Dyslysine.**—By availing himself, however, both of the decompositions of nature and art, the chemist has succeeded in obtaining the biliary dodecatom, composed wholly of its characteristic hydro-carbons, clothing an atom of saccharine matter as the nucleus, the peripherad atom of hydrogen in the saccharine matter serving also for the centrad atom of hydrogen in the hydrocarbon. Thus—



**Cholesterine.**—As long as an atom of glycogenic or saccharine matter, containing in its structure twelve atoms of oxygen, is the nucleus of a

molecule of bile, there is no chance of that molecule becoming too stable for undergoing the metamorphoses from hour to hour which animal life implies. But, as might be expected, that atom of sugar is liable to undergo reduction by the departure of atoms of HO. And the study of the salicinic molecules, as well as the law of symmetry, leads us to infer that we might have sometimes, as the ultimate dodecation from sugar,

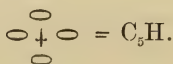


And this structure being so finely differentiated and still protected from the attacks of oxygen, by having its poles charged with this destroyer, cannot but be very stable at all moderate temperatures. Now, if we take this caramelic element as a nucleus instead of an atom of sugar, and clothe it as formerly with our biliary hydro-carbons, differentiating the poles not by such easily transformable forms as the ammoniacal or sulphuric elements, but by the stable forms of marsh gas coupled on each pole and surmounted by an atom of HO, and terminated by one of aq, to bring the whole into harmony with the general moisture of organisation, we obtain a structure which cannot but be comparatively stable, and which may well bear the name of cholesterine. At any rate, its formula is precisely that of that beautiful but often inconvenient biliary solid which forms gall stones in the gall-bladder, and is apt to make its appearance almost anywhere in the animal body, as also sometimes in the vegetable.

Nothing can surpass the beauty of this and of these molecules, even in such figurate formulæ as the student can easily draw for himself with a pencil; and which, indeed, I should like to introduce here, but that I feel ashamed to tax so severely the patience and ingenuity of the printer.

As to the differentiation of the poles in glycocholic and taurocholic acids also, it is easily seen what the material is; but for placing the various elements in the relative positions in which they stand in nature, there is not at present sufficient light.

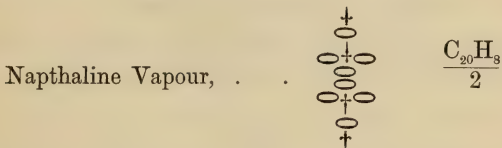
**The Hydro-Carbon of the Alkaloids.**—The ultimate hydro-carbon of nature results when the three equatorial atoms of hydrogen in the essential-oil-element have gone off, and there remains only the axial atom of H, charged in each of its five regions by union with an atom of carbon—





When rendered heteropolar and active by the incidence of an atom of HO, or one of its poles, it enters largely into the more highly carboned products of the vegetable kingdom, such as morphia and the other alkaloids. But in the laboratory it cannot be raised into the æriform state. It merely remains among carbonaceous residua, thus explaining why it is next to impossible to free these residua entirely from hydrogen. It is otherwise unknown to the chemist.

**Naphthaline.**—But as soon as a second atom of hydrogen is added on either pole, it is capable of the æriform state—not indeed in single atoms, for they are dissymmetrical, but in couples—



Its first isometrical molecule, however, is the tetratom, giving  $C_{20}H_8$ , which is the formula usually adopted for naphthaline. But it must also tend to form dodecatoms, giving  $C_{60}H_{24} = 2(C_{30}H_{12})$ , as also icosatoms giving  $C_{100}H_{40} = 2(C_{50}H_{20})$ . The mass seems to consist of both, in variable numbers, corresponding to its variable specific gravity.

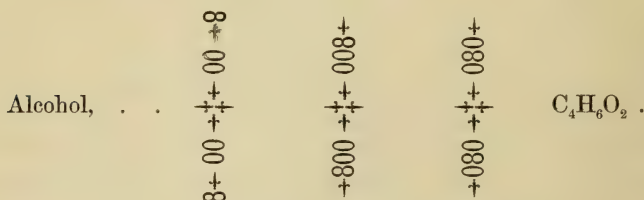
And here, if the student think it worth his while to inquire, he will be surprised to find what a simple system of bodies Laurent's chloro-bromo-nitro-naphthalinic what-nots proves to be, if he chose to take  $C_5H_2$  instead of its tetratom  $C_{20}H_8$  as the true unit, which undergoes union and substitution. In this way, also, he will be able to explain the large naphthalinic molecules obtained by Dumas, Anderson, &c.

**The Alcohols.**—It is only when the polar elements of a hydro-carbon molecule are atoms of marsh gas—that is, only when they contain a tetratom of hydrogen functioning, as has been shown, like an atom of oxygen—that such a molecule can defend itself against the oxygen and moisture which everywhere prevail in the terraqueous globe. In other cases there may perch on each pole of the hydro-carbon molecule an atom of O or of HO. It is then protected, and is more or less permanent. But now it is no longer regarded as a hydro-carbon. It is an alcohol.

The original substance of this name, which has supplied the generic designation, is derived from the fermentation of saccharine liquids, such as the juice of the grape. Its hydro-carbon is the marsh gas with double carbon poles (see the figures, p. 82), that is, olefiant gas or ethylene, and this hydro-carbon becomes an alcohol when an atom of HO is attached to each pole, and when, consequently, each polar element, considered as a ternary combination, is the saccharine element CHO, which, as a dodecatom ( $C_{12}H_{12}O_{12}$ ), is generally regarded as an atom of sugar.

Now, it is obvious that these three elements C, H, and O may exist united in either of three modes. The polar elements, then, of the atom of alcohol, those parts on which its functioning mainly depends, must be very changeable, as the conditions of existence change. The ingestion of alcohol may therefore be expected to be stimulant or transiently vitalising, and as in none of the three modes of arrangement is the saccharine element poisonous, alcohol, if duly diluted, will not immediately destroy life; while since both its peripheral and its central parts consist of saccharine matter, it may be expected to possess an agreeable taste. Our molecular morphology, therefore, gives reasons why alcohol should play in society the important part which it does.

Its three forms may be represented in our figurate formulæ. The chemical formula of all the three is, of course, the same:—



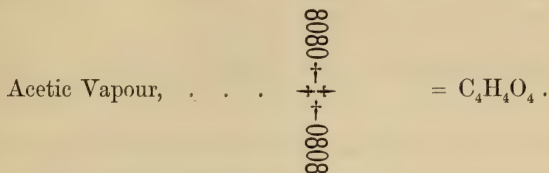
The first and the second diagrams are both true alcohol forms; that is, on being poured upon some other chemical, so as after drenching to clothe it, they will each shorten the combined axis by the lapse of the terminal atom of OH or HO into aq, which goes aside, leaving C<sub>4</sub>H<sub>5</sub>O (the ether element) in union.

These two are also the morphological complements of each other. And the laboratory liquid appears to consist of molecules of both in equal numbers, and thus to be fully differentiated. Now the first, having pentagonal poles, must form into dodecatomic molecules. The second, having trigonal poles, must form into icosatoms. Allowing, then, to the first and smallest half the volume of the second and largest, we obtain as the equation of sp. gr. of

$$\text{Alcohol} \dots G = \begin{cases} \frac{(\text{OHCCCHCCHO})^{12}}{2AQ} = \frac{12 \times 230}{2 \times 1620} = \cdot 802 \\ \frac{(\text{HOCCHCCOH})^{20}}{4AQ} = \frac{20 \times 230}{4 \times 1620} = \cdot 741 \end{cases} \quad \begin{array}{l} \text{Mean, } \cdot 796 \text{ Exp. } \cdot 795. \end{array}$$

**Acetic Acid.**—The third form is obviously advanced in solidarity, the polar bodies COC being compact icosahedrons. But the oxygen being thus removed from the pole, this form will be more liable than the others to the attraction of oxygen. Now, if an unit of the oxygen

of nature, that is, of oxygen in coupled atoms, attack the poles, the first will lay hold of the terminal atoms of H, and lapse along with them into aq, which will go aside, while the second will fix itself on the carbon poles of the dehydrogenised alcohol (aldehyde), and therewith result—



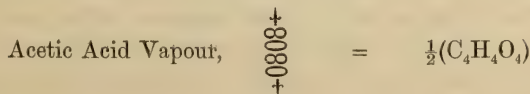
And here we may remark, in passing, the beautiful rationale which our theory gives of such chemicals as chloral, trichloroacetic acid, chloroform, &c. Plainly, they are symmetrical representatives of the same type as the substances we have been considering, only that the three equatorial hydrogens (only two of which we can ever represent) have been substituted by three atoms of chlorine.

As to the anæsthesia which chloroform causes when brought into most immediate contact with the blood by respiration, it does not seem possible to say more at present, than that the structure of the anæsthetic is so stable that it does not tend to spontaneous transformation. Hence it does not stimulate like alcohol, while, at the same time, it presents to the current of life naked single carbon atoms. Now carbon is the deadest, and we should infer that it is the most deadening, of all material elements—deadening not by poisoning or transforming living molecules into forms incompatible with life, but simply by fixing or forbidding the current of life to flow. Were it not for carbon all animal life—if life it could be called—would be quite ephemeral in our planet. Carbon maintains tissue, and so protracts life.

But to return to our acetic vapour. Its atomic weight is 300, while that of a normal volume of common air is about 72. Allowing this acetic vapour a normal volume, therefore, we obtain as—

$$\text{Its Specific Gravity, } \quad \frac{300}{72} \quad = \quad 4.16$$

But it is only to be expected that, as the temperature is raised, such a tender structure will dedouble into the truly acid form—







$$\text{Acetic Acid... G} = (\text{aq}^{12}\text{HCOC}) (\text{HC}^{20}\text{OCO}) (\text{CO}^{12}\text{CHaq}) = 1.111 + \frac{1.852}{2} + 1.111 = 1.074 \text{ (the mean).}$$

But possible molecular combinations here are very various, as may be inferred from the capricious densities observed by the balance.

It is important to remark, however, that the constituent element in them all (neglecting the water), and that which ought to be regarded as

The Acetic Principle, is  $\frac{1}{80}$  also the Humic, Tannic, &c.

It is obviously the "Spirit of Salt" (hydrochloric acid), reduced to its simplest terms, the zotic elements being omitted.

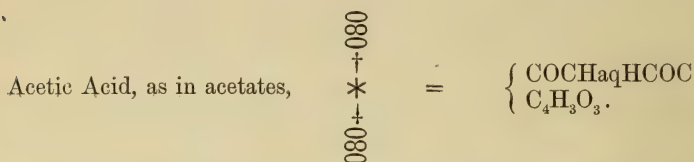
The acetic element is, in short, in reference to sodium, what the hydrochloric is in reference to potassium!

**Humus.**—It enters very largely into the structure of vegetable molecules, such as the tannic acids, gallic, &c., and when it is inverted so that the atom of hydrogen is in the interior of the molecule, and is thus secluded from the attacks of the external air, the poles of the icosatom thus constructed being differentiated by atmospherical elements, it constitutes the molecule of humus, the most stable and last survivor of vegetable nature, which, if left to undergo its own slow decomposition in the moist soil, without some alkaline quickener, is so well known to show its acetic nature by rendering the soil "sour."

	Theory.		Subeiran.	
$\text{OCE}(\text{COCH})^{20}\text{ECO}$	C...54.4	.	55.0	From the heart of an aged oak.
	H... 4.3	.	4.8	
	N... 2.5	.	2.5	
	O...38.2	.	37.7	

**The Acetic Acid of Acetates.**—But if we suppose the dodecatom (see the diagram opposite), to exist in a region where saccharine elements are coupling into acetic, as has been shown, then that dodecatom will certainly take those coupled elements into union with itself, and thus become an acetic molecule with a double wall. Allowing it now a double volume, its specific gravity will be the same as before, and its constituents, instead of being  $\text{C}_2\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ , will now be  $\text{C}_4\text{H}_4\text{O}_4$ . But there is this important difference in its peripheral structure that, instead of being moistened all over by aq, it is covered with HO. Its chemical formula would now, therefore, be legitimately written  $\text{HO.C}_4\text{H}_3\text{O}_3$ , and

on the attack of a protoxide, the peripheral atom of HO would lapse into aq to shorten the axis and go out of the way, leaving as the acetic part of the acetate  $C_4H_3O_3$ , as is well known to occur. Now this acetic body is a very beautiful structure, consisting of an atom of aq as the coupling joint, with an atom of our elemental acetic principle, HCOC, inserted by its lance-shaped pole H in each of the hollow poles of the atom of aq, which is the medial body.



When this is hydrated by the addition of an atom of HO on each pole, implying that the molecule must thereafter be icosatomic, and granting to so large a molecule four normal volumes, the specific gravity comes out 1.065. But let us not dwell longer on this acid.

**Acetyl.**—The above, as also everything acetic, the chemist tends to reduce to a form which, having hydrogen both on the poles and the equator, like methyl and ethyl, must function like a single atom of hydrogen, and be very serviceable in the laboratory as being much less volatile than hydrogen—

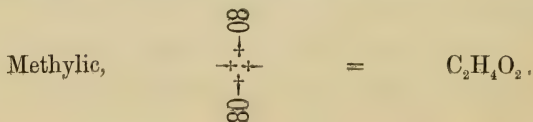


It is homologous with methyl, which is all that is stable in the first member of the alcohol series, that is—

**Spirit of Wood.**—As to this member, we obtain the possible secular equation—

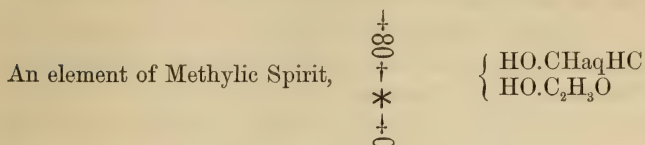


Now, but for a certain circumstance, these two ought to unite, and give a beautiful structure,—namely, a dioxide of marsh gas—



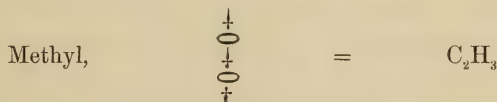


But, from what has been said of the functioning of the tetratom of hydrogen, it is to be inferred that the atoms of oxygen on the poles in this case are too near that tetratom for maintaining firmly their position. Hence, as an element for this combination in the molecular state, we may expect among others the beautiful structure—

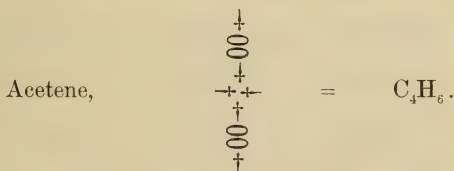


which, when the atom of HO has gone off, may well form fine polar elements for such a molecule as salicylic acid.

**Methyl.**—But the liquid methylic spirit is to be expected to consist of many dissimilar elements of the same chemical formula, the ultimate hydro-carbon alone being stable, namely—



which, moreover, if set free, will, under the law of sphericity, tend to double into—



**Ether.**—And here we have the form, which, when it wants the atom of hydrogen on one of the poles, or has that atom substituted by an atom of oxygen, occupies a very important place in chemical systems as ethyl and its oxide, or ether; and that it should do so our theory enables us to understand. Thus, its structure is fine, and it is finely differentiated. Its stability will, therefore, be great. But it is at the same time dissymmetrical and heteropolar, and therefore not insulable by itself (though by coupling it may assume the æriform state which, in consequence of the quantity of hydrogen in it, it will no doubt tend to do). It will, therefore, tend to unite and to remain in union with other substances. And the range of its affinities must be all the greater, for this reason, that it is trimorphous. Hence also in the liquid state it may be expected to be highly differentiated. Its most interesting state, however, must be that in which it is truly an oxide of ethyl, constituting an icosatom in which each of the twenty radial

elements consists of five atoms of hydrogen and four of carbon alternating with each other in a linear series, the whole mailed in oxygen, and thus protected, except from hydracids, &c.

**Ethyl.**—When its elements H and C are arranged in this linear series, this hydro-carbon is not only homologous with methyl, but with a single atom of hydrogen itself; for in methyl, and in all hydro-carbons of the same form in which the atoms of H and of C are more numerous, both the poles and the equator are hydrogens. The entire moniliform structure, therefore, whatever the number of joints of which it consists, must function like a single atom of hydrogen, only it will be less volatile, and consequently less fit for the use of nature, and more fit for that of the chemist. And, indeed, it is amusing to see to what an extent the chemist, constructing the typical hexatom of hydrogen (see p. 17), by the use of methyl, or ethyl, or amyl, or all together, or hydrogen along with either or all, and placing on its poles molecular structures of suitable form and weight, such as azote, phosphorus, arsenic, &c., has succeeded in framing curious toy or mock ammonias, quite unfit for the uses of life indeed, but one of them touching upon nature so nearly as to be found in the brine of the herring barrel. The substitution of these hydro-carbons, in fact, for pure hydrogens, prevents the lapse of the ammonia into its aquaform, and thus secures the construction of the typical structure, the double ammonia.

$  \begin{array}{c}  \odot \\  + \\  \odot \\  + \\  \odot \\  + \\  \odot \\  + \\  \odot \\  + \\  \odot  \end{array}  $	NEHEN <sup>4</sup>	NH <sub>2</sub> E	Ethylamine.	
	NHEHN <sup>4</sup>	$\doteq$	NHE <sub>2</sub>	Diethylamine.
	NEEEN <sup>4</sup>		NE <sub>3</sub>	Triethylamine.
	P &c. &c.			&c. &c.
	As &c. &c.			

Nay, by the use of iodine, it looks as if the chemist can completely reintegrate the primal type, implying an atom of hydro-carbon on each pole also, giving  $Me_4$  or  $E_4$  in the formula. This is, however, equivocal.

But this field is inexhaustible, and has already betrayed me into details which I did not contemplate when I thought it would be desirable to give the genesis of marsh gas, as showing the genetic relationship of carbon and hydrogen.

Let us return then to page 73, where we began to digress. And what as to the new quasi-halogen there constructed, constituted by the clapping together of



Are we to expect it in this bare state in nature? To this it is to be

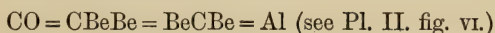
answered, that since in the terraqueous globe both moisture and oxygen and hydrogen are so abundant everywhere, and the poles of this quasi-halogen are perfect moulds for atoms of O and of HO, and its equator apt for the reception of five atoms of O, so as duly to expand that equator, and bring the form into better keeping with the law of sphericity, we are perhaps scarcely to expect it in its bare state, or as a mere trunk; especially as, in constituting it, no less than eleven atoms of hydrogen have been discharged, which therefore, under the law of redintegration, will tend to re-attach themselves so far as there is accommodation for them.

**Honeystone.**—Still  $\ddot{C}_4$  is found, though rarely, and that in a position of such interest in the economy of nature that even in our rapid sketch it may be mentioned. It appears on the very confines between the vegetable and the mineral kingdoms, giving, we might say, its latest crystals to the latter, and itself as on the eve of becoming undecomposable, like the halogens, silicon, &c.

Gerhardt's formula for honeystone is  $C_8Al_2O_8 + 12aq$ . Now, though in order to reconcile this formula with other hypothesis, he triples and distributes it thus,  $3C_8O_6.2AlO_3 + 36aq$ , yet, as first given, it represents a beautifully constructed and differentiated dodecatom, which, allowing it half a normal volume, gives also its own specific gravity. Thus,

$$\text{Mellite, G...} \frac{HO\ddot{C}_4OAl(H\overset{10}{O})AlO\ddot{C}_4OH}{\frac{1}{2}AQ} = 1.53 \text{ Exp. } 1.55.$$

Here, then, if this view be correct, instead of the sesquioxide, as in the mineral kingdom generally, we have a protoxide of aluminum. And this is what invests this body with such interest. For what, according to our theory of the genesis of the elements, must be the origin of the aluminum here? We have seen that one of the modes of the possible genesis of magnesium (see *Molecular Morphology*, p. 52) is the metallising and symmetrising of an atom of BO, by which it becomes, first BBeBe, and then BeBBe, that is, Mg. Now, in the same way, if we have C instead of B, we obtain,



And thus, according to these views, the overlong axial body  $HO, COCOCOC, OCO = \dot{H}\ddot{C}_4\ddot{C}$  will be secularly metallised at both poles, the pole opposite to H also, and converted into  $HO, COCOCOC, OAl = \dot{H}\ddot{C}_4\ddot{Al}$ . And this theory I touch upon all the more readily, because it gives opportunity of seeing that, though this be not the normal genesis of aluminum, yet it is a possible genesis, giving the equation,



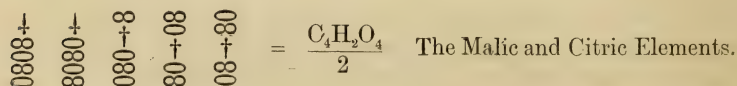
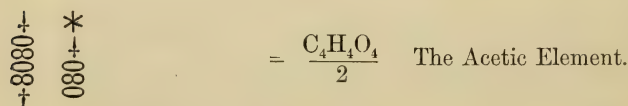
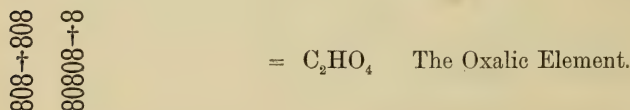
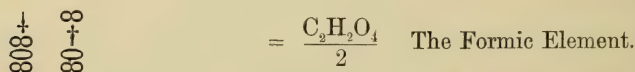
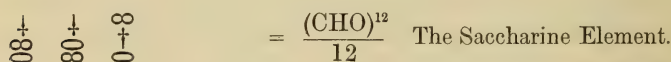
Carbonic Oxide,      CO      =      Al      Aluminum.

thus indicating, perhaps, from its relation to carbon, of which, according to this view, it has an atom at heart, why this metal should be, as it is found to be, an indispensable constituent of a fertile soil.

The same theory leads us also to infer that our quasi-halogen  $\ddot{C}_4$  (mellic anhydride) is the most lengthened combination of atoms of carbon and oxygen on the same axis which nature tends to conserve; for where the axis is longer, we have seen that the extreme elements tend to be metallised and transformed.

**The Vegetable Acids.**—And here we may notice the whole of this series, all the members of which are indeed derived from our two primal combinations, CO and COC, merely with the addition of moisture and hydrogen. It may be easily seen that they are the elements of which the principal vegetable acids are built up. In chemical works, indeed, these acids are signalised each by its own formula, which in each acid is considered to be always the same. And in order to meet the very varied phenomena which each particular acid displays in its functioning, there has been invented the hypothesis of monobasic, bibasic, tetrabasic, hexbasic, &c. But such conceptions are phenomena of human ingenuity merely. These acids, by doubling or dedoubling, by acting singly or in the molecular state, are capable of suiting themselves to the conditions of their existence, to a degree which is the very counterpart of those stereotype formulæ which chemists prescribe for them.

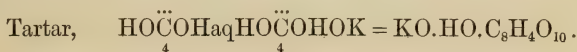
The elements of the principal vegetable acids are—





**Tartaric Acid.**—Very many and beautifully various, as may be inferred from what has been already said of acetic acid, are the ways in which these oxy-hydro-carbon elements may advance their own synthesis by uniting among themselves, as also by uniting with one another, and with aqueous matter and bases.

As to the last in the series, its modes of union and of existence cannot but be very many. And, accordingly, its chemical investigation has been found to be very puzzling. It appears to be constructed in nature either around a particle of water AQ, or a molecule of potass (KO)<sup>12</sup>, as the nucleus. The first gives the pure acid, which is not unfrequently found in nature. But most usually the elements of this aqueous acid form around a molecule of potass. Now, being moistened with aq all over, it will act like a particle of AQ, so that a second coating of acid will form on it; an atom of aq thus forming a coupling joint between two elements of acid with hydrogen poles, giving rise to a beautiful structure, such as we have seen in acetic acid. The formula of the element of the fully constructed salt will therefore be—

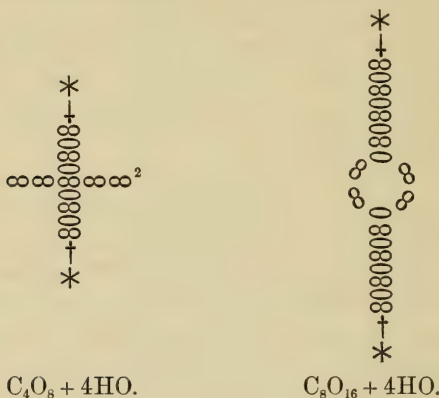


Hence, it has been inferred by the chemist that the pure acid is  $2\text{HO.C}_8\text{H}_4\text{O}_{10}$ , and that the neutral salt is  $2\text{KO.C}_8\text{H}_4\text{O}_{10}$ , and on this, as the type, the attempt has been made to interpret every phenomenon which this acid displays. But even with all the insight which our molecular morphology imparts, with its dodecatoms, icosatoms, aqua-forms, and its doublings and dedoublings, it will be long before the acid of tartar and the others confess all that they are, or may become, under the torturing of the laboratory.

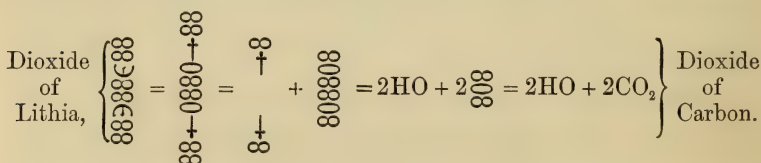
**Carbonic Acid.**—The tartaric element is very axial or prolate. When oxygen abounds, therefore, it will tend to secure the incidence of five atoms of oxygen around its pentagonal equator, and so to bring its form into better keeping with the law of sphericity. And when more power-

ful bases are absent or withdrawn, it will take an atom of aq on each pole. Thus we shall obtain the first of the acids figured beneath.

But, as has been stated already, and as holds in reference to all structures of the same type, the five atoms of oxygen on the equator do not stand evenly out in the plane of that equator. They all decline towards one pole. Under the law of symmetry and sphericity, therefore, such acid elements must tend to couple, since by so doing they can construct a finely differentiated dodecatom, from the centre of which the aqueous matter previously on the poles, now become the equator, will no doubt be excluded. There will thus result, as the culmination form the second of these figures—



But here an interesting fact presents itself. If, instead of pursuing our synthesis in connection with the highest products of vegetable nature, we go back to our Plutonic abyss, supposing that now there is abundance of oxygen along with the other elements which we were led to look for immediately after oxygen, we obtain carbon and oxygen united in the same ratio as here, but with this difference, that there we have the structure as a minimum, whereas in vegetable nature, as just conceived, we have it as a maximum. There we obtain every single atom of carbon lodged in the cavity that exists between a coupled atom of oxygen, that cavity being a perfect mould for the atom of carbon. In a word, commencing with a dioxide of lithia, we obtain (see p. 72) the following equation, issuing in a dioxide of carbon :—



Now, whilst in a primal region of genesis we find carbon, according



to our theory, given to nature in this state, there is much to admire in that state. Thus the element of oxygen gas in this dioxide, though its stomach be charged with carbon, is isomorphous, and doubtless isovoluminous with its former self. It might be called carboxygen. And while, on the one hand, its stomach being already filled with carbon, it will not care for more, being æriform, it must be an admirable carrier of carbon in single atoms into concretes; for the oxygen which encloses it, though it has lost its taste for more carbon, will not have lost that parasitic habit which attaches to its form. And, therefore, we should expect to find this kind of air to be like oxygen itself, a fixing and a fixed air, only with this difference, that the coupled atom of oxygen now cannot open, so as to leave the surface where it settles down as a protoxide. That surface must take and hold all the three elements of which the atom of dioxide of carbon consists as an unity. And thus, after protoxides, and in union with them, we shall have these elemental carbonates. And here we have occasion to remark a great morphological gain which has been made by this step in synthesis. In a word, a sesquioxide has been constructed, that is, an element in such symmetrical relationship with oxygen that it consists of an atom of this element in the equator, and an atom on each pole. Thus, taking the letter X to stand for any metal, we obtain as the single element of



The question is, then, whether, looking to this primal genesis and the morphological perfections of this ( $\text{OCO} = \text{CO}_2$ ) dioxide of carbon, we can expect that our differentiated dodecatom, in which the ratio of oxygen and carbon is the same, shall keep together as a dodecatom, except under greater pressures or degrees of cold than are necessary to preserve similar structures in other cases. This is a question which cannot at present be answered by morphological deduction. But to me it appears that the phenomena displayed by this most important agent at the earth's surface would be happily explained, if we assume that this true acid can subsist in water, especially under pressure, and when the temperature is not too high, and that when the dioxide has entered into the composition of a concrete, it tends to grow into this true acid. By supposing that this true acid exists and acts when in water, we are able to understand the solvent power of carbonic acid, which is so great that scarcely any rock can altogether resist it; for its atomic weight is no less than 194 when  $\text{H} = 1$ . Moreover, by assuming that earthy carbonates, while they become crystalline or organic, are rising to the more perfect molecular state, we take a view which the analogy of nature supports.

It is also remarkable that, supposing the dodecatomic structure to

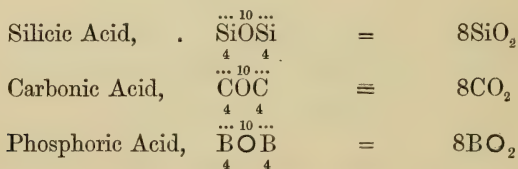
have been completed, both in acid and base, the united structure must still be of the sesquioxide type. And the growth of individualised elements and their culmination in a calcareous mass, would consist in the substitution of the sesqui-combination in dodecatoms instead of that in single atoms. Thus, using the symbol  $\bar{C}$  for  $\begin{smallmatrix} \dots 10 \dots \\ \text{COC} \\ \text{4} \quad \text{4} \end{smallmatrix}$ , we should have as sp. gr.—

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Crude Limestone,} \quad \frac{((\text{OCOCaO})^{12})^{12}}{\frac{1}{2} \text{ Ice}} \\ \text{Calcite, Pearl, \&c.,} \quad \frac{\bar{C}(\text{CaO})\bar{C}(\text{CaO})\bar{C}}{\text{Ice}} \end{array} \right\} = 2.77 \text{ Exp. } 2.77.$$

and similarly without the lime—

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Concreted Carbonic Gas,} \quad \frac{(\text{OCO})_{12}}{\text{AQ}} = \\ \text{Crystalline Carbonic Acid,} \quad \frac{(\bar{C}_4\text{OC}_4)}{8\text{AQ}} = \end{array} \right\} \cdot 815 \text{ Exp. } 8 +$$

**Sponge, Shell, and Bone Acids.**—But what imparts to this investigation as to the culmination state of carbonic acid an interest to justify so many words, or to introduce it in so rapid a sketch as we are now giving, is the light which it throws upon the molecular state of the earthy matter which is introduced into animals to support their otherwise too soft or yielding forms. It is generally supposed that this earthy matter is introduced into animals of the simplest organisation merely as  $\text{SiO}_2$ , that is, as silica; in those whose organisation is more advanced as  $\text{CaO.CO}_2$ , carbonate of lime, and in those of the highest organisation as  $3\text{CaO.PO}_5$ , phosphate of lime. Now, between these three molecular structures there seems no analogy at all. Our theory, on the contrary, leads to the inference that, in all the three, the acids are isomorphous and isovoluminous, nay, possessed of the very same structure, and that the structure which has been assigned to carbonic acid—



The oxygen-form in the last being composed, not of five hydrogens, but of five hydrogens, packed in between four atoms of boron, and the whole so consolidated as to be undecomposable in the laboratory. And that we may reach this most interesting substance, we shall soon make a few remarks on boron. But here yet a few more on carbon.

## CHAPTER IX.

## THE TISSUE ELEMENT.

HAVING become so far acquainted with carbon, we may now look for a moment at the tissue element, that structure with which, when built up into an organism, we find life palpably associated. That carbon should be essential to its construction we can easily understand, for otherwise tissue consists of elements which are ever tending to assume the æriform state, while, for the purposes of individualised life, they must be detained in the concrete form. Now, for this purpose, no known element seems so suitable as carbon, for it is always at hand, and no other element is of so fixed a nature—none so well suited for bolting together and holding fast any structure into which it enters.

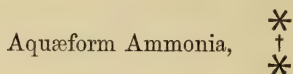
But while thus valuable in rendering a concrete tissue possible, and so in preserving the existence of the individual by postponing its vaporisation, carbon is to the same extent acting in opposition to the interests of life in general, for life in general consists in motion and change. In itself, carbon is the very principle of sleep, of death. And thus, as in medicine so in nature, the individual lives of all organisms that live may be said to be sustained by a system of considerate, well-tempered tonic treatment applied to all.

But what are the elements which thus require to be narcotised by carbon, or kept down, so that the flame of life may not burn too fast away? They are commonly enumerated as oxygen, hydrogen, and nitrogen. But our morphology leads us specially to view them rather as these elements in union with one another, and specially what we may call the single and the double vapour, that is, common vapour and ammonia (see Pl. I. fig. xi. aq. and Pl. II. fig. x. am). So like, indeed, in form and structure is am to the double of aq, that in our figurate formulæ they ought to be represented thus—

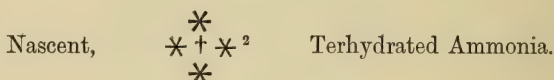
Common Vapour, \*                \*\* Ammonia.



But in the atom of ammonia both atoms of aq have been modified in a remarkable manner, as we shall presently see. Moreover, they are not merely resting on each other at the poles, but bolted together by an atom of hydrogen extending between the centres of both. It will be advisable, therefore, though in reality that medial atom of hydrogen neither appears externally, nor adds to the length of the axis, to write the formula of



And now let us bring our theory to the rescue of the admirable Liebig, who, though he could not at all explain it, yet found it necessary to assume that ammonia was a truly primeval substance. Let us ascend again into the upper regions, and, as in order to the genesis of moisture there, we assumed the pre-existence in those regions of matter in its most fully analysed state, the state of mere units along with hydrogen (see p. 17), so now let us assume the existence of the common vapour thus generated along with hydrogen. Then, since the atom of hydrogen has, as has been shown, five points for union, just as before (for the genesis of the atom of common vapour) we obtained  $\text{HH}_5 = \text{aq}$ , so now we shall obtain  $\text{Ha}_{15}$ , that is, an atom of aq on each of the poles of the atom of hydrogen, and three on the three edges of its equator—



But in this same region where we are now, we have already obtained a combination very similar to this (see p. 22), consisting of six atoms of moisture, from which we have seen that the aqueous element in all its forms results. It is interesting to compare that with this, in relation both to the conditions of stability and the law of symmetry and sphericity. Doing so, then, we may say that this possesses greater stability, the two atoms of aq which form the poles being bolted together by the doubly-lance form of the axial atom of hydrogen; while in the other, that is, in the wholly aqueous structure, they are merely poised on the summits of an atom of aq, which forms the centre of that structure. But, under the law of sphericity, this hydro-aqueous structure is not so good as the purely aqueous structure. Its axis is too short for the breadth of its equatorial diameter. Under the sustained operation, therefore, of the law of sphericity, the axis will tend to lengthen, and it will lengthen, if the law of symmetry permits. Now, on inspecting the structure of the centre of an atom of aq, it will be seen that the law of symmetry

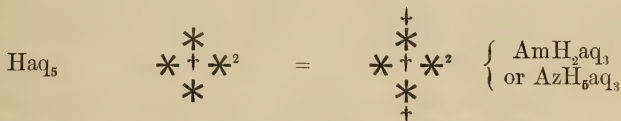
has by no means completed its work there. Thus, the units there are disposed in two groups,—one group consisting of six, which is the number determined by the symmetry of the whole structure, and essential to it; the other group consisting of five, which impair the symmetry, and which, in a word, are supernumerary. Here, then, in the terminal poles of the two atoms of moisture, which are bolted together by the atom of hydrogen, is the material for the forthputting of an atom of hydrogen in each. Moreover, these poles being hexagonal, are also trigonal, and therefore admirably suited for developing and holding these hydrogens thus protruded.

Meantime, by the emission of these hydrogens from the two atoms of aq, the latter have been profoundly modified. Their centres have, in fact, been reduced so that each of the five hylagens constituting them has now lost an unit from its equatorial angle. These hylagens are now bound, therefore, to keep together united as they are, to the end that all may supply the deficiency of each. They can no longer part company even for a moment, as atoms of hylagen in aq do, when they are to be turned round into the O of HO. In this case they can only be transformed into an atom of zote, and the atom of reduced moisture, instead of an atom of

Moisture  $\odot$  can only give an atom of  $\odot$  Hydro-zote,

and, therefore, plainly the two atoms of reduced vapour bolted together by an atom of hydrogen, if decomposed by electricity or otherwise, must give us three atoms of hydrogen along with one of azote; that is, they indicate the pre-existence of an atom of ammonia.

**The Genesis of Tissue.**—But in order (for the sake of the chemical reader) to bring out this result, we have been going too fast. We first obtain, possibly in the azure, the following equation—

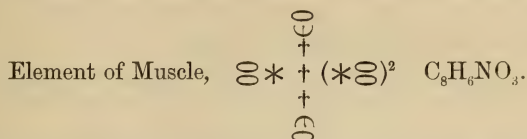


And now, if carbonic acid gas should come in the way, we may reasonably expect an atom of it to perch on each pole constructing formiate of ammonia. But now the length of the axis is too great for the breadth of the equator. In order to extend the latter, therefore, more moisture will be added in the equatorial plane. But the addition of only six aq, the smallest number which the symmetry of the equator admits, over-extends that equator so that the entire structure has now become highly oblate. Like the tetratoms of hydrogen,





the aquæform and the hydro-zotic, and therefore from extending and contracting through a certain range. But its zotic poles cannot be long free in a region where free atoms of carbon may come in the way. These poles will take and hold one atom of carbon on each. And, when thus fully charged with carbon, what, let us ask, is the formula?

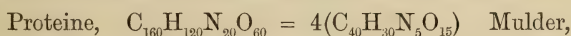


Now such is precisely the formula which C. Schmidt obtained for the dead muscular tissue as taken from insects, creatures in which that tissue exists in such extraordinary perfection!

But we found that these elements thus agreeing with the muscular were simultaneously disengaged in sets of twelve. These, therefore, in their turn, will tend to be constructed into a dodecatomic or an icosatomic molecule, according as C or H is centrad. Now, of such a molecule we obtain the following as the chemical formula, when C is centrad—

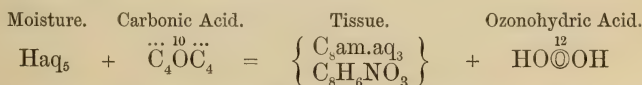


But when H is centrad, as it may be when more moisture, HO, is present, they will form into icosatoms, and then we shall have,



there being only slight differences in the quantity of O or of HO between these and the chemical formulæ, as is only to be expected, since the drying process of the chemist is something quite conventional.

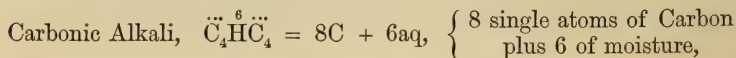
But the true unity, which is the basis of the organisation of muscle, &c., is that which C. Schmidt analysed when existing in its fixed and fully carbonised state. Now as to its trigonal, that is, its aqueous and ammoniacal matter, it is all derived from one atom of hydrogen saturated or fully charged with moisture, namely,  $\text{Haq}_5$ ! And as to its pentagonal matter, that is, its carbon, it is all supplied by exhausting of its carbon one atom of our carbonic acid!



It may be said, then, that the elements provided for supplying the most highly vitalised organism in the world—that organism which shall be suitable for effecting motion this way or that way in obedience to the dictates of a Will—are hydrogen and common vapour, constructing terhydrated ammonia, obtained from above, and sodium and oxygen, constructing carbonic acid, obtained from beneath, the latter breaking up in

the presence of the former, and giving its carbon to it so as to bind down the combined vapours on the surface of our planet as elements of tissue.

And here our theory presents us with a very interesting phenomenon. In fact, it suggests a carbonic alkali as well as a carbonic acid! It suggests a structure having two mellic elements as poles, with a hexatom of hydrogen for the body. But it must be very tender. And being decomposed, it gives the following equation—



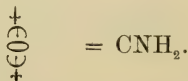
that is, it gives all the carbon simultaneously required for the construction of an element of tissue, and all the moisture!

**Muscular Action.**—And now, by constructing molecules of such tissue elements, and rendering them continuous by allowing only one atom of carbon as common to two in the region where they touched, we might flatter ourselves with the belief that we had obtained a structure something like that of the ultimate contractile and extensile fibre. But we are certainly, while amongst mere elements, at an immeasurable distance from everything that is visible even in the highest powers of the microscope. Nevertheless, such constructions are not in vain. If true within their own sphere, and rightly interpreted, they do not mislead.

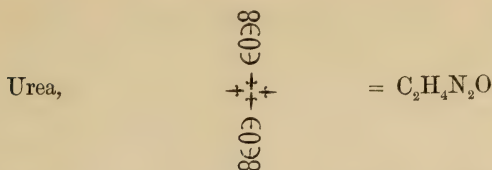
The course of nature is consistent with itself from first to last.

The structure, which we are now associating with the tissue of living animals, had its basis laid in the azure of the sky. It had been provided for and foreshadowed in the sunny clouds of the first morning. So deep beyond his own conception was the truth, which Haller uttered, when he said, “Ab ovo omnia;” and so true the utterance of the inspired poet, when, referring to the Creator of the world, he said that “He created it not in vain—He formed it to be inhabited.”

**The Transformation of Tissue.**—With regard to our tissue element and fibre, if, through its continued action (contraction and extension), the polar elements should be detached and thrown out, that which would be the common excretion of two adjacent molecules, and which being symmetrical might, when detached, exist separate, would be—



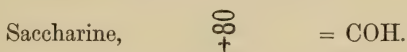
Now, from what we have seen of structures of this form, with hydrogen poles, we know (see p. 73) that they must tend to double, so as to construct a tetratom of hydrogen as the medial body. Let these rejected tissue-elements double then, and in order to secure them from the further attacks of oxygen, that ubiquitous parasite, let them receive and fix an atom of oxygen on each pole as usual, and we obtain—



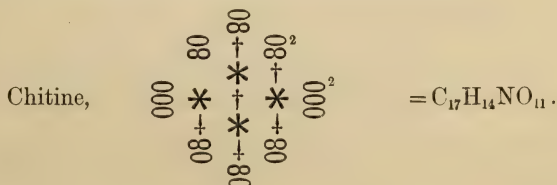
Thus it appears that our extensile and contractile filament in contracting and suffering solution of its continuity, must in doing so throw off urea as the product of the lesion, transformation and oxidation of the polar elements, while, with regard to the carbon of the equator, oxidation must carry it off as carbonic acid gas.

And thus, in our morphology, the renal and the respiratory functions present themselves as the orderly complements of each other!

**Dermo-Skeleton Tissue.**—In being easily transformable and quick for the purposes of life, such a structure as that which has been just described must necessarily be very tender and easily destroyed. But in order to sustain the forms of organised beings, and to afford fulcra to which the soft parts may be attached, some stable inflexible structure is obviously needed. Now we have seen, with regard to our tissue element, that as the carbon is increased that tissue tends to become more stable, the question therefore occurs, may not the carbon be increased until tissue become so stable that it may serve as material for maintaining the animal form? Now, in answer to this, it at once appears that if it be stability which we are seeking in a structure in which there are aquæform poles, and in our structure (when in a state of contraction) there are no fewer than 8 such poles, it is not simple atoms of carbon, but it is the nail-shaped combination of COH, that is, carbon in union with HO, which we are to look for, namely,



There is, moreover, on each of the three atoms of aq, on the equator of our tissue element, a space between the two atoms of carbon fixed there already, which is suitable for receiving another single atom of carbon, thus raising the number of atoms of carbon on the equator from  $3 \times 2$  to  $3 \times 3$ . Now, this done, there results a structure of exquisite stability and beauty, whose chemical formula is precisely that of





Thus our theory reaches that exquisite material of which the dermo-skeletons of insects and many other tribes are constructed.

**Phyto-Cellulose.**—As to the structure of the vegetable kingdom, the ammoniacal and the aqueous no longer exist in general in such close relationship. In this realm the axis of the tissue-element, instead of being am with aq placed around it, is aq solely. But on this subject I will not enlarge, contenting myself with referring to what I published upon it nearly ten years ago.\* Let it not be inferred, however, that there is any essential difference between the truly living parts of plants and of animals. In the truly living parts of plants the primary utricle exists within the cellulose of the cell. And by all that can be learned of it, the structure of the tissue-element which constitutes the primary utricle is the same as the tissue element in animals. The investing cellulose may be regarded as an organic incrustation or dermo-skeleton, imparting to the vegetable kingdom greater stability, but with the loss of that mobility which is the indispensable condition of animal life.

That this incrustation of cellulose on the living cell may be prevented, and the animal kingdom be thus saved from lapsing into the vegetable, I have elsewhere endeavoured to show that the hepatic function has been instituted in animals.†

**The Albumenoid Bodies.**—I only add, that the tissue element, by the transformation of the lateral atoms of aq into HO, and the transference of the 6 atoms of carbon from them to the ammoniacal axial body, proves itself exquisitely dimorphous, and capable of a form in which it may be stored up almost secure from decomposition. By this transformation we are carried in amongst the albumenoid bodies, for some insight into which see the work just referred to, page 102 *et seq.* I had not, indeed, at that date, ascertained the true nature of phosphorus, and my views in other respects were defective when estimated from the stand-place of the work now in the reader's hand, which records my study during the leisure of another decade of years.

\* See "First Lines of Science Simplified, and the Structure of Molecules. Attempted by John G. Macvicar, D.D. Edinburgh: Sutherland & Knox, 1860."

† See Edinr. Med. Journal, vol. xiv. p. 131.

## CHAPTER X.

BORON ; PHOSPHORUS AND ITS ISOMORPHS, ARSENIC, VANADIUM,  
ANTIMONY, BISMUTH.

THE secular or specific heat which actuates all molecules unremittingly, and at all temperatures, must, from its very nature, tend to rarify them. And since this rarefaction must always take place under the sustained operation of the law of symmetry and sphericity, it must often give rise to beautiful developments. And it may be shown that, in the case of oblate forms like that of the atom of carbon, when they cannot attain to the spherical by pairing on the same axis, each will tend secularly to attain this end by dedoubling in order to be doubled.

**Boron** (Pl. I. fig. iv. B).—A single atom of carbon may be developed into two atoms, both isomorphous with the atom of carbon itself, and with one another. This transformation we may, in the meantime, express by the secular equation,

$$1. \text{ Carbon, } \odot = \bigcirc \quad 2. \beta. \text{ Boron (monatomic).}$$

It is further to be remarked, that the atom of lithhium, which we have already found to be the most important of genetic principles after the bitetrad itself, may attain to symmetry otherwise than by giving off two atoms of hydrogen, and being in this way reduced to an atom of carbon. It may attain to symmetry without reduction, and simply by the closing up of its five-fid or metallic pole, while it opens simultaneously at the equator. In this way there results the equation,

$$1. \text{ Lithhium, } \varpi = \bigcirc \quad 2. \alpha. \text{ Boron (monatomic).}$$

In this case, however, the borons obtained are heavier by an atom of hydrogen than the isomorphs obtained by the dedoubling of the carbon.

Each of the latter obviously weighs  $\frac{40}{2} = 20$ , while the former weighs

$\frac{30}{2} = 15$ . Here then, analogously to hydrogen and hylagen, which are our most elementary *trigonal* elements, we have two elementary *pentagonal* elements, the one with single, the other with coupled units in each of its equatorial angles.

In the actual chemistry of the day, the first symmetrical combination of these two borons has been regarded as a single atom, which has been said to be "triatomic," its functioning thus so far suggesting its true nature, its atomic weight, consequently,  $4 + 3 + 4 = 11$ , when  $H = 1$ .

Triatomic Boron,  $B^{III} = 3B$  Monatomic Boron.

But by adopting the view of boron here given, it will be found that chemistry is relieved of one of its heaviest chapters,—in which, indeed, there is an unusually frequent use of the screw to twist the phenomena into seeming accordance with the hypothesis of a triatomic boron.

But neither of the modes which has now been mentioned gives what must be regarded as the characteristic genesis of our boron in nature. That genesis is the emission of boron instead of hydrogen, the pentagonal ultimate element instead of the trigonal, when baric and barytic elements are symmetrising themselves, or undergoing secular evolution and partitionment. Thus, while in the light and the common lithhium there are in the five summits of the five-fid pole only five units, that is, only the material for constructing an atom of hydrogen, in baric and barytic lithhiums, on the other hand, there are five tetradic units = five times four units, that is, the material for constructing an atom of boron. And this boron they will, on being disengaged, undoubtedly construct, in preference to an atom of baric hydrogen (which they might also possibly construct), because hydrogen is trigonal, while boron is pentagonal, and the material, when existing in the lithhium form, is pentagonally arranged already.

From this source we shall see, as we proceed, that there is provided for nature, as the secular development of baric and barytic molecules proceeds, not only an abundant supply of silicic (see p. 54), but also of phosphoric acid, for the world of living creatures; for four borons, as we shall presently see, when welded together by light oxygens ( $= H_5$  instead of  $H_{15}$ ), as the coupling-joints, constitute phosphorus.

**Boric Acid.**—An atom of boron, in union with an atom of O and one of HO, escapes into certain volcanic lakes, from which there also escape gases, of which upwards of 91 per cent. are carbonic acid gas. Such is sassoline. Let us suppose that it has been generated by the expansion of carbonic acid gas, retained in dodecatoms and in the volcanic and aqueous abyss, by being fully hydrated by  $aqHO$  on each of its twelve constituent members, we thus obtain—



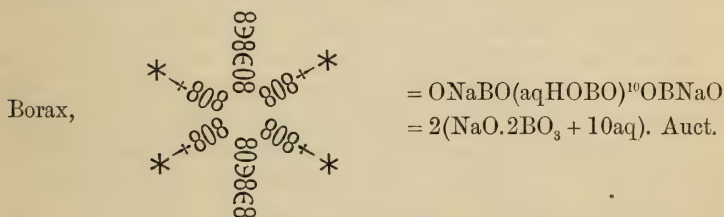
Carbonic,  $(aqHO.OCO)^{12} = (aqHO.OBBO)^{12} = 2(BO.HO)^{12}$  Boric.

That it is the light boron, its atomic weight, 15, *i.e.*, 3 when  $H=1$ , which enters into the constitution of this natural substance, is shown by the specific gravity experimentally obtained. Thus,

$$\text{Sassoline, } \frac{2(HO.BO)^{12}}{AQ} = \frac{12(90 + 110)}{1620} = 1.48 \text{ Exp. } 1.48.$$

But such a molecular structure is in the highest degree reduced. And considering that the primitive genetic element both of carbon and of boron, is lithhium, and that of lithhium the most stable combination is the undecomposable suboxide, that is, sodhium, what we are to expect in nature is not so much pure boric acid as boric acid in union with soda.

**Borax.**—Of this interesting salt the most recent formula which I have seen (see “Dictionaire de Chemie,” par Ad. Wurtz, tom. i. p. 652) is  $B^4O^7Na^2 + 10H^2O$ . This becomes to us  $B^{12}O^{14}Na^2 + 10aqHO$ . And this presents to us a finely differentiated dodecatom, moistened all over by  $aqHO$ , of which, however, the  $aqH$  (which, to keep up the analogy of ammonium, chemists should call aqium) is substituted on the poles by one atom of Na on each.



Allowing it to form, as usual, into differentiated dodecatoms, and these into composite dodecatoms, each occupying eight aqueous volumes, or half an ice volume, we obtain,

$$\text{Borax, G... } \frac{(ONaBO(aqH^{10}OBO)OBNaO)^{12}}{8AQ} = 1.73 \text{ Exp. } 1.72.$$

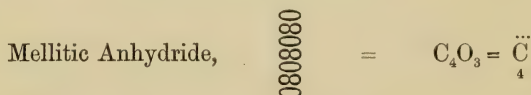
Our two borons, however, are chiefly interesting from the part they play when existing in undecomposable union with other elements, especially the oxygen-forms, all the members being piled on the same axis. That such combinations shall be generally undecomposable may easily be granted, since the two constituents are doubly convex and doubly concave lens-forms respectively, all of the same radius, and such that they fit into each other like the members of an achromatic lens or vertebral column. But to proceed with the most important members of this series.

**Phosphorus, Vanadium, Arsenic, Antimony, Bismuth.**—With re-

gard to the first of these, namely, phosphorus, which is the most interesting of them all, it may be shown that it may have either a meteoric, an oceanic, an organic, or a mineral origin, and that it may be expected to be found diffused through all nature, while yet it is not easy to compass its genesis otherwise than in a many-worded investigation. I allude to that element which shall possess the same structure as the polar elements in our carbonic acid,  $\ddot{\text{C}}_4$ , but which, instead of being constructed of common carbon and oxygen, and being decomposable, shall be constructed of boron and light oxygen, and shall prove itself to be undecomposable in the laboratory. It cannot but be very interesting, because it may be shown that the four atoms of full-weighted boron which it contains will tend to suffer reduction into light borons, during which the material units which make the difference will tend to be given off, not as usually in atoms of hydrogen, but in single units, which leaping into the medium of light while the process of reduction is going on, may be expected to render this substance eminently luminous or phosphorescent as compared with others. It is also interesting, in consequence of the great length of its axis, whence it must be an element of great chemical activity generally and especially in its demand for oxygen, since it consists in so great measure of hydrogen and boron.

But, as I have stated, experiments are not to be found which might be adduced to verify the successive stages of its construction. Let us, therefore, take together the five elements which are named at the head of this paragraph. Chemists are agreed as to the great similarity of functioning in all of them. This suggests that they all possess the same form and structure. And if, by recurring to that feature in our theory which gives isomorphic molecules of various kinds, whose atomic weights are inexorably fixed by that theory, we obtain, by the same construction in reference to all the five, the very atomic weights which are given in the tables in chemical works, this must surely prove that our construction is something else than a mere play of imagination.

The type which, in virtue of its easy decomposability, led me to the discovery of the structure of the series, is the polar body in dodecahedral carbonic acid, which, however, in honey-stone is secularly consolidated so as to be nearly undecomposable—



The materials for construction into the cylinder-shaped elements now to be tabulated, are the lens-shapes, doubly-convex (carbon shapes), and the doubly concave (oxygen shapes). They differ from each other in

atomic weight by one atom of common hydrogen when they are "light," that is, by five units of weight and by one atom of baric hydrogen (or boron), that is, by twenty units when they are baric or barytic. We thus obtain—

	Oxygen form.		Boron form.
5 × 5 Light, . . .	25	— 5 =	20
5 × 8 Common, . . .	40		35
5 × 20 Baric, . . .	100	— 20 =	80
5 × 32 Barytic, . . .	160		140

It will be remarked that there is here a series of only four terms, while in that beneath there are five. But this difference is explained when the structure of arsenic is looked into, which will be seen to be composed of two orders, viz., light and baric,—

$$H=5. H=1.$$

Boron and Light Oxygen, . . .	{	20 + 25 + 20 + 25 + 20 + 25 + 20 = 155 =	31 Phosphorus.
Of Common Weight, . . .		35 + 40 + 35 + 40 + 35 + 40 + 35 = 260 =	
Boron and Fluorine, . . .	{	20 + 100 + 20 + 100 + 20 + 100 + 20 = 380 =	76 Arsenic.
Baric Boron and Fluorine,		80 + 100 + 80 + 100 + 80 + 100 + 80 = 620 =	
Both Barytic, .		140 + 160 + 140 + 160 + 140 + 160 + 140 = 1040 =	208 Bismuth.

If it be asked why, with the exception of the first, they should all have a metallic aspect, while our genesis gives them as metalloids, the answer is that the three oxygen-forms, which form the coupling joints in each, must all secularly become metallised, except phosphorus, in which the oxygen-form has not matter enough to compass this transformation. Thus, common oxygen in such a situation must secularly tend to become wholly cellular, by the inversion of the ten tetrads of which it consists, and so to be transformed into a metallic annulus.

Baric oxygen, or unreduced fluorine, under the secular operation of its specific heat and the law of sphericity, must tend to give the following equation :—

$$\text{Baric Oxygen or Fluorine, } F = H_5 = H_{20} = Ca, \text{ Calcium,}$$

so that for this most terrible element there is provided ultimate repose in nature by the transformation of

$$\text{Fluorine Gas, } FF = FCa, \text{ Fluor spar.}$$

Barytic oxygen, also, which, as might be expected, still conceals itself from the chemist more successfully than fluorine, gives—

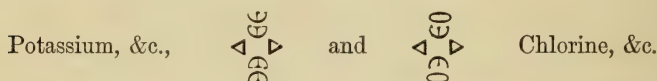
$$\text{Barytic Oxygen or Tetroxygen, } = H_5 = H_{20} = Zn \text{ Zinc.}$$



It is no wonder, therefore, but it is precisely what our theory would lead us to expect, that all the members of the preceding series, except the first, should have a metallic aspect, and be commonly regarded as metals. They must, however, according to our theory, be all of them brittle, for the absence of five-fid poles prevents their locking into each other, and being ductile. To remind of the metallic bands, then, of which there will be ultimately three in each, we may give the following figurate formula as the type in which the summits of the tetrads in the oxygen-forms have been inverted, and are now peripherad,



And here we may remark, that the same metallisation of the medial atom of oxygen in the structure of the alkalies and halogens will tend to take place, so that we may represent



But when this metallising of the medial coupling joint has taken place, dedoubling after that can only be a breaking up. Notwithstanding the great length of the axis in the series of elements now considered, therefore, after their medial joint has been metallised, their permanent existence in nature is secured. But, no doubt, by dedoubling previously, each atom of them must give birth to two atoms of some other brittle metal, whose atomic weight must be one-half of theirs, minus the medial or coupling joint. But on these we shall not touch.

In consequence of the great length of axis in this series of elements, they do not appear to be capable of assuming the æriform state as simple atoms. They appear to rise in isometrical yet differentiated molecules, consisting of dodecatoms within icosatoms, each occupying sixteen normal volumes, whence in the æriform state they have double the specific gravity which their atomic weights would lead us to expect.

Phosphorus, to which the greatest interest attaches, indicates the same structure in the solid after the distillate has been long preserved, and has recovered from the confusion of condensation. Thus,

$$\text{White Phosphorus, } \frac{P^{12+20}}{2AQ} = \frac{32 \times 155}{2 \times 1620} = 1.53 \text{ Exp. } 1.52.$$

And, by careful manipulation at a temperature such as to open up some

molecules and set some single atoms free, it appears that the latter, in their impatience of individual existence, may be made to attach themselves symmetrically to the isometrical molecules again, giving a dodecatom over the icosatom, and so by increasing the weight, removing the molecule further from the attacks of oxygen. Thus,

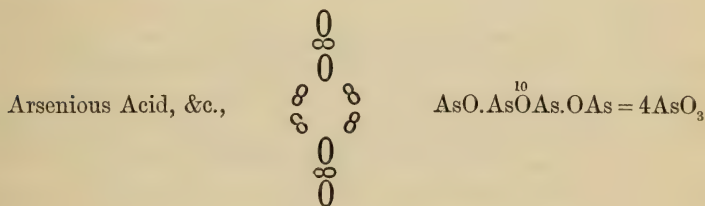
$$\text{Red Phosphorus, } \frac{P^{12+20+12}}{2AQ} = \frac{44 \times 155}{2 \times 1620} = 2.1 \text{ Exp } 2.14.$$

The elements now considered occur in nature, the heavier members mostly in union with sulphur, and the lighter members mostly or altogether in union with the lighter element, oxygen.

As to their natural combinations with sulphur, they appear to consist of the two elements both in molecules merely in juxtaposition, and so to be more of the nature of alloys than true sulphurides.

$$G = \frac{\overset{20}{S}}{AQ} + \frac{(\text{Bi or Sb or As})^{1+12+1}}{2AQ}$$

With oxygen they form dodecatoms, the polar bodies being either the simple element or its suboxide, of which the latter is by itself most stable, and can indeed in certain cases, as in that of arsenic, be raised into the æriform state entire. Drawn and quartered, its formula is, of course,  $\text{AsO}_3$ . But, adopting a long compressed letter  $\text{O}$  to stand for the elements of this order, to indicate the great length of their axis, we may thus give its figurate formula—



$$\text{Its Vapours, } G = \frac{4\text{AsO}_3}{2\text{Air}} = 14 \text{ Exp. } 13.85.$$

$$\text{Its Crystals, } G = \frac{4\text{AsO}_3}{\frac{1}{2}AQ} = 2.5 \text{ Exp. } 2.7.$$

$$\text{Its Mass, } G = \frac{(4\text{AsO}_3)^{12}}{4AQ} = 3.74 \text{ Exp. } 3.74.$$

When atoms of protoxide are removed from the poles, there remains arsenic acid ready for receiving other substances as polar bodies. These being as usual reckoned by chemists one instead of two, give

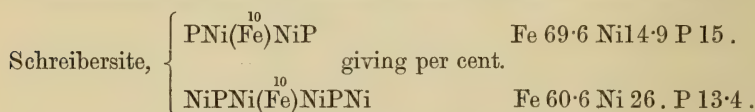
the formula of this acid  $\text{AsO}_5$  instead of  $\text{AsOAs}^{10}$ , that is, they give its nascent or immature form, instead of its culminate form.

Of all the elements of this order, the most interesting, as has been stated, is phosphorus. But, as has also been stated, its genesis in words is laborious. Only one case is simple. Thus, let there be an antimonic acid, in which the ten atoms constituting the body are barytic oxygens, and then, by simple rarefaction and development under the secular operation of specific heat, we obtain the equation—



And by the breaking down of the dodecatom in various ways, fluorine, calcium, manganese, &c., are given to nature. But such inquiries belong to rational mineralogy, a science of the future.

Along with a mineral origin, phosphorus has also a meteoric origin. Thus, taking iron and nickel instead of oxygen for the construction of differentiated dodecatoms, along with phosphorus as polar elements, we obtain that ingredient in ærolites named phosphor-nickel-iron, or,



But if we ascend into a more serene region, a region in which there is nothing but hydrogen, but where synthetic action is very powerful, we also obtain phosphorus there, and that without anything but hydrogen along with it.

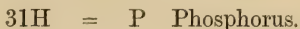
We have seen that hydrogen tends to form into hexatoms, which is the typical aerial molecule (Pl. I. fig. x.). We have seen also that these tend to group again into compound hexatoms. And, moreover, that when along with the hydrogen there are in the ambient medium single units of matter, these compound hexatoms tend to take these single units into union along with them, so that the hydrogen is fructified into aqueous matter (see p. 17), and, instead of the composite hexatom of hydrogen, there results—



But if, instead of  $\text{H}^6$  as the nucleus of the hexatoms of hydrogen, there be only a single atom of H, and there be no matter in the ambient in the state of single units, then there results the aerial molecule of hydrogen, of which a figurate formula has been given in Pl. II. fig. vii., consisting of  $5\text{H}^6 + \text{H} = 31\text{H}$ . Now this structure, when consolidated



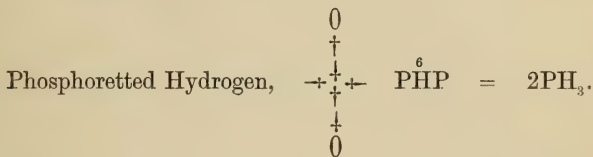
to the utmost, yet so as to preserve as free as possible its hydrogen character, gives, though we cannot show it here,



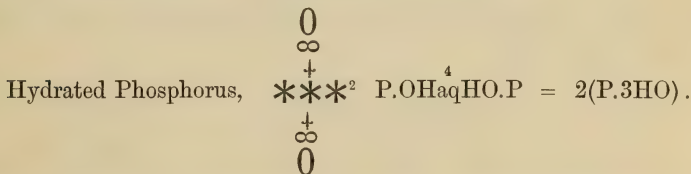
Suppose, then, that in the purely hydrogen region, where we now are, we have a composite hexatomic structure of hydrogen molecules analogous to the tetratomic  $\overset{4}{\text{H}}\overset{4}{\text{H}}\overset{4}{\text{H}}$  or  $\overset{4}{\text{S}}\overset{4}{\text{S}}\overset{4}{\text{S}}$ , but in this case the polar members differentiated from the equatorial member by having only a single atom of H instead of a hexatom as the central body or molecule, we then obtain as the medial body a composite hexatom of hydrogen carrying a molecule of  $\text{H}_{31}$ , ultimately an atom of phosphorus on each pole—



Of this the skeleton is found in the terraqueous globe. A single atom of hydrogen takes the place of a hexatom. Thus from many animal substances when undergoing decomposition, and especially from that liquid which is the ultimate educt of animal nature, there arises a gas, whose composition chemists give as  $\text{PH}_3$ . This doubled as usual, in obedience to the law of symmetry, gives

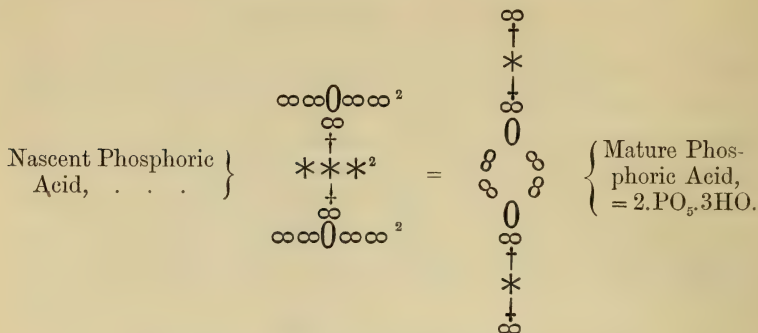


But to return to the original, namely,  $\overset{36}{\text{PHP}}$ , let now this combination come into a region, which is sown with matter in the state of single units, so that the composite hexatom of hydrogen may be dewed by them and transformed into moisture, and we obtain

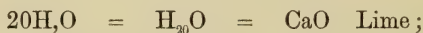


Now in this region there will also be oxygen, and when oxygen is sufficiently abundant it will, as usual, in the case of forms with long axes, surround the equator of the atom of phosphorus with  $\text{O}_5$ , and thus we shall have as each of the polar bodies of our phosphaqueous combination  $\text{PO}_5$ , and as the equatorial body six atoms of moisture. But in this the poles are overloaded. Under the law of sphericity, this structure must

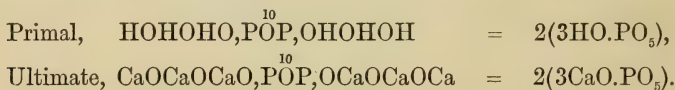
tend to invert so as to construct a dodecatom at the centre, and to place the moisture as differentiating the poles. Thus we shall have—



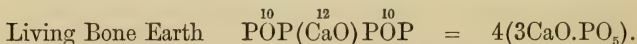
But it is to be considered that HO is very unstable, ever apt to lapse into aq. It is to be considered, at the same time, that on the atom of H in HO there are still four points for union, which are free or unoccupied. Where hydrogen is abundant, therefore, and HO in such a position that it cannot lapse into aq, there will gather in the H pole of HO four other atoms of H, and thereafter each of the three equatorial arms of the atoms of H added will tend to grow into 5H; or, to speak more generally, there will tend to gather in the pole of each atom of O ultimately twenty atoms of H. Now, these will tend secularly to be spherified and consolidated; for, as has been shown (p. 49), they are the very material for constituting a most exquisite metallic icosahedron (Pl. I. fig v. H<sub>20</sub>). In fine, we get the secular equation—



and now, but not till now, have hydrogen and oxygen been combined in a ratio of perfect stability and repose. We shall, therefore, have ultimately (compared with what there has been supposed to be at first) the following analogy,

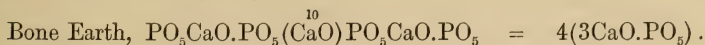


Now by being doubled, this over-axial combination resolves itself into a very symmetrical and finely differentiated system of dodecahedra—



It may, however, be still more fully differentiated and so rendered more stable, namely, by the dedoublement of the acid dodecatom on its

poles, and the opening up of the central basic dodecatom of lime into  $\text{CaO} + \text{CaO}^{10} + \text{CaO}$ , giving



Now, it will be observed, that all these three combinations, when quartered as usual, give the chemical formula of bone-earth. And it might be shown that there is reason for inferring that this one or another of them exists in a bone, according to its use, size, or position, health or disease; for it is always to be remembered that great stability of molecular structure is incompatible with health and even with life. An element of bone-earth which will not accommodate itself to the changes in the living tissue in which it is embedded, and of which it ought to form an integral part, must be a cause of irritation like a thorn. An effort must be made to eject it which will not altogether fail, and a state of disease of the bone, with defect of bone-earth, must ensue.

To conclude; the position of bone (according to those views of its ultimate structure) in the economy of nature is extremely interesting, especially when viewed in relation to cerebral matter, which in the last analysis gives striking analogies. In the construction of both, Nature has put forth all her power of analysis along with synthesis, and produced tissues, which, in point of function, consistence, and duration, are indeed completely antithetic; but which, nevertheless, when viewed in their ultimate analysis, their genetic relationships and their place in nature strangely agree, bone being the more fully reduced of the two. Thus, in the last analysis, bone-earth consists solely of hydrogen, boron, and carbon, the simplest and lightest of all the elements, together with oxygen, which must enter into every substance in the terraqueous globe, which is to be secure from the attack of this great corroder. And hence, by the way, during long epochs, in fossil bones for instance, a retrograde course of molecular action, calcium ( $= \text{H}_{20}$ ) lapsing into fluorine, phosphorus dedoubling into silicon, and boron doubling into carbon.

As to cerebral matter, bone resembles it more in its axial part (the marrow) than in its peripheral part. In Part I. p. 153, I have given the possible construction of Liebreich's Protagon. But it is uncertain whether even this, notwithstanding all that chemist's gentle treatment of his material, be the true cerebral molecule. Chemistry, which first drives out of an organic morsel which is to be submitted to analysis an amount of the moisture that is in it which is quite uncertain, perhaps forbids our knowledge of the actual structure of the cerebral element as it exists in nature, the most marvellous product of combined molecular analysis as well as synthesis—muscle illustrating synthesis only.



## CHAPTER XI.

### THE ATMOSPHERE—NITRE, NITRIC ACID, ETC.

IN what has preceded an account has been given of the organic elements, that is, those elements which are fit for maintaining vegetable and animal life, and which enter most largely into the structure of plants and animals.

Of the principal four, oxygen is that which is the great agitator and mover, and for its existence provision has been most securely made. As to the manner of its action, since its form is, as it happens, somewhat like that of a life-buoy, we may say that when oxygen is thrown in among the other organic elements, its atoms do for them what so many life-buoys thrown into the sea might do for human creatures in a shipwreck. As among the latter some individuals would seize the life-buoys sooner than others, and some would fit them better to their persons, so that the waves might be less able to part them; in short, as from the laying hold of the same life-buoys by different individuals,—some of them landmen, and some of them sailors,—very varied combinations would both immediately and ultimately result, so with the atoms of oxygen when thrown in among the other organic elements. Almost all the action in organic nature which (from other causes) proceeds in such an orderly manner, and is productive of such beautiful developments, depends upon oxygen. There must, therefore, if there is to be life in our planet, be an unfailing supply of oxygen in the free or uncombined state—or if in the combined state, then so loosely combined, that the organic elements may be easily able to separate and appropriate it.

But how can there be a supply for long ages of such an element as this, which tends to unite and become parasitic on everything, and be imprisoned on all hands? How can it be retained for ages in the free state? At first sight the problem seems insoluble, unless the supply be infinite. Not so, however, when we reflect upon the grand law of molecular action,—unless, indeed, the supply of other molecules be

infinite also. That law is the law of assimilation. When that law has been fulfilled, when the assimilation of separate molecules has been effected, there is no longer the same determination in them towards union. It is dissimilars only that unite from an impulse within. Hence, structures which are already mailed in oxygen will not attract to themselves and consume any more free oxygen, however much of it there may be in the ambient. They will rather repel it, and leave it free as they find it. Let the earth's crust, then, be fully oxidised, and we may have free oxygen everywhere notwithstanding. Now, this is the state of things which actually exists in the present epoch of our planetary existence. The earth's crust is fully oxidised, and free oxygen abounds everywhere; or if not just free everywhere, then so loosely engaged (in constituting moisture), that it can be easily obtained in the free state everywhere. An unit volume of the atmosphere, for instance, consists of free oxygen nearly to the extent of 21 per cent., and the air in water contains it, or tends to contain it, up to 33·3 per cent.

**The Atmosphere.**—The only question then is, Whence has this free oxygen been obtained? That it could not rise in the free state from a seething Plutonic or volcanic abyss we have already seen. In that case, we have seen that every atom of oxygen, every life-buoy, will be laid hold of by at least two, possibly by four of those zothic or lithhic bodies, which would be lost and merged in the abyss without it.

Confining our attention here to the latter case only, that in which four zoths lay hold of one atom of oxygen, and dropping our significant but grotesque figure, instead of an atom of free oxygen we obtain in the abyss an atom of oxygen crammed with metallic matter, viz.—

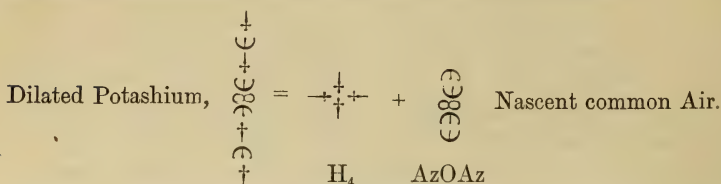
Potassium,



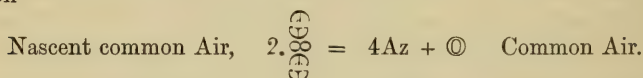
Now, if this escape from the seething abyss and attain in the nether vault or elsewhere the fully individualised or æriform state, certain changes under the law of symmetry and sphericity must take effect upon it.

In order that the axis of the atom of zothe (or lithhium), of which there are four in it, may be symmetrised, we have seen (p. 52) that an atom of hydrogen must be given out in the centre of the 5-fid region. Suppose this, then, to have been secularly accomplished in reference to all the four zhoties in our atom of potassium, we obtain an axial structure (see next page), consisting of an atom of oxygen in the middle, as the coupling-joint, and on each side two atoms of zote alternating with two of hydrogen. Now, such a structure is very loose, and the axis is by far too long. We may, therefore, expect that

the four separate atoms of hydrogen will aggregate into a tetratom of hydrogen, while the terminal atoms of zote will turn round and apply themselves symmetrically to the other two. Thus will they greatly improve the structure. We shall thus obtain the equation—



Now in this latter structure, though greatly improved, the axis is still too long; while, on the other hand, each of the coupled elements on both sides of the medial atom of oxygen (being atoms of Az, see p. 60), are eminently symmetrical and spherical, and every way well suited for individualised existence. This structure will, therefore, tend to break up into 2Az and O. But oxygen in the æriform state flies not in single, but in coupled atoms. Very soon, therefore, we shall have the equation—

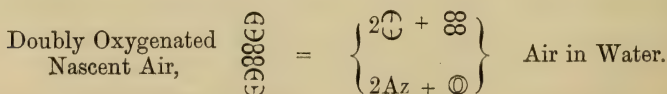


That is, four volumes of azote and one of oxygen gas.

We should have obtained the same result had we set out with sodium instead of potassium; only that in this case, instead of one only, three atoms of sodium require to be taken in synthesis, and, along with common air, there is given to nature a residuum of lithia and silica.

Here, then, from the secular transformation of the first molecular structures of the abyss, we obtain azote (see Pl. II. fig. ix. Az) and oxygen in the same proportions (speaking generally) in which they exist in the atmosphere. And we see, at the same time, a sufficient reason for the great quantity of azote which exists in the aerial envelope of our planet, along with the free oxygen. However great, it is the smallest quantity which could save the oxygen and let it go in the free state.

Moreover, oxygen, having once established itself as oxygen gas, can enter the abyss again, and so far reconstruct the primal combination, while yet conserving for nature a double quantity of oxygen. Thus reconstructing the original azoto-oxygenic structure, with oxygen which had secured its existence as oxygen gas, we could only have the following equation—





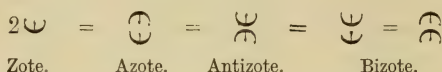
In which the quantity of oxygen in relation to the azote instead of being between 20 or 21 per cent. in volume, is between 33 and 34 per cent. And such appears to be the proper structure of the air which is given to fishes and the inhabitants of the deep for respiration.

As to the normal constitution of the entire atmosphere, however, that is a very crude conception which regards it as consisting of merely so much oxygen and so much azote mechanically mixed with certain other æriform particles accidentally introduced, though strangely found in very constant proportions. Our molecular philosophy leads us to regard the air when in a state of repose as we have regarded the ocean, that is, as a symmetrically-constructed medium, to which the terms aërial-crystalline might be applied, and possessing within itself the power to a certain extent of restoring its own composition when it has been anyhow disturbed or vitiated. And this the normal structure of the air, and not merely a certain mixture of pure azote and pure oxygen, we regard as that which is most favourable to health and life. To develope an unit of this mixed atmosphere here, and to show the genetic relationship of the various constituents, would lead us into too long details. Happily the student who has mastered all that has preceded may be able to do so himself. Here is its composition—

36 ×	{	12 × 12 × 12 × 12Az	76·223	Azote.
		12 × 12 × 12 × 3⊙ + 12O	22·600	Oxygen gas and oxygen.
		12 × 12 × 3Aq	1·021	Aqueous vapour.
		12 × CO <sub>2</sub>	0·069	Carbonic acid.
		AzH <sub>3</sub>	0·005	Ammonia.

The atom of zote, when it has doubled and gained the æriform state as azote, may as to its place in nature be compared to hydrogen. It is when first given off in the position of a rejectamentum; but it is a rejectamentum so constructed, that when it falls into its right place it will be taken up into the course of nature again, and be found assisting beautifully in the grand cycle of molecular development, very near the beginning—in fact, only behind hydrogen itself. In the coupled state as azote, the zotic element has attained to such symmetry of structure and such sphericity, that when by itself, or mingled with others of its kind, it possesses, and cannot but possess, great repose. And hence infinite advantage to our world. If our atmosphere consisted in so great a measure of any other æriform but azote, it would have been the subject of such perpetual storms as would have destroyed all life. Still, every atom of azote consists of two parts, each of which by itself is the most active of all elements, and these two parts need only to be separated, or their relative positions changed, in order to the display of the most intense activity. Now, in constituting the atom of azote they

merely touch each other. It may be inferred, therefore, that their separation will not be very difficult. If, instead of merely touching by their 5-fid summits, they had been locked into each other like the teeth in a rat-trap, or in the closed mouth of the shark, thus constituting a true unity and the most spherical form possible, their separation could not be looked for except under very peculiar circumstances. The properties of the resulting element in that case would be notably different from those of azote; and, in fact, we shall soon find that two zotes or lithiums thus locked together, and each locking up the metallicity of the other, constitute an atom of silicon. But from azote, as has been already shown, we may have the following series—



Of these, we may expect all to have properties very different from those of azote, which to breathe is simply innocuous. And as antizote is symmetrical by itself, and may therefore exist in the fully individualised or æriform state, and as the law of differentiation, when it is not fully satisfied by the existence of the atmosphere in a normal state, must tend to develope antizote in the midst of the azote, we may possibly have in this antizote one of those morbid principles which sometimes certainly do exist in the air, but of which chemical analysis can find no trace, nor the actual chemistry of the day give any account. The action of poisons is indeed a perfect mystery; but I may here remark, that most probably an æriform atom of hydrocyanic acid may be regarded as an atom of antizote as polar matter, with an atom of anæsthetic (CHC) as body, ( $\text{CO} + \text{OC} = \text{C}_2\text{HN}$  æriform hydrocyanic acid?)

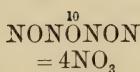
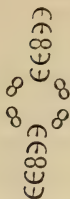
**Oxides of Nitrogen.**—With regard to the two last, which I have named bizote, in which the two atoms of zote are united thimblewise, what we are to expect here obviously is the same mode of activity as in the single atom, but of double intensity. Now, this combination (bizote) exists in potassium, as also in the most stable form of ammonia, which we have called biammonia. And of the latter very beautiful and finely explained by our theory are the transformations (oxygen being supplied in varying quantities) into nitric and nitrous acids, and nitric oxide. All of these in their most highly synthetic culmination or imago-forms are differentiated dodecatoms, the polar elements as usual being in nitric acid the bare doubled element, which we may designate as usual, with English chemists generally, by the letter N; in nitrous acid, the suboxide NON; and in nitric oxide, the sesquioxide ONONO, the body in all being ten atoms of oxygen. Thus, we obtain—

*In Culmination Forms.*

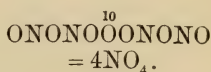
Nitric Acid.



Nitrous Acid.



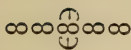
Nitric Oxide.



But these molecules still forming symmetrical structures, and maintaining the same ratios of nitrogen and oxygen, can dedouble and change to such an extent that many pages would not be sufficient to give their history and properties, physical and chemical.

*In Minor Forms.*

Nitric Acid.



Nitrous Acid.



Nitric Oxide.



(Pl. II. fig. xv.)

This variability is also true of other combinations in which the same elements exist in combination, the oxygen being less in quantity. In fact, the modes of union of nitrogen and oxygen which elementary works on chemistry chose as the very type of simplicity and regularity, is one of the most varied and the most difficultly determined. It is all very well to say 1:1, or 1:2, or 1:3, &c., regarded as mere percentages reduced to their lowest terms. But to determine molecular structures is a very different thing. In reference to the combinations of nitrogen and oxygen, all that we shall here say is this, that they are as numerous as the phenomena which they display.

What our theory gives as most normal and symmetrical, and therefore most probably the product of nature, is nitric acid, commencing as nitrous acid in union with ammonia in the atmosphere, and in union with







## CHAPTER XII.

### IRON AND COPPER.

THE well-known properties of iron, when viewed in the light of our theory, enable us to construct its atom.

Thus, iron is so eminently magnetic that its magnetism may be rendered obvious to the senses, both by the visible motions and the arrests of motion which it produces. Now, this implies that its atom must be heteropolar in form, so that the rhythmical currents of force existing in its ætherial atmosphere may flow from pole to pole, and not, as is usual, between the poles and equator. For it is only when these currents flow from pole to pole that their force can be accumulated into a resultant, which may ultimately be powerful enough to produce sensible phenomena.

This eminent magnetism also implies that the molecular functioning of the atom of iron is intense, and, therefore, that its form departs largely from the spherical, which is the form of repose.

Further, iron is so universally diffused that the materials of which it is constructed must be present everywhere, in the upper regions, as well as in the earth itself; for quantities of iron often fall from the skies.

Further, it is a tenacious metal. One pole of the iron atom, therefore, must be 5-partite.

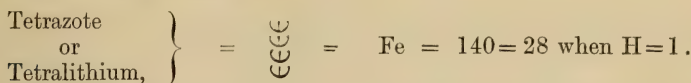
But it is also heteropolar. The other pole, therefore, must be lens-shaped; for that is the only alternative to 5-partite in one and the same order of forms.

Further, the atomic weight of iron is 28 when  $H = 1$ . It is, therefore, precisely double of that of azote or bizote, silicon, and aluminium, all of which are very abundant, either in the air or in the earth, and all of which consist of two atoms of zote or lithium, coupled or consolidated into an unity one way or another.

Now, by doubling these abundant elements, and placing the four atoms of zote or lithium on the same axis in parallel positions, or



thimblewise, so that each may be grasped and held fast by the five talons of the atom into which it is inserted, we obtain a structure which satisfies all these conditions, and which may, therefore, possibly represent iron. Therefore, possibly—



From its heteropolarity it could not possibly exist in single atoms in the æriform state; and, indeed, from its great length of axis, it is not easy to see how it could exist in the æriform state at all except in molecules. Its normal mode of existence must be molecular; and that its molecules are very various, as it is reduced from its ores, we may infer from its very variable specific gravity, viz., from 7.1 to 8.14. The differentiated dodecatoms, when grouped again into an isometrical composite dodecatom, give—

$$\text{Iron, } G = \frac{(\text{Fe}^{12}(\text{Fe})\text{Fe})^{12}}{2AQ} = 7.25.$$

And if the high magnetic character of the single atoms should cause them to settle upon the primary dodecatom again and again symmetrically, we should obtain—

$$\text{Iron, } G... \frac{\text{Fe}^{12+20+12}}{\frac{1}{2}AQ} = 7.6.$$

But many other molecular states are possible, and as they must differ from each other in tenacity and mechanical value, there is a fine field for inquiry in the metallurgy of iron.

But not to enter on this subject here, let us now inquire into the other elements, both metallic and metalloidal, by which such a substance may be expected to be accompanied.

**Nickel.**—In the ferric element as conceived above, all the four constituent lithiums are fully reduced. No one of them remains in the primal state of  $\Psi = \text{⌢}$ . But the stability of the fourfold combination would be secured though the process of reduction had taken effect only upon two out of the four. An atom of crude zhote  $\Psi$ , when free, must indeed soon either dissolve into  $5\frac{1}{2}\text{H}$ , or be transformed into S or O. But when grasped in the pole of an atom of reduced zote  $\Psi$ , which is wholly undecomposable, an atom of  $\Psi$  must remain undecomposable also. Along with iron, therefore, when it has been generated hurriedly, so that there has not been time for the reduction of all the four atoms of lithium constituting it, or when through any cause that reduction has been arrested, there will result another metal highly magnetic like iron,

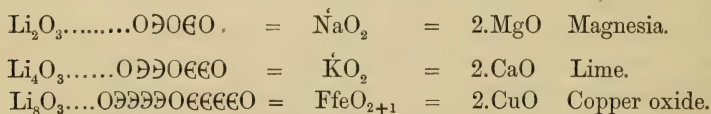
and many ways resembling iron, but its atomic weight heavier by two atoms of hydrogen. Now, this inference is responded to by—

$$\text{Hurried Iron} = \begin{array}{c} \text{O} \\ \diagup \quad \diagdown \\ \text{O} \end{array} = \text{Nickel} = 150, \text{ i.e., } 30 \text{ when } H = 1.$$

Nor is this the only magnetic metal which offers itself in this connection. It might be shown that our molecular morphology gives us in connection with iron (Ferric acid)—a beautiful theory of the genesis of chromium (hydrate of the oxide of chromium), &c. ; while the atom of baric iron, by partial reduction, gives us cobalt and its baric associates. But these metals are rare and of comparatively little interest in mineral geology. We therefore pass them over without more words.

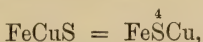
But let us ask the question, in this part of our construction, whether we obtain any insight into the structure of the atom of another metal which is scarcely less generally diffused in nature than iron itself, which is usually associated with iron, or rather which appears to take its place as the iron disappears, and which in many of its physical and chemical characters seems curiously contrasted with iron. I allude to—

**Copper.**—Does our theory give us any insight into the genesis or structure of the atom of copper? To this it is to be answered, that as we have found the alkali-metals dedoubling into those of the alkaline-earth metals, there is obviously now occasion for adding another to the series. The sesquioxide of iron differs, indeed, from the sesquioxides of lithium, and of bilitium, in being decomposable by human art. And this difference we can easily understand on account of the extreme length of the axis in the atom of sesquioxide of iron. But, for the same reason, the latter ought to be prone to dedouble by the opening up of the medial atom of oxygen. Now, this done, we shall obtain a new metallic species. Its atomic weight must be that of  $\text{Fe} + \frac{1}{2}\text{O} = 28 + \frac{8}{2} = 32$  when  $H = 1$ . But it is no longer heteropolar. It will, therefore, be no longer magnetic like iron. Rather, in its relations to magnetism it must be the reverse of iron. Moreover, its atoms under the law of redintegration will tend to go in couples; and when given to nature in union with oxygen it must usually occur as a protoxide. In all these respects it represents copper, being the last of the following series—

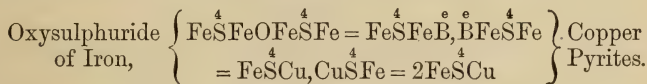


It is in connection with copper pyrites, however, that the evidence that such is the nature and genesis of copper (if that of iron be granted) becomes altogether convincing. This mineral is the source

whence most of the copper of commerce is derived, and it is well known to possess the singular formula of—



that is, an atom of sulphur carrying one of iron on one pole, and one of copper on the other. Now, let us take a normal or symmetrical sulphuride of iron,  $\text{Fe}\overset{4}{\text{S}}\text{Fe}$ , and form it into a dodecatom; then let that dodecatom be encrusted by oxygen; and then let the set of  $\text{Fe}\overset{4}{\text{S}}\text{Fe}$  elements be overlaid, so as to give a double walled molecule, each member of that molecule consisting of two atoms of symmetrical sulphuride of iron united by an atom of O as the coupling-joint; and then, in consequence of the great length of axis, let dedoublement take place by the opening up of the medial atom of O, and we obtain—



Thus our theory of the nature of iron receives every support from looking to the substances with which iron occurs most intimately associated in nature. It is supported no less by looking to the substances which constantly make their appearance along with it in the arts. These are principally carbon, silicon, sulphur, and phosphorus. And so constantly are these substances present, more or less, whenever there is iron, that there is no reason to suppose that there ever was any considerable quantity of iron without them.

**Cast Iron.**—Now, as to carbon, though doubtless it has ample opportunity of being introduced from the fuel commonly used in iron smelting, yet our theory leads us to expect that it would make its appearance though the iron were reduced from a perfectly pure oxide or sulphuride, by an oxyhydrogen flame or the voltaic arc. Thus, suppose the liquid metal to consist of dodecatomic molecules of iron, they must tend to become differentiated. Now of this one of the purest modes, if the metal is to remain in the liquid state, is the demetallisation of the terminals of one of the six axes of the dodecahedron, as usual, by the gathering up of the five units which constitute these terminals into an atom of hydrogen. But by such a step the terminals of the axis are transformed from  $\text{D}$  to  $\text{HC}$ , and this, supposing none of the carbons of the hydro-carbon to escape, implies the development in the iron of 3·6 per cent. of carbon. Such a metal must also, when it has concreted, be brittle like silicium, manganese, chromium, antimony, bismuth, &c., and other masses consisting of molecules with lens-shaped poles.

Now the percentage of carbon, which we have deduced in this way,



may be taken as the normal average of what is found in iron that has been liquid in quantities, and has concreted. The concrete is also brittle, and is known as cast iron.

According to our theory, it is also to be expected that it will be impossible wholly to purge any considerable mass of iron from silicon. Thus two atoms or molecules of iron, when the 5-partite regions of their surfaces are pressed together, may lock into each other. And if they should lock so intimately that the two zotes or lithiums thus locked will hold together rather than to the other zotes to which they are attached in the atom of iron, an atom of separable silicon is generated, for  $\epsilon\delta$  when locked together give  $\Theta = \text{Si}$ .

As to sulphur, since S and  $\Psi$  are alternate forms of the same element  $5\text{Hf}$ , and an atom of sulphur  $\hat{\text{S}}$  is the numerical equivalent of crude iron  $\delta\delta\delta\delta$ , sulphur also may be always expected in iron, the quantity varying according to the mode of development.

And no less may phosphorus be expected. Thus, wherever  $\Psi$  is undergoing reduction to  $\psi$ , abundance of nascent hydrogen must be set free, and  $\Psi = \text{BB}$ , that is, boron in coupled atoms. Now, an atom of phosphorus, when completely decomposed, consists of  $\text{BBBB} + (3 \times 5\text{H})$ . In iron, therefore, there is abundant material for the genesis of phosphorus.

But it is not in the smelting or puddling furnace that we can study with advantage the genesis of phosphorus, this most composite and yet most elemental of material substances. This study may best be conducted in the sky. This subject, however, I shall not resume.

As to meteoric iron, it follows from our theory, that it may possibly be generated from the stormy transformation both of nitric acid and biammonia, and especially from their stormy union. Also, by any cause which may invert the positions of the two atoms in azote, so as to give  $\delta\delta$  instead of  $\epsilon\delta$ . The plunge of an atom of  $\epsilon\epsilon\overset{10}{\text{O}}\delta\delta$  into one of  $\delta\delta\overset{6}{\text{H}}\epsilon\epsilon$ , that is, of bizotic (nitric) acid into biammonia (laboratory ammonia), immediately generates  $\delta\delta\delta\delta$ , which, in the requisite conditions, may be consolidated into Fe. Moreover, atoms of  $\delta\delta$  must immediately aggregate into  $(\delta\delta)^{12}$ , and these receiving the same again as an incrustation, must become,

$$\text{Meteoric Iron, } (\delta\delta\delta\delta)^{12} = \overset{12}{\text{Fe}}.$$

Hence also chromium, silicon, carbon, &c., in the aerolite.

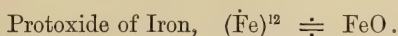
But while our theory thus admits of the meteorite being formed in the bosom of the storm, it does not deny that meteorites may also come

from the planetary spaces. On the contrary, it rather assigns a cosmical origin to all such visitants of our planet.

And here we may remark, that the function which we thus conceive that ammonia,  $\text{H}^6\text{N}$ , may perform in the higher atmosphere, may be performed by potassium  $\text{K}^6\text{O}$  at the earth's surface. The meteoric masses, bits, and dust, which fall to the earth's surface may be represented by ochre and bog iron-ore, which make their appearance in such quantities on the earth's surface, in those too dark and cold climates where a successful nitrification can scarcely be accomplished.

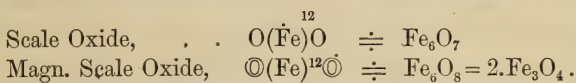
**Iron Oxides.**—The atom of iron, as might be expected from the length of its axis and its heteropolarity, perseveres with great determination in a molecular state.

The simple dodecatom coated with oxygen, one atom on each of its twelve members, constitutes the



But in this wholly undifferentiated and free state it has not yet been obtained by the chemist.

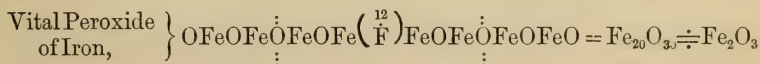
The blacksmith, however, notably disengages it with the simplest possible differentiation, viz., now an atom of O, now one of  $\odot$  on each pole, the first giving 25 and the second 27.6 per cent. of oxygen.



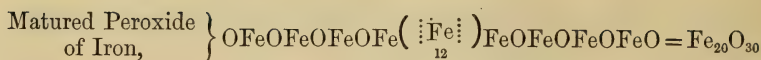
The latter proportion of iron and oxygen is also abundant in nature. But it appears to be distributed in molecules consisting of  $\text{OFeOFeOFeO}$ , for it is magnetic. Now, in such combination we see a ground for free magnetism, since three atoms of iron on the same axis, however they may be arranged, cannot neutralise each other's magnetism.

It is, however, the relation between the protoxide and the peroxide of iron that possesses the highest interest,—an interest which is not merely physical and chemical, but physiological also.

Iron oxide appears to be developed in nature simply by the differentiation of the molecule of the protoxide by the addition of other atoms of protoxide to the poles, till these poles become so long that each fixes five atoms of oxygen as an equatorial expansion for itself. We thus obtain—



But now, under the law of unification and sphericity, the 5 atoms of O surrounding each pole must tend to move towards the body, thus mailing it in deutoxide, and giving—



But now the atoms of protoxide on the poles must be very liable to depart spontaneously, or to be carried off by any acid. Now when they are carried off, then the 10 atoms of oxygen on the body which constitute a deutoxide there must be set free! Thus peroxide of iron must be a beautiful apparatus for supplying oxygen for the blood or the living tissue, in ten atoms at a time, that is, precisely in the number of atoms simultaneously which are generally wanted simultaneously, for the construction of dodecatoms or definite molecules.

That the peroxide as it occurs in nature has something of this structure appears from its specific gravity. Thus—

$$\text{Specular Iron, G} = \frac{\overset{4}{\text{Fe}} \left( \overset{12}{\text{Fe}} \right) \overset{4}{\text{Fe}}}{\frac{1}{2}\text{AQ}} = \text{Fe}_{20}\text{O}_{30} = 4.94. \text{ Exp. 5.}$$

If it were an elemental sesquioxide OFeOFeO, its molecule must be a dodecatom, either isometrical or differentiated; but neither of these will give the experimental specific gravity. By its partitionment the oxide now conceived can give every oxide.

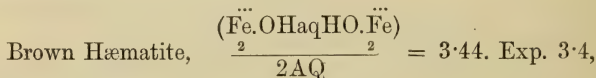
(1.) Each successive joint, and the whole when the ten supernumerary atoms of oxygen are removed, gives protoxide.

(2.) The division of the polar parts of the axis at the middle, as also the remainder, gives OFeOFeO = Fe<sub>2</sub>O<sub>3</sub>, the sesquioxide, which may surely often exist as a peroxide of iron (OFeOFeO)<sup>1+12+1</sup>.

(3.) The polar parts, when removed at a joint nearer the centre, give—

$$\text{Magnetic Oxide, } \frac{(\text{OFeOFeOFeO})^{1+12+1}}{\text{AQ}} = 5. \text{ Exp. } 4.9 \dots 5.2.$$

**Hydrated Peroxide.**—The simple sesquioxide appears to exist in this form when hydrated as it is in



rising when water is lost to 3.95.

**The Sulphurides of Iron.**—While the molecule of iron,  $\overset{12}{\text{Fe}}$ , tends to be encrusted with oxygen, as we have seen, and by its differentiation to give rise to a variety of oxides, it must tend no less, nay more, to be encrusted by sulphur, which is more truly an equivalent to iron than oxygen, both as to weight and difference of form. Hence, as a most generally diffused substance, we may expect to find a simple sulphuride of iron.



**Common Pyrites.**  $(\overset{4}{S}Fe)^{12} \doteq FeS$  Auct.—And since sulphur is transparently yellow, while iron is of white metallic lustre, and the sulphur is on the surface in this molecule, with the iron as a silvery behind or beneath, we may fairly expect this sulphuride to be golden in appearance.

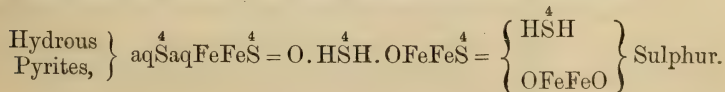
**Marcasite.**  $(Fe\overset{4}{S})^{20} \doteq FeS$  Auct.—But this yellow sulphuride molecule may be subject to inversion, that is, a molecule of sulphur,  $\overset{20}{S}_4$ , may be encrusted by iron, as well as a molecule of iron by sulphur; and in this case, the surface of the molecule being metallic white, we may expect the pyrites to have rather a silvery than a golden appearance; and since the molecule is no longer dodecatomic, but icosatomic, we may expect the crystalline form also to be different. The differentiated dodecatom gives  $G = 5.06$ , and the icosatom gives  $G = 4.2$ , two of the former and one of the latter being supposed to occupy an aqueous volume. Experiment gives  $G$  from 4 to 5, and indicates great internal differentiation.

**Magnetic Pyrites.**—If sulphur be tending to the state of vapour,  $\overset{4}{S}\overset{4}{S}\overset{4}{S}$ , but retain on both poles an atom of iron, as also one on each of the three sulphic arms of the equator, we obtain a finely constructed pyritic element composed of  $\overset{4}{S}_3Fe_5$ , giving 40.79 per cent. of sulphur. In consequence of the distribution of the iron on the equator, it may also be expected to be magnetic. But the sulphurides and sulphides of iron, like the oxides, may possibly be almost endless.

**Green Vitriol.**—In common pyrites the sulphur being peripheral, and therefore exposed to both the moisture and the oxygen which are almost all-pervading in the terraqueous globe, and having such an affinity for both, it is to be expected that pyrites in the course of nature will undergo decomposition. Its prospects of permanence would, indeed, be but little if at all better, if the iron were peripheral, as it appears to be in other species; for iron in single atoms is as liable as sulphur to the attacks of moisture and oxygen. Let us take for illustration the simplest soluble or insoluble particle of pyrites, viz.—

Com. Pyrites,  $\overset{4}{S}FeFe\overset{4}{S}$  The dodecatom being broken up.

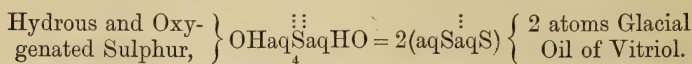
Suppose now one atom of  $\overset{4}{S}$  alone to be attacked by moisture—



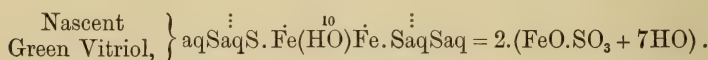
That is, sulphuretted hydrogen, iron protoxide, and sulphur. Now, the first will go off, the protoxide will tend to grow into peroxide, and

this, forming in the presence of moisture, will give hydrated peroxide of iron, or brown hæmatite, mixed with particles of sulphur. Such will be a product of the imperfect decomposition of the pyrites.

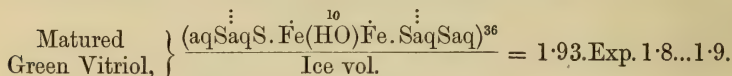
But if oxygen be fully present, as well as moisture, then, instead of particles of sulphur, we may expect a sulphurate of moisture, tending to dedouble into two atoms of glacial oil of vitriol, viz.—



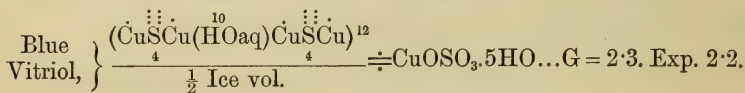
Now, awaiting for union with these two atoms of bihydrated sulphic acid there is  $\text{OFeFeO}$ —not, however, in this anhydrous state, but as a dodecatom, the body being  $(\overset{10}{\text{HO}})$ , giving  $\text{OFe}(\overset{10}{\text{HO}})\text{FeO} = 2\text{FeO}.5\text{HO}$ , a normal hydrate (which in many analogous substances has been insulated in the laboratory, such as  $\text{OK}(\overset{10}{\text{HO}})\text{KO} = 2(\text{KO}.5\text{HO})$  the crystalline hydrate of potass). We thus obtain—



But of such a molecule the axis is long compared with the equatorial diameter. We have, therefore, as in the case of Epsom salt, to suppose that these single elements of vitriol aggregate into the molecule proper to them, that is, into an aquaform molecule, consisting of 36 elements and occupying an ice volume. This, therefore, we regard as—



It is not to be inferred, however, that anhydrous sulphates, or even all hydrous sulphates, possess this structure. In that case six atoms of HO, at least, would be requisite in the common chemical formula for every atom of oxide. But some, as for instance Blue Vitriol, have only 5HO. In their structure the latter are true sulphurates (see p. 38). Their molecules being dodecatomic occupy half an ice volume.



Our theory presents the single atom of iron as the most powerful of all the organic elements, its power arising partly from its heteropolarity, partly from its length of axis. But that old names cannot be changed, our systematic name for it, TETROZOTE, therefore, would be as descriptive of its functioning as of its structure.

## CHAPTER XIII.

### ALUMINUM AND SILICON.

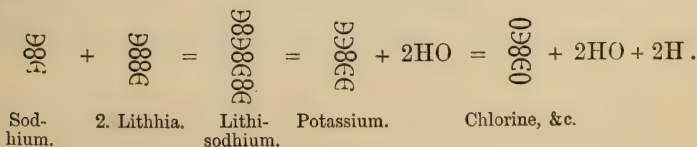
IN what has preceded we have found that the principal chemical elements—that is, those molecules whose structure is so stable that nature transforms them only secularly, or by operating on them during long epochs, and the chemist cannot as yet transform them at all—are generated by the mutual action of oxygen (Pl. I. fig. XIII.) and lithhium or zhote (Pl. II. fig. 1.), two isobaric elements consisting of the same material, namely, of 5 bitetrads, usually represented by us thus—

Oxygen,      ∞      .....      ∪      Lithhium or Zhote.

We thus obtained for the very first products of the primæval abyss as the quantity of oxygen was increasing, and was acting both in single and in coupled atoms—

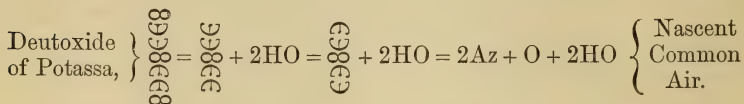
Suboxide of Lithhium }      ∪      .....      ∪      Oxide of Lithhium =  
 = Sodhium,      {      ∪      .....      ∪      {      2 atoms of Lithhia.

Now, these two being dissimilar, will tend to unite, as dissimilars ever tend to do, and that symmetrically. Moreover, in order to this, the latter will dedouble, one of its two members placing itself on each of the two poles of the former, so that the whole shall have one axis. This structure effected, the symmetrising of the axis in the atoms of lithhium will commence, that is, they will be reduced from lithhium to lithium, by the emission of an atom of hydrogen by each from its non-symmetrical five-fid pole. And this will take place first where there is an atom of oxygen to receive the atom of hydrogen just given out. Thus we shall have—



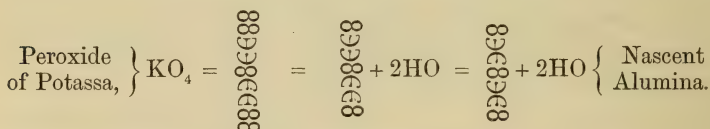


But if there be a limited supply of free oxygen, the reduction of the metallic element to the degraded form of chlorine may be prevented. Thus, let a single atom of oxygen be given to each of the poles of the atom of potassium. The transformation will then be, and will tend to give—



Thus, when oxygen is supplied in limited quantity to the abyssal alkaline matter, the transformation issues in the genesis of azote, with the liberation of oxygen gas in the free state, in the proportions of  $4\text{Az} + \text{O}$  along with moisture,—in a word, in the genesis of the atmosphere.

**Alumina.**—But when oxygen gas, or at any rate oxygen in coupled atoms, exists already in the abyss, so that there may be a coupled atom of oxygen on each pole of the atom of potassium, giving the peroxide  $\text{KO}_2$ , another result may be expected. In this case, after the symmetrising of all the elements of lithium in the structure, accompanied by the genesis of as many atoms of moisture, these lithiums, by placing themselves in symmetrical positions in relation to each other, may be able to prevent degradation, and to preserve the entire structure as an unity.



Now, on inspecting the last formula, it may be seen that it may also have a much simpler genesis. It may result from the simplest elements, provided they be old enough to have been secularly symmetrised, and placed in their ultimate positions in relation to each other. Thus, referring to the first substances noticed in this chapter (sodium and lithia), it is to be considered that the secular operation of nature upon them is not completed when, by the emission of hydrogen, they have been reduced to sodium and lithium; but under the secular operation of their specific heat, which ever tends to render all molecular structures as cellular as possible, the atoms of lithium in both must invert their positions in reference to the atoms of oxygen with which they are united, and instead of nestling parasitically in the concave poles of the oxygen, they must rather rest upon their edges, merely holding them fast by their five toes. Thus we obtain—



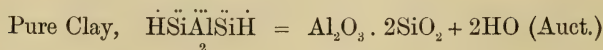
Now, the last form opening and applying its two halves to the poles of its neighbour as before, and for the same reason, there results the same structure as I have named, nascent alumina—nascent, because though a late product of nature compared with many other elements, it is obviously only an element in a nascent state; for its axis, especially if it carry on its poles the atoms of HO which have been given out by it, is so long, that there must exist under the law of sphericity a great force tending to shorten that axis. Now, this cannot be accomplished in reference to the atoms of oxygen which enter into the axis; for the axis of the atom of oxygen being zero is as short as possible already. But it may be effected in the case of the pair of coupled lithiums, which merely touch each other by their poles. By an inadequate compressing force, each may obviously penetrate the other, so that both shall have a common axis. By this the length of the axis of each will be reduced to one-half, and there will be given to nature a new metal (see Pl. II. fig. xvii. Al), nearly isomorphous with magnesium, and of the same order of form as the alkaline-earth and alkali metals generally, and therefore tenacious and ductile like them, yet with more solidity. But it must occur in nature as a sesquioxide, and possess an atomic weight, which, when the atom has lost none of its units during the ordeal of compression and the long previous existence to which it has been subjected, must be  $2 \times 35 = 70$ , *i.e.* 14 when  $H = 1$ . These characteristics mark our new metal as representing aluminum. Supposing this element during its genesis to have lost two out of the seventy of its units of weight (some such loss being indicated by its atomic weight as experimentally determined), and that, like silver and gold, and other metals which oxygen does not attack at ordinary temperatures (many of which have, in fact, aluminum poles), it consists of a dodecatom with an icosatom overlying, we obtain—

$$\text{Aluminum, } \frac{(\text{Al})^{12+20}}{\frac{1}{2}\text{AQ}} = \frac{32 \times 68}{\frac{1}{2} \times 1620} = 2.68. \text{ Exp. } 2.67.$$

It so rarely exists apart from silica, that crystals of pure alumina are rare (sapphire, ruby, &c.) Their specific gravity is found to be 4.08. Now, the simple dodecatom gives 3.82, and the differentiated dodecatom, 4.46—mean, 4.14.

The relation in nature between the two great mineral constituents, silica and alumina, is of the greatest interest. Alumina, which scarcely appears in ærolites at all, makes its first appearance on the crust of the earth as a differentiating element upon the poles of a dodecatom, the body of which is silica. But, ultimately, these two relative positions are reversed—alumina forms the body, and silica, &c., the poles! And, last of all, the body is no longer a dodecatom, but only a single atom of alumina, with one of silica on each pole. When, to this structure, an

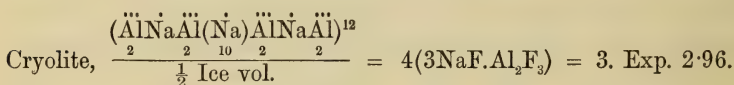
atom of moisture is fixed on each pole, the mineral world gives way, and is almost prepared for the reception of the vegetable world. Thus, to enable the eye still to mark the symmetry, and taking a dot for an atom of oxygen, we have—



By securing a terminal atom of aq on each pole, so as to give an opportunity of constructing the aqueous molecule instead of the icosatomic, this combination may, however, still claim a place in the mineral kingdom—

$$\text{Halloysite, } \frac{(\text{aq}\overset{\cdot\cdot}{\text{H}}\overset{\cdot\cdot}{\text{Si}}\overset{\cdot\cdot}{\text{Al}}\overset{\cdot\cdot}{\text{Si}}\overset{\cdot\cdot}{\text{H}}\text{aq})^{36}}{\text{Ice vol.}} = \frac{36 \times 740}{16 \times 1620} = 2.2. \text{ Exp. } 2.12.$$

And here an interesting field in rational mineralogy presents itself in studying the development of barytic aluminum associated with baric and barytic oxygen, giving in intermediate stages fluorine and sodium, as well as aluminum (chiolite, cryolite), and, ultimately, phosphate (wavellite). But such investigations we must pass over in this hurried sketch, remarking only that the very interesting mineral cryolite has for its molecule the fully differentiated dodecatom of the type  $\overset{10}{\text{XOXOXOX}}$ , in which baric oxygen or fluorine plays the part in reference to sodium and aluminum which is usually played by common oxygen. Adopting a larger dot to stand for fluorine, we thus obtain—



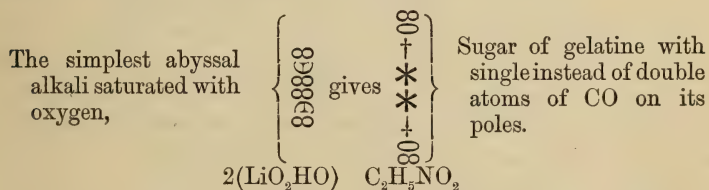
**Silica.**—We hasten to notice a product of the material system which, had we viewed it in reference to its abundance in our planet, would have been entitled to a much earlier consideration; but, as its position in the economy of nature appears to be rather that of an *unavoidable* substance, than one which goes directly to advance the great end of creation, I have reserved it for the last. I allude to silica, the material of sand, quartz, sandstone, and more or less of almost every rock. Moreover, while silica owes its existence to its being unavoidable, if molecular synthesis is to proceed according to law, it is, at the same time, so stable and so untransformable compared with most other elements, that it might also be regarded as *residuary* or *abortive*. The normal course of development may be thus conceived. There is given very early in the abyss the lithic alkali in coupled atoms (see p. 57), and this, when pro-



tected from the further attacks of oxygen, by carrying an atom of oxygen on each pole, gives—

1.  $\begin{array}{c} 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \end{array}$  Now, this by symmetrising the axes of the lithiums, by the emission of an atom of hydrogen from each, becomes,
2.  $\begin{array}{c} 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \end{array}$  which is hydrate of lithia =  $2(\text{LiO.HO})$ . Now this, omitting the moisture on the poles, *i.e.*,  $2\text{HO}$ , gives,
3.  $\begin{array}{c} 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \end{array}$  =  $\begin{array}{c} + \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ + \end{array}$  that is,  $2\text{HCO}$ , a couple of saccharines, the dodecatom being  $\text{C}_{12}\text{H}_{12}\text{O}_{12}$ , *i.e.*, sugar. The moisture gives—
4.  $\begin{array}{c} 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \\ 8 \end{array}$  =  $\begin{array}{c} * \\ * \\ * \\ * \\ * \end{array}$  =  $2\text{aq.}$  Now it has been shown (see p. 96) that  $2\text{aq}$  gives am + H, *i.e.*, an atom of ammonia + H.

Hence, using the two stars still to represent an atom of aquæform ammonia, we obtain, by synthesis, the equation—

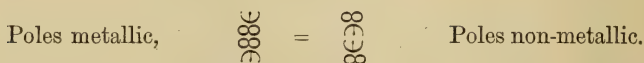


Thus does molecular action from the very first press on towards the construction of molecules which shall be fit for the purposes of animal life. The postponement of the study of organic chemistry till after the chemistry of all the constituents of the crust of the earth has been discussed, is quite an invention of the philosophical order of inquiry, is a profound mistake, and has, down to this day, prevented all insight into the grounds of the healing art. Matter, which is a geometrical deposit by life, aims at the recovery of life directly. From the very first there is no individualised combination, if it be the work of nature and not of art, which may not be justly regarded as organic.

But, during this ascent from the chaos of the seething abyss into the realm of individualised and regulated life, it is only to be expected that material elements, moving blindly under an inexorable law, which provides for perfection of form only, and takes no special account of the exigencies of sensibility, shall often step aside, and take short cuts towards that perfection of form, and thus may give rise to molecules, which, in consequence of their stability or deadness, may be useless for life, being

incapable of moving in obedience to the urgency of feeling, or the commands of volition.

As soon, for instance, as there is a medium or neighbourhood consisting of structures such as that marked No. 3 in the preceding page, we may expect the following equation—



The law of differentiation will tend to effect the inversion, as represented on the right hand, of half the number of molecules in the medium, in the act of which the two lithiums may be expected to clap together with such force as to lock into each other, or, if not at the moment of genesis, then afterwards under adequate pressure.

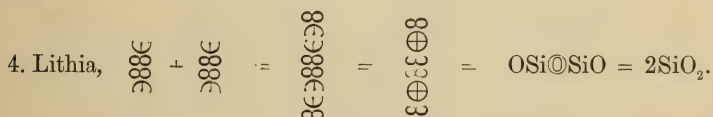
**Silicon.**—We thus obtain as a body, between two atoms of oxygen as its poles, an element of the most exquisite symmetry, its form a regular icosahedron (Pl. II. fig. XVIII. Si). It is non-metallic like azote (Pl. II. fig. IX. Az), and, indeed, it may be said to be an atom of azote pressed down into a solid sphere. Its atomic weight is, of course, the same, namely,  $2 \times 35 = 70$ , *i.e.*, 14 when H = 1. Viewed in itself it must be a most inactive element, for its form is already most perfect, but it occurs in nature in union with an atom of oxygen on each pole, and, therefore, if stript of its oxygen, it must tend, under the law of redintegration, to reunite with two atoms of oxygen, or something else which may represent oxygen. It therefore represents silicon.

**Silicium.**—And here we may remark in passing, that perfectly spherical though silicon be in form externally, yet it has contents; it is not cellular. There are still ten units of force in its centre. Neither is OSiO duly differentiated, being wholly non-metallic. According to our theory, therefore, these ten units of the centre will secularly seek the surface, and that in the equatorial region, so as to expand the equator, for the form of silica is prolate. And thus they will ultimately metallise that region (see Pl. II. fig. XIX.) This done, silicon may now bear the name of silicium, since, though it must be still brittle, it may have a metallic lustre. And thus it may be, as we have found so often, that where chemists differ, both are in the right—the silicious element being at first metalloidal, and afterwards metallic.

As to the molecular structure of silica, we may have a still greater variety than we hinted with regard to its analogue  $\text{OCO} = \text{CO}_2$ , for in  $\text{OSiO} = \text{SiO}_2$  the balance between oxygen and silicium (Pl. II. fig. XX.) is better, and the stability under a variety of arrangements will be greater, while, at the same time, by doubling and halving of volume, nearly the same relation may be maintained to the unity of specific

gravity ; and very dissimilarly constituted molecules may have the same specific gravity, and consequently, their experimental verification may be very difficult. As to the two normal molecules, composed of single atoms of silica,—namely, the isometrical and the differentiated dodecatoms,—neither of them can be the molecule of natural culmination, since each occupies only half a normal volume.

Here, then, let us remark, that while we have in the preceding genesis of silica obtained it in single atoms, the same material (lithia) must, when existing in a region where synthesis and unification prevail, give it in double atoms. And these double atoms, or chemical molecules, have a higher claim to morphological regard than single atoms, because they are of the sesquioxide type, that is, they are provided with oxygen not only on both poles, but on the equator also, and, therefore, are finely protected from the further attacks of this great corroder. Thus, taking two coupled atoms of lithia, and opening up one of them, and placing its two parts symmetrically and inversely on the poles of the other, and then applying pressure along the axis, we obtain the secular equation—

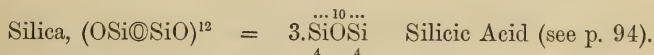


Now, taking dodecatoms, isometrical and differentiated, of this doubled silica, we obtain normal specific gravities—

$$\text{Quartz of fusion, } G = \frac{(\text{OSi}\textcircled{\text{O}}\text{SiO})^{12}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{12 \times 300}{1620} = 2.2. \text{ Exp. } 2.2.$$

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Crystallised} \\ \text{Quartz,} \end{array} \right\} G = \frac{(\text{OSi}\textcircled{\text{O}}\text{SiO})^{1+12+1}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{14 \times 300}{1620} = 2.59. \text{ Exp. } 2.5 \dots 2.8.$$

It is also worthy of remark that one molecule of this double-walled silica will secularly tend to expand into three of the true silicic acid—



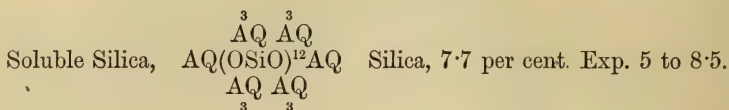
As to silicon itself, which the chemist has succeeded in obtaining in very small crystals, it appears to affect the differentiated dodecatom, &c.,

$$\text{Silicon Diamond, } \frac{\text{Si}^{12}\text{SiSi}}{\frac{1}{4}\text{AQ}} \text{ or } \frac{\text{Si}^{12}\text{Si}^{32}\text{Si}^{12}}{\text{AQ}} = 2.42. \text{ Exp. } 2.34 \dots 2.49.$$

There is still evidence in many forms of silica in the crust of the earth that it existed originally as a hydrate ; and Graham, that master



of the mint of nature, has lately succeeded in constructing and bringing to light some fine hydrates, and more especially one which in general structure may be compared with the element of salt water in the present ocean (see p. 70). Thus, substituting a dodecatom of silica for a molecule of common salt, we obtain—



And this, when neutralised by an atom of potass on each pole, implies 1.88 per cent. of the alkali, Graham having found 1.85. By careful boiling, the two differentiating particles of AQ may be driven off in vapour, while the central dodecatom of silica, along with another, takes their place. We thus obtain the next symmetrical hydrate in which the silica is 15.5 per cent., which corresponds to brine (p. 71). But, doubtless, the primæval siliceous water contained only a single or a double atom of silica as a nucleus, instead of a dodecatom, giving no more than 0.63 or 1.26 per cent. of silica.

Beautiful also is the structure of the alcogels and glycerogels which Graham has constructed, in which alcohol and glycerine in molecules take the place of water. Thus, a dodecatom of which the poles are  $(\text{OSiO})^{12}$ , and the body consists of ten molecules of alcohol  $(\text{C}_4\text{H}_6\text{O}_2)^{12}$ , instead of water, gives—

			Theory.	Exp.
Alcogel, {	Alcohol, $10(\text{C}_4\text{H}_6\text{O}_2)^{12}$	= 27600	88.5	88.13.
	Silica, $2(\text{OSiO})^{12}$	= 3600	11.5	11.64.*

The oxygen in silica being not only very dissimilar to the silicon, but also congenital and conformable, is of course very firmly held by it. But it is chased away when silica is heated in an atmosphere of chlorine, giving a liquid—

$$\text{Chloride of Silicon, G... } \frac{(\text{ClSiCl})^{12}}{2\text{AQ}} = 1.57. \text{ Exp. } 1.52.$$

Also fluorine, the baric isomorph of oxygen, drives off the latter with such force from silica, that if moisture be present the particles of silica are picked out of glass, &c., and every glass vessel is obscured, corroded, and eaten through; hence but little is known of this combination.

\* Since the MS. of this page was sent to the printer, the admirable Graham has died—an irreparable loss to molecular science. Faraday's main work was the correction of misconceptions; Graham was directly bent on the interpretation of nature.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### THE DEVELOPMENT OF ROCKS.

THE very short time during which any one man can live so as to observe nature has very naturally led people in general to believe that it is plants and animals only which develope and decay, or undergo normal periodic transformations. Rocks are popularly supposed to remain for ever the same, except in so far as they may be acted upon, and changed by forces applied to them from without, such as the weather from above, the waters around, or the volcano from beneath. Our theory finds no place for such a distinction. For the simultaneous weaving and unweaving of the beautiful web of molecular nature, the same aspiration after the spherical and the æriform, resisted by the same law of differentiation retaining matter in the concrete state, and in manifold forms, applies equally to all. The crystal, the gem, is no less a thing of beauty and of Providence than the plant or the animal. But with the great Creator a thousand years are as one day, and one day is as a thousand years. And in the actual creation greater changes in certain departments are accomplished in a single day than in certain other departments are accomplished in a thousand years. Still all, both the slowly and the rapidly changeful, are equally under the same laws, and equally held to absolute obedience to these laws. And just as a comparatively homogeneous embryo tends to be differentiated and to be developed into a variety of organs, so does a homogeneous rock tend to be differentiated and to be developed into a variety of minerals.

Let it not be inferred that while such growth and development is obviously possible in the yielding air, the region of plants and animals, it cannot be possible in the interior of a hard compact rock. Our theory relieves, let me not say Nature, but our own misconceptions of such a difficulty. Thus, in consequence of the fact that our elementary combinations give trigonal elements as their first forms, and after that pentagonal forms, from which, as we have seen, there result molecules,

in which the numbers 12 and 20 prevail, while the volumes of these same elements and molecules are regulated by a ratio of equality, or that dichotomy which belongs to it, viz., the ratio  $\frac{1}{4}$ ,  $\frac{1}{2}$ , 1, 2, 4, 8, 16, &c., it comes to pass, as molecular synthesis proceeds, that there is a play between material and volume, matter and space. That which, in point of material, may be represented by numbers such as 12 or 20, must be contained in a volume which possibly cannot be represented by either of these numbers, but perhaps by 4 or 8, or 16 or 32. Hence, accompanying atomic motions there must be many variations in density. And the progress of nature generally, in consequence of the secular action of atomic heat, must be from the more dense to the less dense, from the solid to the cellular. These principles we may illustrate in reference to felspar which, after quartz itself, is most abundant in the crust of the earth.

**Felspar.**—We have seen (see p. 137) that the single-walled or simplest molecule of silica is  $(\ddot{\text{Si}})^{12}$  or  $\ddot{\text{Si}}(\overset{12}{\ddot{\text{Si}}})\ddot{\text{Si}}$ , and, as the specific gravity of the double-walled molecule shows, this molecule must occupy half a normal volume. Now, these dodecatoms, whether isometric or differentiated, will no doubt tend to be associated in groups of 12. But it appears that such a group of 12 is not so bound together as to constitute an unity, such as a molecule of quartz. Were this the case, the specific gravity of quartz, instead of being 2.2 or 2.6, would be 3.3 or 3.9. But the next step in molecular synthesis ought to provide for their unification, or the investing of the groups with individuality. But this cannot be accomplished, taking them as they are. Were they, after having been unified, to retain their former volumes, the resultant volume being 12 half volumes, would be 6 normal volumes. But the number 6 is not volumetric. The nearest volumetric numbers are 4 on the one hand and 8 on the other. The matter, therefore, which when it consisted of 12 individualities occupied 6 volumes, must, when it becomes one individuality, adjust its particles so that it shall occupy either 4 or 8 volumes. Now, of these the latter in the order of natural development is to be expected, and the space being so much larger than the matter to fill it, the entrance of more matter into that space may be expected. Now, for such additions of matter to molecules, according to our theory, there is always room, except in extreme cases, by the further differentiation of the poles of the molecules. Let us, then, take our simple isometrical molecule  $(\ddot{\text{Si}})^{12}$ , and carrying back our thoughts to the epoch when silica, &c., existed as yet as a hydrogel or fully developed hydrate, or rather when the materials of silica, &c., existed as elements of lithium and oxygen, movable in relation to each other, let us differentiate the poles of  $(\ddot{\text{Si}})^{12}$  to the utmost degree possible by these two elements, and see what we obtain.





chemistry—the formula of felspar-potass is  $K^2O.Al^4O^3.6.SiO^2$ , which, restoring the true atomic weights of O and Si, is obviously the same as I have here described.

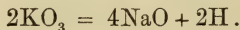
But this differentiated dodecatom is, according to our theory, only a single molecule, a member in a larger one, which constitutes that true individuality whose volume is in relation with the normal unit-volume of concrete matter, there being 12 of the former in one of the latter. We have also seen reason for believing that this latter shall occupy, not 12 half-volumes or 6 volumes, but 8—that is, half an ice volume. Let us, then, try for the specific gravity on this theory—

$$\text{Potass-felspar, } \left. \vphantom{\begin{matrix} \text{Potass-felspar,} \\ \text{ } \end{matrix}} \right\} G = \frac{(OAlOAlO.KO.(OSiO)^{12}.OK.OAlOAlO)^{12}}{\frac{1}{2}ICE} \left\{ \begin{matrix} = 2.59. \text{ Exp.} \\ 2.53...2.62. \end{matrix} \right.$$

But here the eye becomes already fatigued in attempting to catch the symmetry amid such a host of letters. Let us, then, abbreviate thus—

Instead of  $OSiO$ , or  $\ddot{Si}$ , let us write the familiar symbol  $\ddot{S}$ , which fills the eye and the purse, as silica does the strata. Instead of  $OAlOAlO$  or  $\ddot{Al}_2$ , let us write, as has been already proposed,  $\ddot{A}$ , the double-faced letter expanding the formula much less than the numeral 2. And instead of  $NaO$  or  $\dot{Na}$ , let us write  $\dot{N}$ , since  $N$ , considered as the symbol of nitrogen, loses all specific value, according to our views.

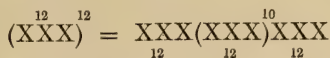
So much for potass-felspar. It follows from our theory, however, that an accession of oxygen in the region where this molecule exists will tend to induce a change upon it, for such accession would most probably develope a peroxide of potass. Now, a peroxide of potass, according to our theory, tends secularly to dedouble into protoxide of soda. Thus—



And hence, by a secular transformation, we may from a felspar-potass possibly obtain a soda-felspar, as also, in a reverse condition of existence, we may obtain a potass from a soda-felspar.

We may also, obviously, have both potass and soda in the same composite dodecatom, as, for instance, soda in the two polar molecules, and potass in the ten of the body; and even this we may attempt to represent with letters as symbols, so that the eye may catch the symmetry. To such an attempt I append also the chemical analysis of such a felspar. It shows both the accuracy in percentages which it is possible to attain by chemical analysis, and the necessity of attending to small quantities of subordinate constituents. They are often regarded as impurities, and are thrown aside. But in the light of our theory they present themselves as integrant parts of the molecule, and indicate interesting epochs in its history. In order to manifest the structure, it is necessary

here, however, to decompose the compound dodecatom into a body consisting of ten single dodecatoms, with two poles, consisting each of one dodecatom, according to the type—



Substituting soda  $\ddot{\text{Na}}$  for potassa  $\ddot{\text{K}}$  in the polar elements, we thus obtain—

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Soda-Potass} \\ \text{Felspar,} \end{array} \right\} G = \frac{\overset{\ddot{\text{Al}}}{\underset{2}{\text{Al}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{Na}}}{\underset{12}{\text{Na}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{Si}}}{\underset{12}{\text{Si}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{Na}}}{\underset{12}{\text{Na}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{Al}}}{\underset{2}{\text{Al}}}(\overset{\ddot{\text{Al}}}{\underset{2}{\text{Al}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{K}}}{\underset{12}{\text{K}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{Si}}}{\underset{12}{\text{Si}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{K}}}{\underset{2}{\text{K}}})\overset{\ddot{\text{Al}}}{\underset{2}{\text{Al}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{Na}}}{\underset{12}{\text{Na}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{Si}}}{\underset{12}{\text{Si}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{Na}}}{\underset{2}{\text{Na}}}\overset{\ddot{\text{Al}}}{\underset{2}{\text{Al}}}}{\frac{1}{2} \text{ Ice vol.}} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} = 2.55. \\ \text{Exp. 2.55.} \end{array} \right.$$

		Theory.		Abich.	From Baveno.
Felspar,	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 12 \times 12\text{SiO}_2 \\ 12 \times 2\text{Al}_2\text{O}_3 \\ 10 \times 2\text{KO} \\ 2 \times 2\text{NaO} \end{array} \right.$	21600	65.14	65.72	
		6240	18.82	18.57	
		4700	14.17	14.02	
		640	1.35	1.25	

(Miller's Mineral. p. 367.)

And here the necessity of some shorter and simpler symbols again appears. The eye is bewildered, and can scarcely catch the symmetry. Since, therefore, in the mineral kingdom atoms of aluminum always occur double, and both they, silicon, sodium, and potassium, always occur in union with the same quantity of oxygen, might we not use a single symbol for aluminum, and omit the marking of the oxygen altogether. This, with the omission of the small letter following the capital in the literal symbol, would give a great simplification; and in this the eye could take in and see the symmetry, viz.—



which is soda-potass felspar, as above, with the simpler symbols just proposed. But perhaps this is carrying it too far.

From what has been said, it appears that felspar is the readiest product of the complete differentiation of the two primal elements, oxygen and lithium, the supply of oxygen being supposed to be abundant. Viewed in reference to non-metallic, metalloidal, and metallic, felspar may be said to consist of fully differentiated molecules. Thus, supposing the siliceous base of the body to exist as silicon, the body  $(\text{OSiO})^{12}$  is equally metalloidal and non-metallic, while the poles, apart from their oxygen, are wholly metallic  $(\text{Al} + \text{K} + \text{Na})$ . It also consists of all the three usual oxides, protoxide  $(\text{KO}$  or  $\text{NaO})$ , deutoxide  $(\text{OSiO})$ , and sesquioxide  $(\text{OAlOAlO})$ . Therefore, nothing more can be done for it to impart to it greater stability in this respect, and to retain it as it is. But it cannot remain for ever as it is. It must tend to break up and to be developed into a great variety of other minerals, and so



to be the source and parent of a great many others. What these are it will form a pleasing inquiry of the future to discern, when chemists and mineralogists have returned to that belief which the history of philosophy gives as the catholic belief of the reflective mind, namely, that in the ground there must be but one kind of matter. At present, we only remark that when, as in the case of felspar, the differentiation of the poles of a molecule has been completed, and, consequently, a considerable departure from the spherical has resulted, then, under the unceasing operation of the law of sphericity, a new system of action must be set up. The poles must now become the foci of aggregation, and our ellipsoidal molecule must tend to part at the equator, and to dedouble into two spherical molecules. But such purely geometrical phenomena are very seldom realised in material nature. They are rather the limits or types of molecular action than the actual results of that action. And what we are usually to expect in reference to a molecule that is fully differentiated in every respect, or, since that is so highly composite as to embarrass us, let us say a molecule of felspar, is the individuation of the outstanding polar elements by the aid of material obtained from the solution or decomposition of the body of the molecule, differentiation being still kept up by the elements of that body taking up a position as differentials. Applying these views to the molecule of felspar, we obtain—

$$\text{Felspar, } \left\{ \begin{array}{c} \ddot{\text{A}}\ddot{\text{K}}(\text{\$})\ddot{\text{K}}\ddot{\text{A}} \\ \dot{\text{K}}\ddot{\text{A}}(\text{\$})\ddot{\text{A}}\ddot{\text{K}} \end{array} \right\} \div \ddot{\text{\$}}\ddot{\text{A}}\ddot{\text{\$}} + \ddot{\text{\$}}\ddot{\text{K}}\ddot{\text{\$}} + \ddot{\text{\$}} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Dry clay.} \\ \text{Soluble glass.} \\ \text{Sand.} \end{array} \right.$$

Now, of these products of decomposition the bisilicate of potash can only be a transitional substance, for the potass must be. Thus, just as  $\text{K}_2\text{O} = 2\text{CaO}$ , so  $\text{K}_2\text{O}_5 = \text{Al}_2\text{O}_3 + 3\text{HO}$  (see chap. VI.) Instead, therefore, of  $\ddot{\text{\$}}\ddot{\text{K}}\ddot{\text{\$}} + \ddot{\text{\$}}$  for ever, there will ultimately be  $\ddot{\text{\$}}\ddot{\text{A}}\ddot{\text{\$}} + \ddot{\text{\$}} + 3\text{aq}$ . The soluble glass stuff will secularly be transformed into moist clay and sand. The disintegration of the rock will be accomplished. The sphericity of the planet will not be interfered with for ever by the peak and the precipice, and mineral nature will be prepared for a vegetable kingdom.

**Mica.**—But yet, such a crisis considered as universal must be indefinitely postponed. As soon as by the transformation of felspar 12 atoms of bisilicate of alumina  $\ddot{\text{\$}}\ddot{\text{A}}\ddot{\text{\$}}$  shall have been constructed, they may form into a dodecatom. And if to this isometrical body bisilicate of potass be applied as a differential, especially if accompanied by the three atoms of aq, which are proper to it, we may expect that both the potassic silicate and the entire molecular structure will be eminently

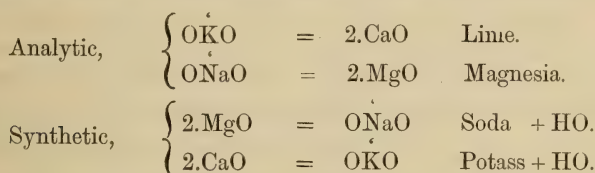
stable. Now, although in the present epoch, differentiation in the mass has commonly gone much further than this, yet some micas have been analysed whose composition agrees with our construction. Thus,



		Theory.		Kussin.	
White Mica,	26SiO <sub>2</sub>	3900	47.4	48.1	
	12Al <sub>2</sub> O <sub>3</sub>	3120	37.9	38.4	
	4KO	940	11.4	10.1	
	6HO	270	3.3	3.4	

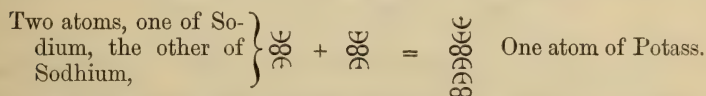
from Zsidovacz  
in Hungary.

**Hornblende.**—Our theory of the alkali-metals implies that while as yet they retain all the matter proper to their genesis, and are consequently symmetrical on each side of the equator, as also each half symmetrical in reference to its own centre, molecular action, when existing in an analytic phase, tends to give the first couple of the following equations, and when in a synthetic phase, the second couple—



Between the alkali and the alkaline earth metals, therefore, we are to expect many alternations and substitutions in nature.

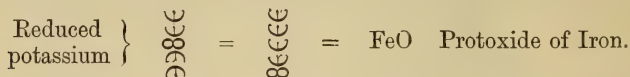
Where, on the other hand, the reduction of elements has been going on, where  $\Psi$  has been undergoing reduction to  $\frac{1}{2}$ , another result is to be expected; for in this case so much hydrogen will be developed that it will tend to rob its neighbourhood of oxygen, lapsing along with it into aq, unless the oxygen be so engaged as to be protected from its attacks. In such regions of reduction, therefore, we are not to look for such combinations as OKO or ONaO. The metals may be stript, even, of all their oxygen and reduced to nakedness, as K and Na. But



Instead of naked sodium, therefore, in nature, we may have potass.

And when this oxide is striped of its exposed atom of oxygen what shall we have? At this epoch we may safely infer that the atoms of  $\Psi$  implicated have been reduced to atoms of  $\frac{1}{2}$ , and to find what we shall have, we need only to look at the structure of the atom of potassium.

This done, we obtain, as the ultimate product of the secular transformation both of potassa and soda, of magnesia and lime, the equation—

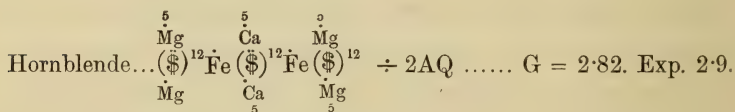


And generally during the development of moisture, by the reduction of  $\Psi$  to  $\Upsilon$  when in union with abundant O.



After felspar, therefore, of which the characteristic is the presence of the alkalis, soda and potass along with silica, we are to look for abundant rock in which these alkalis appear now in the form of magnesia, lime, and iron-oxide. And such precisely is hornblende, which, after silica and felspar, is perhaps the most abundant rock-constituent of the crust of the earth.

The molecule of hornblende seems to consist of a central dodecatom of silica encrusted with *lime* all over its body, but carrying a dodecatom of silica, on each pole, its body encrusted with *magnesia*, these three dodecatoms being rusted into one combination by two atoms of iron-oxide run in between. Such a structure cannot be represented on a plane, like that of the page. But by dividing the 10Mg and the 10Ca into 5 + 5, so as to maintain symmetry, perhaps some conception may be given thus—



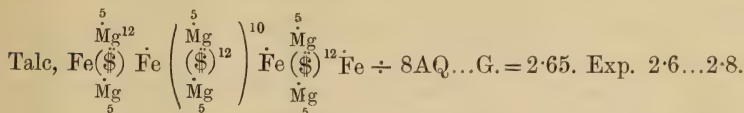
		Theory.	Bonsdorff.	From Taberg.
Analysis,	36SiO <sub>2</sub>	5400	59.0	
	20MgO	2000	21.8	
	10CaO	1400	15.3	
	2FeO	360	3.9	

According to this view hornblende is not made up into such good molecules as felspar is. It will, therefore, be a more restless mineral, and more powerfully genetic of others. The structure of repose gives us as limiting specific gravities, 2.12 and 4.23—mean, 3.17.

**Talc.**—When segregation takes place, or the lime in the molecule is otherwise substituted by the prevailing magnesium, and two more atoms of iron-oxide are added, so as to form ferrous poles also for

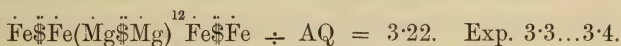


the polar dodecatoms, a compound dodecatom becomes possible, and we appear to obtain the interesting mineral—



			Theory.	Lychnell.
Analysis,	144SiO <sub>2</sub>	21600	62.9	63.1
	120MgO	12000	34.9	34.3
	4FeO	720	2.9	2.3

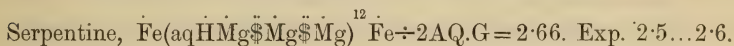
**Olivine.**—But of all finely individualised minerals of these constituents olivine presents itself as the simplest, the element for constructing the body of the molecule being now the symmetrical combination,  $\overset{\cdot}{\text{Mg}}\text{\$}\overset{\cdot}{\text{Mg}}$ .



Olivine,	14SiO <sub>2</sub>	2100	40.2	40.1	} from Somma.
	24MgO	2400	45.9	44.2	
	4FeO	720	13.8	15.2	

This, therefore, is just such a mineral as we may reasonably expect in such hastily constructed minerals as aerolites.

**Serpentine.**—In the preceding pages we have often seen the superiority of the sesquicombination (consisting of the same element in the equator and in each pole), over that which has only similar poles, while the equator is wholly dissimilar. If, then, the characteristic constituent of talc be  $\overset{\cdot}{\text{Mg}}\text{\$}\overset{\cdot}{\text{Mg}}$ , we may expect some other more stable mineral and rock, whose characteristic constituent shall be  $\overset{\cdot}{\text{Mg}}\text{\$}\overset{\cdot}{\text{Mg}}\text{\$}\overset{\cdot}{\text{Mg}}$ . Now, when of this sesquicombination we form a dodecatom, and encase it in moisture, and differentiate it by an atom of iron-oxide on both poles, it looks as if we had obtained—



		Theory.	Kerstin.	
36MgO	3600	41.7	41.5	} From Swartzenberg.
24SiO <sub>2</sub>	3600	41.7	40.3	
24HO	1080	12.6	12.9	
2FeO	360	4.2	4.1	

Thus does it become possible by the aid of our molecular morphology to construct a mineralogy, which may stand by the side of botany and zoology, all the three being viewed in reference to their histology and

development or genesis as species. As to external form, in reference to any of the three, little can be done at present either as deduction or verification. The same principles of morphology apply to all. And in all, the problem "to find the form of the individual," is far too complicated to admit of solution in the existing epoch of science. All do, indeed, according to our philosophy, aim at that form which is most perfect. All aim, each in its own behalf, at the construction of a contour which, on its confines with the ambient, shall be spherical, or be defined, as we may say, by a regular polyhedron, which has an indefinitely great number of facets, leaves, scales, or epithelia. But even in the mineral kingdom in which, from the homogeneous structure of the interior, the external forms are far more simple than they are in plants and animals, the polyhedra constructed have only a finite number of sides, and are comparatively seldom regular or monometric. The specific shapes of the constituent molecules determine specific resultants of force of unequal power in corresponding directions, and these so counteract and interfere with the law of symmetry and sphericity in its general bearings, that crystallography both is now, and must remain for the present a merely descriptive science. It is, however, no longer without a scientific directrix, since our theory shows that all crystals ought to be studied in reference to the circumscribing sphere as the general type.

As to plants and animals, their highly differentiated internal structure, the cosmical forces of the sunbeam on the one hand, and of gravitation on the other, and, more than all, the specific assimilative power of the embryo, ever insisting on the parental form as the development proceeds, cause such departures from a spherical contour that, generally speaking, it is only previous to development that this form is obvious, at least, in those species which do not enjoy the repose of a life in which their gravitation is balanced in the waters and in which the entire individual attains a considerable size.

Moreover, as to the assimilative power of the embryo, though it may be due merely to the normal operation of the physical forces of the constitutive molecules, as in the case of crystals, yet if anything in science is certain it is this, that these physical forces themselves have been so regulated at first that they may construct forms which shall subserve the interests of sensibility and intelligence. If anything is certain it is this, that intelligence and feeling presided when the physical forces were appointed to be as they are, and to act as they do. To doubt or to deny this is to renounce, not merely all philosophy and all theology, but humanity itself, in all that is most worthy of the name.

## CHAPTER XV.

### THE DEVELOPMENT OF METALS.

IN what has preceded I have attempted to follow one of the leading lines of what, according to our theory, is the normal course of molecular synthesis. And it will not be denied that the molecular structures which have presented themselves to us as we have proceeded, agree so far as they have been compared with those of nature and the laboratory in their atomic weights and their specific gravities, in their chemical and physical properties generally, in their juxtapositions, and in the quantities to be expected of them. The comparison has not, indeed, been carried into many details, because a book which can only have a few purchasers by an author whose means are limited, ought to be a small one. And, besides, the evidence in favour of a hypothesis grows far faster by showing its all-embracing power, than by showing how completely it can explain in detail the phenomena of a few objects selected by its author. Details any student can easily compare for himself. But a through-going sketch being possible only after the leisure of a lifetime devoted to the comparison, could not be done by every one. Of such a sketch it is also (and, at any rate) desirable to preserve some trace. For the present day the author, grown wise in this respect by experience, contemplates little more than the placing of a copy in some public libraries, where they will be found when their time comes.

I have said that *one* of the principal lines of molecular synthesis has been followed. Now, it must ever be remembered that the whole action of nature, even in one particular sphere, as, for instance, that of molecular synthesis, is never in a single line. Rather that action is radiant, step after step, and that along secondary lines as well as the primary; and hence the hopelessness of a truly natural classification in any branch whatever of natural history; for scientific thought is wholly incapable of radiation; its very characteristic is to hold on in one connected line, and to refuse to respect even a dichotomy otherwise than as a distraction.

Such a method, therefore, as has been pursued in these pages, implies a number of subordinate lines of molecular synthesis rising out of the principal line on all hands and at every step, and these giving molecules of what I have called common density, as well as still more, molecules of light, baric, and barytic densities which have hitherto been scarcely touched upon.

This, in the future, in other hands.

Meantime, I propose here to add a few notes of some metals which have obtruded themselves in my way, and which, though of little importance in the economy of nature perhaps, are yet interesting in a scientific or a social point of view.

We have seen what a rich variety of molecular changes tend secularly to result from the fact that the same materials, namely, five bitetrads, may, according as the mode of action in the region calls for negative or for positive forms, constitute either an atom of oxygen or an atom of sulphur. Still richer is the variety that results from the fact, that the same materials when barytic (that is, when each unit is a condensed tetrad), constitute in analogous conditions either an atom of barytic oxygen (tetroxygen), or an atom of Tellur. (The tellurium of chemistry is to us  $\overset{4}{\text{Te}}$ , the tetratom isomorphous with  $\overset{4}{\text{S}}$ , *i.e.*, sulphur.)

Under the laws of development and sphericity we thus obtain the secular equations,—

$$\overset{5}{\text{H}} = \begin{array}{ccc} \text{Barytic.} & \text{Singled.} & \text{Spherified.} \\ \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Oxygen.....}\overset{\circ}{\text{O}} \\ \text{Sulph.....Te} \end{array} \right. = \left\{ \begin{array}{l} 4\text{O} \\ 4\text{S} \end{array} \right\} = \text{Zinc} = \overset{20}{\text{H}} \text{ (see Pl. I. fig. v.)} \end{array}$$

The first element, barytic or abyssal oxygen, or tetroxygen is, of course, unknown to the chemist; for even fluorine, its isomorph, though much less parasitic and powerful, nay, ozone, or rather common oxygen in single atoms, are scarcely known. But by its secular unfolding into four atoms of common oxygen, barytic oxygen proves invaluable among abyssal elements to the economy of nature. The sulphic form of the same number of barytic bitetrads when in tetratoms, is known as tellurium. In its spherified form as  $\overset{20}{\text{H}}$ , it must constitute a fine though heavy metal, isomorphous with zinc. But, no doubt, since it is isometric, its poles will be generally differentiated by some comparatively light metal of the same order. When unfolded it gives four atoms of zinc, just as an atom of sulphur when spherified gives one atom. Of this an illustration has already been given (see p. 42) in the secular equation—



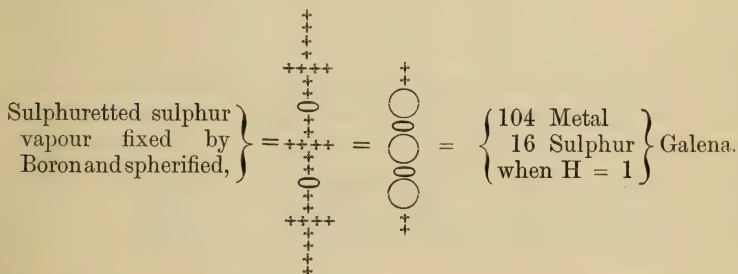
Here, then, we have an instance of one of the modes by which the metalloidal is secularly transformed into the metallic, namely, by a



simple improvement of the symmetry of the form, a movement into the spherical. A still more important mode, however, is the inversion of the tetrads of which the molecular form consists, so that the summits of the tetrads, from being centrad, become peripherad, and the whole surface is hung high by particles of the medium of light itself. But this I need not now enlarge upon, having published the whole theory of Metallicity in 1856, and subsequently in 1860 and 1868.\*

As to the instance given here, the student may reasonably ask, If zinc may thus be produced in so many ways, why is there not more of this metal in nature than we find? To this the answer is, that sulphur vapour in raking up along the fissures and porous beds of rocks cannot be expected generally to remain pure and homogeneous. It will, on the contrary, be generally differentiated. And here we may remark that the number of the differentiating elements determined by the law of symmetry will be either two or four.

**Lead.**—Supposing the differentiating element to be the simplest possible of those forms, which, when placed between atoms of zinc, could act as an undecomposable coupling-joint, that is, boron ; then, admitting one atom of this element between the three atoms of sulphur, that is, two atoms in all, and supposing not only the two extreme atoms of sulphur, as in zinc-blende, but also the central atom, to be secularly spherified, while one sulphic atom is retained on each pole to differentiate the resulting metal, and to engage the residuary sulphic matter, we obtain—

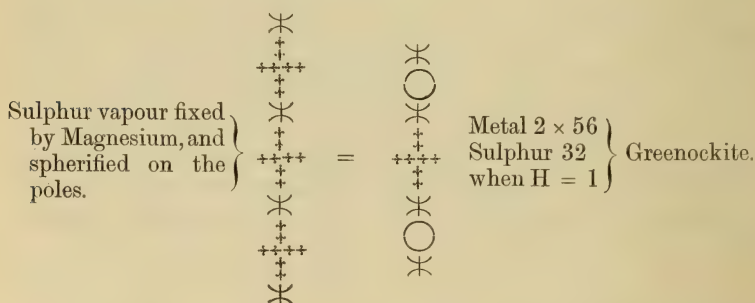


Instead of zinc, then, where boron in single atoms can be had to solder three atoms of zinc during their genesis undecomposably together, we shall have another metal, its atomic weight  $(3 \times 32) + (2 \times 4) = 104$  (or possibly less by 2), that of lead being commonly estimated at 103.5.

\* See "Elements of the Economy of Nature" (a fragment). Second edition. London, Chapman and Hall, 1856. Chap. VI., On the Lustre of Molecules. Also in "The First Lines of Science Simplified, and the Structure of Molecules Attempted." Edinburgh, Sutherland & Knox, 1860. See also "A Sketch of a Philosophy," Part II., Molecular Morphology, Williams and Norgate. Chap. IV., "The Nonmetallic and the Metallic, and their Mutual Relations."

Along with zinc-sulphuride, or blende, therefore, in veins and beds, we may look for abundant lead-sulphide, or galena (see p. 43).

**Indium. Cadmium. Tin.**—As has been stated, the differentiation of the element of sulphur-vapour may be effected by 4 as well as by 2 atoms of some other light element, that is, 2 on the poles as well as 2 in the axis. This will render each polar atom of sulphur symmetrically differentiated, and, therefore, separable from the sulphur as a new element when the differentiating matter cannot be torn off in the laboratory. Further, such solidarity we may expect when the differentiating matter is an atom of a light metal, for such a metal may be locked into, or welded on the poles of the atom of zinc. Now, for such a situation and such a result three light metals immediately present themselves, namely, mineral or aerial lithium, magnesium, and aluminum, then, after a long interval, calcium and sodium. Taking the middle metal as an illustration, we obtain the secular equation—



The three metals just named give three whose structures are of the type fig. xxx. Pl. II. and their full atomic weights—

	H = 5	H = 1	
LiZnLi .....	40 + 160 + 40 = 240 .....	48	Indium.
MgZnMg .....	60 + 160 + 60 = 280 .....	56	Cadmium.
AlZnAl .....	70 + 160 + 70 = 300 .....	60	Tin.

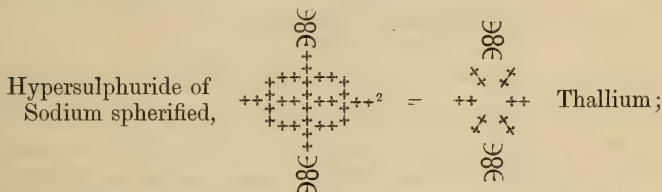
The last-named metal, however, appears usually to have quite another genesis. In short, its dioxide appears to be a corundum in which the medial atom in the alumina is barytic oxygen instead of common oxygen. The secular expansion of this combination will thus be represented by—



and here, plainly, we are in the neighbourhood of many heavy but imperfect and obscure metals.

Let us then return to sulphur and its products when spherified.

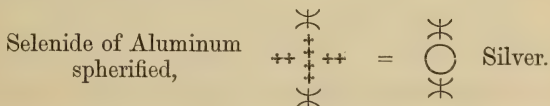
**Thallium.**—When the metals which fix themselves on the poles of the atom of sulphur are heavy and powerful, we may then expect as the equatorial part of the structure, and consequently as the body of the metal secularly resulting, more than a single atom of sulphur. And, if so, how many? Now to this it is to be answered, that 5 atoms of sulphur, that is, a couple applied symmetrically to each other as an axis, and three on the three equatorial arms of this axial couple, form a very symmetrical group. They also admit beautifully of being formed into a spherical icosahedral group of  $\overset{20}{S}$  analogous to  $\overset{20}{Hf}$ . They are, therefore, suitable for forming the body of a metallic element, provided some comparatively powerful metallic atoms be locked upon the poles. Taking sodium for this purpose, we obtain as a secular equation—



for the atomic weight of the composite metal is  $115 + (5 \times 160) + 115 = 1030$ ; that is, 206 when  $H = 1$ .

All these metals are given to nature according to our theory and the genesis which has been here given of them, by the secular transformation of sulphur or of tellurium, or of barytic oxygen, which are the secular equivalents of each other. Now, selenium and baric oxygen, or fluorine (which are not secular equivalents of the preceding), must also under the same transformations give their metals. And here we are to expect a higher lustre, because selenium is made up wholly of hydrogen, and hydrogen has the highest refractive and reflective power of all elements.

**Silver.**—A simple selenide of aluminum, when the selenium is spherified into an icosatom of baric hydrogen for a body, and the aluminums are locked on the poles, gives—

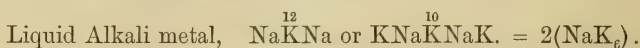


The atomic weight is  $70 + 400 + 70 = 540$ ; that is, 108 when  $H = 1$ .

And here our theory suggests at least another metal whose polar parts shall be magnesium instead of aluminum, and which shall differ from silver as cadmium does from tin. Its atomic weight must be the same as that of lead, but it must be more valuable in the arts than such lead as has been noticed two pages back.

There may also, possibly, be a metal with lithic poles, and therefore analogous to sodium, whose atomic weight will be  $40 + 400 + 40 = 480$ ; that is, 96 when  $H = 1$ . Indeed there must be many metals here. But when it is considered that simply by that secular change by which the 5-fid poles of such metals are gathered up into atoms of hydrogen or of boron, with a loss of only 2 or of 8 from their atomic weights on the hydrogen scale, their character as metals is completely changed, so that from being ductile and malleable they become brittle and refractory, it will be seen that this field is too extensive, and verification is too difficult for us to touch upon them at present.

**Mercury.**—This metal, which continues in the molten state at the still existing temperature of our planet, resembles very perfectly in this feature and in its general appearance, an alloy of potassium and sodium, which constitutes a differentiated dodecatom, namely,



But this alloy is very light, while mercury is very heavy. Moreover, we have seen that the sodium-form tends to double its poles so as to become a potassium-form, as also that the synthesis of elements of lithium on the same axis does not go beyond the number in the potassium-form. Now, then, let us assume a wholly baric potassium. As to its atomic weight, just as unreduced common potassium consists of 5 joints, each of which weighs 40, so baric potassium must consist of 5, each of which weighs 100. The atomic weight of a baric potassium, therefore, must be 500; that is, 100 when  $H = 1$ . Such a metal, therefore, agrees in atomic weight with mercury, and the functioning of mercury in many respects has been observed by the chemist to be analogous to that of an alkali metal. May not mercury, then, be baric potassium? But here, under the law of secular development and sphericity, a very remarkable and a very beautiful phenomenon presents itself. The medial atom here, that is, baric oxygen (fluorine), when secularly expanded and spherified, is resolved into  $\overset{20}{\text{H}}$ , an exquisite metallic icosatom (see Pl. I. fig. v.) Further, the 4 baric lithiums which constitute the polar regions of the baric potassium, are composed precisely of  $4 \times 5 = 20$  atoms of selenic or baric hydrogen. Moreover, under the sustained operations of the law of sphericity, they must secularly tend individually towards the equatorial region. Now, in that region there is already an exquisite metallic nucleus, viz.,  $\overset{20}{\text{H}}$ , with precisely 20 outstanding points to receive them. They will, therefore, secularly settle upon them. And thus may we expect, as a product of the secular transformation of an atom of baric potassium, an exquisite spherical metallic element, double walled, the inner wall and nucleus consisting



of hydrogen in the dense state, the outer wall of a coating of the element which, according to our views, gives silver its brilliancy, the atomic weight of this new metal being that of mercury.

Mercury, then, according to this theory of its genesis, comes out when viewed historically as a dimorphous metal. Further, it may be shown, that in the molecule of the sulphuride (which is its usual mode of occurrence), one of the atoms of mercury must have spherified, while the other still retains the alkali form. Thus, mercury in both forms may coexist in the same epoch of our planet. But being so dissimilar, if both meet they will unite and cohere perhaps powerfully. Now, if so, mercury in such cases will seem to have an atomic weight of 200, and manifold chemical powers and complications will result, as is known to be the case in the laboratory. But on this subject we cannot enter; let us rather bring these remarks to a close by a word on—

**Gold.**—If we descend as low as possible, what we must find, according to our theory, is barytic matter, the tetradic tetrads and bitetrads grouped in the manner which satisfies most completely the ideas of sphericity and density. The group of tetrads which is at once most dense and most spherical is, as we have seen, a group of 20, a summit of each in a common centre; thus constituting an icosahedron (see Pl. II. fig. XVIII.) Taking now three such icosatomic forms of barytic matter, all on the same axis, as the smallest number which fulfils the law of symmetry by having an equator and two poles, let us fill up the spaces between them also with barytic matter. It will be found that for this purpose ten baric tetrads are required between each icosatom, as also that these ten just constitute an atom of barytic oxygen or tetroxygen. And now we have a barytic sesquicombination, possessing a normal molecular individuality. As to form, it is a short cylinder with rounded ends, consisting of the heaviest matter—its surface determined by 60 equal triangular facets, 5 of them terminating each pole.

Let us now follow its normal development. In due time, by the secular operation of the atomic heat in the centres of each of the five constituents of this cylindrical form, the centres of the three icosahedral particles will be emptied of matter. The three groups of 20 tetradic units there will be projected upon the surface; whence the icosahedrons will now have become metallic, and isamorphous with  $\overset{20}{\text{H}}$  (Pl. I. fig. v.), as in other similar cases. Meanwhile, each of the two barytic oxygens or tetroxygens may have been unfolding into 4 atoms of common oxygen. This for the first epoch. As to the further differentiation and development of such a combination it may be long postponed.

But during the next epoch the metallic icosahedrons being isometrical, must tend to become differentiated in form. Now this they will do

by the gathering together of the five tetradic units in two opposite 5-fid regions into atoms of boron, in the same way as we have seen  $H^{20}$  become  $HSiH$  (see Pl. II. fig. XXI.)

And then, during the succeeding epoch, the metallic icosatom thus differentiated, and which is precisely barytic silicium, may unfold into four atoms of common silicium.

Thus, from one symmetrical morsel of matter in the most dense state we obtain the elements—oxygen, boron, and silicium.

Now, we have seen that boron tends to form into a sesquioxide (see p. 55), which is undistinguishable from silica, while silicium also tends to lay hold of oxygen and become silica.

The main product, then, of the secular expansion and development of our most deep and dense matter will be silica.

But in order that such transformation may be complete, the original matter does not supply a sufficient quantity of oxygen. We are, therefore, to expect other substances less highly oxygenated than silica, perhaps even metals in the reguline state.

And more especially if two atoms of boron, of which, as we have seen, there must be an abundant supply, place themselves between three of the still surviving barytic metallic icosahedrons, there will, according to these views, result a metal, the structure of whose atom is the same as that of lead (see p. 151), but which must be much more stable and perfect every way than lead, since each of the 5 parts of which it consists has attained to a cellular state. What may it be! Its atomic weight, when none of its constituents have been lost during the development, must, when the borons are of the heavier sort, be  $320 + 20 + 320 + 20 + 320 = 1000$ , and when the borons are of the lighter sort,  $320 + 15 + 320 + 15 + 320 = 990$ ; that is, 200 and 198 when  $H=1$ . Now, Berzelius fixed the atomic weight of gold at 198.25; and if subsequent experimenters have found it to be somewhat lighter, this is only what is to be expected of a substance which, when complete, consists of a thousand elements, each of which is capable of being driven off, and of being engaged elsewhere, or by itself. If this be gold, then (which determines to such an extent the aspirations and the actions of men), viewed as in the quartz, &c.—in which, as has been shown, it is usually to be expected to occur—its nuggets may be compared to tubercles in an imperfectly organised lung which the labours of the digger bring into a state of active disease. Let it be confessed, then, that the author, though he be a believer in transmutation, is not an orthodox alchemist.

He would rather relieve his own mind and that of the reader from further details of this kind by recurring, in a few words, to the ground that has been gone over, and thus complete the sheet for the printer.

In the preceding pages the author, postulating material elements of one kind only—not sixty or seventy different kinds, as in the popular chemistry, and a single law of molecular action—not an undefined number of such laws as is usually done, has been guided by the manipulation of these duplicate units by that single law, to the construction of an unavoidable or truly synthetic and perfectly definite molecular system.

Whether that system thus necessitated by method should represent the material system or nature remained to be seen; for it was and is a pure construction developing itself from within itself on its own principles. Yet let it not be said that, being such, it sets at defiance the only method which is tolerated in science ever since the days of Bacon. In its details it was indeed effected purely by a process of *synthesis a priori*. But the conceptions, both of the material element itself and of the law of synthesis, claim to be ultimate generalisations from observation, or obtained empirically in the first instance. If the author has preferred to rest them upon a basis of reason rather than on the external senses, this was done only because, in order to mental satisfaction in any pursuit, reason must be satisfied, and because it is certain that observation by the senses, when rightly interpreted, is always in harmony with the demands of reason. Let it be confessed also, that the author, during all the successive movements of the construction, had facts and phenomena in his eye, and generally avoided investigations which could not be verified in this way. Subsequently to the time—now nearly forty years ago—when he commenced his synthesis, many verifications have been obtained which did not then exist, especially of late, when the unfitness of the common eyesight for analytical purposes has been remedied to such a considerable extent by the use of the prism. If the various elements, which have of late been ascertained in this way as existing in connection with the sun and stars, be compared with our elements, they will be found to be precisely those which our theory would lead us to expect in such situations.

How long it may be before men of science will think it worth their while to master the details given in this and the two preceding Parts remains to be seen. The author, when he considers how difficult he has found it, and still finds it himself, to believe that such insight into nature as his views imply is possible to be attained, is not so unreasonable as to expect that others will soon regard them even as probable, much less as proved. Meantime, he is content with the private enjoyment which these views impart to himself, especially as that enjoyment is not merely the gratification of a chemical curiosity, but attaches to a much larger field of thought. No doubt he desires that others should share that enjoyment immediately. But, plainly, he cannot do more than render it ultimately possible.



One of the points to which he now refers as possessing great value to his own mind, is the place which his investigation assigns to material nature in the universe of being. It is much the fashion in the present day to regard matter and force, more shortly matter, as all in all. But, according to the view of things which has presented itself to the author and is here advocated, matter comes out rather as a precipitate in the universal æther determined by a mathematical necessity, a grand and beautiful cloud-work in the realm of light, bounded on both sides by a world of spirits; on the upper and anterior side by the great Creator himself and the hierarchy of spirits to which He awarded immediate existence, and on the lower and posterior side by that world of spirits of which the material economy is itself the mother and nurse. The hypothesis that there are no beings in the universe but those which possess a molecular structure, and that sensibility and intelligence take their first beginnings in such structures, nay, attach to one kind only of such structures—a kind which there is no ground for believing to be capable of construction or of existence anywhere in the whole universe, except in this comparatively insignificant planet, is one of the most inadequate conceptions that was ever proposed for scientific belief.

Another result of his researches, which the author contemplates with much satisfaction, is the evidence which they supply for the thought that existence has been awarded to the finite for the sake of multiplying enjoyment and intelligence. So long as One only existed, one only could know and enjoy. But by awarding existence to a creation, all but an infinite number may. Nor is it any argument against this view that the partitionment of being has been carried so far that the *minima naturæ* are too attenuated to be capable of knowing and feeling, that is, of mirroring the universe in themselves, and of enjoying the spectacle. Granting our cosmical law (that the creation shall assimilate in its properties as far as possible to the Creator in his attributes, that is, manifest Him) this result has been shown to be inevitable (see Part I. Chap. VII.) Besides, who can tell how much these minima contribute to knowledge and enjoyment, constituting as they do the elements of the medium of light?

But this view will be opposed on its very mention by the remark, that throughout all nature the dead transcends the living immensely in quantity. If nature, it will be said, be really the work of an ever-living One, to whom life and happiness cannot but be primary objects of regard, what we should expect is this, that the first objects of creation should manifest life, and that life should be paramount; instead of which, is it not obvious that the quantity of the dead is immense compared with that of the living? So it will be said. But is not evidence appearing year after year which calls more and more



loudly every day for a correction of such a view? Who could have believed, who would have dreamt, even a year or two ago, that the lowest and darkest depths of the ocean which can be reached are teeming, and, in fact, carpeted with living creatures wherever the temperature does not forbid, just as the sunlit meadows and hill sides are with plants and flowers, and the multitudinous tribes of animated beings that feed upon them? And do not all the most recent microscopic researches go to show that the atmosphere in like manner is full of life, and, in a word, that in every region there is nothing so difficult as to prevent the apparition of living creatures wherever there is a medium that is capable of maintaining animal life. Nay, what expression so familiar or so high in favour with men of science at this moment as "the struggle for life." That expression has indeed been so shaped as to associate the idea of suffering and evil with life, instead of enjoyment and good. But still it witnesses unequivocally to the fact that life tends on all hands to press beyond the limits of its possible existence. And that it should continue to do so age after age can only be explained on the supposition that there is at least more good than evil, more enjoyment than suffering, in it.

But why, it will be said, if our view be sound, why should there be anything that is dead in the universe at all? To this the answer is, that there is nothing dead except within the material sphere. And there, if deadness is determined to a certain extent, it is so by conditions which to all appearance even Omnipotence cannot overpass. The *Divine Intelligence*, when bearing upon such objects as the material elements, or, in other words, *Applied Mathematics*, determines, that only a few of the many molecules which must result can possess such quickness, such internal mobility and polymorphism as are required in structures which are to be the instruments of sensibility and intelligence. Of these molecules, by far the greater number must be far too stable or immobile for any such purpose. Deadness in material nature is therefore unavoidable. But to the very extent that molecular structures are dead or stable, they are suitable for forming a stage on which life may play. Not without a valuable use therefore to the living, and therefore not without a sanction in reference to a fully animated creation, is that which is stable or dead, while, at the same time, so far as can be seen, it is unavoidable in a purely mechanical system.

In a word, this theory of the material system as a theatre for life is justified if it appear that those molecular structures which are first given to nature where molecular synthesis is going on in the most perfect manner, are also the most animated and mobile, and suitable for constructing the bodies of sentient creatures, while those which are stable and dead, but unavoidable, are of later date, and as it were

incidental, and when they appear are turned to account for the benefit of the living. Now this is precisely what we have found (though at the date of the finding I was not in possession of the view of nature which I am now insisting upon). We have found that when material elements existed free in the celestial spaces, each invested with its full complement of ætherial atmosphere, that is, in circumstances most favourable for a most perfect synthesis into the most perfect molecules, they had been so framed at first as to give to nature first of all hydrogen, followed by common and then by ammoniacal vapour, and thereafter by carbon and phosphorus—in a word, those very elements which most properly receive the name of organic. Nay, further, we found that the very first phenomena of the condensation of vapour, the primal weaving of the clouds of the first morning in the sky, was a prelude in structure and a preparation for organic tissue (see p. 95).

It was afterwards, in the abyss, where the material elements existed under greatest pressure, most closely packed together, and with the æther proper to each most nearly extruded from them, that we found that the mineral elements were being formed—those elements which, comparatively speaking, may be regarded as dead.

Great violence, then, is done to the order of nature and to the cause of true science when the attention of the student is principally directed to the mineral elements, and organic chemistry is thrown into the position of an appendix.

It is for the sake of life that everything exists in nature, and so it ought to be in science.

### *Postscript.*

Better diagrams of hydrocarbons, &c., than those given in Chaps. VIII. and IX. may be constructed by a still nicer manipulation of existing types.

AN ELEMENT OF				
Flesh.	Inosic Acid.	Uric Acid.	Urea.	Bicarbonate of Ammonia.
$  \begin{array}{c}  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O}  \end{array}  $	$  \begin{array}{c}  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O}  \end{array}  $	$  \begin{array}{c}  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O}  \end{array}  $	$  \begin{array}{c}  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O}  \end{array}  $	$  \begin{array}{c}  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O} \\  \vdots \\  \text{O}  \end{array}  $
$\text{C}_8\text{H}_6\text{NO}_3$ (See p. 99.)	$\text{C}_5\text{H}_3\text{NO}_5$ (Monobasic.)	$\text{C}_5\text{HN}_2\text{O}_2$ (Monobasic.)	$\text{C}_2\text{H}_4\text{N}_2\text{O}_2$ (See p. 101.)	$\text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{NO}_6$ (See p. 96.)

# INDEX.

*The Roman numerals iii. ii. i. refer to Parts Third, Second, and First.  
The common numerals to the pages in these Parts respectively.*

- Abstraction, i. 98.  
 Acetene, iii. 87.  
 Acetic acid, iii. 82, 86.  
     principle, iii. 85.  
 Acetyle, iii. 87.  
 Acids, vegetable, iii. 98, 94.  
 Aether, ii. xii. 4 ; i. 120.  
     organic in brain, i. 139.  
 Air, atmospherical, iii. 115.  
     in water, iii. 116.  
 Albumine, iii. 102.  
 Alcohols, iii. 81.  
 Aldehyde, iii. 83.  
 Alkalis, iii. 46.  
 Alkaline earths, iii. 48.  
 Alkaloids, iii. 80.  
 Alumina, ii. 72 ; iii. 132, 134.  
 Aluminum, iii. 131.  
 Ammonia, iii. 58.  
     aquæform, iii. 96.  
     carbonate, iii. 62, 160.  
     primæval, iii. 95.  
     ter-hydrated, iii. 96, 98.  
 Ammoniac, sal, iii. 63.  
 Ammonias, laboratory, iii. 88.  
 Anhydrite, ii. 95.  
 Animal kingdom, i. 148.  
     heat and cold, iii. 24.  
     tissue, iii. 99.  
 Antimony, iii. 185 ; ii. 90.  
 Antinomies of reason, i. 45.  
 Antizote, iii. 60, 118.  
 Aq transformable into HO, iii. 18.  
 Aqueous vapour, iii. 17 ; ii. 19.  
 Arsenic, iii. 105 ; ii. 71, 90.  
 Assimilation, law of, i. 65.  
 Atmosphere, structure of, iii. 115.  
 Atom, what, iii. 4 ; ii. 9 ; i. 128.  
 Atomic heat, ii. 14.  
 Atomic weights, ii. 39 ; iii. 10.  
 Attention, i. 94.  
 Attenuation and diffusion, law of, i. 66.  
 Azote, iii. 116.  
 Barium, iii. 46 ; ii. 90.  
 Barytes, iii. 39.  
 Beryllium, ii. 51.  
 Bile, iii. 79 ; i. 149.  
 Bismuth, iii. 105.  
 Bizote, iii. 118.  
 Blende, iii. 43.  
 Bone earth, iii. 112.  
 Boron, iii. 103 ; ii. 49, 68, 85.  
 Borax, iii. 105.  
 Boric acid, iii. 104.  
 Brine, iii. 70.  
 Bromine, iii. 66 ; ii. 65.  
 Buddhism, i. 4.  
 Cadmium, iii. 152 ; ii. 83, 90.  
 Cæsium, iii. 52 ; ii. 83, 90.  
 Calcium, iii. 48 ; ii. 83, 90.  
 Calcite, iii. 94.  
 Camphor, iii. 78.  
 Carbon, iii. 72.  
 Carbonic acid, iii. 92.  
 Celestine, iii. 39.  
 Cellulose, iii. 102.  
 Chitine, iii. 101.  
 CHO (saccharine), its three forms, ii. 21  
     73 ; iii. 82.  
 Chloral, iii. 83.  
 Chlorine, iii. 63 ; ii. 65, 90.  
 Chlorhydric acid, iii. 65.  
 Chloroform, iii. 83.  
 Cholesterine, iii. 80.  
 Classification, i. 99.  
 Clay, iii. 134.  
 Cloud, iii. 25.  
     the serene, iii. 25

- Cloud, the rain, iii. 25.  
 Comets, ii. 36.  
 Common lime, its value, i. 58.  
 Conservation of energy, i. 2.  
 Copper, iii. 124.  
 Cosmical law, i. 65.  
 Creation, theory of, i. 63.  
     its original state, i. 117.  
 Culinary salt, iii. 70.  
 Cryolite, iii. 134.  
 Cyanogen, iii. 75.  
  
 Development, theory of, i. 111.  
     of metals, iii. 149.  
 Dialectic, i. 104.  
 Diamond, iii. 74 ; ii. 67.  
 Discovery, i. 109.  
 Divine attributes, i. 60.  
 Dodecahedron, iii. 8 ; ii. 59.  
 Dyslysine, iii. 79.  
  
 Earths, the alkaline, iii. 47.  
 Earth's crust, ii. 86 ; i. 145.  
 Elements, classification of, ii. 90.  
     enumeration of principal, iii. 3.  
 Elasticity, ii. 12.  
 Electro-magnetism of molecules, ii. 26.  
 Epsom salt, iii. 50.  
 Essential oils, iii. 79.  
 Ethers, iii. 89.  
  
 Felspar, iii. 140.  
 Flesh, iii. 160.  
 Fluorine, iii. 27 ; ii. 90.  
 Fluor-spar, iii. 27.  
 Formic acid, iii. 90.  
  
 Galena, iii. 43, 151.  
 Gem metals, ii. 51.  
 Generalisation, i. 100.  
 Geology, ii. 86 ; i. 144.  
 Gold, iii. 155 ; ii. 83, 90.  
 Gravitation, ii. 11 ; i. 131.  
 Green vitriol, iii. 129.  
 Gypsum, iii. 41.  
  
 Halogens, iii. 63.  
 Heat, ii. 14.  
     capacity for, ii. 19.  
 Hepatic system, i. 149.  
 Honeystone, iii. 89.  
 Hornblende, iii. 145.  
 Humus, iii. 85.  
 Hydro-carbon, iii. 75.  
 Hydrochloric acid, iii. 65.  
 Hydrogen, iii. 14 ; ii. 18, 46, 60, 87.  
     the tetratom, iii. 15.  
     the hexatom, iii. 16.  
 Hydrosulphuric acid, iii. 34.  
 Hylagen, ii. 47 ; iii. 14.  
  
 Ice molecule, iii. 26.  
 Icosahedron, iii. 8 ; ii. 59.  
 Idea, i. 85.  
  
 Ideals, i. 101.  
 Imagining, i. 108.  
 Indication of the author's theory, ii. 1.  
 Individuation, law of, i. 65.  
 Inductive judgment, i. 98.  
 Indium, iii. 152.  
 Inertia, ii. 9.  
 Inosic acid, iii. 160.  
 Iron, iii. 122 ; ii. 90.  
  
 Kyanite, ii. 72.  
  
 Lead, iii. 151 ; ii. 53, 83, 90.  
 Leibnitz, i. 2.  
 Lithium, iii. 56.  
     aeriform, ii. 53, 80.  
 Lime, iii. 48.  
  
 Magnesia, iii. 48.  
 Malic acid, iii. 90.  
 Marsh gas, iii. 73 ; ii. 23, 65, 81.  
 Material world, i. 128.  
 Matter, iii. 5 ; ii. xiv. of *Introd.* ; i. 131.  
     why volatile, ii. 30.  
 Mechanical dynamism, i. 1.  
 Memory, i. 97.  
 Mercury, iii. 154 ; ii. 67, 83.  
 Metals, iii. 149.  
     classification of, ii. 83.  
 Metallic and non-metallic, why, ii. 76.  
 Methylic spirit, iii. 87.  
 Molecular action, its course and consum-  
     mation, ii. 31.  
     morphology, iii. 1 ; ii. *passim*.  
 Molecules, iii. 6.  
 Molybdenum, ii. 83, 90.  
 Mythology, i. 92.  
 Myo-neuro-cerebral system, i. 151.  
  
 Nature, i. 144.  
 Naphthaline, iii. 123.  
 Nebulæ, ii. 36.  
 Nickel, iii. 123.  
 Nitric acid, &c., iii. 119 ; ii. 64, 69.  
  
 Obligation, its nature, i. 77.  
 Oil of vitriol, iii. 40.  
 Olefiant gas, iii. 75.  
 Olivine, iii. 147.  
 Oxygen, iii. 19, 31 ; ii. 22, 30, 47.  
     gas, iii. 19.  
 Oxides, metallic, ii. 53.  
 Ozone, ii. 48, 92.  
  
 Passage from the material to the spi-  
     ritual, i. 139 ; ii. xv. of *Introd.*  
 Parsimony, law of, i. 82.  
 Perception, i. 86.  
 Pearl, iii. 64.  
 Phosphorus, iii. 110 ; ii. 71, 90.  
     chlorides of, ii. 70.  
 Potassium, iii. 52 ; ii. 80.  
 Primal elements, iii. 6.  
 Proteine, ii. 99.



- Rock oil, iii. 76.  
     salt, iii. 65.  
 Rubidium, iii. 52 ; ii. 83, 90.  
 Rhythm, ii. 12 ; i. 42.  
 Retention, i. 97.  
 Ruby, ii. 72.  
 Rock crystal, ii. 72.  
 Rain drop, iii. 25.  
 Reasoning, i. 106.  
 Relation of the material to the ætherial,  
     iii. 4 ; i. 128.  
 Saccharine element, iii. 90, 101.  
 Salt, iii. 65.  
 Sapphire, ii. 72.  
 Scholium of the Principia of Newton,  
     i. 62.  
 Scientific method, i. 15.  
 Selenium, iii. 43.  
 Self-manifesting power, i. 30.  
 Sensibility, i. 30.  
 Sea-water, iii. 66.  
 Seeming conflicts in nature, ii. xviii. of  
     Introd.  
 Silica, iii. 134.  
 Silicia, ii. 57.  
 Silicic acid, iii. 94.  
 Silver, iii. 153 ; ii. 83, 90.  
 Sodium, iii. 52.  
 Specific gravities deduced, iii. 27 ; ii. 63,  
     64, &c.  
 Spencer, Herbert, his views, i. 9.  
 Spirit, i. 71.  
 Sponge, shell, and bone acids, iii. 94.  
 Steam, iii. 17.  
 Substance, one finite, i. 70.  
 Sugar, iii. 98 ; ii. 72.  
 Sulphic acid, iii. 37.  
 Sulphur, iii. 31.  
 Sulphurate, iii. 38.  
 Sulphuric acid, iii. 39.  
 Sulphurous acid, iii. 34.  
 Syllogism, i. 100.  
 Tartar, iii. 91.  
 Tartaric acid, iii. 91.  
 Tellurium, iii. 43 ; ii. 90.  
 Terminology, ii. 75.  
 Tetrad, iii. 6.  
 Thallium, iii. 153.  
 Tin, iii. 152.  
 Tissue, genesis of, iii. 97.  
     transformation of, iii. 100.  
 Tungsten, ii. 90.  
 Types of metals, ii. 83.  
 Unit of atomic weight, ii. 9.  
 Unification, law of, i. 65.  
 Ultimate elements, iii. 6.  
 Urea, iii. 101.  
 Uric acid, iii. 160.  
 Vanadium, iii. 107.  
 Vegetable kingdom, i. 147.  
 Water, iii. 23 ; ii. 61.  
     fixed, iii. 22.  
     flowing, iii. 23.  
 Will, i. 35.  
 Zinc, iii. 43, 150.  
 Zote, iii. 46 ; ii. 95.

## EXPLANATION OF THE PLATES.

PLATE I.—If the material universe be taken as consisting of separate elements of physical force, matter, or units of weight, all of them being similar to each other, then, these elements or units, on being subjected to a law of synthesis, on the principle of order or symmetry (which is found both mathematically and experimentally to be that of statical equilibrium among equal and similar forces) give as their earliest constructions such molecules as are here (very imperfectly) represented (the white points indicating the centres of the elemental forces, the white lines between them the ultimate resultants in these directions of their reciprocally attractive and repulsive energies, and the black region around these nuclei the nearest portions of their aetherial atmospheres or dynamospheres).

There is first given the tetrad, fig. i. (see J. Boscovich, *Theoria*, Phil. Nat. p. ii. § 239). This tetrad forthwith improves its condition as a mobile or separable element, either (1) by doubling into the bitetrad (or hylagen), fig. ii.; or (2), by taking another unit of weight into union along with itself, as in fig. iii. (hydrogen). And by the aggregation of one or other of these two, or of both together, in numbers determined by their own forms (atomicity) and by the law of symmetry, elements representing all those which are treated of in chemistry may be constructed.

One of fig. iii. has five points suitable for the attachment of some other element. When to each of these five one of fig. ii. is attached, and the resulting combination has settled into its form of greatest symmetry, there results fig. xi. Its weight is  $H + 5H = 5 + 5 \times 8 = 5 + 40 \div 1 + 8 = 9$ . Now this is the weight of an unit volume of common vapour when an unit volume of H is unity! Its form is also hexagonal, and thus it explains the most characteristic natural phenomena of the aqueous element. But it is dimorphous; and hence it explains the characteristic and very varied chemical phenomena of moisture. Thus, when called upon to enter into union with an element of the pentagonal series of forms, such as figs. iv. or v. (to which, being itself hexagonal, it is unconformable), it can assume the form of fig. xii. Now fig. xii. answers completely to the chemical conception of HO, and may possibly be insulable as its double  $H \odot H$  (for this is symmetrical), that is, in ordinary chemical symbols, as  $H_2O$ , in which the unit volume of O is 16 when that of H = 1. Moreover, each of these two forms of the aqueous element tends to develop the other, giving often in nature a combination of both, the resultant lines of which are given in fig. xv. Pl. II., introducing organic molecules.

But five doubled tetrads (fig. ii.) may unite symmetrically not only by their facets, thus generating oxygen, but by their edges also, thus generating sulph (fig. xvii), and its tetratom sulphur, &c. (figs. xviii., &c.), also ultimately some metals (fig. v.)

PLATE II.—Bitetrads, in sets of five, may also unite otherwise than poles to equators, by their facets or by their edges, as described. They may unite so that a homologous edge in each may be a common axis of the combination, fig. i. (lithium). But this structure is dissymmetrical both in its axis and in its outward form. It is therefore unisulable by itself. But the polar regions of the atom of oxygen are perfect moulds for it, or coupling joints for two or four. Hence of this dissymmetrical element, one or more, may be insulated along with oxygen, and separated as undecomposable suboxides, single or double, figs. ii. and iii. (sodium, potassium).

In consequence of its double dissymmetry, however, it must be secularly subject to a twofold reduction, emitting one, and ultimately two, atoms of hydrogen, and losing weight proportional. In the first instance it establishes symmetry of axis, but retains its external (semi-metallic) form, fig. i.; its atomic weight 7 when H = 1 (lithium). In the second instance it recovers external symmetry also, but with loss of the 5-fid or metallic pole, fig. xvii., its atomic weight now reduced to 6 when H = 1 (carbon). But both the unreduced and the fully reduced may be combined, as in fig. xi. (chlorine).

The three last figures in this plate, when compared with the three in the middle at the top, may be taken to illustrate the difference between the true organic products of vital action, commonly so considered, and those which are merely chemical. In merely chemical products carbon-and-hydrogen-forms are only united by their poles (see figs. xii., xiii., xxiv.). In truly organic products they are united by their equators (see nascent cellulose, indigo, &c.).

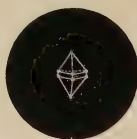
## ELEMENTAL.

## THE PRIMAL ELEMENTS.

I.


 The Tetrad,  $\Delta$ 

II.


 The Bitetrad,  $\text{H}\ddagger$ 

## THE ULTIMATE ELEMENTS.

IV.


 Boron,  $\text{B}$ ,  $\circ$   
(monatomic).

III.


 Hydrogen,  $\text{H}$ ,  $\ddagger$ 

## THE MOLECULES.

 VI.  $\text{B}^{12}$  or  $\text{C}^{12}$ 

 The Dodecatom  
(metalloidal).

 V.  $\text{H}^{20}$  or  $\text{H}^{20}$ 

 The Icosatom  
(metallic).

 THE CORRESPONDING GEOMETRICAL  
POLYHEDRONS.

VIII.



The Dodecahedron.

VII.



The Icosahedron.

## AQUEOUS.

 IX.  $\text{H}^4$  or  $\ddagger\ddagger$  or  $\ddagger\ddagger$ 


Tetratom of Hydrogen.

X.



Hexatom of Hydrogen.

XIII.


 Oxygen,  $\infty$ 

XI.


 Moisture,  $\ast$ ,  $\text{aq}$ 

XIV.


 Oxygen Gas,  $\infty$ 

XII.


 Oxhyric Acid,  
Hydroxic Alkali,  $\} \ddagger$ 

XVI.

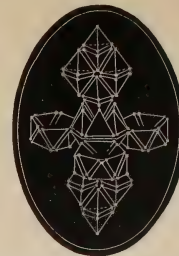

 A Particle of Water,  $\text{AQ}$  or  $\text{aq}^{36}$ 

## SULPHUROUS.

XVII.


 Sulph.  $\text{S}$  or  $\ddagger$ 

XX.


 Sulphic Acid or  
Oil of Vitriol,  $\} \text{SaqS}$  or  $\infty \ast \infty^2$ 

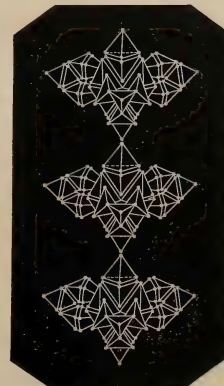
XVIII.


 Sulphur,  $\text{S}^4$  or  $\text{S}$ .

XIX.


 Sulphuretted Hydrogen,  $\text{H S}^4\text{H}$ 

XXI.










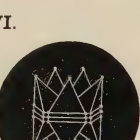

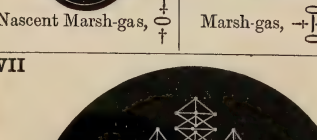
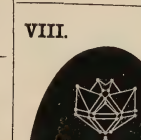
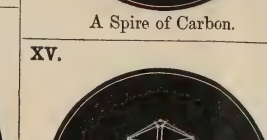


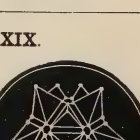




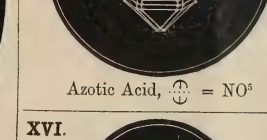

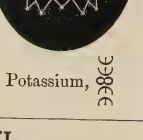
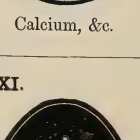
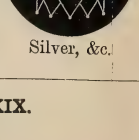





 Sulphur Vapour,  $\text{S}^4\text{S}^4\text{S}^4$ 

XXII.


 Zinc Blende,  $\text{Zn S}^4\text{Zn}$





<p>I.</p>  <p>Lithium or Zote, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>IV.</p>  <p>Beryllium, <math>\omega</math></p>	<p>V.</p>  <p>Biberyllium, <math>\omega</math></p>	<p>XII.</p>  <p>Nascent Marsh-gas, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XIII.</p>  <p>Marsh-gas, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XXIV.</p>  <p>Hydrocarbon, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XIV.</p>  <p>A Spire of Carbon.</p>	<p>XV. Pl. I.</p>  <p><math>\text{OH}_2\text{HO} = 3\text{HO}</math>.</p>
<p>II.</p>  <p>Sodium, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>VI.</p>  <p>Magnesium, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XVII.</p>  <p>Aluminum, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>VII.</p>  <p><math>5\text{H}^6 + \text{H}</math> in the centre = <math>\text{H}^3</math></p>		<p>VIII.</p>  <p>Ammonia (hydrozotic).</p>	<p>XV.</p>  <p>Azotic Acid, <math>\psi = \text{NO}^5</math></p>	<p>Nascent</p> 
<p>III.</p>  <p>Potassium, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XXIX.</p>  <p>Calcium, &amp;c.</p>	<p>XXX.</p>  <p>Silver, &amp;c.</p>	<p>XXIII.</p>  <p>Carbonic Acid, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>IX.</p>  <p>Azote, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>X.</p>  <p>Ammonia (aquaform).</p>	<p>XVI.</p>  <p>Bizotic Acid, <math>\psi = 2\text{NO}^5\text{HO}</math></p>	<p>Cellulose.</p> 
<p>XI.</p>  <p>Chlorine, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XXI.</p>  <p>Hydride of Silicon, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XIX.</p>  <p>Silicon, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XX.</p>  <p>Silicic Acid, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XVIII.</p>  <p>Silicon, <math>\psi</math></p>	<p>XXII.</p>  <p>Carbon, <math>\psi</math></p>		<p>Nascent Indigo.</p> 



A SKETCH  
OF A  
PHILOSOPHY.

*\*Ἀριστα ὦ Τίμαιε.*

PLATON in Tim.

PART I.  
MIND:  
ITS  
POWERS AND CAPACITIES,  
AND ITS  
RELATION TO MATTER.  
PRICE 6s.

---

PART II.  
MATTER  
AND  
MOLECULAR MORPHOLOGY:  
THE ELEMENTAL SYNTHESIS.  
ILLUSTRATED BY 75 DIAGRAMS OF MOLECULES IN THE TEXT.  
PRICE 3s. 6d.

---

PART III.  
THE CHEMISTRY  
OF  
NATURAL SUBSTANCES.  
ILLUSTRATED BY TWO FOLDING PLATES, AND 150 FIGURATE DIAGRAMS OF  
MOLECULES IN THE TEXT.  
PRICE 7s.

---

*(All three sold separately.)*







1.



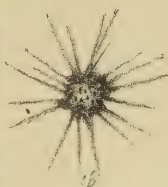
3.



5.



4.



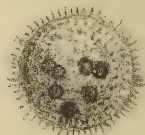
15.



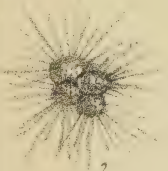
7.



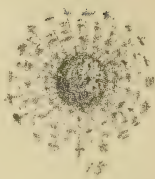
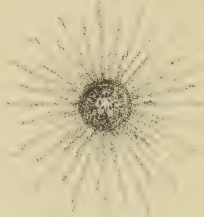
8.



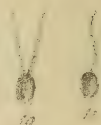
9.



2.



13.



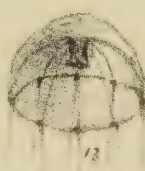
10.



11.



12.



14.



6.



17.



18.



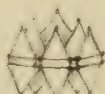
16.



19.



20.



21.



22.



23.

A SKETCH  
OF A  
PHILOSOPHY  
PART IV.  
BIOLOGY AND THEODICY  
A PRELUDE TO  
THE BIOLOGY OF THE FUTURE.

ILLUSTRATED BY A PLATE AND DIAGRAMS IN THE TEXT.

BY  
JOHN G. MACVICAR, M.A., LL.D., D.D.



WILLIAMS & NORGATE:  
14 HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON, AND  
20 SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.

1874.





## PREFACE.

---

IN this concluding Part of "A Sketch of a Philosophy" (and in the preceding Parts no less), the views commonly held on the same subjects have scarcely ever been placed in contrast with those which are here advanced, or the evidence in favour of either balanced. Our philosophy has been presented to the reader mainly as a cycle of thought, arising out of an unity, given by consciousness as a reality, which developes into variety, and which as it flows is met in its course by Nature verifying it on all hands in actual phenomena. With these phenomena the reader is supposed to be well acquainted, so as to be able on his own suggestion to connect together our deduction or development with the corresponding phenomenon as a verification. For the author to have gone on verifying as he proceeded would have required many volumes, and such an interruption of investigation as would have made it impossible to accomplish what he believes that he has accomplished.

If it be asked what this is, the answer is, that the student of science by admitting three fundamental ideas—(1.) An Infinite and Perfect Being the fountain of all; (2.) finite Being, His creation, and as it were His shadow, given by His breath in space and time; and (3.) the Law of ASSIMILATION, the cosmical law, the sole law of nature, whether matter or spirit—the student in science—may save himself the time and trouble of acquiring a vast number of technicalities and formulæ, and much besides that commonly goes by the name of science, and proceed at once to explain in a manner satisfactory to himself, if he be free from bias due to antecedent training, the most part of what he reads about or observes around him—provided his observation or narrative be accurate, and in any measure proportional in quantity to the whole of what he proposes to explain.

And here the possibility of much saving and success may perhaps be made to appear probable even in a few words, by stating in immediate contrast the general features of the science of the day, so manifold and often so conflicting, with the few principles which are insisted on in this and in the three preceding Parts.

I. Instead of postulating many kinds of natural substances essentially different from each other, such as spirit, and æther, and matter of some sixty-three different kinds, each kind with its own essential properties, our philosophy postulates only one kind of finite substance, and that with no intrinsic properties at all, but finitude as to quantity, and self-manifesting power, that is, existence, using the term philologically.

II. Instead of attempting to explain the phenomena of the intellectual, the moral, and the material universe, on the supposition that the original ground of all is dead matter and force, or force alone so mechanically constituted, that its mode of action may be defined in a mathematical formula—a basis for investigation by which the highest and most important phenomena of all, those of intelligence namely, can be even recognised surreptitiously only, and can be accounted for in no degree, and are therefore naturally thrown into the background and disparaged, while yet they are plainly the most obtrusive of all phenomena, and indeed constitute that realm in which all philosophy and science, and in which alone any philosophy and science can be pursued—we open our lines in this very field of intelligence in which we find ourselves at first, and in the light of which we are inexorably required to view all things from first to last; and invoking from the depths of our own consciousness the affirmation of intelligence in perfection somewhere else than in ourselves, we posit as the first word and principle of our philosophy, a Perfect an Infinite Being, possessing without limitation or defect those attributes which our intellectual and moral nature mirrors in an imperfect degree. Thus finding that at the fountain-head all is life and reason, we escape the hopeless inquiry which is now agitated with such conflicting evidence and argument, as to where and how the living begins to appear among the dead, and why nature manifests reason everywhere.

III. Instead of a continually increasing crowd of so-called laws of nature, rational or empirical, it follows from what has been stated that but one law is to be expected for the whole universe; and this we maintain. For how could the finite substance of creation be actuated

otherwise than so as to embody and to body forth the will, that is, the activity of the being and attributes of the Creator, so far as the finite can embody and manifest the Infinite. The finite, considering that it lives and moves and has its being in the Infinite, which is Infinite Power, surely cannot but assimilate itself as far as possible to the Infinite, and manifest in itself His being and attributes. The mere substance of creation, viewed as apart from the Creator, must be wholly amorphous, so to speak, and passive—wholly plastic and assimilative. Hence the law and economy of the cosmos must be ASSIMILATION both subjective and objective.

Let it not be thought that if such be the only law both for spirit and body and all things, there must have resulted in creation universal sameness, long before the present epoch, if not from the very first. No; by assimilation to the Creative Will, *spirit* comes to be possessed of a measure of individualised power and liberty, which maintains variety and difference in the spiritual sphere; and *body*, having to exist in space and time, that is, in positions and moments presenting essential and endless differences, there results, along with a discoverable tendency to similarity everywhere, such a variety as nature actually displays, and the universe is, as we find it to be, a cosmos or harmony.

Of this cosmical law—the law of assimilation—some of the most immediate results are these:—

(a.) In virtue of the omnipresence and imminence everywhere along with unity everywhere of the Infinite, there result *in the finite mind* the two grand processes of distribution or analysis and association or synthesis by which all logical thought is at once developed and regulated (and that of course by the law of assimilation); and *in the finite substance generally* there arise the properties of divisibility and confluence.

(b.) In virtue of the spirit-nature of the Infinite, the first-born of creation is a world of spirits. And this world, for the reason assigned in the last paragraph, is a hierarchy, which, being first constituted in fulness of attribute, afterwards, under diffusive or analytic agency, descends, expands, and (being finite) attenuates, until, simulating omnipresence, it vanishes into the universal æther or realm of light, thus providing for its inhabitants a congenial dwelling-place and home.

(c.) But why, it may be asked, are not the elements of the finite substance, which is essentially spiritual, after having been attenuated into the ætherial, not confluent into monads possessing mental powers

again as fast as they are reduced to minima, so that an abode having been once provided in the realm of light for the world of spirits, the whole creation may consist of sentient beings only, and the sustained voice of the universe be universal enjoyment? To this the answer is, that in virtue of the self-assimilative, and therefore self-conservative, power of the ætherial elements, synthesis or aggregation can only take place by juxtaposition and not by confluence, until the nebular speck resulting has attained a certain bigness and pressure towards its centre. And when this bigness has been reached, and confluence in the centre does take place, the monad resulting is still too feeble to have recovered mental powers, and can only manifest such mechanical powers that, taken along with its generating atmosphere of æther, this new order of being, this new unity, constitutes the material element.

(*d.*) But though the immediate and direct birth of spirits out of æther or the matter of light in which the spirit-world dwells, be thus prevented by the genesis of matter instead, yet the restoration to the spirit-world of all the substance beyond, the overflow in æther, is not frustrated. The synthetic action which gives to nature the material element, goes on in the matter generated until a scaffolding (in our planet the myo-cerebral apparatus) is erected by which such a large and powerful volume of unified organised æther is upheld for years, that there is given by confluence in its focus of action a monad, constituted by such quantity and energy of substance or force (which are the same) that psychical, ultimately as in man, spirit-power is restored; in fine, there is a spirit adequate even to mirror the attributes of the Infinite, while the mode of its birth and education secures its being in harmony with the material economy, as long as the organism is its home.

Thus the created substance, after a lapse to a certain extent into matter, that is, into the apathetic and the dead, is raised to life or spirit again, and becomes capable of new enjoyments, in aspiring towards the ever-blessed One, the author of all.

Our philosophy thus retains all the facilities of materialism and pantheism in explaining phenomena, and contains within itself the theory of evolution. But it accuses these views of a want of extent co-ordinate with that of reality, and affirms that a philosophy adequate to satisfy reason must have as its first word an Infinite Omnipresent Intelligent Being.



# ANALYTICAL CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### BIOLOGY IN ITS RELATION TO THEODICY.

	PAGE
Natural science as commonly cultivated at present is calculated to suppress the spirit of adoration, which is a great loss both to the enjoyment and the intellectual and moral culture of the student, . . . . .	1
The occasion for adoration is, however, stronger now than ever it has been before, inasmuch as the knowledge both of the mode of the creation and the admirable structures and functions and the harmonious correlations of natural objects, is more complete, . . . . .	2
This illustrated by the function of respiration viewed in the light of the recently revived doctrine of the conservation of energy, . . . . .	3
We are also in a condition now to solve many previously embarrassing questions, such as—the complication of organs needed for the assimilation of food in the most gifted animals, in man, for instance, compared with that in simple animals, as <i>Amœba</i> , &c.—the apparition of life in nature everywhere that its maintenance is possible, &c.—The popular controversy on this subject takes its rise in the mistake of biologists, who are always seeking the living among the dead, whereas at the fountain-head all is life—The Ever-living One, . . . . .	6

## CHAPTER II.

### THE PREVALENCE OF LIFE IN NATURE PAST AND PRESENT.

The naked eye gives no idea of the extent to which life exists in our planet. The microscope and the minute examination of the strata make it difficult to say where life may not still exist, or have existed in some former epoch. Not a drop of water can be found, unless quite recently distilled, but to the eye-sight when duly assisted, or to chemical reagents, it either shows actual life or else ammonia, which is usually held to bespeak antecedent life, . . . . .	10
The air also is found to be charged with living beings and things—ova and spores, it is said; but if so, why not the developed forms of spores and ova also, just as the sea contains fishes as well as their ova?	

	PAGE
Plainly such quick aerial beings could never be caught alive, and if caught at all, then only as shrivelled remains sure to be mistaken for ova or spores, . . . . .	
Also the dark depths of the ocean are carpeted with living beings, often of exquisite forms and bright colours, these depths being no doubt lighted up by them in some measure, . . . . .	11
Happily for science, many Protozoa have stony skeletons, which endure after life has departed even for unknown ages. And so abundant everywhere, and so deep down in the earth's crust, are their siliceous and calcareous skeletons found, and so decidedly and rapidly does geological discovery move in this direction, that it already suggests the thought whether the whole crust of the earth may not have originally been an excretion or secretion of life, . . . . .	11
Such a conception is, indeed, incompatible with the popular chemical hypothesis that there are original inorganic as well as organic in-transformable elements. But that hypothesis, resting as it does on the supposition that the analytic and transmuting power of the chemist, in his little way and day, is as powerful as that of nature in her grand secular cosmical energy, cannot stand much longer, . . . . .	12
But it is not incompatible with the nebular hypothesis. On the contrary, in keeping with the well-known very gradual course of nature when her proceedings are normal, condensation of the primæval vapour may have taken place so slowly, that the primæval temperature possibly should just have been that which was most congenial for the organisms to which existence was then to be awarded; while yet, after condensation had proceeded a certain length, the heat about the centre, resulting from the fall and the pressure, would be sufficient not only to forbid life there, but to fuse together and obliterate all traces of antecedent life in those regions, and leave stony matter only, . . . . .	12
It is, however, also consistent with expectation, that mineral matter (that is, matter composed of molecules so stable as to be incapable of life) may have had a dry or meteoric origin from the first, . . . . .	13
The vast extent of organisation in our world, and of its obliteration by metamorphic action, is here illustrated by ample quotations, . . . . .	14
Vegetable life is not of so old a date as microscopic animal life, . . . . .	20

### CHAPTER III.

INDICATIONS OF A CERTAIN RECURRENT FORM (THE NAKED OR APPENDICULATED CELL) AND OF CERTAIN RECURRENT NUMBERS ( $12 + 20 = 32$ ) IN LIVING BEINGS AND THEIR PARTS.

To the eye, when armed by the most powerful microscope, the mature forms of the lowest and simplest animals (Gregarina, Amœba, when in repose) appear quite similar to ova, though the latter, instead of being mature forms, develop into the most highly organised animals, . . . . .

Hence the uselessness of the bodily eye for imparting a knowledge of structure, and the necessity of having recourse to the mind's eye, the interpreting power, reason. But ocular vision, when rightly interpreted, gives a just idea of external form, . . . . .	22
The form in the simplest organisms, when they are at rest or imprisoned but not pressed upon, tends to be spherical or cellular, and usually contain a nucleus, often a nucleolus, but without appendages.	
When organisms are active, or exist free in a congenial medium, they tend to depart from the spherical in form, and usually have appendages, cilia, pseudopodia, tentacula, &c., as in spores, Actynophrys sol, &c., . . . . .	23
When their weight, or the attraction of the walls of the containing medium, leads to their fixation, then instead of the spherical there is given only the hemispherical, a cup or saucer shape with appendages around the rim, as in Hydra-tuba, Polypes, &c., . . . . .	24
But living matter soon gives dead, that is, stable or untransformable, that is, mineral matter, silica, lime, &c. By this the forms of animals otherwise too soft to have more than an ephemeral or microscopic existence are supported, so that the species, especially in a community, may become lasting and large (Rhizopoda, corals, &c.), . . . . .	25
Since the accumulation of dead or mineral matter thus produced by life must, in the course of the all but infinite ages during which our planet has existed (itself one of the sphere-affecting forms of nature), be inconceivably immense, may it not be argued that, like its offspring, the primæval deep too has come in this way to acquire a concrete shell or crust? An Orbis terrarum like the Orbulina universa! . . . . .	26
In the march of scientific knowledge the seemingly ridiculous is often the prelude of general acceptance and admiration. (Antipodes how ridiculous! The sun the centre of the system, how ridiculous!)	
Molecular synthesis has a tendency to give not only a typical form but typical numbers of parts or organs in that form.	
The law of action and reaction in systems composed of perfectly elastic elements tends to develope their corresponding parts in sets of 4, 8, and the doubles of the same series; around a centre as in tetraspores, coral polype, &c., or around an axis, as in most crystals, . . . . .	30
But this does not account for the selection which nature makes of certain of these multiples to the neglect of others. Of these the most prevalent when the development is complete is 32. Thus among the feet of nature, peristomes of mosses, Hypnum, Bryum, &c. At the head of nature, in man, the teeth, the cerebro-spinal or knotted nerves (including the 5th), &c. Extensive observation shows that this number is not simply one of the series 4, 8, &c., but is the sum of $5 \times 4 = 20$ and 12. This is illustrated by reference to the numbers of milk and permanent teeth in man, &c., of articulations in the axis, of limbs, and bones in the limbs of animals, and of parts in the fructification and general structure of plants, . . . . .	31

But the utter distaste of the naturalists and chemists of the present moment for such enquiries dissuades from lengthened statements,	32
---	----

## CHAPTER IV.

THE THEORY OF DEVELOPMENT. ITS DEFECTS. THE CONDITIONS OF ITS COMPLETENESS.

Design often appears at once in nature, and that beneficent. But sometimes design does not appear, and where it does it seems cruel. Such an aspect of nature is embarrassing to reason, and painful,	33
The institution of the spherical as the hybernating form for an organism or morsel of delicate substance, which needs protection in the midst of its environments, and which is also to be capable of a full play of form and deployment of life when its environments are not dangerous to it, is manifestly a most wise and benignant design,	34
But no reason appears with regard to organisms for the selection of those numbers which have been indicated ( $12 + 20 = 32$ ) in preference to others which are as frequently employed in human art,	34
Often also when design appears, it seems cruel, as in carnivora, parasites, entozoa, zymotic spores and ova, &c. Hence many thinking men are at the present moment in a state of bewilderment as to the origination of nature, many affirm entire nescience,	35
In this respect the theory of development may be regarded as a modern and a scientific substitute for the ancient theological conception of a Demiurgos, as such is of value, and when true to its name and fully developed, gives a pure theism both as its first and its last word,	35
But this theory as at present advocated, when viewed in reference to the whole of its sphere, contradicts itself, and breaks down midway between its termini. It proposes to trace all organic species to one primal organism, but that organism it admits to be constructed by the use of some 20 chemical species, which are held to be essentially dissimilar and intransmutable from the beginning and for ever!	36
This theory, as a complete system of thought, applicable to its whole sphere, implies that in the first or last analysis, at the origination or complete dissolution of nature, there was or will be only one species of matter, not some 64, as the chemistry of the present day maintains,	37
Moreover, beyond the world of matter there is the universal æther. It belongs to the theory of development to hold that the material element is a development or synthetic product of the ætherial,	38
Nor this only. Reason cannot rest in regarding the æther (a medium consisting in a multitude of separate particles devoid of all vision and power of designing) as the first of all beings and things. Of the theory of the development of living beings, when logically and scientifically carried out, the first term can only be a living Being who is One, and who is adequate to design the universe—in a word, God,	38



## CHAPTER V.

## THE TRUE PROTOPLASM AND THE COSMICAL LAW.

- The objection to belief in a creation by an Infinite Being, on the ground of His pre-existing fulness, and the fact that a creation cannot but be finite, and therefore imperfect, vanishes when we consider the nature of that to which alone existence owes all its value—namely, happiness. For where one only exists, one only can be happy; while by awarding existence to a creation, countless millions may, . . . . . 38
- This theory of creation leads to the inference that the primal substance of creation shall be a protoplasm—a pure or simple living substance wholly plastic in itself, or, in other words, assimilative in the highest degree to the being and attributes of the Creator, the Ever-living and the Ever-blessed One, . . . . . 40
- Hence a cosmical law—namely, the law of assimilation in its three branches: viz., assimilation—(1.) to the Divine attributes; reason; (2.) each individualised object to itself, both as to space and time, giving form and structure, elasticity and heredity; and (3.) all to one another; homology, implying occasionally uselessness, . . . . . 41
- By an appeal to this law alone it is affirmed that all the phenomena of the creation are to be explained. Hence in nature generally, permanence of property in a properly individualised object,—that is, successive assimilation to self as it was at first, implying also *Permanence of Species*. Hence, *species in genera*, that is, the reciprocal assimilation of kindred or influentially assimilative species; and hence, ultimately, *the general harmony of nature*, that is, the assimilative influence of each on all, and of all on each, . . . . . 42
- Hence in the spiritual world, *Perception*, which is assimilation of a precipient as such to the object presenting. *Remembrance*, which is the assimilation of the present to some former state of self. *Reasoning*, which is remembrance of assimilated ideas with exclusion of dissimilar or irrelative ideas. *Imagining*, which is remembering in fragments and at random, or selecting with a view to some other object than the representation of reality. *Judging*, which is the assimilating self with ideas which are held to have been assimilated to one another. *Idea*, which is the product of the act of mental assimilation. And so on with all our faculties or modes of mental action except *Liberty*, which is the mind as an agent assimilating itself to the Creator Himself as the Supreme Will, . . . . . 43
- Hence in the physical sphere, *Attraction*, which is the assimilative action of atoms or masses as to the place they occupy—a theory which also gives the law of the inverse square of the distance. *Elasticity*, which is the assimilative action of a form which has been disturbed to its previous form. *Heredity*, which is a secular elasticity, or assimilative action in successive individuals of the same series. *Symmetry, culminating in sphericity or symmetrical cellularity*, which is the assimilation

- of all the parts or particles of a form to some one plane or line, ultimately some one point within that form. *Chemical and Electrical Action*, which is the assimilation of dissimilars by union when it is permitted, and the nîsus at it by assimilative currents of force passing between the dissimilars where union is prevented. And here the theory of voltaic action is given in detail, . . . . . 47
- By the same law is to be explained *the differentiation* of organisms in proportion as they are to be preserved long as concretes, in media and under influences tending to assimilate or dissolve them ; as, for instance, a tender embryo which has to resist the solvent action of the aqueous medium in which it lies for long, and afterwards to remain concrete in air for years, perhaps under very varying temperatures, &c., 53

## CHAPTER VI.

## THE CHARACTERISTIC OF EXISTENCE IS SELF-MANIFESTING POWER.

- Though our philosophy admits only one kind of created substance and one cosmical law, yet that law acts between two limits or poles, and by two modes which are the opposites of each other. Hence nature is a web in which unity and multiplicity, identity and difference, are everywhere interwoven, so that while the variety is all but infinite, all is harmony and beauty, . . . . . 54
- The essential characteristic of existence is that which the term implies—standing-out-ness or self-manifesting power, . . . . . 54
- As to the distance from its centre or its visible parts to which an object can manifest itself, no limits in space can be discovered. But intervening matter intercepts the self-manifesting power of more remote objects and eclipses them, as the iron of an iron ship intercepts the magnetic action of the terrestrial poles to a needle in the ship's hold, 55
- As all objects exist in the æther as their ambient medium, they assimilate it around them more or less to themselves. And where there is dissimilarity between objects (which has been shown to be the condition of energetic reciprocal action), as between a luminous object and a dark object, a planet or any illuminated object, for instance, and a choroid or eye, this assimilative action may be continued in ætherial rays to incalculable distances, as between the stars and the eye, . . . 56
- But as the æther must act according to the laws of inertia or mechanical motion, the forms of external objects can only be given to the eye in projection. The true perception of them, proper to their own self-manifesting power, can only be made out by clearing off the perspective which is mechanically imposed in them. This, man cannot do, in consequence of his helplessness at birth and long after, but by a tedious though unconscious process. But animals whose organism functions perfectly at once see objects as they really are, and where they really are, almost the first time they look towards them, . . . 56

Perception has its normal focus in the brain. But it claims as its domain the whole organism, and it is impossible to say to what extent beyond the organism the mind whose centre of force is within may not act or influence. The same is true of every elemental force or atom when viewed in reference to its centre or palpable region. The range of its action is not discoverable, . . . . .	57
"Substance" is not essentially distinct from "force" or "power." Still there is good ground for the use of all the terms. Almost all objects are capable of existing in either of two modes—the dynamical and the statical. When regarded as dynamical, they are called forces or powers. When regarded as statical, they are called substances, . . . . .	58

## CHAPTER VII.

## A WORLD OF SPIRITS AND THE REALM OF LIGHT.

Where an individualised unity of power or substance is a monad of such energy that is self-manifesting to itself, it is a percipient or intellectual being or spirit, . . . . .	59
The immensity of the Creator, the Ever-living One, on the one hand, and His unity on the other, indicate as His most immediate creation a world of spirits, and that as a hierarchy, at the top of which are spirits of the highest order, and at the base such as are only capable of enjoyment, and no other feeling, save the possibility of pain, as the opposite pole the relish and safeguard of enjoyment, . . . . .	61
But if the cosmical law is to be allowed to take full possession of the created substance, and is to assimilate it as far as possible to the immensity as well as to the unity of the Creator ; then, since its quantity is finite, partitionment of substance and consequently the attenuation of the individual must be carried out, till all space is occupied with existence as far as possible, and each individualised element comes to be next to nothing. The elements now cannot, therefore, individually be spirits or percipients. Yet, since they are most near to the All-seeing One, what we are to expect of them is that they shall constitute a medium by which perception shall be facilitated ? And thus after a world of spirits and as their home, our theory gives the realm of light, the ætherial medium, . . . . .	63

## CHAPTER VIII.

THE MATERIAL ELEMENT : ITS GENESIS AND STRUCTURE, AND ITS  
NORMAL MODE OF ACTION.

Time, as the condition of our consciousness, obliges us to think of things in a thread or successively. To the Creator all is simultaneous and from eternity, as well as successive. Hence, in order to imitate the Divine procedure, after completing a development, we

	PAGE
ought to reverse it, making the last first. After analysis, synthesis, and <i>v. v.</i> ,	65
By synthesis of ætherial elements around different centres nebular specks result, in which, by virtue of the centrad pressure, the innermost set of ætherial elements become confluent into monadic nuclei, thus giving to nature a new order of being,	66
Geometrical considerations lead us to suppose that the numbers in the interior of the nebulous speck which will thus become confluent will be 12, with 20 overlying them, in all 32, or <i>v. v.</i> , giving as lines of mutual pressure previous to confluence the dodecahedron and the icosahedron, the one circumscribing the other,	67
To discover the exact number of ætherial elements in each material element is hopeless. But to find the mode of action in these elements in the ætherial atmosphere which correspond to the structure of the now unified nucleus is not so hopeless, and is much more important,	70
To this the cosmical law, ever aiming at the assimilation of dissimilars, guides us. And as to the normal mode of action that will be established, it is illustrated by the experiment of the electric spider,	71
If the material element thus in action, when in a free medium, such as water, could be rendered visible by the microscope, it would be taken for an ovum or spore surrounded by vibrating cilia. When in an imprisoned state, or as a member in a tissue where the cilia could not be or play, it would be taken for a nucleated cell,	72
Further investigation shows that, according as the external resistance is equal all round or less in some directions than others, two orders of forms must result, the former condition giving sphoidal forms resembling ova, the latter giving (by partitionment) spiral or caudate forms resembling spermatozoa or antheridia, always wriggling in the endeavour to wind themselves up and regain the spherical,	73
Hence the development of ova after impregnation becomes possible. The spherical, symmetrically constituted within, is the form of repose, and cannot develope. This structure impregnation disturbs by the insertion into the ovum of a merely axial body in want of and demanding equatorial parts and sphericity, for such is the spermatozoon,	73
The cosmical law, when the walls of the containing medium are dissimilar to the organism in it, causes the ovum or spore to tend to settle or become fixed, as hydrozoon, sponge, alga,	73
It can now no longer attain to the spherical. But it never ceases to aim at it, and hence it buds and buds. And when it has secured an attachment to a point standing up in the liquid, the composite organism sometimes attains a great degree of sphericity. But as it more usually forms on a flat surface it is hemispherical only,	73
The nîsus at the spherical in time when it fails in space gives also the phenomenon which has been called "alternate generation,"	73



## CHAPTER IX.

## OF ELEMENTAL RESPIRATION AND EXHAUSTION.

- The normal mode of sustained action in the ætherial atmosphere or dynamisphere of the material element, according to the relative state of the medium beyond, must produce either of two states,—one in which there is no loss of material substance, and which is represented in visible nature by the ovular, encysted, or hybernating state of organisms ; the other in which there is active life and continual loss of material substance, in respiration, &c., . . . . . 76
- But the cosmical law always implies reciprocity. All material elements, in continually giving off to the region above and beyond, by the excursions of the elements of their ætherial atmosphere, a material aura, which their nuclei accordingly lose, receive in return for this dead effluence a new supply of vital energy from that which alone is beyond and above,—namely, The Ever-living One, the alone source of all the energy of the universe, . . . . . 76
- But though the Supreme Mind and Will is thus imminent to all nature, nothing calculated to disturb the amount of energy proper to the material nature ever occurs, . . . . . 76
- The perfection of His intelligence and insight into all things from eternity to eternity forbids mistakes and the need of corrections ; so that when the conditions of existence are the same, so are the phenomena constant and uniform. Moral conditions (such as rational prayer, need for miracle) no less than physical, are accompanied by their appropriate phenomena (that is, an answer, a miracle), they are inwoven with the relative material conditions, . . . . . 78
- The outward and inward movements of the ætherial elements in the atmosphere of the material element prelude respiration in organisms ; during which, moreover, the inspired oxygen of the air represents the ætherial elements when descending upon the nucleus in the material element ; in which latter the nucleus represents carbon, . . . . . 79
- Respiration is the most fundamental of all organic functions. It is the perpetuation all down the stream of being of the mode of supplying at the fountain-head continually renewed vital energy. In the relation between Creator and creation it is most probably inevitable, at least under cosmical law as it actually exists. But the loss of substance in the individual which respiration implies demands that the animal kingdom in its beginning shall be such that the stronger organisms, in order to exist, must destroy the weaker,—an economy at first necessitated, and carried up till we reach the Carnivora, . . . . . 79
- But this unavoidable evil has been reduced to a minimum since the destination of the products of respiration is to give birth and increase to the vegetable kingdom, and thus to produce structures which are incapable of suffering, and yet every way suited to store up for respiration, food for repairing its own waste, . . . . . 80

- The material element itself, with its actual structure as here conceived, is of the nature of a necessity, rather a foreseen and a divinely regulated thing, than a freely willed and primary creation, and as compared with a world of spirits, only as a cloud in the azure—beautiful, indeed, and capable of becoming the mother and nurse of spirits, and therefore sanctioned, but wholly incapable of thought and enjoyment in itself, and wholly unaccountable if viewed as the whole of creation, . 81
- It appears that a world of finite spirits alone could not exist without a material accompaniment. Existence implies all its conditions. Objects which are to occupy limited portions of space must possess forms and be subject to the laws of form, that is, geometry. Hence a liability to suffering becomes certain; for with space sensibility has no dealings. Its condition is time. And when attached to complicated structures in space, whose well-being requires the observance of many laws, sensibility in its reckless hunt for happiness violates these laws, and so causes and feels pain, . . . . . 81
- All which, on such slight views as have hitherto been taken of these phenomena, has seemed inconsistent with the idea of a beneficent Creator. And as many ancients were led to ascribe the world to a Demiurgos, so have many moderns been content to adopt the theory of Topsy in "Uncle Tom's Cabin," that existence was never divinely awarded to creatures, thus liable to suffering themselves and to cause suffering in others, but that they merely "grewed," . . . . . 81

## CHAPTER X.

## OF ALIMENTATION: ITS MODES, AND ITS UNAVOIDABLE LIMITS.

- The material element itself, compared with all its molecular combinations, is very stable and lasting. But if it has been generated out of ætherial elements as its ancestry, it must, under the law of assimilation (reversion), be liable to be resolved into æther, the matter of light again, most probably with some degree of luminousness, in the region where the solution or explosion of matter into æther is taking place. But, under the same law, those ætherial elements which previously constituted material elements will tend to do so again. And thus the periodicity, the cyclical character of nature is instituted in the very structure and nature of the material element itself, . 82
- It is the heavenly function of respiration itself which gives a beginning, and institutes that system of alimentation which at first sight, and in its most striking feature, is deemed so objectionable and contrary to what were to be expected in the creation of a benevolent Being. Thus, since respiration implies exhaustion, it follows that breathers of the same kinds, according as they have breathed or lived more or less, are weaker or stronger. They are therefore dissimilar, and union will tend to take place between them. This phenomenon, when viewed in reference to the whole of nature and of the function, may take place

in either of three ways. It may be—(1.) transient (sexual union); (2.) attachment (combination, differentiation, new species); (3.) absorption and assimilation (food commonly so called), . . . . .	83
In order that animals may breathe freely, live, and enjoy their lives, food must be had; and since the genesis of vegetable matter is normally posterior to animal matter, the liability of the weaker animals to become the food of the stronger is unavoidable, . . . . .	84
A perfect economy of alimentation, considered purely as such, admits the use of animal food only, for in this kind of food alone there may possibly be no rejectamenta, no refuse, . . . . .	84
Also animals are strangers to all painful presentiment of death; and the violent modes of their seizure when they are about to become food for other animals, seem usually to produce anæsthesia, and to seclude them from suffering, . . . . .	84
To increase the quantity of vegetable food, the continuous expiration of the volcano, and the more secret action of the abyss, have been appointed to second the respiration of the animal kingdom. And to increase to the utmost the quantity of food of both kinds, the utmost fecundity has been instituted both in plants and animals, which also secures a maximum of enjoyment in the latter, for the sake of which alone they could value life, which it is witnessed that they do upon the whole, by the general struggle for existence, . . . . .	85
This struggle, when expressed in its most general terms, is between the leaf and the lung—a friendly struggle, in which the defeat of one is in reality the signal victory of both, the leaf (the vegetable kingdom) in yielding itself up to the lung (the animal kingdom) affording the latter “bed and board, coal and candle;” then, phoenix-like, speedily, after having been thus utilised, arising again from its own ashes as fully alive as before, carpeting the planet anew with beautiful foliage and flowers, fresh food for animals again, . . . . .	86
A liability to pain is possibly implied in a capacity for enjoyment. At any rate, it is the most effective safeguard of the integrity of the organism. That it should continue after a fatal lesion, is in keeping with the operation in all cases of general laws, . . . . .	89
As for death—supposing an internally reposing organism to be constructed in all its perfection at once, and placed in a wholly congenial situation, in which all its wants were steadily supplied, it would not be liable to death. The cosmical law (assimilation to self in every successive moment) would only act to preserve it as it is, like a perfectly elastic thing or mass, having a constant amount of inertia. It is birth and growth which carry in them the sentence of death. In that case the cosmical law, acting as a law of reversion, obliges the organism when it culminated in the ancestral type to live over again its life backward, and so to decay and die, that is, to dissolve into aëri-form and earth particles again, and thus give itself again to nature on the grand scale, . . . . .	90

## CHAPTER XI.

## OF REPRODUCTION AND SEX.

- Reproduction, that is, multiplication along with assimilation to what existed previously, is not confined, as is usually supposed, to organic beings, plants, and animals ; there is all through nature the same, or a *nisus* at it. In a saturated solution, when a single crystal is introduced, a brood of crystals soon appears, or when liquid is poured in, solution of crystals follows, . . . . . 91
- When healthy plasma fills an open wound in the solids, it is soon assimilated, solid is reproduced, and the wound healed. On the other hand, unhealthy liquid assimilates the solid walls of a wound or liquifies them, and ulceration takes place, . . . . . 92
- In effecting assimilation to pre-existing specific forms or structures, the cosmical law never forgets the type of all forms, namely, the spherical and cellular. Hence normal growth is always by the addition of cells. This energy may be such as to give first solid not cellular spheres almost all round (buds) or all round (seeds, ova). The motive to their development is a *nisus* at the cellular by protruding their contents. But the vital action, taking place along one axis, causes departure from the spherical, and gives axial forms. Hence segmentation, *striæ*, *septa*, nodes, &c. (see ova, muscular fibres, *confervoidæ*, plant axes, &c.), . . . 93
- The fecundity of species is secured or insisted upon in virtue of the cosmical law and the analogy of all nature. The structure of the material element itself precludes an organism which, having lived its day and done its work, gives birth to four or twelve, or it may be twenty, ultimately thirty-two young ones, . . . . . 94
- The imperfection of the individual for the reproductive function implied in the fact of sex probably arises from this, that in the structure of the material element either the group of twelve or that of twenty ætherial elements in the nucleus may be in the interior, and that both cannot be equidistant from the centre, except on condition of the material element vaporising, or exploding, or escaping into the ætherial again. In the *nisus* at this structure, in which sphericity and cellularity culminate, adjacent groups of material elements will tend to possess, the one the one, the other the other, situation. Hence, being so far dissimilar, they will tend to unite, and each to abolish the difference of the other. Hence two results may be expected, (1.) a product from both, a resultant body, which at first shall be devoid of the difference (sex) ; and (2.) obliteration, functionally and perhaps even to the eye in some measure organically, of sex in advance age, . . . 97

## CHAPTER XII.

## VEGETABLE MORPHOLOGY : ITS GENERAL PRINCIPLES.

The relation between the animal and the vegetable kingdoms, considered as one economic whole, leads us to expect that the animal form shall



be as compact as is compatible with adequate means of locomotion, while the vegetable kingdom shall be (1.) expanded or laminated in the air to the utmost, exposing the largest possible surface in order to decompose the products of animal respiration (carbonic acid), and thus be suited to supply fresh food (oxygen gas) for the lungs of animals, and (2.) not be too tough for the teeth of animals, but such as to be fit to supply food for their stomachs, . . . . .	99
The ideal of the plant-form is still the same as that of every naturally individualised object, viz., the hollow sphere. In all but microscopic and imperfect or short-lived plants, this is aimed at by the development of a system of peripheral tiling or foliage, supported by slender leaf-stalks or branches in the air and by rootlets and roots in the earth, both systems radiating from a centre or axis, hence trees, &c.,	101
The physical agency in giving the vegetable kingdom to nature is, as always, the law of assimilation. Its first operation is as the law of reciprocal assimilation as to space, causing the air particles to descend into the earth, and the earth particles to tend into the air. Its second operation is as a law of assimilation as to state, the air particles becoming concrete as vegetable tissue, and the earth particles becoming as aerial as their nature admits by being carried up and located in the highest and most expanded parts of plants (giving ashes), . . . . .	107

## CHAPTER XIII.

THE FORM AND STRUCTURE OF A FLOWERING PLANT AND A FLOWER ARE  
PRELUDED BY THE STRUCTURE OF THE MATERIAL ELEMENT.

The simplest stable organism or plant conceivable must consist of at least three material elements, the middle member being dissimilar to the two terminal members, as, for instance, having the twenty ætherial constituents central, while the terminal elements have the twelve,	120
In this chapter it is shown that the observed parts of plants and flowers, as to sex, situation, and number, are striking verifications of our theory as to the structure of the material element, . . . . .	121

## CHAPTER XIV.

THE SIMPLEST ZOIC FORMS AND FUNCTIONS ARE PRELUDED BY THE  
STRUCTURE AND ACTION OF THE MATERIAL ELEMENT.

In the actual state of natural science, the forms and structures of the simplest organisms, whether microscopic or large, and whether animals or plants, are a perfect mystery to intelligence, nay, seemingly absurd. And naturalists are at present in a state of despair ever to be able to understand them or account for them, or do more than merely to observe and classify them, . . . . .	126
The unity of the cosmical law securing harmony, nay, a certain homology	

all through nature, although the smallest object that is visible be as it were at all but an infinite distance from the single material element, explains these forms and structures, for they are precluded in the form and structure of the material element itself, . . . . .	130
The simplest organisms, whether imprisoned (Gregarinida) or free (Rhizopoda), when reposing or hybernating, are spherical with some kind of atmosphere around them, and when active depart from the spherical, the free sorts sending out from their bodies processes and retracting them again, or surrounded by vibrating cilia, so as to simulate to a remarkable degree the action of the ætherial elements in the atmosphere of the material element, still more clearly seen in spores and ova and fully-developed organisms, such as the sun-animalcule, Volvox, &c., . . . . .	131
By considering the structure which must result from the union of two material elements, one of which has lived or breathed longer than the other, there is obtained a structure which precludes and explains the existence in animals of a head and body, the former furnished with a feeding apparatus, tentacles, teeth, &c., the latter with a breeding apparatus, a respiratory apparatus originally coming in between. (Many Infusoria, Polyzoa, Cephalapoda, &c.), . . . . .	132
Three such coupled elements may unite by both ends. There then results a new type, consisting of six members in a circular system. But these will tend under the cosmical law to apply themselves to each other on the same axis, thus precluding Annuloidea, Annulosa, Vertebrata, . . . . .	133
Three single and similar, as well as three coupled and differentiated material elements, may unite into a closed system. And when this is the case, the law of the spherical leads us to expect that a fourth will immediately apply itself symmetrically to the other three, and thus there will be constructed a body possessing a tetrahedral nucleus invested by a spherical atmosphere or dynamisphere so stable that it can neither be decomposed nor transformed. But to be thus is to be dead. Here then, very early in the operation of the cosmical law, we find the dead appearing among the living, and the true protoplasm undergoing a most notable differentiation, . . . . .	135

## CHAPTER XV.

### ON THE DIFFERENTIATION OF THE PROTOPLASM TREATED OF IN THIS WORK, AND THE DEVELOPMENT IN IT OF THE ORGANIC ELEMENTS COMMONLY SO CALLED.

Recapitulation of biological principles till the first differentiation of the primal protoplasm and the first dead element, the tetrad, is reached, . . . . .	136
Simple groups of three elemental forces or material elements tend to receive one atom more on each pole, giving a molecular structure of maximum stability, whose atomic weight is $3 + 2 = 5$ , its symbol H.	

Also two tetrads tend to unite by their bases, giving a structure isamorphous with H, though differing in the structure of its equator, whose atomic weight is $4 + 4 = 8$ , its symbol $\text{H}_2$ . This, being dissimilar to the former, will tend to unite with it; and as the atomicity or number of points suitable for union in H is 5, the saturated product of union must be $\text{H}_5\text{H}_5$ , its atomic weight $5 + (5 \times 8) = 45$ , <i>i.e.</i> , 9, when H = 1. Now, this is well known to be the relative specific gravities of common vapour and hydrogen gas. When the conditions of existence are incompatible with aq., and the atom of H is required to leave its situation, the five atoms of $\text{H}_2$ close up into a most remarkable structure, which explains all the phenomena of oxygen and <i>oxygen gas</i> , an unit of the latter determined by the cosmical law being a coupled atom of <i>oxygen</i> , its atomic weight being $2(5 \times 8) = 80$ , <i>i.e.</i> 16, when H = 1, which is the well-known specific gravity of oxygen gas as compared with hydrogen as unity, .	140
After the genesis of aqueous matter (oxygen and hydrogen, and, in certain cases, sulphur, being products of its decomposition) in the progress of the differentiation of the primæval protoplasm, ammonia or double vapour presents itself, yielding in decomposition azote (instead of oxygen) along with hydrogen, . . . . .	159
Azote by an easy transformation gives hydro-carbon, $2 \text{Az} = \text{C}_4\text{H}_4$ , . . . . .	163
Then follows the genesis of silicium, calcium, and phosphorus.	

## CHAPTER XVI.

## ON THE ULTIMATE PRODUCT OF ÆTHERIAL AND MATERIAL ACTION.

Material action culminates in our planet in effecting cerebation, . . . . .	173
A cerebral unit is an individualized volume of æther centralized and supported by a scaffolding of light atoms very openly organised, . . . . .	174
As the nebular speck in celestial space by the simultaneous confluence of a certain small quantity of æther in its centre gives a monad, which is the material element, so the large volume of organised æther in the head, by the successive confluence of a large quantity of æther in its centre of action gives a monad of vastly greater power, <i>viz.</i> , a soul—that is, a spirit whose mother and nurse and educator is matter, and an agent in which, in virtue of the great quantity of Being or force in it, mental powers, the proper end and aim of created substance, are restored. Instead of attraction and repulsion merely, along with inertia and elasticity, as there are in the material element, there are desire, and aversion, conscious self-preservation, &c. Thus the cycle of creation is completed by its return into spirit, in and out of which it took its rise, . . . . .	175

## POSTSCRIPT.

---

This sketch of a Philosophy is now brought to a close, and that not without pleasing prospects as to the future of Science. Since 1868, when PART II., which related to molecular construction, was printed in Germany, there has been a notable progress of philosophy in the same direction. The spectrum-analysis of star-light emanating from sources differing greatly as to the degree of heat which actuates them, or the state of diffusion and attenuation in the matter of which they consist, has forced on the minds of chemists the very reasonable suspicion that cosmical force, acting out in the great universe since the beginning of time on the same particles of matter, may be capable of doing something more in the way of ultimate analysis than the chemist in his laboratory with his small experiments. In consideration of the growing simplicity which seems to characterise the light-giving elements of different heavenly bodies according as they are on the way to greater attenuation through heat or are already extremely attenuated, the idea begins to be tolerated even by experimental chemists, that of the 63 so-called simple substances only a very few, perhaps only one, can survive without decomposition that ordeal of molecular transformation which is the very secret of all the variety, the harmony, the beauty of nature.

On comparing the data of the spectroscope with our molecular synthesis, it will be seen that those substances which ocular vision gives the astronomer as the last survivors under extreme cosmical analysis are the same as those which mental vision has given us under our method as the most simple, stable, and recurrent of molecular structures, viz., two lighter than hydrogen, hydrogen, nitrogen or azote (which in our theory is secularly resolvable into hydro-carbon ;  $2 \text{ Az} = \text{C}_4\text{H}_4 = \text{olefiant gas}$ ), magnesium, sodium, iron, &c.

Chemists are still indeed content with their formless, structureless, phantom-atoms, instead of particles looking like reality, having distinctly conceived forms and structures ; they are content with mere abstractions, such as atomicity and affinity, instead of well-understood reasons and mechanical causes ! But surely chemistry as it now exists must soon become tired of itself. Surely it cannot be long before earnest minds who have youth and energy will make a rush into the light. As to others, it must not be forgotten that death usually supervenes before even demonstration can wholly change a long-cherished habit of thought. It was more than a generation—upwards of 30 years—after the publication of “The Principia,” before the philosophy of Newton was presented to the University of Cambridge, and even then by stealth, under the protection of the philosophy of Des Cartes, which was still taught ! Moreover, the perpetual secretary of The Academy of Science in Paris, living in scientific communication with all the world, 58 years a member of that academy and its historian, a man of genius, and an admirer of Newton, 70 years after the publication of “The Principia,” still maintained the Cartesian astronomy, and died in that belief, though he lived to his hundredth year ! Happy the man who by his own researches has been able to satisfy the demands of his own reason and to make silence in his own heart.



## CHAPTER I.

### BIOLOGY : ITS RELATION TO THEODICY.

A VERY remarkable change has in these modern times come over the study of nature. Formerly, nature used to be regarded chiefly in a contemplative point of view. Its grandest and most striking objects and arrangements were alone observed ; and as in them either beauty or utility, or both, were conspicuous, the thoughts of the beholder naturally turned to the Author of nature, and tended to close in a spirit of adoration.

But now all this is changed. The characteristic of our times is minute research. To see all that can be seen about some one individual object in hand as also about those which are most nearly allied to it, an accurate comparative crystallography or chemistry or anatomy of the object in the successive stages of its existence, and that specially, nay merely, in order to be able to classify it or to assign to it its "place in nature," is at present the main aim of the naturalist.

And, in this minute research so much is encountered that seems at first sight to ignore, nay, to conflict with the useful and the beneficial, that contemplation, when it is ventured upon, is often felt to be rather painful than agreeable ; and many naturalists of high intellectual powers, and not of an irreverent turn of mind, have given up adoration as an untenable position, and even orthodox divines have maintained that it is only from revelation, and not from nature, that any true knowledge of the Deity can be obtained.

Now, viewing this change in its general bearing, both on the man of science and on society at large, unless there be some great gain to balance it, plainly there is great loss. Yes ; setting aside all other considerations but that of personal enjoyment merely, and on the most restricted view that has ever been taken as to that which really exists,—adopting as to this matter, for instance, what the fashionable method of investiga-

tion logically leads to (which has been happily stated, without reserve, by J. S. Mills, in his criticism of Sir William Hamilton's philosophy), namely, that all we are certain of by way of external universe, is "a possibility of sensations," and by way of soul or mind, "a thread of consciousness aware of itself;" even supposing this to be all, still it remains true that the old contemplative way of viewing nature in the spontaneous and uncritical light of common sense had much in its favour which is lost in this new way. For of all "threads of consciousness," certainly there is none that is at once so delightful and so ennobling as adoration when there is seen by the contemplative mind to be a just occasion for it; and if, taking a larger view, we admit (what always has been, and still is, generally believed) that man, along with a regard to his own present enjoyments, has certain duties to the Author of his being, on the right discharge of which his true happiness, both here and hereafter, mainly depends, then, for him to live a stranger to adoration, which is manifestly the first of these duties, can be no light matter.

But it will be said, and said justly, that the teaching of the truth must be submitted to, whatever it may be—that the truth must be followed whithersoever it may lead. If the minute and accurate study of nature, it will be said, fails to suggest, and especially if it forbid the suggestion of an object of adoration, then we must exclude from our study such an object, and, of course, the emotion also which is appropriate to it, whatever the disadvantages. At any rate, we must look for the evidence for the existence of an object of adoration somewhere else than in nature. Now, let all this be admitted. But it has not come to this, nor anything like this. It may be shown, and shown most satisfactorily, viewing nature, both on its grandest scale and in all its details, that there is nothing in it to contradict, but everything to countenance and support that world-old view which regards nature as the creation of an infinitely perfect and powerful Being; only, to be able to co-ordinate nature with this view requires something more than the quick eye and the lithe fingers which are alone demanded by minute anatomy. It requires a habit of thought which aims at being all-embracing, and, along with an acquaintance with particular objects, a comprehension of all.

There is no legitimate occasion for giving up the old point of view, or, in order to find information on Physico-theology, to have recourse to the book-shelf. On the contrary, now for the first time, and that simply because of the most recent advances in science, has it become possible to account for the evil in nature, without hurting the spirit of adoration; while as to the good, it meets the eye as fast as ever, and proclaims as loudly as ever the goodness of the great Creator.

As to biology, the science of living beings and things, which is, of all

the branches of science, at once the most interesting and the most important (for it points continually to the knowledge of self), valuable progress has of late years been made in it. The rationale can now be given of not a few important biological facts, which have indeed been long known as facts, but which have never till of late been rightly understood. But, meantime, many more have been presenting themselves, the reason of which still remains unknown. And the confession must be made at the same time, that the more extended observation which has been taking place, has been increasing our consciousness of ignorance at a much faster rate than our knowledge.

Among those which are now well understood, however, some are very important, and their theory very interesting. Thus, since the earliest times, it has been known that, in order to be kept in life, an animal must continue to breathe and to receive nourishment; and it was easy to understand, and it was understood long ago, how certain creatures (a herbivorous animal, for instance) whose food was such that it could not all be converted into the substance of its body, must needs get rid of the unsuitable particles of its food by breathing or otherwise. But it was not understood till lately why an animal that fed on other animals, the composition of whose bodies was the same as its own, should be also dependent every moment upon respiration, which was nevertheless seen to be the fact (for the carnivorous lion or tiger cannot live one minute without using its lungs, any more than the herbivorous ox or horse). To explain how it should be so, all that was possible, until lately, was to suppose that the muscular machinery of animals broke down in the using, simply through wear and tear, just like that machinery which is the work of men's hands, and, therefore, that the debris of their tissues had to be got rid of and carried out of the organism in some way or other; and thus the existence of lungs and kidneys was explained and justified. This theory also explained the necessity of alimentation at the same time, and altogether it seemed to be adequate. It postulated, however, that the great Creator both contrived and executed His designs in the same way as man does, and under similar limits as to defective workmanship. There was reason to suspect, therefore, that it was intrinsically defective. And now that view has spontaneously passed away. Since the revival in our day of the Leibnitzian doctrine of the conservation of energy in the material universe, it has been seen among other things, that inasmuch as every animal in all its motions is always putting forth energy, which is always passing from it into the ground, or into the air, or into whatever else gives the animal a purchase and a place in nature, so must that animal be always losing energy. And if it is to retain its strength, it must be provided with the means of continually drawing fresh energy



from its environments. Now, of energy it is known that there is a store in the action of the oxygen of the atmosphere ; and it is also known that this oxygen pours itself into the animal, as also, that when within the animal, it assails the carbon which was supplied in the food, and which, having been now exhausted by the work it has done, has become open to a successful attack by the oxygen ; whence there is produced within the animal a regulated supply of heat. This heat could not have been obtained consistently with organisation, otherwise than by some process which previously exhausted and exposed the carbon within the organism ; but this the exercise of the animal's activity does successfully. Thus while the life-engine is doing work, it is generating within itself heat proportional in amount to the work it does. Now, heat is the most elemental form of energy, and that which is available for the greatest number of purposes. It can no longer be said, therefore, that the break down of the muscular fibre under the work it does is a fault of the machinery, or in any sense an evil. On the contrary, it is a provision for the continued working of the engine. And thus respiration, instead of doing merely the work of a scavenger, as was long thought, does the work of a prime minister, the stomach being the commissariate, but nothing more, at least in the full-grown animal. The old theory, then, which implied a mechanical defect in the structure of the machinery of the active tissues, has vanished ; our conception of the work of the Creator is exalted ; and the whole conception is beautiful and satisfying to reason. And to this theory of respiration and alimentation, that of the circulation may be added, not only as being implied in the former, but as being well understood in its own details also.

It may, indeed, be said that by this change of view, the charge of defect in the muscular system of animals is not avoided, but only shifted from that of defective mechanism to that of vital exhaustion. Why, it may be argued, did not an Almighty Creator, if such there be, impart an adequate supply of energy to the tissue, to keep it fit for work as long as it could last as machinery, in spite of all that it might give off to surrounding objects ? Now, this is just one of those questionings which, though at first sight they may seem reasonable enough, yet, when looked into, are seen to be without justification. To ask for the supply of energy to mechanism at this rate is, in fact, to ask that there shall be no such thing as mechanism at all, or rather, indeed, no such thing as a creation at all ; for a machine which possessed within itself an inexhaustive store of energy would be a machine which could create energy,—would be, not a machine, nay, not a creature, but a creator.

Here, then, is an instance, and there are many others in which good progress in biology of late may be reported. But it is no less true, at the same time, that the number of problems which have emerged, and



which still remain unsolved, has been increasing in a much higher ratio.

It is seen, for instance, that an amoeba (seemingly nothing better than a little bit of animated glue) can extemporise a stomach for itself, and accomplish a complete assimilation of its food ; a protist creature, a mere structureless speck of protoplasm, can do that which we ourselves cannot do without a special stomach, a large liver, a pancreas, an elaborately convoluted intestine, &c., &c., and too often do it badly after all. Hence the problem, what the necessity, what the reason for these various certainly indispensable, and yet seemingly needless, appendages of the central canal of certain animals ?

Again, there are many minute creatures—insects, for instance—which, to judge from their actions, are as instinct with mind, and in some respects more so than man himself,—mind in man, by all that appears, being altogether dependent upon brain,—while in these minute creatures scarcely anything to call a brain can be detected at all ! The questions that may be or that are actually put are, in fact, endless, and are increasing every day. Moreover, sometimes they are such that they lie at the very basis of biology, at the root of all subsequent thought, craving an answer in the mind of every enquirer.

Such, for instance, is the question whether life and living things may not make their apparition where they were never before, and never have been introduced, in certain solutions, for instance, sealed when very hot, and supposed to have merely chemical contents ; or whether a spore, or ovum, or germ of some kind, itself the product of some living thing, must not have been first placed wherever life actually makes its appearance ? This question is plainly capital in biology. But the most eminent students answer it in quite opposite ways. Nor does science obtain any consolation, save in the invention of learned terms, formulating the speculation, as that, for instance, of “biogenesis” or “abiogenesis.” The ancients never doubted that putrefaction gave birth to living creatures, and was all the parentage they needed. The moderns, having analysed the careless observations of the ancients, and found that, not only in the cases they counted upon as proving this equivocal generation, ova had been laid by living creatures, similar to those which presented themselves in the putrefying substances, but that all, or almost all living creatures produce ova, capable of developing into creatures like themselves, voted almost if not altogether unanimously against the ancient view. But now the wave of belief is tending again to the old shore. All the experiments of a Pasteur and others, seemingly so exclusive of the ancient belief, and in favour of the modern “*ex ovo omnia*,” have not been able to prevent a Pouchet and others from bringing forward other experiments of a contrary bearing, while

a Haeckel admits that experiments have not proved it, but that, doubtless, originally living arose from dead matter.

Similarly also, Huxley, sanctioning the method of experiment, and, like Haeckel, halving the difference, gives it as his opinion that, so far as experiments have been rigidly made and rightly interpreted, there is nothing to contradict the adage of "*omne vivum ex ovo*," but that, for his own part, had he been present at the beginning of life, he would have expected to see protoplasm making its appearance among dead matter. He, therefore, contents himself with a conclusion which his accepted method of investigation does not sanction, and leaves us only his candour to admire.

Now what, may we not ask in passing, can be the cause of all this conflict among men of science as to the origin of life? Is it not explained by the narrowness of the current conception of life, and the lowness of the point of view? The biologists of the present day never think of anything else but of seeking the living among the dead. Contrary to all reason, to all observation where the contact between the two is certain, they take for granted that death is antecedent to life. But is not the fact the very reverse of this? Of that fact is not "*omne vivum ex ovo*" a far too limited expression? Does not that fact, in its full extent, require rather the words "*ex vivo omnia*?" Yes; at the fountain head is not all life? Is not He who is there emphatically He who liveth for ever? And, having due regard to the kindred relationship that there always is between a cause and its immediate effect, is not that which we are reasonably to look for this,—that all nature, in proportion as it is protistic or lies near to the ever-living One, shall be found to be teeming with life? Let us not wonder, then, at the great embarrassment of men of science, so long as their thoughts never rise higher than to seek the living among the dead. But neither let us, on the other hand, manifest any sympathy with those quasi-theologically disposed persons, who seem to think that plants, and especially animals, alone require a Creator, while as to the crystalline world, and, indeed, all nature besides, it may go about its business, and be left in a merely aboriginal or atheistical or even antitheistical state.

And here let me make a correction, or rather an addition, to the remarks that have been made already on the subject of respiration. In these remarks it was presumed, as is usually done, that the only new source of energy obtained by breathing comes from the incidence of oxygen on the organism, and that the whole cycle of the energising consists in phenomena which are purely chemical or mechanical, which in the last analysis are the same. I desire here to add (though under the disadvantage as yet, no doubt, of its seeming a mere hypothesis), that on tracing the relative phenomena to their very source, it comes

out that respiration is preluded and exemplified, nay, we may say begun, by an agency on the sunbeam or the ætherial elements, which can impart power to these elements to supply what they impart to living nature, and consequently lose from themselves. Not that this Power, which is the first of things, and which presents itself to philosophy as lying beyond and above the sunbeam, is a property either of æther or of matter. It is Power in its very essence and fountain, possessed of all the highest attributes which are implied in the most complete idea of Power, and which Power is seen to possess anywhere. It is Power in perfection. It is, therefore, Power in unity, perfectly free or uncontrolled, perfectly perceptive or intelligent—in fine, possessing Personality. In a word, it is the omnipotent Author of all.

This is the first word of our philosophy. And hence there attaches to that philosophy the doctrine that, while the Author of all imparts power to those beings and things to which He has awarded existence stately and harmoniously with their natures, so as to produce the vital, the dynamical, and mechanical phenomena of nature uniformly, He also stands in such relationship to all of them, as an Omnipotent Will holding them all in His hand, that by a procedure which may be justly called normal, that is, without any interference or miracle as commonly understood, He can empower or withhold power, in particular ways, forms, and cases, and so can order both individual life and cosmical phenomena as it may please Him.

To apprehend, therefore, as is often now done, and still more, to affirm, that human entreaty to the Deity for any physical change is necessarily impotent to obtain that change, and that even for a moral change such entreaty is nothing more than a mental discipline, is to entertain an apprehension, and to make an affirmation which is itself as unsound in science and philosophy as all mankind in all ages have shewn, by their prayers, that they feel it to be.

As to the denial, also, of the possibility, and consequently of the fact of miracle, that denial is valid only when nature has been so conceived and its course so defined as to exclude miracle according to a definition. Within the compass of such a definition, miracle is of course impossible, and there need be no inquiry about any historical miracle as to the evidence on which it rests. But such a conception of nature is not that of reality. It is not from the real world, but from an imaginary one, that miracle has been excluded in this way. As to reality, instead of its being near the truth to say that there never has been and never can be a miracle, it would be far nearer the truth to say that the whole course and economy of nature is one sustained miracle. That course, that economy does not excite popular wonder, indeed, because people are quite familiar with it and expect it, knowing that the same phenomena will recur



when all the conditions of existence are the same. This phenomena surely must do, since their Author is at once perfect in intelligence, and perfect master of His material, and therefore is not liable to make any mistakes, or to introduce any corrections, or to determine otherwise from moment to moment or from age to age, than as he determined at first when the material economy was instituted and set agoing by Him.

And here I may make a remark upon the term "law," as now usually applied to nature. This uniformity of procedure which is implied in that of a perfect intelligence, is commonly taken, or rather mistaken, for the fulfilment of a law. One hears of little or nothing else in science now but of the laws of nature and of phenomena. And such language is not only convenient, but, perhaps, in consequence of the poverty of language, it is inevitable. Still it is only rhetorical. It is not strictly scientific. There is a great difference, in point of fact, between the fulfilment of a law, properly so called, and the recurrence of a phenomenon in the course of nature. A law, properly so called, is a formula or rule of action framed at some past time for the regulation of the time to come. It is a fixture which, having originated in the past, is handed down to be worked in the present by some executive power who shall know, accept, and obey it. Law, in fact, stands in contrast with autocracy, or a self-determining power acting, as such, from day to day. Now, of the two it is the latter which is most applicable to the course of nature and the production of phenomena. Not that there is necessarily any difference in the issue or products of either mode. Thus, let us suppose a living executive power or prince constituted with such hereditary perfection, that his instinctive judgments and proceedings upon them should be always the same as those of the laws of the land where he was brought up, then in that case everything in the state would proceed according to law, just as it had done before his day, though now without any reference to statute or any recognition of it. The entire regulation and life of society in such a case would be due to the activity of a living presiding will. And yet, those of the population who were acquainted with the statute-book could predict in every case what the forthcoming proceeding would be. But surely this uniformity and certainty, this power of prediction, would not detract from the recognition of the will and the power of the prince. On the contrary, in virtue of his transcendent ancestral and patriotic instincts, he would surely command the loyalty and homage of all. Now, for a perfect intellectual heredity, substitute a perfect intelligence, with perfect knowledge of the capacity of his subject atoms, and we have something like a conception of the mode of procedure in the production of the phenomena of nature. Nature cannot be said, except in a metaphorical way, to have been ordered long ago, and once for all to be as it is now and



will be for ever. Nature is from age to age and from day to day the immediate expression of the ever-acting mind of the ever-living One, who, though not immanent in nature or one with it, is yet everywhere present to every atom in supreme power—able to modify or give birth to new phenomena to any extent, if He should elect to do so ; in venturing to suppose which, however, plainly such ignorant and limited beings as we are should both think and speak with great reserve.

On this subject (in a small work published in 1855, and now no longer to be had) I have made the following remarks, with a view to show the harmony that there is between the expectation of the human mind and history on the one hand, and the course of nature on the other :\*—“ *An opening must be kept for possible miracles.*—There exists in the universe free power. Consciousness bears witness to it in self. And its existence either in self or anywhere it is impossible to explain, or to satisfy the demands of reason anyhow, without admitting that free power exists in perfection in Him who is the Author of all,—in whom it has just been seen that philosophy must find its last word, in so far as the study of phenomena is regarded as the study of laws. Now, of a free power the characteristic is to originate acts which may be both new and singular, and under no law but that of liberty. *Such acts, therefore, and phenomena expressive of them, we are to expect in the world, if the world be fully a manifestation of its Author.* Yet, this under two conditions :—*First*, we are to expect them sparingly : for if in His ordinary providence the Creator put forth His free power from day to day in accomplishing new and singular acts, there would be no place for wisdom in man ; experience would only deceive ; forethought would be folly ; and all science would be impossible. Whilst, therefore, philosophy leads us to regard the occurrence of such new and singular acts of the free power of God, as necessary in order to render creation fully expressive of the Creator, it leads us also to expect them but rarely ; and, therefore, to find them bearing some name expressive at once of their rarity and singularity, such as the term ‘miracle,’ which has now supplanted every other.” It leads us also to expect them only in those points in which human nature comes into contact with physical nature, and in what we might call the singular points of the causes of social development and rectification.

\* Elements of the Economy of Nature. A Fragment. Second Edition. Chapman and Hall, London, 1855, p. 2.

## CHAPTER II.

### THE PREVALENCE OF LIFE IN NATURE, PAST AND PRESENT.

ORDINARY observation leads us but little to suspect the extent to which LIFE exists now, and has existed in former ages, in our world. Compared with the amount of dead matter in the world, the number of living beings seems to be very small. And even to indulge, as an imagination, the thought that the crust of the earth can be to any considerable extent the product of the animated beings which have lived and died in our planet, seems very extravagant.

But when the naked eye is aided by the microscope, and due pains are taken to discover life wherever it may be now, or may have been in some former epoch, considerate and extensive observation leads to quite another view ; and, indeed, makes it difficult to say where life may not have reigned in some former age, or may not even still exist.

Into whatever realm of nature we pry with the microscope, if only there be moisture in it and oxygen have access to it, then what is found is this, that the higher the power of the instrument, just so much the greater its revelations of life, animal or vegetable, just so much the more numerous the living beings or things that are seen in the field of the instrument.

As to water in general, though it may be such as to have been hitherto held to be pure, chemists and biologists give it as their opinion, that in order to be free from life, it must have been recently distilled ; if not, it never fails, when analysed, to give indications of ammonia, which, as a product of the analysis of a natural medium or substance, is generally accepted as an evidence of the present or previous existence of living nature in the medium or mass subjected to analysis. And, indeed, without invoking the aid of chemical analysis or other means of discovery than the eye aided by the microscope, it is not easy to find any drop of water, which has stood exposed to the air for any length of time, which does not show itself to be teeming with living organisms.

It has also been demonstrated that the air is full of living things, as ova and spores, at least, if not as fully developed forms. There is, moreover, good reason for believing in the existence of the latter also in the air. It were strange and contrary to the analogy of nature—for nature is teeming with life wherever life is possible—that a medium should be capable of entertaining in it spores and ova in life for an indefinite time, and not be peopled with developing and fully developed organisms also. That they might be light enough to float in the air, and as fit every way for leading their lives in this medium as fishes are in the sea, there can be no doubt. And that they should be so small as to be invisible to the naked eye of man, is only what is to be expected; while with regard to the use of the microscope in this instance, it does not appear how it could be applied with a chance of success in catching them. Moreover, if caught, such is probably the delicacy of their organisation, that before they could be subjected to examination, they would most likely have been shrunk up so as to be mistaken for spores. In a word, nothing is so difficult as to find any region where man himself can live which is not occupied by other forms of life also. Nay, where man could not live a moment—where, till lately, it was believed that nothing could live, and that nought but eternal darkness and desolation reigned; in fine, the lowest depths of the ocean, like the sunny meadows and hill sides, are now found to be not merely teeming, but carpeted with living beings!

Nor is it only in quantity and diffusion that simple organisms everywhere abound, but also in exquisite symmetry and beauty. In comparison with many of them, everything among large animals seems slow and stolid, and often ugly. They are to large animals what lace-work is to matting. To be convinced of this, happily, it is not necessary to inspect them in the living state, which would be impossible for all but a few observers. Happily, an indefinite time after they may have died, one can study them at his leisure in the cabinet; for many of these beings, though so minute, have been endowed with the power of secreting, for their own protection while in life, a marbly or quartzzy framework, which is very durable, and which, under the microscope, proves to be of exquisite beauty. And in consequence of this, geology has already made the discovery, that not only are many strata of the earth's crust full of organic remains, but that strata to an almost incredible extent are wholly composed of them—composed of them to such an extent, indeed, as to suggest the inquiry whether those rocks which exhibit no traces of pre-existing animals, and are therefore named azoic, are devoid of such traces, not because there were no living beings at the time of the original deposition of these strata, but because the central heat, the abyssal pressure, and the chemical action to which these rocks

have subsequently been subjected, which have obviously changed them much (so much, indeed, as to have gained for them the name of metamorphic rocks), have obliterated all the traces of antecedent organisation.

No doubt the existing state of chemical hypothesis, as popularly held at present, implies that all the silicium, all the calcium, &c., which constitute the skeletons of these protista and protozoa, existed before the organisms in which these elements are found, nay, existed for ever, or, at least, from the commencement of creation, so that, instead of having been really secreted in any measure by these organisms they were merely taken up by them into their bodies from without. But if we do not embarrass ourselves with the chemical hypothesis alluded to (which rests on very insufficient evidence, and begins to be very seriously called in question, even by chemists),\* if we fall back upon simpler views of the inner structure of material nature, and look to the obvious tendency of geological observation, we shall be led rather to infer that it is not with respect to ourselves merely, not among such animals and plants merely as happen to be visible to our eyes, that life precedes death, but that, far more extensively, possibly even universally, what is now dead is only what has been left behind of what formerly was alive. At anyrate, what we actually observe as to the relation of the organic and the inorganic, the living and the dead in nature, is this, that every living thing, either during its life excretes, or after its dissolution leaves behind it, a certain quantity of ashes or mineral matter. That all this, in every case, has been introduced into the living organism in the very forms in which it is given out by it, is generally maintained. But it is merely assumed, it never has been proved. Nor have many experiments, especially of late, been made to test it, because experiment in

\* The popular chemical hypothesis alluded to is to the effect that there are in our planet some 64 elements, or different kinds of matter, the least particles of none of which are transformable into each other in any circumstances, or in any period of time, however long, and all of which are simple, primordial, ultimate, or even eternal, and eternally dissimilar to each other. The chemists may decline to express it in such strong terms, but it cannot be denied that on such a hypothesis all geological, all chemical investigations are conducted. It is incredible, however, that such a hypothesis can stand much longer, because it makes all nature in its ground a chaos, and the interpretations of the phenomena a continual struggle against everything that is feasible; its only evidence, meanwhile, being the fact that chemists have not yet succeeded in decomposing these 64, as they have gradually succeeded in doing with regard to other substances. But though these 64 were (like all other material particles) of a molecular nature, why should the chemist expect to be able to decompose them, since, before they have come into his hands at all, or been subjected by him to his mimicry of natural processes, they have been subjected for untold ages to the infinitely greater ordeal of the white heat of the sunbeam, the central heat and the volcano, and have survived it?



general is the slave of hypothesis, and experiments which in their issue might possibly damage a favourite belief, are generally avoided.

It may be stated, however, and it ought not to be forgotten, that, looking simply to nature for information, ashy or mineral matter may have what may be called a meteoric or fiery origin, as well as an origin from vital action. But here we have to consider the latter only.

Let it not be hastily inferred that, in that grand conception as to the origin of our solar system, which goes by the name of the nebular hypothesis, anything is implied which is inconsistent with a primeval vitality. Not but the attainment, on the part of our planet, of a certain central mass and density, implies the evolution in its interior of an intense heat altogether incompatible with the existence of such organisms as are known to us. Not but, in the present epoch of nature, it is only at a considerable distance from the centre that the temperature is mild enough for life, in such forms as we know it. But during the long ages of change from the nebulous state (whatever that may mean) to one which, in the central parts of the future planet, should be more dense, there is no evidence that heat was developed so rapidly as to be destructive of life, either about the centre or at any distances from it. On the contrary, the whole progress of scientific discovery rather points to an epoch of condensation, so long continued, so orderly and so gradual, that the degrees of heat generated may possibly have been the very temperatures which are most congenial to the construction of living beings, and to their enjoyment of life.

Viewing the world, on the other hand, as condensed to the degree that it now is, a sufficient cause appears both for those metamorphic and igneous rocks which geologists recognise, and for the obliteration of all traces of antecedent life during the genesis of these rocks. Notwithstanding this, however, every year is discovering organic remains further abroad, and deeper down among the strata, previously noted as azoic.

But since the reader may suspect that my argument might tempt me to exaggerate on this subject, let him peruse the following extracts from a small work\* which very happily combines the character of scientific and popular, which, moreover, records only the work in building up the concrete part of our planet, of the simplest animals, and among these, the work of those only which give calcareous, not siliceous skeletons.

The author first adduces the work of the Foraminifera :--

"Our path now lies for a season in the crust of the earth. We must look into that mighty record of the past for proofs that the sarcode amœba (see figs. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5) was a creature ultimately designed by

\* Popular Illustrations of the Lower Forms of Life, &c. By C. R. Bree, M.D., F.L.S., F.Z.S. London, 1868.

omnipotent power to build up the solid portion of the world which man was destined to people. It has been the province of very recent investigators to prove that the amoeba is the oldest of known fossils, that it was the architect, unconsciously working away at a period so remote, that we can only realise it in any intelligible form by comparing it with the space we are told to think of, supposing the nebulous matter, which is resolved into stars by the high power of Rosse's telescope, reveals to us suns which are the centres of systems like our own."

"Now, beginning with the first fossiliferous period . . . . we find the Laurentian rocks composed of quartz, slate, and limestone, forming in many parts a beautiful veined green marble, occupying in Canada and New York an area of 200 square miles, and having a known thickness of 30,000 feet, and an assumed one of 90,000 feet, or, as Sir William Logan has suggested, a thickness which 'may possibly far surpass that of all the succeeding rocks, from the base of the Paleozoic series to the present time, carrying us back to a period so remote, that the appearance of the so called primordial fauna may be considered a comparatively modern event.'

"This extraordinary formation has been recently proved to have been formed almost entirely by Foraminifera. . . . . The amoeba, which formed the shell of the *Eozoon canadense* in those ancient waters, was at least twelve times the size of any known living species of the present day.

"It is not known as yet if any other animal lived in those ancient seas. On this subject the stone book is silent. There is, however, no decided proof that other animals may not have existed coeval with the Eozoon, although their remains are not found in the Laurentian rocks. They may have been destroyed by the heat which metamorphosed the sediment of those seas into Labrador felspar, hypersthene, crystalline limestone, and beautiful green veined marble, but which left intact the cast of the Foraminifera, and so perfectly, that the fossilised pseudopodia may be seen, like tufts of silver wire, radiating through its canals and chambers.

"For the time being then, at least, the *Eozoon canadense* must be considered as the oldest example of organic structure which the records of geology have revealed to us; and we must receive as a fact of science, that the lowest known sedimentary strata, for the depth of from four to sixteen miles round the earth, have been formed by the lump of jelly called the amoeba. The student will note that, although these Laurentian rocks have only been observed, say, in North America, Ireland, Sweden, &c., yet the geological inference is that they would be found to occupy the same position in all other parts of the world if the more recent formations were removed. Thus, were I to bore into the

crust of the earth, at Colchester,\* I should expect, at a distance of  $13\frac{1}{2}$  miles, to come down upon the Laurentian rocks.

“There is something truly practical and satisfactory in the revelations of a science which shows to us how gradually the crust of the earth was built up, and how far down that vista of time, in which the imagination may revel in awe and wonder, those mighty preparations were begun which culminated in the creation of man himself.

“It is, however, in the Cretaceous group of strata that the Foraminifera begin to appear most abundantly. It may surprise many of my readers when I tell them that the chalk cliffs throughout the world consist mainly of the remains of the Foraminifera. We cannot go where we will and examine the stupendous Laurentian rocks, but we can visit our chalk cliffs at Dover, or wander over our Sussex downs; and we can also realise the great use to man of chalk, when we see our farmers spreading it upon their stiff clays; and we can, without much trouble, follow the “white hills” into Ireland and Spain, France and Greece, for an extent of 1140 miles. We can follow them from the south of Sweden to Bordeaux, for 840 miles; and we can measure these cliffs, and find them to have a thickness of from 600 to 1000 feet; and then we can sit down in some snug corner and smoke our pipes, and ponder upon the wonderful fact that all the most important parts of our earth’s crust have been built up by an animal, sometimes so small as only to be seen through the microscope—a creature without muscle, bone, nerve, or blood-vessel, a mere lump of jelly!

“At the beginning of the Eocene period, and contemporaneously with the London clay and Paris basin formation, we first observe the appearance of the Nummulite. It reached its highest point of development about the middle of the Eocene period, when at least fifty species are known to have existed. It then began suddenly to decline, appeared in less and less numbers in the later Tertiaries, and in our seas only a single species is known to exist.

“But in the period above indicated, this little Foraminifer had formed beds of enormous thickness and great extent in the crust of the earth. Some idea of these extraordinary strata—known as the Nummulitic limestone—may be gathered from the following extract taken from Professor Haughton’s ‘Manual of Geology,’ pp. 176 and 177:—‘The geological distribution of Nummulites is most remarkable, as they are found along the entire line of mountain chains from the Pyrenees to Thibet, and occur at all altitudes from 8000 feet and 10,000 feet in the Pyrenees and Alps, to 15,000 feet in the Himalaya mountains; they

\* The author resides there, and his statements were originally addressed to people there.



form a geological zone stretching W.N.W. to E.S.E. from  $10^{\circ}$  W. long. to  $55^{\circ}$  E. long., having a width of 1800 miles. Farther to the east it narrows considerably, but the entire length from west to east embraces  $98^{\circ}$  long., and its breadth from north to south ranges from the 16th to the 55th degree of north latitude.

"The Nummulitic limestone surrounds the entire border of the Mediterranean Sea and the Black Sea. It constitutes a large portion of Egypt and of Asia Minor. . . . It is found in the elevated regions of the sources of the Tigris and Euphrates, and extends from Upper Armenia to the Persian Gulf. It also stretches eastward from Armenia along the valley of the Araxes by the chain of Elburz and the plateau of Irau, as far as the mountains of Cabul and the Punjaub. It completely surrounds the valley of Cashmere, and rises in the chain of the Himalayas to a height of 15,996 feet, from which altitude it descends on the south-east of the chain along the right bank of the Indus, forming the lower hills of Beloochistan. Still farther to the east it is found in the mountains of Kossya, between the Brahmapootra and the plains of Bengal.'

"I need say but little more to prove the important agency assigned to the amœba in building up the crust of the earth. In all this there is a vast proof of the design with which this lowly organism was created. Take away the Laurentian rocks, and the chalk, and the Nummulitic limestone, and *the crust of the earth would tumble to pieces*. And yet they were formed by a lump of jelly that could only have the blind instinct of self-support and self-preservation.

"And the same design is being carried out in our time for the probable creation of a future world, in which man himself may be the most important fossil.

"The bed of the Atlantic Ocean, even at a depth of two miles, is covered by ooze teeming with Foraminifera, ninety-seven per cent. of the soundings at the above depth being found by Captain Dayman to consist of Globigerina. They are principally found in the Gulf Stream and follow its course. Does this indicate a future group of hills or mountains having such a range? The coasts of Australia are crowded with living Foraminifera; in fact, they are found in the soundings of most tropical seas, and the greater the depth, as a rule, the larger the specimens. They occupy fifty per cent. of the ooze in the deeper waters of the Mediterranean, Adriatic, Red Sea, Canaries, West India Islands, east and west coasts of South America, St Helena, and Isle of France.

"The history of the Foraminifera is part of that of the earth. I have in this paper endeavoured to show how intimately the study of animal life is connected with those higher generalisations upon which the science of geology is founded. How much is our interest heightened



in that drop of water under the microscope, and that protean lump of unsymmetrical sarcode called amœba, when we associate them with the physical architecture of the world, and the forethought and design of that world's Creator !”

The author afterwards proceeds to notice the work of the coral polype (fig. 6).

“ But there is no part of the interest attached to the coral of greater significance than that which we shall find connected with its history in the formation of the crust of the earth. The thousands of islands, which, for the space of 16,000,000 of square miles, are found in the Great Pacific Ocean, are almost entirely formed of coral. All the north-east coast of New South Wales, for upwards of 1000 miles, has a barrier reef of coral. In the Indian Ocean the immense chain of islands known as Cosmoledo, Saya de Malha, Chagos, the Maldivas, and the Laccadives, are all formed of coral occupying a space of nearly 2000 miles. The eastern coast of Africa, from Mozambique nearly to Ajan, upwards of 1000 miles, is an immense fringing reef of coral. The coasts of the Red Sea are almost entirely coral. Turning again to the Indian Ocean, we find the south-west coast of Sumatra and the southern coast of Java fringed with coral. From the northern extremity of the Celebes to the Philippine Islands, thence to Bashee, Patchow, and Loo Chow, and back to the China Sea, we find the Paracells and other large islands all formed of coral; and, lastly, for I need not continue details, the islands of Bermuda and the West Indies are surrounded by fringing reefs of coral.

“ This rapid glance at the works carried on *in the present day* by the polyp which forms the coral, will give some slight idea of the immense importance which this creature has possessed in fashioning the form of the earth's surface. If we go below this, and look at the records of its working in time, our astonishment will be vastly increased. Some of the most interesting problems connected with the age of the world are solved by these records.”

The creatures by which such mundane quantities of concrete earthly matter are produced, are, as I have stated, of the simplest structure, and usually the individual is of a very minute size, or, more correctly, their organism is, so far as appears, but little differentiated, and they are so minute, that probably there are many of them which are too small for even the highest power of the microscope to render visible. At any rate, beneath the horizon, within which the highest power of the most powerful microscope can detect objects or particles different from the liquid medium in which search is made, there is every reason to believe that there is still a lower, or, shall I not rather say, a higher world teeming with life. I have said that these creatures of the dawn, or protozoa,

are to be described as not visibly differentiated, that is, they do not exhibit to the eye many different tissues or organs as larger animals do. For this reason they are commonly spoken of as very simple—mere specks of living jelly—and so forth. But all that is really seen is this, that they consist of a transparent substance, which, when burned, gives universally the same chemical elements as its constituents. But when it is considered how manifold and how marvellous the powers of that substance are, reason checks the eye in affirming this to be so very simple. As to their external forms, they are so multifarious as seemingly to defy any generic descriptions, even the most reserved. Sometimes even the same species, nay, the same individual, appears to have power of affecting all imaginable forms, and to be a very proteus, which name has indeed been appropriated for some of them. To acquaint himself with them, the reader must have recourse to works on zoology, and mark the forms and powers of the Rhizopoda and the Infusoria, the Hydrozoa, and the Actinozoa, as also the succeeding orders.”

Referring to the sponges also, the author from whom I have quoted so largely makes the following remark:—“The sponges are found fossil in the oldest rocks. They attain their maximum in the chalk. Most of our flints have a sponge or its spiculæ as a nucleus, round which the siliceous matter has accumulated.” The sponges are, indeed, very different from the other creatures which have been noticed. But they do not fail to contribute their share to the crust of the earth.

There are other organisms also which, without any adequate reason, naturalists are more disposed to refer to the vegetable than to the animal kingdom, or to an organic realm lying between the two which has been named that of the *Protista*, by which it appears that material for rocks has been supplied to a vast extent. Such are, for instance, the Diatomaceæ, of which thousands of species have been ascertained to be still living and dying, and leaving their beautiful siliceous shells behind them to increase the quantity of dead matter in the crust of the earth. Composed entirely of such shells, extensive strata and beds of stone are found here and there among the strata of our planet. They are individually so minute, that Ehrenberg estimates that, in Bohemian Tripoli, there are 187 millions in a single grain weight, and yet, at that place there is a stratum extending over a wide area which is no less than fourteen feet thick.

To the seremarks some others may be added from Lyell's Elements of Geology.

He states what is still more interesting in reference to the view in which we are now regarding such occurrences in the upper part of this stratum, that there is “another heavier and more compact stone, a kind of semi-opal, in which innumerable parts of Diatomaceæ and spi-

culæ of the spongilla are filled with, and cemented together by, siliceous matter. It is supposed that the siliceous remains of the most delicate Diatomaceæ have been dissolved by water, and have thus given rise to this opal, in which the more durable fossils are preserved like insects in amber. This opinion is confirmed by the fact, that the organic bodies decrease in number and sharpness of outline in proportion as the opaline cement increases in quantity." Treating of the origin of metamorphic rocks, the same author makes these remarks:—"Now, the alterations above described, as superinduced in rocks by volcanic dikes and granitic veins, prove incontestably, that powers exist in nature capable of transforming fossiliferous into crystalline strata—powers capable of generating in them a new mineral character, similar to, nay, often absolutely identical with that of gneiss, mica-schist, and other stratified members of the hypogene series. The precise nature of those altering causes, which may provisionally be termed plutonic, is, in a great degree, obscure and doubtful; but their reality is no less clear, and we must suppose the influence of the heat to be in some way connected with the transmutation, if, for reasons before explained, we concede the igneous origin of granite." And again,—“The total absence of any trace of fossils has inclined many geologists to attribute the origin of the crystalline strata to a period antecedent to the existence of organic beings. Admitting, they say, the obliteration, in some cases, of fossils by plutonic action, we might still expect that traces of them would oftener occur in certain ancient systems of slate, in which, as in Cumberland, some conglomerates occur. But, in urging this argument, it seems to have been forgotten that there are stratified formations of enormous thickness, and of various ages, and some of them very modern, all formed after the earth had become the abode of living creatures, which are, nevertheless, in certain districts, entirely destitute of all vestiges of organic bodies. In some the traces of fossils may have been effaced by water and acids at many successive periods; and it is clear that, the older the stratum, the greater is the chance of its being non-fossiliferous, even if it has escaped all metamorphic action.”

In the review of what has been advanced in this chapter, it may, perhaps, strike the reader as strange, that the burden of the earth's crust should have been laid to such an extent upon animal beings, and not rather upon plants. The prevalent impression is that the vegetable preceded the animal kingdom. And it is certain that vegetable remains, in virtue of the carbon which they contain, can give solid strata which may possibly last as long in the crust of the earth as any other, attaining, in different epochs, the successive states of flaming coal, glance coal, and ultimately plumbago. But minute research into the intimate structure of the living cell in plants has shown that its lining and living part



is the same as that in animals, and that the vegetable matter or cellulose which characterises plants is of the nature of a very delicate shell encrusting and protecting, and supporting the living part. The simplest plants, therefore, must be viewed as farther away from the beginnings of life than the purely sarcode animal, and analogous to those which, for their protection and support, secrete calcium or silicium. But here the philosophically minded observer is reminded how inadequate merely popular distinctions are to form the ground of a truly scientific classification of the productions of nature. Multitudes of organisms present themselves in the field of the microscope with regard to which some of the most approved naturalists maintain that they cannot be called either animals or plants, and for which they have, therefore, instituted the kingdom *Protista*, as lying between decided *Protozoa* and *Protophyta*. Meantime, no generally accepted definition either of an animal or of a plant exists. A popular conception merely, which is extremely vague, is left to rule. This classification of organic nature, therefore, into three kingdoms instead of the two, the third embracing organisms in which it is thought that the characteristics neither of animal nor of vegetable organism and life distinctly appears, implies no more than this, that in descending the scale of organisation, now in the line of animals, now in that of plants, with a popular conception of what an animal and what a plant is, we come, at least, in both lines to organisms, with respect to which we do not know whether to refer them to the one kingdom or to the other, and so, as a haven for our ignorance, we institute for them a third kingdom. Nothing, however, either in organisation or function, has appeared in them to justify such an institution. Its true place, therefore, if such there be at all, is that of a parenthesis or appendix for receiving organisms which, at present, it is deemed improper to classify in either of the two established kingdoms of nature.

As to the eight classes of Hæckel's *Protista*, most of them have hitherto been regarded as animal organisms, and have been treated of by zoologists, and there is no good reason for making them change their zoöic place. This also is eminently the place of his first order, his *Gymnomera*, of which *Bathybius Hæckelii* is adduced as an oceanic, and *Protamœba primitiva* as a fresh water, example.

Moreover, these *Monera*, it is to be remembered, are the organisms out of which Hæckel raises the whole of the living world, both of animals and plants. There is nothing, then, in his class *Protista* that is adverse to the views now advanced, which regard animal nature as the first manifestation of life in our planet.



## CHAPTER III.

INDICATIONS OF A CERTAIN RECURRENT FORM (THE NAKED OR APPENDICULATED SPHERE) AND CERTAIN NUMBERS ( $12 + 20 = 32$ ) IN LIVING BEINGS AND THEIR PARTS.

BIOLOGY, the science of life, when treated as a branch of philosophy, which is our present aim, has for its object to know and understand, as also to account for, the forms, the structures, and the functions of living beings and things.

Now, in order to make any progress in such an inquiry, our intellectual weakness obliges us to direct our attention first to those which appear to be most simple, and which, therefore, are probably most easily known and understood. Moreover, according to our conception of the origin of nature, this is also to begin at the beginning; so that here philosophical propriety sanctions what logical necessity imposes.

It will assist us if we consider these simple beings as they exist—

1. In confinement.
2. In freedom.

In the former situation are those living and ever transforming cells of which the entire animal organism, so far as it is alive, consists, and of which, when these living embers are normally being transformed and cemented together, it is in the main constructed. But comparative anatomy is still in a state far too crude and rudimentary to undertake the discussion of these organic elements. Nor, indeed, does it seem desirable to consider them as individualised beings (Endocystica), distinct from those which they constitute.

The case is different when there are found in animals, organisms which are truly animated, and which yet form no organic part of the animals themselves in which they are met with, such as entozoa, gemmæ, ova, spores, &c., of which we may adduce, as an example, fig. 1, *a*. It represents (highly magnified) an encysted or reposing Gregarina, an inhabitant of the intestinal canal of insects, &c. It also represents *Amœba sphaerococcus* in repose, also highly magnified. This animal

consists of a spherical mass of plasma, which encloses a nucleus together with a nucleolus, and is surrounded by a cell membrane."—(*Hæckel Schöpfungsgeschichte* p. 380.) But it may equally well represent the drawings of ova in the same work, both those of invertebrata and vertebrata (see Plates VI. and X.), and in physiological works generally. Respecting amœba in this reposing form, Huxley says, "No doubt many persons will be struck with the close resemblance of the structure of this body to that which is possessed by an ovum. . . . You might take the more solid particle to be the representative of the germinal spot, and the vesicle to be that of the germinal vesicle, while the semifluid sarcodal contents might be regarded as the yolk, and the outer membrane as the vitelline membrane. I do not wish to strain the analogy too far, but it is at any rate interesting to observe this close morphological resemblance between one of the lowest of animals and that form in which all the higher animals commence their existence."\*

That the lowest and the highest products of organisation, and those whose development is the most diverse in the world, should thus appear to the eye to be so similar, shows the utter hopelessness of morphology if the natural eyesight alone is to be consulted, without due regard also to mechanical or rational principles. Naturalists too often think of the last molecular or moving things rendered visible by the microscope (which, compared with ourselves and the common furniture of the world around us, are of course very small), as if they were among the very least things of a molecular or moving kind that nature produces, when, in point of fact, they more probably are to the latter as African elephants to infusory animalcules. Physiologists, also, too often allow themselves to infer homogeneity in a soft mass or morsel of any kind, however marvellous its powers may be, merely on the strength of having observed an equal amount of transparency, or a similar coloration all through! But surely such an inference is most unwarrantable, even on the principles of the most obvious logic. And moreover, the spectroscope has shown of late, and that to the eye itself, how incompetent this organ is, when informed by natural light merely, to observe differences, even when they are of quite an elemental character.

Can anything be more certain than that the intimate structure of a human ovum, which has latent in it the power of developing into the form and structure of a human being, and that only by an action sustained during many years, must be entirely diverse from that of an amœba, which within a few minutes can extemporise legs and arms for itself, nay, a stomach also, and digest its food without a visible trace of any of those viscera which man must possess, and that in a state of

\* An Introduction to the Classification of Animals, p. 8.

health and activity, before he can do the same? And how diverse, also, must the intimate structure of that amoeba be from a morsel of glue, with which, nevertheless, biologists compare it, and which, no doubt, gives a somewhat similar image on the retina? Let us indulge in no such inferences, in no such comparisons. They are most unscientific. Our eyesight was given us for showing us neither the limits of the universe nor far into it, but, on the contrary, for enabling us to seize our food, and take notice of such objects as are dangerous to our bodies, while these objects are yet at some distance from us, and we may possibly master them or escape from them. For all that belongs to the sphere of science, properly so called, it is the mind's eye reviewing the observations of the material eye, it is the interpreting power, it is reason alone, that we can consult with advantage.

However, in the field of observation and thought to which these remarks apply, this much appears to the eyesight, that individualised objects, when their simplicity is a maximum, and when, though possessing life and capable of development, they are in a state of repose or hybernation, tend to possess a spherical or cellular form, containing within it a nucleus, as also often a nucleolus. This, the form and structure of every cell when it is as yet unchanged, and is just beginning its individualised or centralised life, and every encysted Gregarina, Amœba, &c., and spores and ova in general, demonstrate.

But let us not proceed farther without asking whether we are right in regarding Endocystica, Gregarinida, ova, and the like, as complete, unmutilated, or unshorn objects. They are all intestinal, internal, or imprisoned organisms, occupying walled interiors where delicate extensions of their substance, as well as free locomotion, must be forbidden them. Hence, is there not reason to suspect that they may be defective, or shorn of those delicate extensions of substance or organs of locomotion which are the characteristic endowments of animal nature? Suppose, then, that we have similar morsels of protoplasm, let us say, in a situation where free growth and movement are possible,—in open water, for instance,—what do we find respecting simple organisms when there? To this the general answer is, that while, previous to change, as in imprisoned organisms, the spherical or spheroidal form and an analogous structure still prevail, yet the free organism is now usually furnished all over, or in certain parts, with banks of oars named *cilia*, by the rapid movement of which it can change its place, and flit about freely in the liquid medium in which it exists. Such are the first forms of algæ, sponges, polypes, medusæ, &c. (figs. 8 and 9).

But here among such objects there is to be observed a very remarkable difference. Some of them (fig. 9) change their spherical form but slightly if at all. They do not develope into other forms, either plant-



like or peculiar. On the contrary, they produce, either in their own interior, or in juxtaposition to themselves, small bodies like themselves, which, by their own opening or dissolving away from around them, they liberate, and which, when liberated, have the power of continuing the race.

Moreover, many of these spherical or spheroidal bodies (see fig. 9) show themselves to be not homogeneous or simple spheres or spheroids, covered more or less with *cilia* all over, but composite forms, built up of a multitude of little spheres or spheroids, each spheroid having perhaps only four, more usually only two, and ultimately only one cilium (figs. 10 and 11). And here one is tempted to consider the exquisite structures and phenomena displayed by lasso-cells, spermatozoa, antherozoa, pollen, &c. But the connection of the flagellate form in the individual with the spherical group, out of which it has emerged, has not been studied, and a statement of the relations here would be almost purely theoretical, and incapable of verification. It may be remarked, however, that when the cilia or linear appendages are long, their normal nismus at the spherical keeps twisting these appendages round the spheroid to which they are attached, and so imparts to them usually a spiral or undulating motion. Of this, endless illustrations are given in the reproductive elements (see the aquatic cryptogamia, such as the Characeæ, &c).

Very manifold are the representatives of cilia (tentacula, pedicellariæ, ambulacral tubes, &c.) Cilia are, indeed, so slow to disappear entirely, that they are still found, and that retaining their vibratory action, on the surface of many membranes in the most highly-organised animals (in man himself, indeed), when one face of the cells constituting that membrane is free.

But let us now hasten to remark that many ciliated spherules, instead of opening up and liberating offspring like themselves (as *Volvox*, fig. 9), after they have indulged for some time in moving freely about, thus diffusing the species while the parents die, settle down on some suitable solid stage; and by-and-by there grows from them spiculated or tentaculated structures in endless varieties in nature. Of these nascent structures, the polype form, a hydra-tuba (fig. 12), may be taken as an illustration. This in its turn may ultimately give being to a free swimming medusa (fig. 13); and of these there is in nature a host so multitudinous, that in certain latitudes and states of the weather they render the very ocean luminous, and supply food even for the whale. Or emulating a plant, the polype may bud and branch again and again into all the exquisite forms of the zoophytic and coralline world. Still, it appears that all this branching and building again is but a nismus by means of axis budding upon axis, and equator branching upon equator,



to retain the growing forms overhead or in its limits with the ambient medium, as spherical as the conditions of existence will allow. In consequence of the space below it being occupied by the rock or other object it rests upon indeed, the zoophyte scarcely even attains to more than the hemispherical in form. And further, in proportion as the animated mass becomes less completely individualised, it inevitably becomes at the same time less centralised and less emulous of the spherical. The more of dead matter also which the composite structure contains, whether siliceous spiculæ or calcareous granules, the less symmetrical its form may be expected to be, the greater the departure from a spherical contour.

We take then the appendiculated sphere as the type of form for a fully individualised organism when most simple, perfect, and free, as for instance the ciliated ovum, fig. 8, which may represent either the ovum of a *cristatella*, or one of those bodies found in flint, which have been called *Xanthidia* (fig. 15). As other examples, I may also allude to the *Radiolaria* generally. Say *Heliosphæra inermis* where the protoplasmic arms and body are supported by a siliceous skeleton of a spherical form, composed of hexagonal lace or lattice work, possessing the most geometrical and beautiful structure. It is, indeed, so elaborate and so geometrically accurate, that it is difficult to draw a diagram of it. Let us, therefore, be content as a type of this whole class of beings with fig. 14, the sun animalcule, a familiar microscopic object.

And here there meets us one of the most interesting and important facts in the economy of animal nature, namely, *the secretion* by the living organism of matter which is dead, and *its utilisation* to give support to the living organism. If animals are ever to attain to any considerable size or durability, something of this kind is manifestly needed; for the living parts of an animal, inasmuch as they must be always easily transformable, must always be mobile, and therefore always soft and yielding. But if they are so, then except when the animals are very small, and live in a medium which is of the same specific gravity as themselves, they must be liable, under the sustained action of gravitation and incident forces, to be all flattened and spoiled as to form. Hence a necessity that supporting material be provided. Now this, animals in general have been enabled to do for themselves. Certain of the particles of their bodies die, and become dead, most probably, after they have served the purposes of life and been exhausted. And these dead particles become good material for constructing supports; for a dead particle is merely a particle which is not readily liable to change, a particle, therefore, just such as is wanted as material for the skeleton of an animal. Now, of such a kind are pre-eminently particles of silica, and of carbonate and phosphate of lime, that is, the

very substances which the simplest animals secrete in great quantities. And hence, in early ages, abundant material for forming the shells and skeletons of animals. But is this all that we have to say upon the subject? Does this economy come to a close here? In the lapse of the time during which our planet gives evidence of its existence, a time which seems all but infinite, must not the accumulation of such dead stable matter in it be immense? And why, therefore, when we come to consider the case of the planet itself, should we part with the conception, that this dead matter is provided as material for a support? Why not a support a shell or crust, not merely for the individual organisms which secrete it, but for their general home, the planet itself, which would have been too soft and yielding without it?

Not that we are to infer that the entire mineral matter of the earth, or even the greater part of it, has, or must have been formed, in this way. Dead or mineral matter would also form rapidly, all independently of the secretions or excretions of organised beings, as soon as the nuclear condensation of our planet had become so great, that the central heat thus generated surpassed a certain temperature. After that, the heat would transform the aqueous matter of the primæval abyss into mineral matter. Much of the crust of the earth may, therefore, have had what may be called a meteoric as well as an organic origin. But in keeping with the view advocated in this work, it cannot be denied, that the whole tendency of geological research is to increase the quantity of organic matter. This is, according to our view, the normal mode of the genesis of the crust of the earth; and by this view the same theory of the origin and use of mineral matter applies equally to the microscopic amoeba, and to the world itself.

As to the origin of this dead matter as a secretion or excretion of that which has life, it is probably necessitated by the law of the conservation of force, and inevitable, the elements of the material system being what they are. But though inevitable, it need not therefore be useless. It is universally admitted, that it is needed, and even necessary to be a support to living creatures, almost from the least to the greatest; and now it is suggested that it is also necessary to the world itself, in order that the world may be a suitable theatre for their existence and entertainment. Here then we have an instance of that marvellous economy, which is constantly presenting itself to the reflective student of nature. Some object or incident appears which, other things being as they are, is unavoidable, which, therefore, may be expected to be merely an encumbrance, or if it serve one purpose, that is all that can be reasonably looked for; instead of which, however, it is found to be essential to the whole system. And we are taught that it is only in consequence of want of compass in our own thoughts

that we ever felt a difficulty about it, and were tempted to wonder rather than to adore.

Such a generalisation (which refers to the same category, and uses the same ideas to explain the existence of every shell of a microscopic *Orbulina*, and that of the crust of the earth itself), will not go without a criticism invoking the aid of ridicule perhaps. But that can be easily borne. That is not the worst of it. The reader will not fail to perceive, that such a view is entirely at variance with the chemical hypotheses which are at present in vogue. But it is no less true, that it is not at variance with the traditions of science and philosophy in general, from the earliest times. And if it explains phenomena, it is worthy of being listened to; for the actual state of science has no account at all to give of the origin of the materials of which the supports of animals are formed—unless, indeed, if it be that they were to be found as ingredients in the original cosmic vapour—where, however, it is certainly as uncomfortable for reason to find them as in the bodies of animals, or in the crust of the earth.

At present it is generally believed, as has been stated, that these minute animals take up the mineral matters found in them entirely from the waters of the ocean or of the ambient medium, be what it may, in which they live. And, doubtless, if these materials occur in the animal's food, the animal will utilise them for the construction of its skeleton. And probably the quantity which any individual animal, even the longest lived, can transform of one element into another—of nitrogen into silicon, for instance, is infinitesimally small. But to maintain that all the dead or mineral matter found in animals has been brought into them from without for ever, is to maintain a hypothesis which puts a stop to all biological research, and which, by the experimental results of some of the best analytical chemists, is believed to be contradicted even by the incubation of every hen's egg. And if it be so; if during no more than twenty-one days, phosphorus and calcium, even in appreciable quantities, make their appearance in so small a mass as the chick in ova, how great must not the whole quantity be which has been produced by life since the first creation, a period too remote to be distinctly conceivable? It is, indeed, affirmed by many chemists that, after making the most careful experiments on incubation, they do not find, either by the balance or otherwise, any evidence of the increase of quantity of lime or phosphoric acid, or of anything else which may not have come from without, during the change of the glairy contents of an egg into a feathered fowl. But how many millions upon millions of atoms must have been produced before any of our gross senses could in any way detect them! Compared with the fineness of molecular nature, the



most sensitive chemical balance with  $\frac{1}{100}$  of a grain in the pan, is a beam in a warehouse weighted with bale goods.

But to turn from the dead to the living, it may be said that the simplest forms of life have been best observed in amoeba. In its reposing form, or what may be called its form of hybernation or when encysted, *A. protoccus* is represented in fig. 1, *a*. The tribe is one which contains immense multitudes. In a state of activity, *A. radiosa* is represented in fig. 1, *b*. Here the nucleated "morsel of glue" has extended in all directions legs and arms, which it can extemporise out of any part of its body when it is hungry. These it gathers up when it has caught a particle of food, so as to form, in like manner of itself and for itself, an extempore stomach which can digest whatever is taken into it. Again, therefore, after this phase of activity, the amoeba resumes in a general way the spherical form.

And here, were we to take anything like a full review of the forms of the most simple and abundant creatures, we should require to give much time and many words to the medusidæ, those specks of jelly (see fig. 13) with which the ocean teems to such an extent that in certain states of the weather, as has been already stated, the sea is even rendered luminous by them. But we must content ourselves here with stating that, on a general view of their forms, it may be said that when they have other means of locomotion (such as cilia, &c.), they are more or less *spherical* (Beroe, &c.) When they have no other means of locomotion but their own forms they are more or less *hemispherical* (Medusidæ). Now, while the spherical is of all forms the worst shaped for effecting locomotion by itself, the hemispherical, which is but half spherical, is well calculated to do so, especially if the edge, or equatorial part of the form, be thin and mobile; for then it must be ever tending to make a nîsus at the spherical; and this tendency cannot but be sustained rythmically, like all other similar vital movements. In a word, the mobile-equatorial edge must be ever pressing downwards and inwards rythmically, bent on forming another pole opposite to that which exists already. And thus its hemispherical form must propel the animal in the direction of the already existing pole. For the same reason (the development of the spherical) we are also to expect, as appendages to the hemispherical fan or umbrella, marginal tentacles, &c.; and in the line of the axis an axial polypite, stomatodendra, &c. In short, our theory accounts to a great degree of minuteness for the unseemly and strange organisation of the medusidæ, which, considered as to form and structure merely, seem to have rare pre-eminence in nature, since they are not only so abundant but often attain to a size so large that nothing else in nature that is so simple and so aqueous can approach them.

The bioplasmic protozoon, while it forms a support for itself more or



less of a rigid or stable nature, and in so doing is obliged to die in part, is not always, or even often, able to maintain its unity, its individuality. Most usually it becomes in this case a composite animal, or a community of animals. This is beautifully illustrated in the amoeba tribe itself, or the Rhizopoda as they are called. The animal secretes or excretes abundantly calcareous matter for protection and support. But, except in a few instances, it cannot detach itself from its own house before the time when a child or germ is at the door bent on building another house like that of its parent and adhering to it. And hence multiple cabins and inhabitants in one vessel, with doors, or rather port-holes, all over and through it. Hence, in a word, the most extensive tribe of the foraminifera, which are still forming and in the former ages have formed, as has been shewn, to a very considerable extent, the crust of the earth. Still, in this tribe unity and individuality reign to such an extent that, in modern times at least, the community is never a large object, and its structure is always symmetrical. Nay, here also it looks as if the architecture of the whole community were so conducted that the finished work should be as spherical as the conditions of growth would allow. Thus some, as *Globigerina*, *Orbulina* (fig. 3), are spherical, and those which depart farthest from the sphere may be described as either axial, as *Nodosaria* (fig. 4), or as equatorial, as *Spirulina* (fig. 5), the others being intermediate, as if constructed upon the skeleton of the sphere as the type—that is, upon an axis either as such or as a system of meridians with an equator. In these cases, then, the animal is no longer single; it is a composite animal. Still, however, the principle of individuality reigns to this extent that the form of the composite animal attains a stage in which it is full grown, and its further growth comes to a close in a limited specific form.

But when the bioplastic creature has been differentiated to such a degree as to be a polype, with tentacula definitely limited in number (coral polype, fig. 6), the secreted dead matter has gained upon the living to such an extent, that the creature can no longer, in the most notable cases, call a halt to the continuous deposition of that matter. The deposition, therefore, goes on continuously until the limiting or destructive action of external nature prevents further additions. Such are coral-forming creatures, *Sertularidæ*, &c.

In reference to these, it is only such as grow upon projecting points, or in other favourable situations, which remind the observer of the sphere, and that overhead only.

With regard to each individual polype, however, it displays the sphere in its gonospore, and its own form when retracted or reposing.

When expanded, also, it displays an equator formed by a system of expanded rays or tentacula when the creature places itself fully in

relation with its environments, the body and axis of the animal being the hemisphere on its own side, and a circling eddy of water, caused by the tentacula on the hemisphere, on the aqueous side.

But when the animal retreats, so as to be as complete in itself as it can, the equatorial radii, or tentacula, close up as meridians, thus developing the spherical. And ultimately all is huddled together in a little ball.

Ascending the animal scale, it is to be found that unity has regained its ascendancy again in the sea-urchins, star-fish, &c. And in these the spherical or its skeletal elements, the cylindrical or axial (sea cucumbers, &c.), and the equator or radiated disk (star-fish, &c.), appear more distinctly.

I shall not, however, at this stage of our work, proceed to trace the prevalence and recurrence of the spherical in form any further. Let us rather hasten here to remark, that while a type of types, or archetype of form, thus appears to be embodied in organic nature, something of the same kind may be observed as to the number of parts and organs displayed by organic beings. There are prevailing and recurring numbers, their sub-multiples and multiples.

Thus, in polypes when developing, how often do the tentacula commence in four and rise to eight, a number which continues permanent in all the many and infinitely numerous coral polypes. Among the finest algæ, also (Ceramiaceæ), their most conspicuous feature is the tetraspore. And in the peristomes of the mosses the series of numbers is found complete. It is, indeed, true that this dichotomous series is precisely that which the law of the equilibration of equal and similar forces gives also. But that consideration explains only a few of the phenomena, and is no argument against the existence of typical numbers at the root of nature. It merely bespeaks the universal harmony of things; and it gives no reason why in the dichotomous series certain numbers rather than others should prevail. Thus, in the very extensive family of mosses very widely distributed in our planet, and containing many hundred species, the number of teeth in the peristome is, in a vast majority, thirty-two. And what if that which we may call the peristomes of the most perfect animals give the same number! No anatomist can give a reason why the teeth of a mammal should be so many as they are, and neither more nor fewer. And yet how strangely they manifest certain numbers. Thus, in the human species the first set of teeth are twenty in number. To these, in the permanent set, twelve are added, making thirty-two in all. The same is also the number in the apes of the old world, which most nearly resemble man. It is also the number in those flocks and herds which man makes his companions and grazes in his fields and parks, and which are so invaluable to him. Other animals, again, as the pig, have first thirty-two, and when all their teeth are mature and

accounted for, they have  $32 + 12 = 44$ . Others, again, such as the new world monkeys, when looked at with their jaws closed, may be regarded as having their teeth in three sets of twelve each, 36 in all, one set of twelve being the incisors, guarded on both sides by the canines; while in the large and important class of carnivora, there are twelve incisors.

Other parts of animals, also, are remarkable for the constancy of these numbers where the development is complete. The same numbers as the above—that is,  $12 + 20 = 32$ , may be seen to recur in the limbs of the most perfect kinds. At their peripheral terminations they give  $4 \times 5 = 20$  fingers and toes. The same numbers are also sometimes beautifully seen in the structures by which the limbs are attached to the axial part of the skeleton when these structures are fully developed, as in some lizards.\* And these twenty are connected with the trunk in all the four by three parts (forearm, arm, and hand; thigh, foreleg, and foot), that is twelve parts, making  $20 + 12 = 32$  in all. Nay, it might be shown that to all appearance the bones of the limbs (of recent species at least), when each limb is taken by itself, have thirty-two and twelve as their limits in point of number. Thus, in certain reptiles in which the bones of the extremities are very perfectly developed, it is seen that the tarsal bones still consist of two rows of five each, corresponding to the five digits beyond them,† giving—arm or thigh bone, 1; forearm or leg, 2; carpus or tarsus, 10; metacarpus or metatarsus, 5; phalanges ( $4 \times 3$ ) + 2 = 14—in all, 32. In hooved quadrupeds and birds' wings, on the other hand, these bones are reduced to about 12 in number.

Very interesting it would be to make a study of the subject with a view to see to what extent these numbers shew themselves in the axis of the animals when that axis is constituted by serial repetition, as first in the annulosa and ultimately in the vertebrata. But here the polymorphism, both of the axial elements themselves and of their appendages, according to the use which they serve, makes the investigation difficult and the results uncertain. Thus, insects, which abound to such an extent all the world over, have  $\frac{1}{2}^2 = 6$  limbs. Very numerous species of crustacea (lobsters, crabs, &c.) have  $\frac{2}{2}^0 = 10$ , and so are named decapoda; while the various tribes of arachnida (spiders, mites, &c.) have  $\frac{3}{4}^2 = 8$ . All vertebrates above the lowest have  $\frac{3}{8}^2 = 4$ , which in the highest almost part company, as two (legs) and two (arms).

Moreover, it has been ascertained that the number of axial elements or somites in the higher arachnida and crustacea are precisely twenty in number; while in the insects the number never exceeds twenty, as it

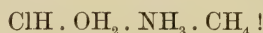
\* See Huxley's Manual of Anatomy of Vertebrated Animals, p. 36. 1871.

† See Professor Owen on the Nature of Limbs, p. 27.



may in the myriapoda. Adding to these twenty, six legs and four wings, and allowing two for generative organs, we obtain thirty-two numerical elements in these exquisite creatures, whose numbers in genera, species, and individuals, are so vast and varied all the world over.

This train of thought might be extended to a great length, and applied to the vegetable as well as the animal kingdom. But naturalists at the present moment are quite indisposed to listen to a doctrine of types, properly so called, or anything that insinuates such a doctrine. If they admit of types at all, their types are merely individuals selected empirically, which appear to possess eminently the features displayed by a large number of individuals. And as to chemists, though they are just as much in favour of types as naturalists are opposed to them, yet their types are merely the quotients of percentages drawn and quartered most cruelly and without any sanction from nature, and so arranged as to be a sort of mockery of an algebraic series, with new constants in every term developed according to the powers of H.



Molecular science, under such a conception of the system of nature, may be compared to that of Botany in 1583, when Cæsalpinus proposed to distribute all herbs according to the number of seeds they bore up to four. Such Procrustian treatment will never do. The dance of nature is not one, two, three, (on the floor of the dead world), and a hop (to carbon in the living world). Molecular nature is as varied and beautiful as crystalline and organic nature. This is indicated by every most minute object which the microscope renders visible.

What will be thought by those who come after us of the science of the present day ! Within the entire sphere of the visible, in mineralogy, in botany, in zoology, in every individualised object which nature produces, symmetry is seen to be a dominant fact, and is duly attended to by the student. But as soon as the objects become so small as to be invisible to our eyes, though they be the very elements of which the visible objects are built up, symmetry is quite forgotten and no regard is paid to it by the chemist ! On the contrary, he ever aims at cutting down his molecular formulæ if he can till the controlling substance remains as one atom only, in which case it never can enter into a symmetrical structure except when it is in the centre. Happily, of late he has often become wiser than he intends to be, and, by mistaking two atoms for one, has constructed many formulæ in harmony with the law of symmetry, and which represent whole molecules, and not half molecules as used to be.



## CHAPTER IV.

### THE THEORY OF DEVELOPMENT—ITS DEFECTS—THE CONDITIONS OF ITS COMPLETENESS.

THOUGH it be but a little of nature that we have seen in the preceding pages, yet we have seen enough to prepare us for the embarrassment in which many thinking men find themselves when not content with the knowledge of the mere anatomy of an object, as the eye and the fingers can give it, they feel the necessity, in order to intellectual satisfaction, of knowing something as to its antecedents, its cause or origin.

Often, indeed, a beautiful and beneficent design appears in the object, bringing immediate intellectual relief and satisfaction along with it, giving as it does the assurance of the existence of mind at the time of the origination of that object,—mind possessing all those attributes which our own intellectual and moral nature leads us to ascribe to the Author of all.

But this is by no means always the case. Sometimes the object is such that it is difficult to discover design in it at all, or, at any rate, such design as could have originated in a beneficent mind. After much thought, perhaps, its structure or function seems still a stumbling-block in the way of every theodicy.

Of these two aspects of nature, the former presents itself in the morphological discoveries which have been reached in the last chapter. If living matter, when individualised as plant or animal, tends, when not exerting itself, to be contained under a spherical contour, we see here the realisation of a beautiful design—a design that does not rest its evidence upon sentiment, however sufficient for a basis sentiment may be in general, but upon pure mathematics. Thus, living matter is a delicate and tender kind of matter, and of all kinds of matter it is the most precious. Delicate and tender it must unavoidably be, because to be living is to be mobile and easily transformable, yet without being fluid. And plainly it is, of all kinds of matter, the most precious, because to it alone sensibility attaches and enjoyment is possible. It

is manifestly important, therefore, that living matter, when partitioned and distributed into small individualised morsels which cannot but be subject to easy destruction by the incident forces to which they must be unavoidably exposed, should be shaped in such a way as would least expose them to laceration or solution, and would retain for them, at the same time, the condition most favourable for the exertion or deployment of that inner force which is implied in the idea of life.

Now, it may be mathematically demonstrated, that both these conditions are most completely fulfilled when the living morsels referred to are shaped into little spheres, meaning by spheres, spherical superficies—such as cells or skins, with their contents. Thus, supposing a sphere to be exposed to incident forces on all sides or in any direction, it is the best of forms to resist such forces: *first*, because being equal and perfect arch all over, it requires the greatest external violence to dent or to deform it; *secondly*, because having a minimum of surface or exposure in relation to its contents, it limits to the smallest number the incident forces which can bear upon it and possibly disturb it; *thirdly*, because all its living parts and particles being so connected together that they are all as near as possible, to one and the same point within it, namely the centre, it may be inferred that they are more fully than is otherwise possible, at the bidding and under the control of the vital force, which is itself in the individual a centralised unity, when the individual is bent in exerting that force. Thus the actual institution in nature of the spherical, as the form of an organism which needs protection in the midst of its environments, and which is also to be capable of dilatation and a full play of its life when its environments are not dangerous to it, is manifestly a most wise and benignant design. It is not merely positively wise, which is generally all that can be affirmed of arrangements that are judged by moral feelings merely. But if the principles of mathematics be the same everywhere, and belong to the intellectual system of the universe, which we cannot doubt, it is superlatively wise. There is no presumption, therefore, in maintaining that it is worthy of adoption by a Perfect Being as a designer of forms for His most tender creatures and their constitutive particles.

Such a satisfactory result is not, however, always, nor indeed even often, easily obtained by the minute observations of nature. When, for instance, calling to mind even the little that has been stated already, we turn from the forms of organisms to the number of their parts, then by all the lights which the actual science of the day, either pure or applied, has to throw upon them, no design, no reason appears why these numbers should be what they actually are; why they should be, for instance, so often as they appear to be, 32, with its dichotomous submultiples 16, 8, 4, 2, and its components 20 + 12, with their dichotomous

tomous submultiples 10 and 5 and 6 and 3. There is nothing in these numbers, indeed, which speaks against beneficent design as possibly universal. But neither does beneficent design, nor indeed any design, at first sight at least, appear in them to explain their preference to other numbers, such as 7, 9, 11, 13, 15, 17, 18, 19, &c. They cannot be adduced as antitheistical indications, but they may be affirmed to be not inconsistent with atheism, if atheism be argued on other grounds.

There are other arrangements in nature of such a kind, however, that, in the first impression which they produce, they seem positively antitheistical; as, for instance, the seemingly useless multiplication of organs in the animals near the top of the scale involving great liability to lesion and disease. How can the dyspeptic, in whose stomach his dinner (which, however, he cannot do without) lies like a lump of lead, be prevented from secretly envying the digestion of the *Amœba*, which, without either stomach, or liver, or pancreas, or intestine at all, and merely with a skin which it can turn into a stomach when it is hungry and food comes in the way, digests that food to perfection? What can be the design, it may be asked (in so far as the science of the day is concerned), of such complications both of conservative and of reproductive organisation, as we find around us and possess ourselves, so often in all seeming to our misery?

Often, also, where design appears,—nay, is most exquisitely realised by the most ingenious application of mechanical principles,—how difficult to regard that design as of a beneficent nature! It is not every one who can see a ground of adoration in an exquisitely realised design, all irrespectively of the end for which that design exists. When the Professor of Geology in the University of Dublin shows so well (as he always does) the exquisite muscular and osseous apparatus provided for giving most effective action to the foreleg of the tiger, it is not easy to forget (as he seems to have the happiness to do) the uses so destructive of sentient life for which this mechanism exists.

Nor does this feeling of mystery in nature, when viewed as the work of a beneficent Creator, attach to the contemplation of such objects only as are visible to all. Reference has already been made to the entozoa. To these add the occurrence of parasites generally, and that in the noblest animals, as also the parasitic theory of zymotic diseases which is coming more and more into favour, and it need be no matter of wonder that this aspect of nature, when dwelt upon, should have led even in the popular mind to a great change of view, or at least to great dubiety, as to the origination of nature. Those whose part it would have been to maintain the traditional conception of the theology of childhood, namely, that every individual species of animal originated in a special volition and a direct forthputting of plastic power by the

Author of all, though such a view were tenable from the catechetical side,\* do not now enter the discussion in such a way as to secure the attention of men of science; while the latter, as if in revenge upon this view and its inconsiderate assertions, as also in part, perhaps, in revenge for the anathemas which theologians hurl against them, seem to find a pleasure in writing with apparent atheism where, in point of fact, there is neither occasion nor room for anything of the kind.

This is remarkably the case with the theory of development, which is regarded as the triumph of modern times, not only as stated by men of science generally, but by Mr Darwin in particular, as the theory of natural selection, or the survival of the fittest? And here let us call to mind what this theory is, and that not as applicable to plants and animals only, that is, the whole sphere to which alone Mr Darwin applies it, but as it is presented to science by Hæckel, in his "Natural History of Creation," where it is carried up to the "cosmic gas" of the nebula, from which it is supposed that the solar system has resulted.

There is certainly a high intellectual charm when a single idea is proposed for rule, and is made to cover a field so extensive as to space and time. And it is not the subversion of this idea, it is rather its duplication, its completion and its regulation, which appear in these pages.

The theory of development, though seemingly very simple, yet does in reality involve many hypotheses, many complications, and many imperfections. Thus, first, it assumes that while organic species are deducible from each other, transformable into each other, still, from first to last, from the first Monera or germ of Monera, down to the last man, or the last individual of the species that shall come after him, it also assumes that they are all built up of a considerable number of different kinds of matter, such as oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, carbon, calcium, phosphorus, &c., there being sixty-four altogether of such material elements in our planet alone! And, accordingly, it admits that these elemental species, unlike the organic species which they constitute, are not deducible from one another; nor are they in any length of time, nor in all eternity, transformable into each other, but radically and inexorably dissimilar. Here, then, is a thorough vitiation of the theory of development as a complete theory. Here is a thorough breakdown in that theory, and that somewhere near its origin. How, then, it may be well asked, is such an incongruity tolerated? To this it is to be answered, that it obtrudes itself in consequence of this fact, and this

\* It is strange that such a view should still be maintained by any who stand upon the Bible as the ultimate authority in such matters. In the sacred narrative of the creation, as recorded in Genesis (which certainly every scholar and thinking man, whatever his religious views, must respect), it is expressly said that the command was given to the earth, to the waters, to bring forth.



fact alone, that the chemist in his laboratory cannot succeed in decomposing these sixty-four substances. Hence it is inferred that they are essentially undecomposable, simple, and untransformable! And on this hypothesis the whole science of mineral geology proceeds. But when it is considered that all of these chemical atoms, before they have come into the chemist's hands at all, have been secularly consolidated and mineralised, so as to be able to withstand the ordeal of the volcano and the central heat, compared with which the most powerful analytic agencies of the laboratory are but a mimicry, is it for a moment to be supposed, although their internal structure were still molecular, that they would break down in the chemist's hands? Surely all his containing vessels, which are but things of human art, must go to pieces before them. Nay, surely his own eyes, which are very tender structures, must first be put out. According to views implied in our molecular morphology, the decomposition even of a small quantity of hydrogen, if it were possible, would be accompanied by a tremendous explosion.

Here, at any rate, is there not a great fault in the theory of development considered as a philosophical conception? One-half of it is contradicted by the other half. In so far as the visible forms of plants and animals are concerned, it derives the more complicated from such as are more simple, proposing ultimately to derive all from one kind of germ. But the particles which constitute that germ it regards as having been for ever the same as they are now—some out of sixty-four intransmutable atomic species, varying in atomic weight from 1 to 206 in this planet alone! It extends the doctrine of development and transmutation to species which happen to be visible to such eyes as we have, it denies it to such as happen to be invisible to us. Now surely, in the mere capacity of giving a picture on the human retina, there is nothing to indicate such a complete change in the economy of nature. If all animals and plants have been obtained by the secular synthesis of transformed Monera, and the differentiation of the organs composed of them, thus giving in the last analysis one form and kind of protoplasm as the root of all, the pursuit of the same line of thought, the same theory applied to the atoms of the chemist, with their various properties and atomic weights, gives, as the common ground of all, a single material element, each chemical atom being a structure composed of this material element, but so stable as to be indecomposable in the laboratory. Let this be granted, and the theory of evolution, whatever may be the case as to its cogency, at least possesses a scientific form. It is no longer, as it is now, a conception which breaks down midway between its first and its last terms. Meantime, however, let it not be inferred that what has now been stated is really against it when it is true to its own name, and is itself fully developed. As we proceed we

find, by the most convincing evidence, that this unity and identity of the material element in the last analysis is actually the case.

But letting science in this respect stand for the present as it is, and supposing all the sixty-four atoms of the laboratory, or rather, perhaps, some very high multiple of this number, to constitute that cosmic gas from which the solar system has been evolved, the theory of development shows itself to be as imperfect on the great scale and in point of extent as it has been shown to be in point of homogeneity in its intimate material. Beyond that cosmic gas there certainly is the æther, a medium, which no longer can be ignored in any physical theory of nature. What, then, is the relation of the cosmic gas to the æther? Of that, so far as I am aware, nothing is affirmed by evolutionists. It is obvious, however, that to render the whole system of thought homogeneous, it would need to be shown that all the phenomena of material nature may be explained by supposing that just as all organisms are the synthetic developments of one kind of Monera, and all chemical atoms and molecules the synthetic development of one kind of material element, so is the material element a synthetic development of ætherial elements. And that it is so is shown in this work, so far as it has been found necessary to prove convincing to the author.

But having reached the æther, is the theory of development now fully extended and as all-embracing as it ought to be? Plainly not. Reason cannot rest in the conception of a congeries of particles which are wholly blind and devoid of feeling and thought, diffused throughout all space, believing such particles to be the first of things. Reason, if it is to enjoy intellectual repose, "a Sabbath for thought," which it tends to keep holy, can have it only in finding, beyond and above all things else, an unity, a power, intelligence, personality—in one word, God. This is the only legitimate haven of a theory of development.

And that from Him, as the Author of all, nature may be reached with those very features which it is seen to possess, it is the aim of the following pages to maintain. This is indeed a very old view, and a view very generally embraced till now. But though nothing has been observed in modern times that seems to conflict with it which was not also observed in ancient times, yet respected names in science not only decline to accept it, but argue against it. To me it seems essential to every philosophy which shall be in harmony with intelligence, that it shall be based upon an unity. Nor has a philosophy all the claims to intellectual regard which it possibly may have, unless that unity be an intelligent Being. To suppose thought and feeling to wake up for the first time in that which was previously blind and dead, mere matter and force, from all eternity, is to me nothing short of absurd.

## CHAPTER V.

### THE TRUE PROTOPLASM AND THE COSMICAL LAW.

THAT an Almighty Being, in whom all perfection dwells from all eternity, should call into existence a creation, which viewed in reference to Himself could not but be a finite and therefore an imperfect thing, has to some minds seemed incredible, and to all that exists as substantial reality they assign an existence from eternity. But looking to the question in a less abstract point of view, reason neither imposes nor sanctions such a conclusion.

In the nature of sensibility a sufficient reason appears why existence may have been awarded to a creation, however perfect in Himself the Almighty and Eternal One may be. Thus the well-being of sensibility is happiness; and happiness in comparison with all other things is so precious that to it all other things, in the last analysis, owe all the value which they possess. Whatever may be fixed upon as the chief good, if it be not happiness itself, must receive that title only in consideration of its being a producing cause or a safeguard of happiness. That which is both itself incapable of feeling or of awakening feeling in any other being is quite valueless. But happiness, on the other hand, nay, even the possibility of happiness, mere sensibility, is held to be of such inestimable value that no creature in the possession of its senses parts willingly with its life; and it is a favourite view in the present day with regard to all organised nature, to look to the individuals which compose it as all struggling for existence—a conception implying how precious life is universally felt to be.

Is it overbold to affirm, then, that happiness must stand very high in the regard of a Being who is supremely intelligent, wise, and good? Nay, is not the maintenance or the increase of happiness in a secure manner precisely what is meant by goodness? Must not the Supreme Being, thus, inasmuch as he is supremely good, surely tend to maintain and to increase happiness?

As to Himself, his omnipotence implies that He is from all eternity



supremely happy or ever-blessed; for if He were not, from what we know of the nature and laws of sensibility we know that He would immediately put forth his omnipotence to bring his sensibility into a state of well-being, that is, into a state of happiness.

The Almighty, then, is ever-blessed. But He is also perfectly good. Now, how can his goodness find a field for its manifestation so long as He alone exists? Such is the nature of sensibility that it implies individuality. So long as one only exists only one can be happy. What, then, in these circumstances are we to expect? In answer to this, it at once appears, that by awarding existence to sentient creatures, placing them at the same time in conditions suitable to their well-being, happiness may be increased proportionally to their number, and therefore to all but an infinite extent. Here, then, granting the existence of an Almighty Being who is perfectly good from eternity, do we not see a sufficient occasion for his awarding existence to a creation?

It is, indeed, true that this argument applies to a creation only in so far as it consists of sentient creatures, while with regard to the actual creation it will be said that such creatures form but a very small part of it. Every new day, however, as has been already stated, the progress of scientific discovery shows that the amount of life in our planet both has been from most remote periods, and is now immensely greater than was but lately supposed. When the amount of strata, both in extent and depth, which the microscope shows to consist more or less or entirely of the remains of organisms which once lived on the surface of our planet or in the depths of a primæval ocean, and the geological doctrine of metamorphism are taken into account, it is hard to say, even on the ordinary evidence of induction, as has been shown, what portions of the crust of the earth may not have been originally concreted by living beings. And if the molecular views of this work be accepted, it follows that perhaps all that is individualised and yet non-sentient is of the nature of a falling away, an excretion, or a rejectamentum from an universe of living beings and things.

Let us open, then, with this idea of a creation—(a supposition, it must be admitted, not without good reasons to support it)—*a creation such as to teem with life up to the limits which the conditions of individualised existence in different regions of space will allow.*

And now, what—let us ask—must the material of such a creation be? To this it surely will not be denied that the proper answer is PROTOPLASM! This is the substance which above all others excites the wonder and admiration of the scientific biologist of the present day, and on which he is disposed to devolve all biological phenomena. Let us, then, ere we proceed farther, pay our homage to protoplasm. But at the same time let us view our protoplasm, not in its chemical but in its



formal and functional characteristics. As to the chemical composition of protoplasm commonly so-called, it consists of a variety of those particles which still defy the analytical processes of the chemist, and which he is disposed to regard as elements, but which, as we have seen, when viewed as primordial and untransformable, do not fall in with the theory of development at all. The protoplasm of the biologist is also a substance which is more or less opaque or visible. The protoplasm which we now conceive as the material of the whole creation in its first state, when development is to begin, must, on the contrary, be altogether homogeneous, and doubtless perfectly hyaline or invisible also. But none the less must it be well entitled to the name of protoplasm, nay, it alone must be justly entitled to that name; for it is the first of created things, and being the product of an Almighty Being it must be altogether plastic in his hands. It can have no constitution of its own derived from itself. Both externally and internally it must be what Timæus calls, *αμορφον δέ καθ' αὐτὰν καὶ ἀσχημάτιστον, δεχομένην δὲ πᾶσαν μορφάν*, and what Moses calls *תהו ובהו*. And to these conceptions I shall add nothing by way of description; for there is no use in attempting to conceive it as if it alone existed. For however negative in itself of all properties except being or substance, yet the almighty and ever-living Creator is at all times and everywhere imminent to it, and bears upon it, as the material provided by Himself for the manifestation of his wisdom, his power, and his goodness. It must, therefore, possess specific properties though not aboriginally its own. It must, so far as the finite can with respect to the infinite, unless prevented by Him, reflect, represent, embody, and body forth his attributes and Being.

This the Creator may of course, in the exercise of his omnipotence, prevent, limit, or regulate altogether according to his will, so that in successive epochs in all space, or possibly during the same epoch in different regions of space, there may be in all but infinite variety of creations or worlds differing from each other more or less in their structure and economy. But, in the absence of such limiting volitions, must not the created substance embody or body forth the Creator's attributes and being so far as it is competent for the finite and the created to do so? This must be admitted and remembered. Still, however, as will appear more fully hereafter—but I may state now—there is a limitation to this. Certain properties and demands with regard to that which exists with limited extension in space are inexorable. Even Omnipotence cannot alter them. Beautifully, therefore, does the Doric tract ascribed to Timæus Locrus say, "There are two causes of all things—*mind*, namely, the cause of those which are produced according to intelligence; and *necessity*, the cause of those which are produced by force according to the dynamics of bodies. Of these, the former is essentially

good, is named God, and is the principle of all that is best. In the latter necessity reigns."

Still, with such limitations the primal substance of creation must surely be fully obedient or assimilated to the Creator, and that not in a transient manner, but abidingly or permanently. In its nature the primal substance, the true protoplasm, must be an assimilative substance.

Here, then, let us take that step which, though it may not have in this place the sanction of an unquestionable deduction, yet comes out so fully afterwards that I have no doubt about it, and feel it to be important to state it here. It is to the effect that, supposing this our protoplasm to be partitioned into individualities, then each and all of these individualised beings and things would, up to the full measure of their capacity, not only tend to assimilate themselves to the ever-present Being to whom they owe their own being, but they would tend also to assimilate themselves each to itself with respect both to space and time; as also, they would all tend to assimilate one another. Now, this is our cosmical mode of action or law; and on the strength of this law alone, without invoking the aid of any other, we pretend to explain all those phenomena to which the physicist, the chemist, and the biologist usually address themselves.

And, here, that this may not seem to the reader merely as an idle boast, and that he may have some idea thus early of the way in which this law applies itself to phenomena, let us in passing adduce some illustrations of its action.

*Permanent Properties.*—And, first, we may remark that it must impart these, to that which, considered by itself, is destitute of all properties except that of substantial existence. In fact, whatever its first form or its form the first moment of its creation, an object if fully individualised as one and simple must, under the law of assimilation, assimilate itself to itself in the next and in every successive moment, and so on, until its own self-assimilative action is modified by some other action from without. Here, then, we see as a first product of our cosmical law of assimilation, the perpetuation of an original mode of existence and the establishment of permanence of properties, provided the individual object considered be such that it is not subjected to change from within itself by the reciprocally assimilative action upon one another of its own parts or principles.

*Permanence of Species.*—Here we see also the ground of the well-known fact in nature, namely, the remarkable persistency and permanence of well-constituted species.

*Species in Genera.*—But it follows also, in virtue of the reciprocal activity of the law of assimilation, that species must be associated as genera. Everything, in a word, that acts from out of itself must tend to inscribe

or mirror itself into everything else, and, therefore, there must be throughout all creation a general harmony and homology.

Such are the first products of the law of assimilation, and let it not be supposed that it is to the material world alone that this cosmical law applies. Let us here adduce some illustrations of its action from the mental or spiritual world.

*Perception* is the assimilation of the mind as percipient to the object presenting itself, so far as the inner action and situation of the mind permits.

*Remembrance* is the assimilation of the mind in its present state as a percipient to some former state in which it existed as such.

*Reasoning* is the mind remembering with exclusion of all ideas save those which are assimilated, and therefore similar to one another, and show themselves to be so.

*Imagining* is the mind remembering ; either with selection of such ideas as are assimilated to the object which the mind has in view ; or more at random and in that spontaneous play of analysis and synthesis, which actuates the mind as an individualised being in the former case, as a member in a system in the latter case.

*Judging* is the mind in the exercise of this synthetic or analytic power, reviewing the assimilation, and affirming the similarity complete, or more or less or not at all, of two or possibly more ideas or objects presented to it.

*Idea*, as the term implies, is an assimilate not physical or material, but such as is proper to mind of some real object, material or mental.

And so on with all our other modes of mental activity, which, when viewed generally, are regarded as our mental faculties. They are all, in so far as they are articulate, and possess a definite mode, truly operations of the cosmical law of assimilation. If it be said that in these examples there is already another law introduced besides the cosmical law of assimilation, namely, that which gives a play of analysis and synthesis, the answer is that this play is not due to another law co-ordinate with the law of assimilation. It is a product of this law operating in a higher sphere, analysis being the human mind in the exercise of its free activity, assimilating itself to the Divine mind in respect of his all-penetrating power or omniscience, and synthesis the same in respect of his all-embracing power or love.

To this, the Divine bearing of the cosmical law upon the human mind, man owes reason also ; and as the return movement of the mind upwards, religion. The only human faculty that is not an illustration of the law, in the same sense as all the others, is our mental liberty or power of choice. And even this is due to the law, though in another sense, for it is the assimilation of the human mind to the Divine mind



in respect of the power and perfect freedom of the latter. Liberty, therefore, is the very ground laid for the image of God in the soul of man.

But to proceed ; in the world of physics, as illustrations of this same law of assimilation, it may be said that—

*Attraction* is the assimilative action of two or more atoms or masses as to the space they occupy. Nor is it the well-known phenomenon in general only that our cosmical law gives. It gives also the mode or law of the phenomenon when pure and simple, namely, attraction according to the inverse square of the distance. Thus the attraction of any centre, viewed as an energy attaching to that centre equally all around and reaching to an unknown distance (which is the usual conception), must, according to the law of assimilation, be distributed in spherical superficies around the attractive centre, all of which superficies must be in energy assimilated to each other, whatever their radius or distance from the centre. Now, these spherical isodynamic superficies or shells increase in size as the square of the distance from the centre increases. The attractive energy in any points or equal areas in any of them, therefore, must be in the same ratio inversely. Moreover, this deduction explains also the law of all radiant action. Nay, does it not explain that phenomenon of radiant action which seems so strange and which it is yet so necessary to assume in order to be able to explain the polarisation of light and heat, namely, that the excursions of the ætherial atoms are at right angles or transverse to the course of the ray? On the surface of the radiant object they must, according to the view here advanced, vibrate transversely, for they are chained to that surface, and are not free to proceed in the direction of the ray. Commencing transversely, the law of assimilation secures the uniformity of the action throughout. Moreover, independently of the form of the vibration at its origin, this transverse, rectilinear, elliptical, or circular vibration, is necessary in order to construct, as far as possible, the successive spherical superficies or shells which, according to our view, are the type of radiant action.

*Inertia* is the assimilative action of an atom (or mass compound of such atoms) this moment, in respect of motion or rest, to the state in which it was in these respects the moment before. Nor could any language be more in keeping with that proper to the law of assimilation than that in which the property of inertia is usually described. “If an atom or body be at rest it will continue at rest, and if it be in motion it will continue to move in the same straight line, with the same velocity, until it be disturbed by some force applied from without.” An element of motion being the progress in space to the next point adjacent, it cannot but be an element of a straight line, therefore, under the law of assimilation the whole motion must be rectilinear. But the first element must also be accomplished in a certain element of time, and



under the law of assimilation all equal elements succeeding must be accomplished in equal times. Plainly, therefore, the whole motion must be both rectilinear and uniform. And thus our philosophy presents to us, as a result of a purely scientific analysis and simply as a phenomenon, nay, simply as one of a class of phenomena which material nature everywhere displays, the inertia of matter; to explain which, it has hitherto been usual to invoke the aid of some unknown necessity, or the doctrine of a sufficient reason, or the rotation of the atom, or some hypothesis applying specially to inertia, thus placing it among singularities in nature (of which there are none) nay, sometimes placing it in contradiction with the attraction of matter, while here we see how distinct both properties are, though in perfect harmony as might be expected in the products of one and the same law.

*Elasticity* is the assimilative action of a form which has been disturbed to the form it had previously to the disturbance, and may be regarded as the inertia of form. It is commonly regarded as a phenomenon of a momentary or transient nature. But this only because of the limits of study imposed on the student in modern times, physics being separated from chemistry, and chemistry from biology. If the student in modern times were allowed to take comprehensive views of nature, as the old Indian and Greek philosophers did, it would have been seen long ago that there is such a thing as secular elasticity, as well as momentary elasticity; and various hypotheses, some of them unworthy of their authors (Pangenesis, for instance), might have been spared.

*Heredity, Reversion.*—These most notable phenomena are manifestations of the law of assimilation also, being as it were the working of a secular elasticity, developing or reintegrating in a succession of individuals the antecedent forms and structures which gave them birth. It is remarkable that, while to this phenomenon all biology owes its form, and is admitted to do so, yet it is never supposed that the same mode of action extends farther; and the consequence is that, during chemical experiments, seeming anomalies in affinity are being constantly met with. These so-called anomalies owe their existence to the tendency of the atom in the laboratory to reintegrate the state in which it had previously existed in nature, and from which the chemist has forced it to depart. Hence the reason, for instance, why atoms of silicium when set free from the mass resume two, atoms of aluminium three atoms of oxygen, or something else that will substitute it. The reason why the two minerals, as they occur in nature, are not similar oxides, depends on the different modes of their genesis, given in our Third Part.

*Symmetry, culminating in Sphericity or Symmetrical Cellularity.*—This is merely the assimilation to the utmost which circumstances admit in the situations of all the parts or particles which compose an individualised

form to some one plane or line, and ultimately to some one point within that form. And here it will at once be affirmed by the reader that the universality of this tendency in material structures is by no means so obvious as in the case of attraction, inertia, and elasticity. And neither it is. The construction of particles, which are at once attractive and the subjects of attraction, into spherical forms, except when the centre of the form is also the centre of attraction, is very difficult. Hence it is to the heavenly bodies, in the first place (whose centres of attraction are also their centres of form), that we must look for the fulfilment of the law of assimilation in this respect. Now, with regard to all the millions of millions that there are of them, it is known that they are all spheres to the full extent that their rotation on their axis will permit. After these, we are obviously to look for the spherical in such acknowledged objects as are very small or light, so that the attraction of the earth or their weight has but little influence upon them; as also in those which have attained to their actual forms in a medium as nearly as possible of the same planetary attractiveness or specific gravity as themselves; in a word, we must look to the individualised objects which present themselves in the field of the microscope. Now, has it not been shown in chapter III. that there spherical forms are most abundant; and, more especially, that every creature when it assumes a state of repose is in that case most spherical; and this as to ova, spores, seeds, buds, &c., &c. And in a word, is it not agreed that the entire constitutive elements, equally of plants and animals before they are modified by aggregation, are spheres or cells? Yes, the number of objects in material nature, the largest, the smallest, which actually attain to the spherical in form, is inconceivably great, far greater than at first sight seems.

That every individualised object, crystal, plant, animal, tends to assume some form of symmetry, is so obvious, that it need not be insisted upon.

And here we may remark, in passing, an instance of what we see so often in creation, and which it is always so gratifying to intelligence to observe, I mean the discovery that a more comprehensive, possibly an all-embracing law, which in itself bears no signature of design, yet is such that when applied, it realises manifold benignant designs. Thus we have reached the sphere as a form for individualised objects simply as the form of culmination under the law of assimilation. It is that form in which all the parts or particles are most fully assimilated in relation to one and the same point within the form, and to one another. Here nothing in particular appears in its favour; but when we view it in reference to sentient or astral nature, we see, as has been already stated, that it is that form which, considered as a protection for itself or tender contents, is the strongest, being arch all round everywhere. It is also that which exposes the smallest extent of surface to stormy or

unfriendly incident forces. Also that which, as a vessel destined to be filled with precious contents (as a brain-case, for instance), has the largest capacity in relation to the space it occupies, and so on. Not without good reason was the sphere looked upon by the ancient geometers as the most perfect of forms, and the regular polyhedra held in favour as steps towards the construction of the sphere; for the sphere may be regarded as that regular polyhedron of which the number of sides is infinite.

Within these limits, the tetrahedron on the one hand and the sphere on the other, it has fallen me to show, that all the completed molecules of nature tend to lie, and would lie but for the peculiar conditions of their genesis and history, and the incident forces which distract them.

*Chemical and Electrical Action.*—The well-known condition as to substances, in order that a chemical or electrical action may take place between them, is that they be in some respects dissimilar to each other. And what is this condition but that which implies a field for the operation of the law of assimilation? Moreover, it may be shown that in every case, that action has some kind or degree of assimilation as its aim! A hot and a cold body, when presented to each other for mutual action in respect of communicable heat (or the heat of temperature), or two bodies possessing inertia in respect of the motion of translation, or two elastic bodies in respect of their formal vibration, begin immediately to assimilate each other. In like manner, two specifically dissimilar molecules when presented to each other tend to unite and to remain in union, and by so doing are well known to merge their differences in the genesis of a new molecular species, from which the dissimilar properties of the components have disappeared. Also two bodies dissimilar as to electrical state (one positive, as is said, the other negative), when placed in the proper relation soon assimilate each other, merging their electrical differences in the production of a neutral electric state.

It is indeed in electric, and especially in voltaic action, that the influence and the persistence of this law is most remarkably displayed. Thus let two solids, which are in some respects dissimilar to each other in substance, surface, temperature, &c. (resin and fur, smooth glass and roughened glass, zinc and copper, antimony and tellurium), be brought into continuity, and made to bite each other by friction, pressure, difference of temperature, or otherwise, and forthwith a current of force generated in each and representation of it, passes upon the other, and an assimilation of both, more or less successful, commences. Moreover, by providing means by which these dissimilar but assimilative currents of force may circulate, so that each may back itself by a *vis a tergo*, and so strengthen and sustain itself, their existence may be demonstrated even to such eyes as ours (which were, however, given to us



for entirely different purposes than the making of such discoveries ocularly). Thus there has been observed that mode of action on which such names have been bestowed as frictional electricity, the electricity of contact, thermo-electricity, though but little insight has as yet been obtained as to their nature.

But it is when there is a primary difference *as to state* between the bodies placed in relation with each other that the resulting phenomena are most interesting. Those which are truly homologous are far more comprehensive than the term "electrical" covers. Thus let a solid be immersed in any fluid such that action may take place between them, a volatile substance in the æther, a salt in a solvent, a metal in a menstruum, &c., then, as they are different as to state, an assimilative action as to state forthwith commences between them. The fluid assimilates the solid to its own state, the concrete particles separating from one another, and becoming distributed like those of the fluid particles. The solution of the solid by the liquid goes on up to a certain degree, when an equilibrium of assimilative force establishes itself between the two. After this, on a fall of temperature or other cause favourable to solidification, the assimilative action is reversed. The remainder of the solid, or a morsel of some other solid introduced into the solution, becomes a nucleus for action assimilative to it, that is, concretion.

Moreover, the concrete or solid may from the first possess the greatest assimilative power, as for instance, the soil, and by-and-by, the leaf, with respect to certain fluid particles diffused in the earth and in the air. From this there results the vegetable kingdom.

But, for the sake of familiar illustration, let us take the original voltaic cell, say, a zinc and a platinum plate united above by a conducting metallic arch, and beneath by a conducting liquid, such as dilute sulphuric acid, in which the united plates may be immersed.

And for the sake of distinctness of conception, and in order to be able to follow the details of the ensuing action, let us suppose that the dilute sulphuric acid employed consists of six atoms of water to each atom of oil of vitriol (monohydrated sulphuric acid), the proportion in which these two elements exist in white vitriol (sulphate of zinc).

Then, on immersing the two dissimilar solids or concretes in the liquid, the assimilative action commences, and since the apparatus is constructed so as to admit of that action taking the form of a closed current, when once begun it may continue; and the reciprocal action is of this nature. (1) The solids or concretes tend to solidify or to concreate the liquid. Meanwhile, (2) the liquid tends to liquefy or dissolve the solids or concretes. And ultimately (3) the persistent or insoluble solids



(the platinum and cell walls) tend to solidify or concrete all. And when they have done their utmost in this way, the assimilative action is then consummated and ceases.

How one solid, as for instance copper or platinum, comes to be less assimilable to a liquid, such as our menstruum, than another, such as zinc, cannot be here stated. Such differences depend on differences in the form and structure of molecules not generally known, and in the case of platinum not known at all. But it is enough for our present purpose to know that one of the concretes in our couple is assimilable or soluble by our dilute acid, while the other is not. And now as to details.

First, on immersion in the menstruum of the dissimilar solids, which, being united by a conducting arch of the same nature as themselves, may be regarded, in the first instance, as one solid consisting of dissimilar particles, such as exists molecularly in a rod or plate of commercial zinc, let us ask, What are we immediately under the law of assimilation to expect? To this it is to be answered, that the liquid part of the apparatus being the most mobile, or the most easily changed, what we are to expect is this, the induction of a tendency to concretion, and consequently a state of tension, in so much of the liquid part of the apparatus adjacent to the concrete part as the assimilative influence of the latter can effect. Hence, if it be possible, there will be a complete concretion of the liquid or of its materials dissociated, in the two strata contiguous to the one or the two concretes. Now, though we do not possess such insight into the molecular structure in detail of dilute sulphuric acid as to be able to picture to ourselves the change induced, when from a natural state it is brought in this way into a state of tension, yet this is known that at the one concrete (the zinc) there tends to form a stratum of oxygen, and that at the other concrete there tends to form a stratum of hydrogen; oxygen and hydrogen being what may be called the non-liquid elements of water, or the terms in which moisture assimilates itself to concretes according to the equation—



which is by no means the statement of an identity as is commonly supposed.\* Here, then, the first phase of assimilative action, which is successful, is on the part of the concretes, the zinc and platinum.

But meantime the liquid is not idle. It is insisting on the assimilation to itself of the solids immersed in it also. In a word, the liquid assimilates to itself, and dissolves into itself the zinc oxide as fast as it forms on the zinc surface. And thus the solidifying action of the zinc surface is not exhausted in securing the fall of one momentary shower of oxygen atoms upon it. The first course of oxidised atoms is immediately

\* See A Sketch of a Philosophy, Part III. Chap. IV.

dissolved away or assimilated to the liquid, and the concrete surface is as fit as ever for receiving a second, then a third, and so on by the continuous decomposition of the water. Meanwhile (confining our attention at present to the oxygen alone) the specific impact of each atom of oxygen must, when embodied in the zinc, proceed according to the first law of motion, ever onwards so far as it can; and thus having reached the conducting arch above it, must traverse it, and turn round in it, and down the non-soluble concrete, and push through the liquid, which must admit of its doing so, thus completing the circuit, and thus backing and assisting in their incidence on the zinc, those particles of oxygen which are now tending to fall upon it.

In all this there is nothing, I presume, but what was long ago thought and justly received. The peculiarity which the introducing of the law of assimilation imparts to the old view is this, that this current of force instituted by the oxygen is not merely force in general, of which all that is to be considered is its quantity and direction, but force of which the form of its elements or their formative power is also to be considered, that form or formative power being representative or productive of oxygen. It will, perhaps, be said that such a conception is occult and mysterious. But is it more so than anything else which is adduced as a cause of particular phenomena? Is it more occult and mysterious than what is implied and confessed to be hid under the term electricity, or in the phenomena of heredity, to explain which one of the most gifted men of science of modern times has proposed the hypothesis of pangenesis? Our law of assimilation explains all these phenomena, and without any special hypothesis. And surely it cannot be against it that we meet with it everywhere in nature. On the contrary, something of this kind is precisely what is wanted in order to render natural knowledge as a whole accessible to the student, namely, something to put him in possession from the first of a master-thought which if he carry it along with him will present all nature as a harmony, and explain all that stands in need of explanation. But to return. There tends, then, in the single voltaic trough, in virtue of the assimilative action of the zinc to be a current of force representative of oxygen pulsating from the zinc surface up through the arch, down the non-resolvable conducting solid, and through the resolvable conducting liquid on to the zinc again.

But such an oxygen-formed current must, in virtue of the relation of hydrogen to oxygen, tend to place a corresponding number of atoms of hydrogen in an attitude to meet it. In a word, it must tend to penetrate the liquid which lies between the two metallic plates with threads of non-liquid aqueous matter, threads of which each element is HO instead of Aq. And thus proportional to the intensity and quantity of the projection of atoms of oxygen upon the zinc will be those of hydrogen upon

the copper or platinum, or upon any other concrete diaphragm which may be interposed between the original couple.

Here, then, as matters now stand, we see that the phenomenon consists in a further fulfilment of the law of assimilation. At the surface of one of the plates (zinc) the liquid is assimilating or dissolving one of the concretes. At the surface of the other, the insoluble concrete (platinum) is assimilating or concreting the liquid so far as it can be concreted, it is attaching, detaining, encrusting itself with, hydrogen. (By-and-by, as we shall see, the concretes do more than this, and concrete all the liquid into the crystals of white vitriol.)

Thus the law of assimilation has in no small measure fulfilled its function. But it is the only law of molecular and of physical action generally. Now, therefore, since *the liquid* has filled its stomach with concrete particles, having assimilated the zinc in separate particles in union with its own, and *the solid* has taken out of the liquid a dry surface of hydrogen, having assimilated the liquid to the non-liquefiable, the voltaic action may be expected to abate, and the reciprocal currents to cease and fall into a state of repose. And indeed it is easy to see how this issue must take place mechanically. The coating of hydrogen on the platinum or copper must act like a non-conducting diaphragm or simple break in the circuit. The saturation of the acid also with zinc oxide has deprived the sulphate of zinc liquid of the power of dissolving more zinc oxide. For these reasons it is easily seen that the current must cease; and with these reasons science is usually content. And, being thus both mechanically and chemically sufficient, it will be thought by some that the explanation is sufficient, and that there is no need, nay, no place, for our law. But a complete scientific conception consists of two parts: first, the design or law; and secondly, the mechanism provided to execute or realise the design or law wherever it exists. The habit of looking only to mechanism is the plague and sorrow of the science of our times, which is issuing so sadly in the divorce of science from philosophy.

But we have now to consider, with regard to galvanic apparatus, that it is not molecular repose, it is the continuance of the current, and that as strong and steadily as possible, which the experimenter wants. Hence what he has to do, under our law, is to discover suitable means for clearing the surface of the non-soluble plate of its adhering hydrogen, and for replenishing the liquid with new solvent power or fresh acid. But say that he has succeeded in both these objects somehow, as by brushing and adding fresh acid, has he succeeded in thwarting nature and in keeping up his current? No; the two dissimilar metals standing face to face, though prevented by having to stand at a fixed distance, and by their state of solidified aggregation from merging their differences by mutual fusion into an alloy, yet act through the liquid, and



by means of it they act assimilatively upon each other. In fine, the more mobile zinc surface assimilates to itself the more fixed copper or platinum surface. The latter comes to be coated with zinc. The original dissimilarity in the metallic presentations is thus overcome. The current ceases. With the fulfilment of the law of assimilation molecular repose ensues !

There is great scientific beauty, then, in Daniell's cell. By one stroke it clears the hydrogen from the non-soluble metal, and permanently preserves the original dissimilarity of that metal to the soluble metal, while, at the same time, it adds free acid to the liquid to supply the place of that which is neutralised by being assimilated with the zinc-oxide already.

But if means are not taken to prevent it, while the action is continued, not only are the metallic surfaces assimilated to each other, but in relation to them both as concretes, as also no doubt to the sides and bottom of the cell also ultimately, the whole liquid also is assimilated or concreted when it has cooled, so that it becomes wholly solid, constituting white vitriol or sulphate of zinc, of which nearly half the weight consists of water in some concrete state.

So much for electricity as an illustration of the law of assimilation. The phenomena of chemical affinity illustrate that law no less. In this sphere, and simply in virtue of that law, two dissimilar molecules when they meet tend to assimilate each other, and as the readiest way, rush together, merging their differences in the genesis of a new molecular species, in which the nuclei of the constituent elements may indeed be permanently dissimilar, but their temperatures and their ætherial atmospheres become confluent and assimilated.

Hence, all separable atoms and molecules viewed overhead are either prolate, axial, or positive in form, or else oblate, equatorial, or negative ; and these tend to unite, whenever they have opportunity, working their way by successive unions as far as possible towards the construction of molecules, which shall be as nearly as possible spherical and homogeneous, that is, assimilated as far as possible in all their parts and particles.

And now, to bring these illustrations of the law of assimilation to a close, let me simply refer to that from which the name is borrowed—that process, namely, by which a living creature grows to its full stature, and its strength is replenished under the exhausting vital action from hour to hour. This process in highly differentiated animals undergoes corresponding differentiations and complication of conditions. In man, for instance, in order to effect it, salivary glands, stomach, liver, pancreas, &c., are required. An *Amœba* requires nothing of the kind, but needs only to wrap itself like a cloak about a particle of food, and forthwith that food is assimilated.



And here the question suggests itself, Why such complications as are met with in these animals which are by general consent placed at the top of the scale? Now, without proposing to answer such a large question here, these two remarks may be made—*first*, Complication seems to be necessary, in order to the segregation of nervous matter and the construction of a myo-neuro-cerebral system, which may be the mother and nurse of a soul or monad of a higher order than the merely material element, and an organism by which the cycle of the economy of material nature may be completed, and made to touch upon the spiritual world again and to contribute to it; *secondly*, Complication considered as differentiation is the condition by which the concrete state can be maintained when the conditions of existence are favourable to the liquefaction or the diffusion of the particles of the concrete. The law of union by dissimilarity, viewed either as a momentary or a sustained act (which is the basis of chemistry), holds good in physiology. In order that an embryo may continue as a concrete thing and grow while immersed and under the immediate assimilated influence of a liquid, as the embryos of all the higher animals are, it must be more and more differentiated. Otherwise it will be sure to be dissolved and vanish. To prevent this, indeed, as far as possible, the fluids in which it grows are already charged with those very substances which its solution would yield, thus reducing the assimilative action of the surrounding liquid to a minimum—all which statements are, however, now made too shortly to be acceptable or even intelligible, but which may yet be left in this state, being not for the present, when the popular demand is all for very light reading, when science is marvellously content with the attainments which it has already made, and when as to the method of science we are all told with more and more confidence every day, that all we can do for the discovery of realities is to go out of doors (leaving the inner man all alone) and to smell the present, comparing its odour with that of the past, and then turning our noses towards the future to follow them. Sensation, we are told, is the alone architect of all trustworthy knowledge, the author, both as to form and substance, of all that is belief-worthy—no such thing as intuition!—reason merely a habit rising from the long-continued use of the organism!

That such a method should be possible, and may seem logical, follows from that universal harmony and homology which our cosmical law imparts to nature. From this it follows that every great fact, such as sensation, may be seen to be reflected, and may be discovered in all things. But to make sensation a basis for an universal method of knowledge, is to rest all knowledge upon an incident—an incident which is in itself unintelligible, until it be lit up by that intelligence which the sensational method denies.

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE CHARACTERISTIC OF EXISTENCE—SELF-MANIFESTING POWER.

SUCH is the view which we boldly take at the outset, and present to the scientific reader. The Creator being one, and the creation in any one epoch (as, for instance, the present) being one, we admit only one cosmical law, the law of assimilation. If it be asked how possibly out of one law, and such an one, there could arise anything like that endless variety which nature displays, the answer is, that the law operates between two limits, poles or points of assimilation, which are entirely dissimilar, and by two processes simultaneously (analysis and synthesis) which are the opposites of each other. Hence it comes to pass that actual nature is a web in which unity and multiplicity, identity and difference, are everywhere interwoven, and that in such harmony that nature is everywhere beautiful.

The reader will naturally feel that such boldness is offensive; and his feelings we cannot prevent. But we claim as a right that, until he sees more than he has had an opportunity of seeing as yet of our views, he shall suspend his judgment, legitimately asking questions, but not affirming or denying before the time.

And here he may legitimately ask this question, How does the law of assimilation succeed in accomplishing its function when the objects between which it is operating are at a distance from each other in space or in time?

Now, to this the answer is, that it does so simply in virtue of that which we regard as the characteristic of all that exists. And if it be asked what this is, we answer that it is precisely that which the term existence itself expresses. It is the standing-out-ness or self-manifesting power of the object, not merely as anything in general, or as anything different from what it is, but as the very thing that it is. We do not go the length of those who maintain that the whole nature of that which exists is to be perceived, so that an object cannot exist but when it is perceived, its existence being constituted by its being

perceived. Existence we regard not as "idea" merely, but as "force." And that force we regard as essentially self-manifesting, or spontaneously radiant, so to speak, into that which is "idea," if there be a recipient of ideas, or a percipient of ideas, or more generally a percipient within the sphere of its action. This view, as it appears to me, is fully borne out by the information of thought itself as to the nature of existence. I find that I can think away all the other attributes of substance; but immediately I attempt to suppose the existence of that which cannot manifest itself in any way, that which is not perceivable by any percipient however perfect, then to me that vanishes altogether—it ceases to be.

Further, while we thus lay the characteristic of existence in the self-manifesting power of that which exists, we do not prescribe any limits in space as to the extent of this self-manifesting power. Thus, it is one of the most certain facts in physics that every atom of this planet, nay, every atom of the planet Neptune, whose distance from the sun is thirty times as great as our distance, manifests itself to the sun, and every atom of the sun manifests itself to every atom of this planet, not, indeed, as a precept, but as the subject and the object of attraction or motion. Nay, by the aid of the æther (which is the grand medium whereby the self-manifesting power of being is enabled to take effect at a distance when other being is interposed), the fixed stars manifest themselves at our planet, though their distances be inconceivably great. We, therefore, prescribe no limits as to distance, beyond which the self-manifesting power of being may not extend.

But it is to be remarked, that the self-manifestation of a remote being or thing cannot but run the risk of being eclipsed, stifled, and lost, when some other being or thing is interposed between that remote object and the percipient. The magnetisms of the terrestrial poles do not manifest themselves to a magnetic needle in the hold of an iron ship. Neither does any distant object manifest itself to the mind of man, unless the intervening æther, the eye, and the optic nerve are acting so as to be transparent, that is, as if they were not interposed. Wherever, in short, substance intervenes, then, in order that the self-manifesting power of that substance may not eclipse that of more remote objects, as, for instance, in order that we may see distant objects, the intervening objects, the æther, the eye, and the optic nerve, &c., must be thrown into such a rhythm as that they shall not intercept the self-manifesting power of the distant objects attended to. Now for this the law of assimilation makes provision.

Distant objects, acting like all objects assimilatively, assimilate the intervening æther and the optic apparatus to themselves, and thus render themselves perceivable. This they do, indeed, only under great limita-



tions imposed by the laws of inertia or motion in space, to which the æther is subject,—limitations which, in man, it requires self-teaching and experience to remove, so that he may perceive the object in its true forms and dimensions.

But this is only man's peculiarity, in consequence of his organic defects at birth, and for a long time thereafter. Those animated creatures which are fit for mature actions at their birth catch the true forms and nature of things at once. They perceive them correctly at once. The chick, for instance, which the day it leaves the egg can leave the cover of its mother's wing, can also run up with the greatest precision to a crumb of bread or to an ant's egg at a distance. And so with all species whose myo-neuro-cerebral system functions perfectly from their birth.

Psychologists, by investigating the phenomenon of perception wholly and solely by the study of a species (man) which is blind and idiotic at birth, and which chips the shells of ignorance of all things only with difficulty and slowly, have necessarily found the theory of perception an almost or altogether insoluble problem. Moreover, even at his best, the embodied mind in man sees objects only very defectively, not wholly as they really are, but only in those few lines proceeding from their surfaces which the laws of inertia permit to be established in the æther,—more shortly, sees them only in perspective. Still, in seeing the perspective of objects, we also see the objects, and that under uniform law. And in virtue of this, it becomes easy, especially when the aid of the sense of touch can be invoked to supply the defects of the eye, to attain to a true perception—such a perception as it belongs to the self-manifesting power of the object to impart at once, were it not for the self-manifesting and, consequently, the eclipsing power of the objects that come in between the object perceived and the mind's eye.

Perhaps, in order to secure a fair hearing, this theory of perception, which is, however, simply a justification of the inexorable affirmations of common sense, would need to be enlarged upon more in this place. But, instead of that, in order to get over the ground still before us, I will only beg the reader not to think either of the percipient or of the object perceived as a point, or an aggregate of points merely, in some determinate positions in space. No doubt, every force has a centre of action; but as to the full extent in space of an unit of natural force as an agent of one kind or another, no limits can be assigned. Consciousness is, no doubt, in the region of the brain. But who shall tell us the boundary in the outward of that power which says I will, I feel, I see? Its modes of acting mechanically are, no doubt, limited to the extent of the investing organism. Nay, in order to their extending even so far, it is necessary that the unity of the organism be maintained by the healthy integrity of the nervous system. In that case consciousness



claims all the organism as its domain ; and not only when the organism is entire does it refer any pain that arises to the region that is hurt, but after a limb has been amputated, and, when it exists only as a phantom, consciousness still feels towards it as if it were still the old reality. Such is the sustained effect of the previous training of the cerebral part of the nerves which still form part of the unity of the organism--such is the effect of habit, in short, or present assimilation to previous practice. But how far beyond the visible and tangible parts of the body the mind, as a power exerting some kind of action or other, extends, cannot be determined.

And the same of other natural agents and agencies. They have centres of being and of action, but to assign the boundaries of their being and action outwardly is not possible.

Meantime, we conclude that the characteristic of that which exists is this, that it can manifest itself outwardly in some way, as for instance to a percipient as that which is perceivable.

If it be asked more particularly, what is the nature of this self-manifesting power, and what are its effects, it might be reasonably answered that these things need not be determined here, since it is only the existence of the power that is insisted upon. I need not refrain from admitting, however, that our cosmical law, the law of assimilation, must determine, if not the nature, at least the mode of action of this force, for plainly that action must be assimilative. And that it is so, when giving rise to perception, is clearly and distinctly seen ; for what is the perceiving of an object, but the mind, as a percipient, assimilating itself to that object ? and what is the percept or remembrance of the object which remains in the mind but the idea, that is, the assimilated symbol of the object, which, however, in consequence of the intrusion in the perception of the mind's own activity and of other previously acquired ideas, as also the perspective image, is often very defective as a representation of the reality perceived ?

Nay, we may say that this self-manifesting power, which is thus the characteristic of all that exists, is the agency provided whereby the cosmical law of assimilation shall be realised. Let us only add, that as to the intimate nature of that agency it is wholly inscrutable. Nor can it be said to be physical until it is embodied in the æther. In that case it is rhythmical, or undulatory, and formally representative of the object whence it emanates ; but with this we have nothing to do as yet.

For the purposes of founding a philosophy, it is not necessary that we should know this. It is enough that we should know that the most intimate and ultimate property, the characteristic, in short, of that which exists, is self-manifesting power. Anything more than this it is not necessary to affirm, nor is it safe, perhaps, if the affirmation is to

apply to all kinds of existences whatsoever. But it is worthy of remark that the existence of a self-manifesting power in an object implies that that object is itself a power or force, or an aggregate of such. Now this is enough for the purposes of philosophy and science ; and we only deceive ourselves when we suppose that we can think of anything that exists and which is not at the same time a force or power.

The habitual use of our senses, the muscular sense especially, and the structure of all those objects which are around us, all of which have both a determinate form, as tested by the eye or the hand, and an exterior and an interior, of the latter of which we generally know little or nothing but that it supports and defines the exterior, betray us into a demand for substance wherever there is existence, nay, a certain kind of solidity or plenum in that portion of space which is occupied by the object, and this we tend to hold as constituting existence and necessary to it. But a substance which is not any kind of power or force, either active or passive, that which can neither do nor suffer anything, is inconceivable by man. When the term substance has any scientific meaning, and is simplified to the utmost, it is precisely power or force viewed as in a statical condition.

Of most things that exist, therefore, if not of all, let us say that they are capable of existing in either of two states, the dynamical and the statical, and that when viewed as dynamical they are *forces* or *powers*, when viewed as statical they are *substances*.

But what we have here to insist upon is, that when we exhaust or think away the properties of existence, the last which vanishes is self-manifesting power in the object which exists, this property being such, that when it vanishes so does the object to which existence was awarded.

At present, indeed, there is a tendency in the popular mind to listen to those who are for excluding everything that belongs to the sphere of pure reason, and who repeat the last words of the Greek philosophy when about to die, namely, that phenomena only are certain, the laws of phenomena being merely generalisations of thought, and therefore phenomena (of mind). And until this phase has exhausted itself again, as it has so often done already, it is only to be wished that those who content themselves with it, would also keep in mind the other part of the sceptical philosophy ; and, with regard to all other things but phenomena, suspend the judgment. In our day, unhappily, instead of this suspension, there is generally denial, and hence a lamentable descent in thought towards zero, with regard to all which it is most important for man to believe.

## CHAPTER VII.

CONCERNING THAT WHICH CAN MANIFEST ITSELF TO ITSELF. MIND  
A WORLD OF SPIRITS. THE REALM OF LIGHT.

THE affirmations of the two last chapters—the law of assimilation as the cosmical law, together with self-manifesting power as the characteristic of Being, or outstandingness as the characteristic of existence—enable us now to reach a primary classification of created objects, which we shall presently see to correspond with that which is known as mind and matter, or rather, let us say, mind and that which is not mind; for there is ground for the apprehension that mind and matter do not include all that exists, and that along with matter æther ought to be considered as something intimately related to matter indeed, but yet not just matter. When the elements of the ætherial medium are regarded as truly and simply material, however small and light they may be, the elasticity and pressure which must be assigned to that medium in order to admit of the velocity of light, are altogether out of the harmony of things, and wholly incredible, especially when confronted with the phenomena and the theory of astronomy. Thus, to justify the velocity of light on the same principles as those of sound, in various material media, the ætherial pressure must be 122,400,000,000 times greater than that of the atmosphere! which is incredible.

But what as to mind? To find what shall be called mind, let us suppose an individualised object which is not an isolated object or an universe to itself, but a member in a system, then, in obedience to what has been stated, that object must be at once self-manifesting and impressed by the other objects around it, and, in being so impressed, assimilated to them more or less.

Now, here a most notable difference among objects may occur. Thus some objects, when compared with the others around them, may be so feebly individualised that they shall be impressed or assimilated and fixed in to their very centres, stereotyped all through; others may be so powerfully individualised, that they may be impressed or assimilated to

others around them as it were on their periphery only, their centres continuing unimpressed or free. Now, in the former case the object which is obviously self-manifesting to other objects, for it is impressed by them, can only be perceivable. But in the latter case, along with this, must it not, at least while it is impressed externally also, be self-manifesting to itself also? But if so, what is this but to be sensitive, percipient, or conscious? To me the affirmative answer seems wholly satisfactory. Quantity or intensity of substance or power in a monad, then, is the condition requisite for feeling and thought. And thus by an immediate co-ordination of our fundamental ideas of self-manifesting power and assimilative action more or less, we reach a distinct conception of mind viewed in relation with that which is not mind.

Nor have I in this deduction introduced any new element into the reasoning. The primeval created substance, the true protoplasm, is still supposed to be homogeneous, capable of feeling, animated by its assimilation to the Everlasting and the Ever-blessed One. I have only supposed that it is partitioned in varying degrees, so that there are in creation some individualised or separate objects or forces, consisting of so small an amount or such weakness of substance, that they are wholly fixed and merely perceivable; while there are others consisting of so much more that they are free in their inner life, and have power to perceive themselves also—not, indeed, in the centres of their being, and as unimpressed and without ideas, but as members in a system, impressed or assimilated by other objects, and so having ideas, with power to look in this direction or that, and to act accordingly.

Such, then, according to our philosophy, is the nature of a mind or a spirit. It is a being so constituted as to be at once in possession of ideas, and so far fixed, and also in possession of undetermined life or activity, and so far free. These are, as it were, the opposite poles of its being, and the conditions of its activity. If either is wanting, the other vanishes. Without something fixed in the mind, some object of thought or feeling, there can be no thinking or feeling. Without something unfixed, there can be nothing to think or to feel with; much less can there be any thinking or feeling of self, that is, self-consciousness. But grant this condition in the individual, and add the law of assimilation operating first from God above, thus giving reason and conscience, on the higher aspect of our being, and, secondly, from nature around, thus giving observation and instincts harmonious with our situation in the system of the universe, and then human nature emerges.

But human nature plainly belongs to the last day of the work of Creation, rather than the first, where we are now. In man, to all appearance, the organism is the mother and nurse of the spirit. And though the assimilative action of the mind upon the body becomes



normally, at least, stronger and stronger as life advances, so long as the organisation retains all its perfection, yet, at first, the assimilative action of the body upon the mind is almost everything. The infant, the child, is little else but the victim of sensations, that is, of assimilations in its mind, effected by the force of external nature including the organism itself. But as the mind, through the sustained action towards the focus of the myo-neuro-cerebral system, which is in the brain, gains quantity or intensity, in one word, energy, it becomes more independent and free, and more able to react out of itself upon the organism in any direction of which it makes choice. But of these things hereafter. (See also Part I. Chap. III.)

What it falls to us to recognise, then, as the first fruits of the creation, such as we have now conceived it, is a world of spirits, the immediate creations of the Ever-blessed One, with no bar between his will and their happiness,—a world constituting a hierarchy, at the summit of which are spirits of the highest order and greatest energy, and at the base, such that they are merely capable of enjoyment, and of no other feeling, save possibly suffering, which is the safeguard of enjoyment.

If it be asked, why a hierarchy, and not all of the same order, all on the same level as the law of assimilation would seem to dictate, the answer is, that, no doubt, we are to expect the whole creation, from first to last, to be in harmony with the law of assimilation; but that law, in its primary manifestation, is not merely the assimilation of all objects to one another, but also their assimilation to the Creator so far as the finite can be assimilated to the infinite. Now, in the infinite, there are two attributes which, to use the language of physics, are, as it were, the opposite poles of his Being, and these (nothing preventing) will impart to his creation the greatest possible variety, while, at the same time, the identity of his being secures analogy and homology in the midst of that variety. These two attributes are the Divine unity on the one hand, and the Divine immensity on the other. And a world of spirits, bearing in its constitution the impress of these two attributes, or assimilated to them, must be a hierarchy, giving, most immediately around the throne of the Eternal, spirits of the highest order compatible with a finite nature, then other spirits increasing in number of individuals as each individual decreases in spiritual power, until those are reached who are possessed of sensibility merely, and can only enjoy or suffer.

And here the question occurs, why should not the partitionment of the true protoplasm, the primal material of creation, why should not the institution of many, instead of one, have been brought to a close before the individual had become so feeble as to be impressible merely, and no longer capable of feeling or of reacting from within itself? The answer is, that the immensity of the Creator, his presence in all space

implies, if the law of assimilation is still to continue as the expression of his will, that the created substance shall be diffused to the utmost so as to fill, as far as possible, the whole of space. Now, that substance cannot but be finite in quantity. In being diffused, therefore, to the utmost, it cannot but be attenuated to the utmost. Each particle or element of it must be next to nothing, and cannot but be incapable of any feeling or perception. When the amount of enjoyment in creation has been made a maximum, as is supposed in the question, the primary end of creation has, indeed, been attained; and, therefore, looking to special volitions in the Creator, we might, perhaps, expect a Divine fiat for bringing creation to a close as soon as existence had been awarded to all the possible hierarchy of a spiritual world. But, at the same time, intelligence always expects that the Divine procedure will be in accordance with law, for intelligence itself is a thing of law, and to ascribe to the Deity a volition whose accordance with law does not appear, is to leave intelligence as to that point in the dark. Besides, to assume that if the end of creation was to award existence to creatures who should be capable of enjoyment there ought to be none others in nature, were to assume that individualised objects which had somehow fallen into an apathetic state (as, for instance, by excessive partitionment or attenuation of their substance), could not be recovered or redeemed so as to attain to sensibility again. Now, it is a legitimate inference, that if by an extreme increase of the number of individuals into which a finite quantity of protoplasm has been divided, sensibility has been lost to the individual, then by the confluence again of these same attenuated individuals into unities or monads of more substance and energy, such sensibility should be recovered again. Let us, therefore, take for granted that no stop is put to that development as to individuation which it belongs to the law of assimilation to institute in the primal substances of creation, in virtue of the harmonious bearing upon it of the Divine immensity on the one hand, and the Divine unity on the other. And let us proceed in the same line of thought, and see what we find next. If it prove to be a realm of light as an abode for the spiritual hierarchy which has appeared in this chapter, it cannot be said that in this there is anything in our finding that is out of order. And that there must be such a realm—an universal æther—fully appears.

Thus, in order that the protoplasm of creation may be assimilated as far as possible, and symbolise the Creator in his attributes of immensity, it must, as has been stated, be expanded so as to fill, as far as possible, all space. And in order that it may, at the same time, symbolise Him in his unity, it must be distributed in unities or particles; it must not be a continuous medium—a medium as continuous as possible, no doubt, yet a medium constituted by discrete elements.

Now, it is to be remembered that the primordial substance of creation is finite in quantity. In being all but infinitely expanded, therefore, it must, at the same time, be all but infinitely attenuated. Its self-manifesting power must be reduced to a minimum, that is, it must possess a maximum of transparency and impalpability and seeming non-existence. We need not wonder, therefore, that though such a medium should actually exist, its existence should often be denied. For man's rough way of philosophising is usually expressed in the saying, that "seeing is believing,"—the eye-sight, its focus adjusted so as to enable us to select our food when it is within arm's-length, is made the test and criterion of universal existence!

Further, of such a medium the intrinsic assimilative power of the individualised elements which constitute it must be a minimum. It may be expected that they shall manifest assimilative action only in the lowest degree, that is, they shall possess only the capacity of being assimilated to other objects, and not of assimilating other objects to themselves. This medium must therefore be altogether fitted for representing the other objects which are bathed in it or repose in it, and for carrying out the assimilative action of these objects to a distance.

Moreover, the inertia of the individual elements and of the medium as a whole must be a minimum. When, therefore, two or more objects in space, in virtue of their self-manifesting power, tend to manifest themselves to each other, which would, it may be presumed but for intervening objects, be accomplished in a moment, the delay caused by the putting in motion the particles of this most transparent impalpable attenuated medium will be a minimum. In a word, the velocity of action in it must be a maximum. And, as to the state of mind which this medium, when thus acting between an external object and a mind, should awake, what could we suppose that would express it so well as the gentle sensation of colour carried out on the wings of the belief which the manifestation of the external object awakes in its existence, and instantly applied to the object, so that that object is said to be coloured. This ascription of colour to the object is not altogether a mistake, as overbold psychologists insist. Colour is of course in the mind only, but so are all other kinds of knowledge. To speak of knowing things in themselves, meaning by this somehow otherwise than in terms of knowledge, is self-contradictory and absurd. Colour, though a more obscure idea than form or motion, is yet a phenomenon of the same order, and is just as legitimately referred to the external object which displays it, meaning by external object something external to the consciousness. Colour is all that we can have in our embodied state as a substitute for a clear and distinct perception of that beautiful dance of the æthereal elements by which the self-manifesting power of an external object



reaches the mind. Whether we could possibly have both a clear sight of that dance, and the beauty of the colour at the same time, is an interesting question. I apprehend that we could not. In this it may be thought there would be a loss of enjoyment, and so perhaps there would, but not upon the whole. That loss would be balanced by a gain of enjoyment of a higher order, not in this case only, but in other cases also. For the same reason also (the transformation of mere sensation or emotion into intellectual contemplation), if one could see the structure and intimate action of a neuralgic nerve, the pain would, I apprehend, vanish, the sufferer escaping to behold it as it were from the outside. Yes, the Indian philosophers appear to be in the right when they affirm that all suffering arises from ignorance.

But to return. From what has been said in our pursuit of creation by cosmical law, what we obtain in one grand movement is *a world of spirits dwelling in light with the great Creator in and over all*. In losing thought and feeling, when the created substance is diffused in space to the utmost, we have gained light and colours. In there being no more spirits there has been provided a congenial home for those that are. And nothing, so far, in the whole economy of creation as yet appears to forbid the universal prevalence of enjoyment in all those forms which are proper to adoration, self-knowledge, and a heavenly sociality.

Nevertheless already, as soon indeed as existence was permitted to things unconscious (though, imitating astronomers who speak of the bright specks seen in resolved nebulae as star-dust, we should call them by some such name as spirit-dust), as soon, in short, as the ætherial elements come in among spirits to fill up the amplitude of space, error became possible, nay inevitable. For the law of assimilation, taking effect in a medium consisting of elements which possess inertia, and which therefore constrain motion to be ever as rectilinear as possible, must tend to reduce a true perception of things as they are, to a perception of things in perceptive only, and thus to substitute for a true perception of them a mere projection of them, which is but a shadow or symbol standing in need of being interpreted before the true perception can be reached. This error, however, though inevitable in the child, spontaneously and speedily eliminates itself as life advances. The external perceptions of human creatures tend rapidly to become as adequate as they are at birth in those creatures whose organism functions maturely from the first. There is nothing in the history of thought that is more curious than that the exceptional process of cumulative observation, or experience which is needful in the human species to make the correction of ocular vision, should have been made the basis, and by naturalists as well as by metaphysicians, of our most advanced philosophy.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### THE MATERIAL ELEMENT—ITS GENESIS AND STRUCTURE, AND NORMAL MODE OF ACTION.

IN what has preceded we have seen the spiritual world owing its being at first to the immediate breath, as it were, of the Creator, then expanding and becoming diffused, as if to emulate the Creator Himself in His immensity, and thus losing itself in constituting the universal æther. As to the actual process of creation, however, all this may have been simultaneous; for the Divine attributes of unity and immensity with ever-blessedness, of which a world of spirits dwelling in light is the image, are simultaneous and from eternity.

But human thought is not capable of the simultaneous at all, and must march in a single file of ideas taking successive steps. In what has preceded, our thought has proceeded from the one to the many, that process which, using the term in its physical sense, is said to constitute analysis. But such a process, being in reality only the half of that of a complete intuition, gives only half views, unless it be followed by its counterpart process, namely, synthesis, which proceeds from multiplicity towards unity, and is constructive of the elements supplied by analysis into unities again. This holds generally; and, as to the matter in hand, we may say shortly that a world of spirits becoming multiple and diffuse, and at last merging into ætherial elements, being now given as the product of the law of assimilation in reference to the *immensity* of the Creator, the same law, when viewed in reference to the *unity* of the Creator, leads us to infer a process of quite a contrary character. It leads us to expect to find the ætherial elements tending to construct unities of greater energy than themselves, and thus to be redeemed so as to recover the spiritual nature.

Now, this synthesis they can accomplish in the first instance by aggregating into groups, each consisting of a number of ætherial elements existing in juxta-position to each other; for if once a portion of the primal substance of creation has been individualised by the operation of

the cosmical law of assimilation upon it, there is, at the same time, secured to it by that same law, a true individuality which it must tend to conserve with more or less force. Just as in assimilating themselves to the unity of the Creator the portions of the ætherial medium occupying different points in space became each a unity, an individualised particle of æther; so now, as such, it must assimilate itself to itself in every successive moment of its existence and tend to maintain its individuality. When gathering together into a group, therefore, the ætherial elements, in the first instance at least, will aggregate by juxtaposition and not by confluence into larger monads.

And now the question is, will such groups grow indefinitely, or, when they have attained a certain bigness, will anything occur to arrest their growth so that each shall consist of a definite number of ætherial elements? That the latter alternative must represent the case appears from this, that the ætherial element, being but a minimum of elemental force in every respect, must have but a small amount of self-insulative or self-conservative force. Therefore, under a comparatively small pressure centrad, it is to be expected that the innermost ætherial elements in a group will become confluent into a new unity or monad of greater power. And this new unity must be regarded as a being or thing of an order different from that of the ætherial element.

Now, wherever there is such a group of ætherial elements as we are considering, and which, to save words, we may call a nebular speck, there must be a centrad pressure more or less; for under the law of assimilation all the ætherial elements constituting the group must tend to be assimilated as to the space they occupy, that is, they all must tend towards, or press towards the centre. In each such speck, therefore, a confluence of ætherial elements will tend to take place in the centre: a nuclear monad will tend to form.

Can we then, let us ask, determine the quantity of æther which ceases to be æther, and which is restored to the state of a more powerful monad in this nucleus, as also the mode of its genesis, and its structure? If we can, there is every reason to hope that we attain possession of a secret which will explain the structure and numerical elements of natural objects generally; for the law of assimilation leads us to say "ab ovo omnia" in a far wider sense than Harvey conceived; it leads us to expect a homology in the structure, an analogy in the functions of all such portions and regions of nature universally as do truly correspond to each other.

Now, with regard to the form and structure of the nebular speck which we have conceived, this appears, that so far as is consistent with the centrad pressure, which is inevitable, the speck must be spherical and homogeneous. This the law of assimilation demands in reference to

a group consisting of elements which are themselves every way similar, and therefore spherical and homogeneous as the ætherial elements must be. Moreover, it appears also, and for the same reason, that the group of ætherial elements, which constitutes the innermost layer in the spherical group, must also be as spherical as possible, and, at any rate, isometrical.

Now, while various hypothesis and modes of syntheses are legitimate as to the number of ætherial elements implicated in the nucleus, commencing with 4, or an elemental tetrad, and terminating with  $2 \times 4$  times that number, there are two which the law of symmetry and sphericity, that is, the law of assimilation in its relation to form, present as superior to all others, and therefore to be looked for. They both agree in having 10 ætherial elements in two sets of 5 each for their equatorial region, but they differ in this, that one of them has only one element in each pole, while the other has its polar region filled up by 5 elements for each. In a word, supposing our elastic ætherial elements (all being of equal size) to be so far compressed that they are now bearing upon each other in straight lines, these lines in the one and in the other would defines the following

*Geometrical Polyhedrons.*



The Dodecahedron.



The Icosahedron.

And here, supposing this to be granted, we are called upon to remark one of the vaticinations of genius. For what was the end and aim of all the labours of the classic geometricians of Greece but to be able to demonstrate the properties of the regular polyhedra, of which these two forms are the chief? Moreover, between these two, this among other beautiful relations has been pointed out as existing, namely, that they mutually circumscribe each other in exquisite symmetry, so that either by overlying the other symmetrically gives rise to a composite structure with a double wall, which is far more perfect than either by itself covering as it were the regions in the other which are naked and open to attack.

Now it follows from the law of assimilation (which as to this matter has been long known to be the law of all chemical and electrical



action), that whenever these two, the dodecahedron and the icosahedron, come into each other's neighbourhood, being dissimilar, they must tend to unite and unify. Hence we conclude that a nucleus which may be permanently insulated, and which may be regarded as fully individualised, will most probably consist of 32 ætherial elements unified into one, and be such therefore that, on being resolved, it will give two polyhedra, one consisting of 20, and one of 12 elements or members.

And here let me caution the reader against concluding that this determination is one either of pretended inspiration or of pure imagination, for that there is no evidence in nature as to these numbers and things at all. They have been reached by a survey of nature at first very minute, then more and more general, to which the leisure of a long life has been devoted, till at last it has reached the form of pure geometry. And let the student carry out his studies as he ought to do, if he equal himself at all to the research into the numbers given by chemical analysis and biology, he will find these numbers everywhere manifesting themselves in nature either complete, or, if defective, then by an orderly principle of non-development or abortion. Of these numbers some traces have indeed been given already in our third chapter. If the reader will be pleased to turn back to it he will now so far see the reason of them.

Meantime let him not think the worse of this our radical morphological determination that I have not put this result as an inductive inference. I might have done so; and perhaps such clap-trap might have made the thing popular at once. But I have neither the patience nor the time nor the money necessary for writing the large books which the inductive method requires—books which are, besides, seldom honest. Let us therefore proceed, though in a few words, consenting that they shall be for the future only.

That which we have now obtained, we regard as the material element. It is the product of the centrad pressure in a nebular speck of æther in virtue of which a definite number of ætherial elements become confluent in the centre into one, thus constituting a nucleus of a different nature from that of the uncondensed æther which still surrounds it as an atmosphere, or, as we may say, a dynamosphere, since most of the phenomena of the material element depend on the action of this ætherial atmosphere.

The characteristic which attaches to our nucleus as consisting of a greater amount of substance or force (for, as has been shown, these two terms stand related to each other merely as the statical is related to the dynamical), is that it is competent to observe the law of assimilation in the second degree. The ætherial element itself can observe it only in the first degree; that is, it can only be assimilated to other beings and



things, and so represent or image other beings or things. It cannot bring itself forward. But this new element can assimilate itself to itself in its most important relations ; that is, in its relations as to space and time, motion and rest ; and therefore if this moment it be at rest, it assimilates itself to itself in this respect the next moment and the next, and so on for ever, and thus remains at rest. If, on the contrary, it be in motion, it assimilates itself to itself in this respect the next moment and the next, and so on for ever, and so it continues for ever accomplishing in every successive moment the same element of motion which it accomplished in the first moment, and therefore it moves uniformly forward in a straight line ; for an element of motion being the progress of one point to the next point adjacent to it, cannot but be an element of a straight line. Now what is this but the well known phenomenon of inertia, which is the acknowledged characteristic of matter ? And such, then, is the principle and nature of inertia in our philosophy. And here I may surely ask the reader whether he has anything else to propose on this head, which has as many claims to intelligent regard ? Our philosophy represents inertia neither as a singular ultimate or unaccountable phenomenon, nor as a merely empirical law, as is commonly done, nor does it invent a ceaseless and universally equally rapid rotation on their axis of all material elements, as has been lately proposed to account for their inertia. Nor does it ignore inertia altogether, as has been still more lately done, throwing back all things into chaos and mystery under the name of force, its laws unknown. Our philosophy merely finds the phenomenon of inertia as one of the thousand consequences of the all-embracing cosmical law of assimilation.

So also as to gravitation. It is the tendency of elements possessing inertia to be assimilated as to the space or place they occupy.

So also as to elasticity or resilience. It is the inertia of form, the tendency of an individualised form, when it has been disturbed, to reintegrate or assimilate itself to its previous form. And here we may remark again in passing, that elasticity, or the restoration or reproduction of form, must render the acting law of assimilation to be secular as well as momentary. And thus, then, are explained also all the phenomena of habit, heredity, atavism, &c.

But elasticity is possessed in perfection only by the material element itself when it is fully invested by its original complement of æther. The material element itself, therefore, is the only species which is wholly intransmutable. And even the material element, in common with every individualised object which has had a genesis and history, must during eternity be liable, under the law of assimilation, to be resolved again into the æther out of which it was constructed. Not but this regressive operation of the cosmical law, this tendency to reversion,

may be met by the unifying and unity-preserving operation of the same law. These two are everywhere co-ordinate, and, in certain cases, either may possibly prevail as the will of God may determine. Nor can the forthputting of that will at any moment or in any region of space be viewed as exceptional or out of the field of science. There is no ground in the nature of things for that contrast of which one hears so much at present under the several designations of the natural and the supernatural. The Divine will is, indeed, now permissive, now imperative. But if by natural is meant that which occurs all independently of His will, either way, then, there is no such thing. Then all is supernatural. Then the economy of nature is one sustained miracle—constant, uniform, and familiar indeed, because the forthputting of the Divine will is one and the same thing with the operation of perfect intelligence, and such intelligence will not vary in its judgment as to what is to be done when the conditions of existence are the same—but still it is all miracle, if by miracle be meant merely the manifestation of Divine agency.

To ascertain the quantity of æther or the number of ætherial elements involved in constituting one complete material element is quite hopeless. But not so hopeless is it to discover the mode of action normal to the ætherial atmosphere, or at least that portion of it which corresponds to the nucleus; and this is more important. And here, happily, there is a familiar electric experiment which will serve to illustrate, though rudely, the normal action proper to the ætherial atmosphere of the material element, when there is no other limitation to its existence but that itself exists, and is called upon to act in a medium which is in some respect dissimilar to the nucleus.

The experiment referred to is that which bears the name of the electric spider, which we may conceive to be thus exhibited. Let there be a metallic ball, standing up from the prime conductor of an electrical machine, and let it be enclosed in the centre of a spherical cage placed in connection with the rubber, and composed of gauze wire or otherwise, so as to allow the spectator to see any action which may take place within. And into this cage let a number of small pith balls be introduced. Then, on exciting the electricity in the usual way, the metallic ball being first rendered dissimilar to the other parts of the apparatus as to electrical state, the pith balls will rush to it, and for a moment adhere to it. But becoming speedily assimilated to it, they will adhere no longer, partly because, in so far as electricity is concerned, they are now entitled to assert independent existence, and partly because, in being assimilated as to electricity to the state of the prime conductor, they are rendered dissimilar to that of the rubber, and consequently to that of the surrounding cage, which is in connection with the rubber.

They will therefore fly off from the ball or nucleus to line the cage or surrounding medium. But then, again, being assimilated there, they will fly back to the ball or nucleus of the apparatus. And similarly from that again back to the periphery; and so on. They will thus maintain a radiant and returning action between the nucleus and the ambient as long as electric difference between them is maintained. Moreover, if we conceive that the metallic ball presents to its atmosphere of pith balls, distributed symmetrically over its surface, twenty regions or points, as also between or beneath these twelve other regions or points, these two sets of points being simultaneously dissimilar as to electrical state, we shall then have twenty and twelve of the pith balls in opposite phases of motion at the same time. Nay, more, in that case we may conceive the cage to be dispensed with altogether, and each pith ball to perform an excursion with return to a point near its origin in the ball or nucleus,—that is, each to perform an orbit which is a very eccentric ellipse, their major axis a continuation of the radii of the central ball or nucleus. Thus would that nucleus be surrounded on all sides by a structure in most rapid motion, more light or ætherial, and more transparent or hyaline than itself. Something of this kind we conceive to be a rude representation of the mode of action of a certain number at least of the ætherial elements which constitute the atmosphere or dynamosphere of our material element. And if this material element thus acting could only be rendered visible, would it not be at once pronounced to be the spore or ovum of some zoophyte or sponge or sea-weed, surrounded by cilia? But let us not anticipate; rather let it not be forgotten that we are now at an incredible distance from everything that is visible. The interior of the white of an egg, under the highest powers of the microscope, is perfectly hyaline, structureless, and invisible, and yet in a single atom of albumine there are certainly not less than 18,000 of the material elements or units of atomic weight, whose structure and normal mode of action when free we are now investigating. The microscope is no doubt an assistance to the naked eye. But the step which it enables us to take in the direction of the intimate and ultimate structure of nature, compared with what is required in order to full insight, is so small as to be scarcely appreciable. The true histology of organisms is one thing, and their microscopic anatomy is another. Nevertheless, as has been already stated, the universal dominion of the cosmical law of assimilation secures a certain amount of homology in structure and of analogy in function universally. And what is seen by the microscope, if accurately observed and rightly interpreted, may be taken as a sample of what exists beneath in the region of the real and the invisible. And if we find that a form and mode of action which, without the slightest



reference to the microscope, or indeed to the use of the senses at all, has presented itself to us as a product of rational deduction from experiment or theory, presents itself also among the first individualised objects visible under the microscope, this is certainly a verification, or at least a good commencement of a verification of our views. No doubt our cosmic protoplasm, being wholly homogenous and undifferentiated, is eminently different from the visible protoplasm of the biologist, which resolves itself on decomposition into oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, carbon, &c. But we shall afterwards find that it is the mother and nurse of the latter. And that there should be first a simple and homogenous protoplasm, and afterwards a differentiated protoplasm, heteroplasm, or deutoplasm, or biogenetic substance functioning similarly, but more composite in structure, is just what the homology of nature leads us to expect.

I have stated that our material element, with the rapidly moving particles of its ætherial atmosphere functioning normally, could they be rendered visible in the microscope would be affirmed to be a spore or ovum, completely surrounded by vibratory cilia. To this I may now add, that if, as in entozoa, or in the mass or tissue of an organism, they were so confined or crowded together that there was no room for the play of the cilia, they would then be regarded simply as nucleated cells, that is, as individualised bodies as spherical as their surroundings permit, consisting of a more hyaline or transparent body, and a more opaque nucleus.

In order to obtain the radiant and returning action in the ætherial atmosphere of the material element which has been described, we have supposed that the ambient medium in which the material element exists is simply dissimilar to the nucleus of the material element. Now it is to be remarked, that the action described tends to assimilate as to state the ambient medium and the nucleus; and when the action has been long continued, that assimilation must take place more or less. But of this the result must be a resistance on the part of the ambient medium to the excursions which the ætherial elements tend to make from the nucleus in a radiant manner. And now let us ask what must be the effect of this resistance on the form of their excursions?

Here two cases present themselves. First, the resistance outward may be of the same amount all round the material element, while, at the same time, the force repelling the ætherial elements from the nucleus is also of the same amount all round. Now in such a case it appears that the effect must be to poise the ætherial elements at a certain distance from the nucleus, so as to construct around it an ætherial shell, thus giving an anticipation of a simple cell with a nucleus according to the original conception of it,—that is, with a cell-wall as well as a nucleus and with protoplasm for an upfilling.



Secondly, if the resistance on either side be not in equilibrio all round, then the radial action must be transformed into spiral. And thus, according to our theory, there is introduced into nature that other kind of form which, along with the sphere and the straight filament, appears so early, namely, the spiral or wriggling filament in connection with a mass or head when it is complete, that is, the form of the spermatozoon, &c.

To analyse the action and determine its morphological product in this case is beyond our power. But if the material element be unsupported by others, this wriggling or spiral action must tend to partition it. And if it partition it symmetrically in reference to all the dimensions of space, and in the simplest manner possible, it would break it up into four individualised objects, each with a spiral or wriggling tail, and a head consisting of  $\frac{32}{4} = 8$  elements, constituting an unity which might be said to consist of æther on its way to matter. And this may perhaps be admitted to be not a bad ideal of that mysterious element by the development of which the male sex is characterised, and to which such intense interest attaches.

Here, then, we see how an individualised object which has completed itself, and attained to the spherical in form and structure, may continue to exist by partitionment (as also possibly by aggregation), and take a fresh start and commence a new cycle of activity again.

And by considering a combination of the two we obtain a theory of impregnation. The unimpregnated ovule or ovum is a product of most mature action and an eminently spherical structure. It is therefore well suited for repose for any period of time, in the ovary of the parent, or wherever it may have been constructed. But when a form with a defective head and a spiral or wriggling tail (an antherozoon or spermatozoon) comes in the way, as it must tend to do, its form being so dissymmetrical and consequently so active; then these two, the ovum and the impregnating element, being so dissimilar, must tend to unite with force and interpenetrate, and so to disturb the symmetrical and reposing structure of the ovum and introduce a dissymmetrical part instead—a part which must, however, as an ovum continue to mirror the maternal genesis, and as changed by the impregnating matter of the male, must also mirror the paternal genesis, and which, therefore, during that evolution on which its dissymmetry insists must represent both parents.

There is yet another case as to the ambient medium which requires to be taken into account by us. In a word, that medium may be concrete as well as fluid. The material element hitherto free may, for instance, come into contact with the wall of the containing vessel, as a

spore, &c., or may fall to the bottom or adhere to some neighbouring solid. What then, let us ask, will be the mode of action which will ensue in our material element in such a case? To this the answer plainly is, that if the concrete with which it comes into contact be in a similar state with itself it will spring off from it and regain its liberty and normal mode of action again. But if the concrete be in a dissimilar state, then the ciliated or tentaculated form will adhere to it. And the ætherial elements on the side of contact, instead of continuing to play in excursions to and fro, as formerly, will take on the character of root or foot, while those only on the opposite region will continue to act freely. And have we not here the type of the ciliated spore now settled in order to commence development as hydrozoon, sponge, or alga?

Now, while it is developing, the law of symmetry and sphericity, however much resisted by hereditary structure, adhesions or incident forces, must still be operating. As growth and development proceed, therefore (1) a constantly recurring tendency to individuation must manifest itself, the object as it grows must tend to grow multiple or to be a community; and (2) this tendency, when aided by the law of symmetry, may often succeed in disengaging from the growing individual, symmetrical animated portions having the aspect of completed individuals, though not really so. Now of this is there not a beautiful illustration in the production of medusoids? &c. That the same individual should prove to be multiple successively instead of simultaneously, and polymorphous as to type, and in successive epochs of its existence stand still without change of form for a time, the individual thus simulating several individuals of various orders, and exhibiting what has been called "alternate generations," is not wonderful. It is merely a serial manifestation of that variety which nature usually displays simultaneously and co-ordinately.

But here we are postulating growth and development for which the necessity has not yet arisen, nor has any provision been made. Let us not, therefore, proceed in this line any further at present, but rather enquire what functions of animated nature the action of the material element itself prefigures and under the law of assimilation must determine. To find a place for growth we must have a composite body, and not a single material element to start from; and to have development in the systematic or specific sense of the term at least we must have an ancestry of some kind.

## CHAPTER IX.

### OF ELEMENTAL RESPIRATION AND EXHAUSTION.

THE material element, as it has been conceived in the preceding pages, is, on the principles there advocated, a very perfect thing. It is isometrical in form, and therefore fulfils already the law of symmetry so that no continued action of that law will induce any change upon its form. And yet it is differentiated in structure, so that it is preserved by the law of differentiation (the maintainer of the concrete state) from that tendency to partitionment or dissolution which belongs to the isometrical when it is homogeneous. The material element, therefore, possesses the morphological conditions requisite for its continuance in existence for the greatest length of time.

Still that length of time, however great, can only be a very long time. The material element having had a beginning in time cannot spontaneously exist for eternity. For, whatever its solidarity at the present, or at any moment, a thing which consists of particles which were once discrete, must, under the law of assimilation acting in relation to time, and known as the phenomenon of reversion, be liable to resolution into its primordial elements again. Whenever, in reference to such composite being or thing, an analytical phase of existence prevails over the synthetic, that being or thing must tend to repeat its previous history backwards, and to be resolved into its previous elements.

And so with the material element itself. And in this perhaps there may be the cause of phenomena which are at present a mystery in science. Thus if the analytic phase of action were to overtake the material element suddenly, as by some rapid change of situation or of heat or of electricity, &c., then in the lighting up perhaps for a moment of a speck of phosphorescence with an inaudible explosion, that element would resolve itself into the matter of light again. And if this were to happen on the great scale, in the upper regions in connexion with our globe, then possibly in the absence of sun-light



faint meridional or equatorial lines of light such as those of the Aurora might be seen even by such eyes as we possess. And in the celestial spaces there might possibly be phenomena like those exhibited by comets' tails. If again the analytic phase of action were not sudden but sustained, then there might be expected the slow vaporisation of the nucleus of the material element into æther, having its issue in the complete disappearance of the nucleus. And thus there might be phenomena of which we are reminded when we think of what happens to the nucleus of a comet when near its perihelion, or to a living cell when its function is nearly being completed.

But this case calls for a more special consideration. We have seen that, in all but a single instance, the material element in virtue of its normal action must be subject to a nucleus-attenuating action which must be regarded as quite normal to it. The exceptional case occurs when the medium in which the material element exists is of the same nature as the nucleus of that element. When that is the case, then indeed the ætherial particles constituting the dynamosphere of the material element, after having been charged under the law of assimilation with a material aura by their descent upon the material nucleus and contact with it, and after that descent and contact repelled by it in virtue of having been assimilated to it, will, after having completed an excursion to a certain extent outwards from the nucleus, experience repulsion from the medium beyond also, that being also similar to themselves. And thus they will be balanced there by a repulsion both from the inside and the out, and so they will form a materialised spherical ætherial shell or cell around the nucleus. The material element as to its natural quick action will be brought to a state of repose, and, as we may say, it will be encysted or exist in a state of hybernation. And here are we not called upon to observe the prefiguration of phenomena of the same nature in the animal kingdom, which have indeed been already noticed? But what we have now specially to remark is this, that in this induction of the encysted or hybernating state there is neither new life nor loss to the material element. That element is as strong and is indeed all that it was at first, but it is no stronger nor more. It merely exists in a state of tension representative of the previous action which threw it into that state.

But what if the ambient medium be non-material, which is the fact. In this case plainly the state of tension induced in the material element must be relieved. The particles constituting the shell or cyst of the hybernating or encysted structure being now dissimilar to the medium beyond, will impart their material change to it; and being thus rendered truly ætherial organs themselves, they will descend upon the nucleus whence they had been raised, and the initial state will be



restored. And now receiving from the nucleus a material change again, they will be thrown off as before. Of this charge again being relieved by the non-material medium beyond, they will descend upon the nucleus as before; and so on, fulfilling the reciprocating action which was described in last chapter. Here then we see, looking to this action so far at least as it has been described, that it must be exhaustive of the material character of the nucleus; for every successive excursion of the ætherial elements which constitute the dynamosphere of the material element carries off into the ambient medium a material aura, while nothing of the kind comes down in return. The longer this action continues, therefore, the more must the nucleus of the material element, considered as a materialised organism, be attenuated. In what way this secular attenuation of the nucleus of the material element shall manifest itself it is not easy to discover. It can scarcely be otherwise than in a relaxation of that unity and confluence of the ætherial units constituting the nucleus which makes them to be non-ætherial or material.

But before forming conclusions as to this matter it is necessary to call to mind that the action of the law of assimilation is always reciprocal. If the ætherial elements in their excursions from the nucleus of the material element impart a material charge to the medium or region beyond, that being of necessity such as to be a recipient of such a charge, it is to be remembered that the same elements in their descent upon the nucleus must impart to it in return some kind of equivalent derived from that region beyond. Now, what can this be? It has already appeared that it must be non-material. Is it then merely and purely ætherial? What, if all the æther in the celestial space considered is already appropriated as belonging to the material elements which possibly crowd that region, is there nothing above and beyond, that can help us out of the conception of a broken or half fulfilled law? What is wanted to fulfil that law is the existence of a power or energy above and beyond the æther or medium of light of a non-material nature, or rather of a nature existing in contrast with matter. What then can it be? To call it immaterial or spiritual would be merely to introduce terms which are at present voted to be unscientific. But this is certain, that by whatsoever name it be called, it must be a power or energy, for nought else is conceivable by us as capable of an objective existence. Let us content ourselves then with saying that, in exchange for a series of losses of its materialism, by the unceasingly reciprocating action of the ætherial elements of its dynamosphere, the material element is all the time receiving from beyond and above itself corresponding accessions of non-material energy or power. And with this the mere physicist, if he is determined to continue such, must be contented as a last word. His distribution of the sciences, and his proposed isolation of physics from

all that is above and beyond, calls out "stop" to the train of thought if it ventures on the next word, for that word belongs to the sphere of theology. Nevertheless, let it be stated here that this sustained supply of non-material energy which, it thus appears according to our views, inflows into the material system from above and beyond the ætherial medium or realm of light, is and can be nothing else than the sustained operation of the ever-acting will of the ever-living Creator of all, not in word, but in power, at once natural and supernatural—*natural*, inasmuch as the exclusion of mistakes and of all need for alterations and improvements implied in His perfect intelligence from the first, gives rise to uniformity in phenomena when the conditions of existence are the same along the whole stream of time; *supernatural*, inasmuch as the whole material system is, according to this view, not wholly self-contained and dependent on itself alone—not merely a timepiece inexorably unwinding and winding up itself again mechanically without the possibility of any departure from what was set at the beginning—not a finished web in a show-room, but a web still in hand, still in progress under the eye of the designer. Hence follow the doctrines (1) that there is both a general and a particular providence; (2), that prayer for physical change is not unreasonable, and may be granted without what is commonly called miracle; and (3), that what history records as well-attested miracle may enter into the normal or scientific conception of the material economy.

But to return to the purely physical conceptions of this chapter and the preceding, have we not, let us ask, in the normal reciprocating action of the dynamisphere of the material element, and the continued ascent of something material from its centre or interior to the ambient medium above and beyond, and the descent from that medium towards the centre or interior of the material element of something of an opposite nature—have we not in this, let us ask, a striking prefiguration of the functions of respiration as it actuates the whole animal kingdom and ourselves? Thus an animal, in so far as it consists of living matter, may be regarded as an aggregate of aeriform particles retained in the concrete state by the fixing power of carbon, which is one of the most fixed of all the elements, and as we may say, the most eminently material.\* Considering an animal then as primordially represented by

\* Those readers who are acquainted with the previous parts of this work (P. II. p. 67, P. III. p. 74) will grant how suitably among all elemental molecules carbon may be chosen as the representative of what is pre-eminently material, and how curiously an atom of diamond may represent the nucleus of the material element itself, as it has been here conceived. Thus it has been seen that, according to our views, that nucleus consists of thirty-two ætherial elements confluent into one. Our method which enables us to deduce the specific gravity of solids, and when

one material element, the carbon in that animal will represent the nucleus of that element. Moreover, though the animal, as a whole and to the eye, seems a concrete, yet it is well known that in every case of life there is, and in order to life there must be, a sustained interchange of dissimilar particles, one set coming in, as we may say, the other going out—not dissimilar, indeed, when reduced to terms of greatest simplicity. In their ground these particles are both the same. Oxygen is the moving element in both cases, but with this difference, that, when going out from the animal, instead of a merely material aura, which is the charge of the ætherial element when going out from the nucleus in the single material element, the oxygen in this phase of its action, when leaving the respiratory apparatus, is charged with carbon; while previous to its descent again, or the returning phase of action, it has recovered its previous quickness—a quickness which has gained for it such names as vital or empyreal air. It has, in fact, in the meantime deposited its carbon in another medium outside the animal kingdom altogether, giving to nature the vegetable kingdom or adding to it.

Here, then, we are now able to understand fully the necessity of sustained respiration in order to the continuance of animal life. The fact has been known time immemorial. It has also been known for long that respiration removed carbon from the system, and that it was this element which, if left in it, speedily produced death. But it was not known why carbon if thus left should prove so speedily fatal. And here let us state that reason which now appears, as it may sometime hereafter lead to a complete theory of poisons. The function of carbon in the organism is to bolt the aeriforms (common and ammoniacal vapours) together, and so far to fix them as to prevent life from being quite ephemeral. But while it holds some particles, it must let others go, for life implies a continual exchange. To be wholly fixed is to be dead. Carbon, the fixing element, therefore, when in excess in the organism in that state (probably of single atoms) in which it fixes, must make for death, and when in excess in the “*nœud vital*” must destroy life.

But respiration not only carries off the effete and poisoning carbon atoms. In doing so it generates such heat as the renovation of the

that has been ascertained by the balance, to deduce from the experiment the structure of the molecule, leads to the inference that the least atom of diamond consists of just thirty-two atoms of carbon (the same being the case with other fixed or reposing substances, such as gold and silver). Thus forming these atoms of diamond into the usual dodecatomic molecules to bring the unit volume of the substance into relation with the aqueous standard, we obtain—

$$\text{Expt. Diamond G} = 3.55 = \frac{30 \times 32 \times 12}{2 \times 1620} = \frac{\left( \begin{smallmatrix} 32 \\ \text{C} \end{smallmatrix} \right) 12}{2\text{AQ}} = 3.55 \text{ Theory.}$$



organism requires. It gives moisture also to the tissues. In a word, it does more for us than can be told.

But it is to be remarked also, that while respiration is a vitalising and an energising process, it cannot but be also an attenuating and an emaciating process. If the concrete state and a certain mass of organism be essential to the well-being of an animal, as we know it is, then respiration brings with it an evil as well as a good, for it is always carrying off matter from the organism. How then, let us ask, is this good retained, while the evil is met and superseded? Plainly the evil will be met, if the matter breathed away by the animal can be reduced to the concrete state again, in such a form that it may feed respiration anew, and thus render this function continuous and circular. Now this is precisely what is done in the economy of nature. The vital or empyreal air of the atmosphere, after having been breathed and charged with the carbon of which it has relieved the animal, and now bearing the expressive name of choke damp, retains so much of the fixing character of carbon and the parasitic nature of oxygen, which are its constituents, that it tends to settle on the surface of the soil and on the foliage of plants, and to give up its carbon there to perform in the vegetable kingdom the same function as it had already performed in the animal kingdom, that is, to fix and to build up into somewhat stable tissues, particles whose cohesion otherwise would be wholly ephemeral at all but the lowest temperatures. Now these vegetable tissues, when not too stable, are such that animals delight in taking them into the interior of their bodies or stomachs, and there they are assimilated to their tissues. Thus is the attenuation inevitably attaching to respiration beautifully remedied. Nor is there any want of vital air to carry life on as before. The breathed air having given up its carbon to the soil or foliage, is now vital air again, and resumes its place in the atmosphere as fit as ever (at least after a dance in the sunbeam), for descending on or into the animal and enabling it to breathe.

Thus is the vegetable kingdom co-ordinate with the animal kingdom, and its complement. The two taken together, with the atmosphere around, and the sunbeam playing upon both, form a complete self-sustaining circle. But the fact that animals and respiration existed before vegetable matter required that animals should be so constructed that they could feed upon each other also; and hence, manifold complications. Moreover, ammoniacal vapour, which is no less essential than common vapour to constitute living tissue, when it encounters loose atoms of carbon, and undergoes decomposition, is not capable of the aeriform state. Hence, to the respiratory system, an ureal system required to be added. In all food also, there are some unassimilable parts, and hence a faecal system was also required. But these facts do not



belong to the intention of the creation, but to the inevitable limitations under which alone any design could be carried out which involved the existence and action of forms and forces in limited portions of space and time. The material element itself is rather a foreseen and a divinely regulated thing, than a freely willed and primary creation. Spirit, that which is capable of thought and feeling, is the original and elect object. Body, that which is wholly apathetic, is rather of the nature of a chemical precipitate in creation, giving grand and beautiful phenomena no doubt, and therefore sanctioned, but still as compared with spirit, only a cloud in the azure.

I cannot conceal from myself how completely these views stand in contrast with all that is currently believed at present by many to whom the name of scientific on the one hand and of religious on the other is accorded ; and, of course, I must take kindly the disapprobation of both. How many hold at present that some one dead thing called "matter and force," acting blindly and only mathematically at first, is the sum of all reality—thought and feeling being merely a transient efflorescence of "matter and force" when it has come to exist in a certain state, nervous ganglion, namely ! Now, to such a scheme of the universe, the views here advocated stand diametrically opposed, and are indeed its complete inversion and denial. From philosophers of this school, therefore, these views will receive no quarter, and as the kindest treatment will be ignored as long as possible. Nor will they be more congenial to many religious men who simply take for granted, without consideration, that the Divine omnipotence implies power to realise or substantialise immediately and independently every idea be what it may, provided only it be not essentially contradictory or self-destructive. But plainly such a conception of creation, in order to be accurate, requires to be specialised. Existence implies all its conditions. That which is to occupy limited portions of space cannot but have a form of some kind. It must therefore fall under the conditions which the science of form, geometry, imposes. Not that this science is anything that exists absolutely or adversely to the Divine power. On the contrary, in so far as it is true and perfect, geometry is merely the expression of the Divine power acting as intelligence when contemplating limited portions of space and time, that is, when looking into a field which is also its own, and without which it is not possible to conceive how it could be at all ; for space is not what an over-keen analysis gives it—a merely subjective phenomenon, a dissolving view. Space is the eternal co-ordinate of the omnipresence of the Deity, objective as well as subjective ; and man owes his subjective hold of it, as usual, to the cosmical law of assimilation.

## CHAPTER X.

### OF ALIMENTATION—ITS MODES AND UNAVOIDABLE LIMITS.

IF the material element was brought into existence by a process of development, a process which took time to accomplish, and that, the synthesis of particles which previously existed separate and individualised, then under the cosmical law of assimilation acting as to time, that is, the familiar law of reversion, it must be liable to resolution into its ætherial constituents again. In the preceding chapter, indeed, the function has been shown by which this law will be fulfilled, and by which the material element must tend to repeat its own history backwards, and suffer dissolution—or rather, let us say—be resolved into that more perfect state of being in which it existed previously, namely, pure æther or the matter of light.

But we are not to infer from this that the material universe contains in its own nature the seed of its own extinction. Those ætherial elements which have once entered already into the structure of a material element must, though now existing separately, tend, when the ebbing of the analytic force allows, under the same law of assimilation, to reconstruct a material element again. And thus in different regions of nature the dissolution and the genesis of matter will be concurrent and equivalent, and the quantity of matter or of force in the universe as a whole will be conserved, as Leibnitz long ago maintained, and as modern physicists have made some feeble attempts to demonstrate.

Such, then, is our conception of the material element as to durability. It is naturally very long lived, but it is not naturally everlasting. In fact, already even in the material element itself the periodicity of nature has commenced. In the cosmical law when viewed as acting in time upon that which lives and moves and has its being in time, the dissolution of the body of the individual and its reconstruction or resurrection are already precluded.

We have seen in the last chapter the mode of action—preluding respiration—by which the nucleus or body of the material element is

attenuated or emaciated and brought towards dissolution. And now, let us ask, Does the economy of nature present us with no equivalent action which shall be correspondingly conservative of the individual? While breathing away its substance into the ambient medium, does the economy of nature present no alimentary provision? Yes; this also the same cosmical law provides. As soon as protoplasmic organisms of dissimilar ages, though otherwise identical, come into the same field, those which were there before, and have lived longest in it, must go to those which have been more lately introduced. For in proportion as they have lived longer they have breathed longer, and so been rendered materially weaker than the younger ones. But in being rendered weaker they have at the same time been rendered dissimilar. In virtue of their dissimilarity, therefore, the two will, under the law of assimilation, tend to unite. And the mode of their union must be this, that the weaker shall succumb to the stronger. The stronger shall assimilate the weaker more or less, and so feed upon it. But here three modes of feeding present themselves, which, according as the one or the other takes place, must be productive of very different phenomena in nature.

I. The dissimilarity between the two individuals which leads to their approach, may be such that their union is only a transient concurrence, and results not in their complete reciprocal assimilation and their unification, but in the construction between them of a reciprocally assimilated morsel, ovum or embryo, which ultimately separates and sets up in nature as a representative of both. The feeding in this case is that implied in sexual function.

II. The dissimilarity between the two organisms or cells may be such that, after having met in juxtaposition, one or other, or both, are no longer capable of maintaining an individualised and separate existence, while yet neither is so powerful, compared with the other, as to assimilate it entirely and absorb it into itself. Hence there result in this case not the genesis of ova and embryos, but the growth, composition, and differentiation of organisms, and in fine, under the laws of morphology, all the variety of species in nature which enter into the original design of the Creator, as embodied in the material element itself.

III. The dissimilarity between the two may be such that the one is powerful enough completely to appropriate the other, to digest, and to assimilate it, adding it in separate particles to its own organism whenever such particles are wanted for reintegrating its organisation, restoring its energy, and rendering its life enjoyable. In this case, then, we have a supply of food and alimentation as commonly understood.

Now, in all this there is, I apprehend, nothing that is calculated to disturb theodicy. On the contrary, is there not very much to admire, and for which all nature, so to speak, should be thankful? This must,



I think, be frankly admitted. But if so, then there is no room for insinuating intellectual or moral dissatisfaction with things as they exist in nature, when nature is regarded in a theistical point of view. There is no room for apprehending or insinuating that nature cannot be the creation of a benevolent Being on account of that struggle for existence which nature undoubtedly displays, and the fine organisation of the carnivora and other feeders on animals. That there should be a struggle for existence, shows that existence is felt to be a desirable thing, or a good, and so far, therefore, the gift of a good Being. And as to feeding upon animals, and no doubt depriving them of their life in doing so, how could it be otherwise, since food must be had, and as yet, according to our conception of nature in its rise, there is nothing but protoplasm or animal matter to feed upon? If it be suggested that some animals might have been made to feed upon other animals without killing them, this is to advocate the substitution of epizoa and entozoa instead of free animal-feeders, which few would be disposed to insist upon as an improvement. If it be asked, why all animals might not have been made to feed upon earth as many worms seem to do, it must be remembered that as yet, when a sentient creation as a maximum had to be designed, there was no place for earth, though it had been possible to make animals such that they could assimilate earth.

But why, it may be said, were not all animals made so as to be vegetable-feeders? To this the answer is, that according to our conception of the cause of creation this was impossible; if creation is to teem with a maximum of sentient life from the first, vegetable life can only be subsequent to animal life. And that it really is so, the actual observation of nature, even in the present epoch of nature, fully verifies. It is quite in vain to look for vegetable food to sustain the animal life with which the depths of the ocean are now known to be carpeted, or infusorial animalcules, or indeed the animal kingdom anywhere in its rise. Besides, the structure of the living vegetable element, the primordial article, shows that it is more highly elaborated than the protoplasmic animal cell. It is as perfect and it has something superadded, namely, a casing of cellulose—an advance in organisation, and a provision which may be compared to the siliceous and calcareous shells superadded to many simple animals. More than this. According to the theory of creation here advocated (which has it not this also in its favour that it gives a very definite relation between the animal and the vegetable kingdoms), material for the construction of a vegetable kingdom does not exist until animals shall have breathed, and lived, and died previously. To give being to a living plant, not only aqueous and ammoniacal vapours, but carbonic acid gas is wanted. And in that golden age of planetary condensation which we build upon, when the “cosmic vapour”



was condensing so gradually that the organic elements only were being constructed out of it, but nothing mineral, or volcanic, or fiery in any way, when, in a word, all was favourable to animal life, it was from animal life alone that carbonic acid gas could be obtained for vegetable life. As to the ammoniacal vapour, which is no less essential, we ascribe to it a direct genesis out of aqueous vapour, as shown hereafter.

Here, let us remember, however, that an epoch of condensation did arrive when the more central parts of our planet became meteoric, volcanic, and fiery, and then no doubt, as now to a certain extent, carbonic acid gas would be generated in a mineral way. But this state of things may still be regarded, not as the triumph of death over life, but rather of life having its revenge upon death; for during this epoch, carbonic acid gas in all probability must have been evolved very abundantly; and to the very extent that this gas was then or is now given to nature, it creates a saving of sentient life; for it goes to construct vegetable matter, and so to supply such food for animals as shall not necessitate the destruction of other animals as food for the survivors.

Very beautiful is the adaptability of carbonic acid gas (along with aqueous matter) for returning to the animal kingdom, to which itself normally and originally belongs, all that the animal kingdom needs for its existence. Having already been concreted, it is under the law of assimilation (reversion), prone to become concrete again, a tendency which on its very discovery gained for it the significant name of "fixed air." When thrown out of animals during their respiration, accordingly, it tends to settle on the ground, or on the foliage which has sprung out of the ground. And there it is parted into its constituents. Its oxygen is restored to the atmosphere to serve for respiration again, while its carbon is taken in to serve as bolt and screw for the particles of aqueous and ammoniacal vapours present where it has been absorbed, which when thus bolted and screwed together constitute vegetable tissue. Now this vegetable tissue does not exist for the sake of its beauty only, though that be so great as to secure universal admiration, nor yet for withdrawing from the atmosphere the products of respiration which, if they had to be breathed again, would prove injurious to animal life. The vegetable tissue is, as has been stated, good for food. That which, if it had been left in the state of "choke damp" diffused in the air, would soon have proved fatal to animal life, is, by being split open and having its oxygen returned to the air, and its carbon fixed in vegetable matter, rendered most valuable to animals both ways. It both supplies air for respiration and food to repair the emaciation which respiration unavoidably implies!

And thus a benignant economy in favour of sentient life appears. At first animals must destroy animals for food, for food is indispensable,

and there is none other as yet but animal food to be had. But as the animal lives and breathes (which are the same) it puts forth leaves, not on its own body, but elsewhere in situations more convenient for bed and board as well as shelter. And the more there is of breathing or animal life in nature, the more there tends to be of foliage, to produce which, moreover, the expiration of the volcano co-operates with that of the animal.

The course of nature, therefore, as to alimentation is this, that while at first carnivorous practice in animals is inevitable, yet these very animals, by subsisting on animal food, give birth to vegetable food, which thus tends to increase in supply as the ages roll on. Thus, in the limit, what we foresee throughout the entire zoological scale are vegetable feeders only, all destroyers of sentient beings having vanished.

The real struggle for existence then, when the economy of organisation is regarded in the largest point of view, is between two orders of beings, which we may respectively designate the lung and the leaf—a friendly struggle in which the destructive defeat of one is in reality the signal victory to both, the leaf in yielding to the lung, affording it “bed and board, coal and candle,” and phoenix-like, speedily arising again from its own ashes, more beautiful than ever.

But why, it may be asked, this round-about method of alimentation? Why these long, long ages, before animal life shall exist in harmony with the laws of sensibility and the dictates of perfect beneficence? Why has it not been arranged that the products of respiration shall serve for food directly and at once? In answer to such a conception, it were easy to show that it violates the law of the conservation of energy. It is to ask that an animal shall be a perpetual motion. Now, if an animal were itself an universe, or a completely individualised and insulated being or thing, so placed and constituted that all the energy which actuated it returned into itself, this were possible. But for no thing whatever, that is a member in a system, is a perpetual motion possible except as a current passing through it. In order to the maintenance, and still more the increase of life in nature, not only is the leaf necessary as well as the lung, but these two must be placed in a definite relation to one another. Neither can that relation be of the simplest kind. It would not do merely to dissolve the leaf in the same medium as that in which the lung breathes, and leave the alimentary particles to be absorbed by the lung generally, whenever they came in contact with it. This would be merely to surround the lung with the products of respiration, and so to clog and destroy respiration. But let the leaf be dissolved in another medium than that of respiration; let it be dissolved in water, for instance, which is at the same time permeated by air fit for respiration, and then the lung (or respiring organism) existing in

this water, may both breathe in virtue of the oxygen in it, and be fed in virtue of the dissolved leaf-particles in it, and that possibly by a peripheral absorption, either partial or general. In this way, then, by differentiating the medium around it, a very simple organism may lead the life of an animal. Thus may there be æther-aerial and aer-aquatic creatures of indefinite minuteness and simplicity of structure.

But may not an animal live in a single medium, as for instance in air? Yes, if its mass be large enough, so that it may be placed around the leaf, thus giving to nature a cell or stomach, with food only for contents, the medium for respiration being outside. Now a verification of these deductions is precisely what we find in nature. The mixed medium of water containing air, is everywhere teeming with most minute and simple highly animated organisms, in which no trace of mouth leading to a permanent stomach can be discovered. They both breathe and feed by their periphery in whole or in part. But of all purely dry air-breathing species is not a stomach a characteristic?

And, indeed, of any animal considered as a subject of alimentation and exhaustion, may we not say that in the most general point of view, it is a large polymorphous cell, with outer and inner walls, and adventitious matter lying within? Drawing energy from the ambient medium in which it exists, it lives and gives out to that medium aeriform particles which tend to concrete into the beautiful forms of vegetable nature. These particles again, when concreted, the same animal lays hold of and places within itself again, destroying their concretion both mechanically and chemically, and presenting them within itself to its own working organisation to be assimilated by it to itself wherever repair is wanted, —and all this for supplying the desires and demands of sensibility, the well-being of which is enjoyment—of which, however, we cannot now speak.

These things considered, it must be admitted that there is no rational ground for indulging, after being enlightened by science, in that moral recoil which the sensitive soul naturally feels at first, when contemplating the animal kingdom, and observing, as is inevitable, that so many species are maintained in life, only by putting to death so many individuals of other species. If, indeed, this economy of food were carried so far that the amount of sentient life in our planet, the number of creatures which exist and could enjoy existence were diminished by it, there would be a legitimate ground of complaint. But all the evidence goes against such a conclusion. Of those creatures which constitute the food of others, the world is as teeming as teeming can be. They have been endowed with such abundant fertility and reproductive-ness, that if we are to seek out the causes of their sufferings, we shall find it in this fact, and their struggle for existence among themselves in



consequence, rather than in their liability to be made the prey of other species. Meantime it is worthy of remark, that the vegetable kingdom has been laid under the same law ; so that there may be as much vegetable matter as possible for vegetable feeders. Nay, all the excretions of animals when alive, and all their remains when dead, are appointed to be converted, if not immediately into animals, then into the beautiful and nutritive forms of vegetable matter. Add to this, that the species which crowns the zoological scale, and is called upon to a certain extent to preside over nature, has the power of adding immensely by cultivation to the fertility and productiveness of the soil, and therefore to the production of food for animals ; and it must be granted that, so far as we can see, all that is possible in the circumstances has been done for the well-being and the abounding of animals.

Creation in its rise preludes as its offspring nothing but animated creatures, consisting of pure and undifferentiated protoplasm. But if they are to live, they must breathe, and they cannot breathe without becoming emaciated and requiring food to maintain them in well-being. Meantime there is no choice of food. The stronger must feed upon the weaker ; that is, the stronger must cause the weaker to merge into them, and to be completely assimilated to them. Now, this being the primal nature of alimentation, it also appears that though such is the only food animals can have as yet, it is also the very best food possible, for the entire mass of that which is eaten is available for assimilation. There need be no rejectamenta at all. The economy is perfect.

Why, then, is an economy which seems so faultless objected to ? The reason is, that the thought or spectacle of one sentient creature destroying another, even though it be under the necessity of avoiding starvation, hurts our sensibility. True, we do this ourselves every day without blaming ourselves. But that it should be an institution in nature, and that, so extensive as it plainly is, seems surprising and even shocking and disturbing to true devotion. The fact is, that in sympathy with the animal seized by another as its prey, we invest it with those feelings of anguish and misery, heightened by the horror of approaching annihilation, which we ourselves should experience were we ourselves in its place. But to all of this doubtless the unreflecting creature which is destined to become the food of the other is an entire stranger. There is also, I think, ground for inferring that a certain amount of compression, and that not difficult to effect, induces anæsthesia, so that to all that happens after the act of seizure the animal seized usually is a stranger. Besides, there is a state of wrapt attention, of which the lower animals seem to be eminently capable, during which, whatever injury may be inflicted upon the organism, no pain is felt. Of this a shocking instance was recorded in the public prints the other



day. A man (or rather a brute) took a bet, that his terrier, which had just killed so many rats in so many minutes, would kill as many more in the same time, though one of its legs was chopped off. The bet was taken. The terrier's leg was chopped off, and his owner won'the bet! Insects also, and even frogs, how little they seem to mind the most serious and even fatal lesions!

Let it not be asked why there should be, in sentient creatures, a liability to pain at all. Perhaps a liability to pain is implied in a capacity for enjoyment. And, at any rate, a liability to pain, when viewed as an institution in nature, is manifestly a benevolent one. It is the embodiment in the very organism itself of an argument to protect the integrity of the organism, far more influential, and far more extensively applicable, than any purely logical or intellectual consideration could be. That it should still exist and force the attention inexorably, and retain its hold of the sensibility, and, in a word, be pain, when the organism is fatally injured, and when the pain can of course be of no use as a protection to life, is merely one of those illustrations which are constantly occurring in nature (and which must be constantly occurring in every purely dynamical system) of the fact that the law must take its course. The design of the law is benevolent; and its fulfilment upon the whole is productive of happiness or protective against evil, but in particular cases it acts otherwise.

But, finally, it may be asked, why death at all? And here a most interesting inquiry presents itself in its relation with our philosophy. Nor ought it surely to be against that philosophy, that the conclusions to which it leads are eminently orthodox. Thus, the dissolution of a living organism considered as death, that is, as an evil which has befallen it, accompanied usually by pain, and certainly with the cessation of all previous enjoyments, and the possibility of all future enjoyments in the organism itself as the abode of sensibility—this, which is what is usually meant by death, does not attach to an organism, if its organisation be internally as perfect as it may normally be, and if it be placed in a perfectly harmonious relation with its environments,—provided that organism has been created in perfection at once. If Adam and Eve were called up into being of full size upon the spot, and that spot a paradise, then, for aught that appears, they would be naturally immortal. Anatomy, when it separates itself from pathology, and as a purely mechanical science, makes a study of a full grown healthy human body, can discover no cause why the organism should strike work or fall to pieces after seventy or after seven hundred years, or at any time. Our organism is not like the time-piece of the watchmaker, which from first to last consists of the same particles, which therefore eventually cannot but be exhausted, and so becomes a wreck. Organisation, as fast

as any particles in an organism are worn out by work, replaces them with others, fresh from the sunbeam. And—but for a certain fact—the human frame, if fitly placed, would be a living structure as truly everduring as a river, which, by the aid of its surroundings, the mountain, the ocean, the sunbeam, runs on for ever. What that immortality-destroying fact is, in a religious point of view, we have nothing to do with here. But it belongs to us, as explaining phenomena scientifically, to state what it is that prevents immortality now. And that we find in the appointment for the first woman, that she should bring forth children. Under the cosmical law of assimilation (acting as reversion, one of its most inexorable forms), whatever has had a first childhood, must have a second childhood too. Birth and growth imply decay and death. But meanwhile by birth, and during growth, as I have elsewhere shown in detail,\* the human organism has become the mother and nurse of a non-material, a purer than ætherial being, in a word, a spirit, which survives the dissolution of the organism as naturally as the material atoms themselves, of which that organism consists.

But while it thus comes out scientifically, that the immediate creation of the first man, as affirmed in Genesis, and his immortality harmonise and imply each other, we ought, if we are to apply the term death, viewing it as an evil, to the whole of creation, to limit our conceptions to the actual amount of the evil that is in it. The fact is, that with regard to the whole of animated nature, with the exception of our own species, death, inasmuch as it is the necessary preliminary to dissolution, is not an evil; for the dead need no food; and every living creature before it dies tends to give birth to more; and that state of matter which is secured by dissolution is a higher state of physical existence than that in which the same matter forms an organism. When in a state of dissolution, the constituents of living bodies are æriform, and this is a more perfect state than the concrete, or indeed any other state whatever. And hence the determination of organisms towards death and dissolution, as soon as the ancestral development insisted upon by the law of assimilation has been attained, is not an evil. If the organic elements had feeling, and were capable of desire, they might possibly wish, and ought certainly to be excused for wishing, to be off from the often questionable situations in which they are held down in an organism. Better surely a dance in the sunbeam—a dance, moreover, during which they may be constructed, according to our philosophy, into certain tissue-elements, which, in their turn, need only to be combined, in order to give being to living organisms aloft, so that the dissolution of heavy life on the earth's surface may possibly animate the air with most light and lucid creatures.

\* See Part I. p. 151.

## CHAPTER XI.

### OF REPRODUCTION AND SEX.

It has already appeared to a certain extent, and it will be shown more fully in another chapter, that a single material element may be accepted as a prefiguration of an entire individualised organism, animal or plant. And here, after considering the functions of respiration and alimentation, we may inquire whether a single material element does not prefigure also the function of reproduction, and haply explain also the fact in nature of difference of sex.

The function of reproduction is generally regarded as the very characteristic of living nature, whether animal or plant. Many individual objects are supposed to want it, and to them is denied a place in either kingdom. But here, as so often, it falls to us to extend the limits of conception. Reproduction is not confined to what is usually regarded as an organic being, whether animal or vegetable. Reproduction, as a *nisus* at least, is universal. It is, in fact, the simple expression of the law of assimilation operating in time as well as in space. Thus wherever there has been individuation by integration of successive parts or particles, then, though the process may have been completed inasmuch as it has reintegrated the ancestral form, still that process must tend to go on; for never and nowhere is there any suspension of the cosmical law. It cannot now, however, bestow its operation on the further construction of that which has already attained to its fully developed form and structure. It must now, therefore, operate otherwise. And therefore it is only to be expected that it will commence the construction of other forms which shall be like the ancestral form in its first beginnings, and which shall be capable of development into that form when the conditions of existence are suitable and aliment is supplied.

Nay, the reproduction of like objects by antecedent objects must go much further than this. And so it manifestly does. Thus let there be a saturated fluid, liquid or æriform, and into it let a bit of concrete



matter project or be suspended, and then as soon as the temperature falls or any condition favourable to solidification occurs, something concrete, an element of crystal or of sublimate will soon form and grow into visibility, and in due time come to possess the features proper to its kind. Again, when a vessel with smooth walls contains that which is wholly liquid—as, for instance, pure water—that liquid may be cooled far below the degree at which it usually concretes. But on dropping in a particle of a concrete, say a bit of ice, into the water, the whole immediately assimilates itself to it—the whole starts into ice. And conversely, when such concretes are overpowered by a fresh affusion of liquid, the latter assimilates them to itself; the concretes disappear in it, and the liquid is reproduced. And these phenomena, which may be observed from hour to hour in the laboratory, take place secularly in nature. Thus adjacent rocks, even where entirely different origins are assigned to them, assimilate or tend to reproduce each other on their confines, and are seen to “pass into each other.”

But it is in reference to more fully individualised and more easily transformable objects that the phenomenon of reproduction, either molecular or massive, shows itself more articulately. Such is the process of healing and of ulceration. Thus, given a living concrete tissue and liquid plastic matter adjacent to it, then either the solid or the liquid, according to the intimate conditions of existence, proceeds to reproduce the other. If the concrete prevail, there is healing up. If the liquid prevail, there is ulceration or destruction of tissue. Of the same order are the phenomena of normal growth generally. Given a group of living cells and a suitable pabulum, then these cells, nothing preventing, will generate others. Nay, so general is this phenomenon, that it is most usually held to be imperative, in order to the development of more living cells, that there must be pre-existing living cells to begin with. Let us not fail to remark, however, that in order to the increase of cells an external pabulum as material is not indispensable. The law of assimilation may also, and that most economically, be fulfilled by the segmentation or spontaneous fission of the parent structure. And this, being the most economic mode of all, we see to prevail in the beginnings of very many species, from the most simple Gregarina to the human ovum, the commencement of the most highly organised being.

As to the morphological principle in the developing individual which rules the phenomena, and which along with assimilation to the parental form determines the actual form and structure of the young individual, it is the same law (of assimilation) in its cosmical function, namely, a determination towards the spherical and cellular. And this is the usual course. Under the linearly-acting-forces or currents arising from a situation on the surface of a revolving gravitating sphere, the form of the



future individual, spore or ovum, which at first is to be expected (as has been shown) to be more or less spherical, becomes elongated. But assimilation, at once to the previous sphericity and to the spherical in general now reappearing, forthwith tends to partition this elongated form into two shorter or more nearly spherical parts. Then these, by the same process, are partitioned into two others, and so on; the increase thus taking place at the rate of 2, 4, 8, 16, 32, &c.; the portions or cells obtained by this process of segmentation resuming more and more the spherical form.

And here we may remark in passing, that in this way also this phenomenon is to be explained that every axial form, filament, or fibre tends to be crossed by nodes or septa and to become moniliform more or less (muscular fibre, conferva, axis of plant, &c.). These nodes or septa, &c., are a misus at giving equators to the axial forms (branches and foliage being the more successful fulfilment) and of breaking down linear forms into frusta, which shall be as spherical or monometric as the conditions of existence will allow.

But a reproduction still more elemental than any of these attaches to our theory. Thus the nucleus of our material element consists of 32 ætherial elements confluent into one, but previously discrete. Hence, under the law of assimilation, a twofold reproduction. First, by secular partitionment and assimilation one material element will tend to reproduce its former state, and to part into 32 ætherial elements again; and, secondly, out of these 32 ætherial elements there will tend to be produced 32 material elements as from the spawn of one. For each of the 32, after being set free, must, under the law of assimilation, be possessed of a virtue which it had not before. It must continue to mirror within itself, and, as it were, dynamically remember and so to act towards the reconstruction of such an object as that of which it is itself the offspring. It must, in short, act as a spore, a bud, or an ovum. A single material element having opened up must tend to give birth subsequently to 32. And thus we find at the very origin of material nature, the prelude of that very great fecundity of organic species which has excited so much wonder, and which, in consequence of the necessity of alimentation with an inadequate supply of food, gives rise to the struggle for existence, which is the cause at once of so much suffering and of such advancement in nature. For in this struggle those individuals who are least fitted for it, and which occupy the worst positions, must succumb; while the survivors, impressing, as under the law of assimilation they must tend to do, their superior points and powers upon their descendents, must tend to be the parents of an improved progeny. If it be asked, how come they to be possessed of those superior points and powers in virtue of which they have survived, the

only answer possible as yet is, that in them, along with the vigorous operation of the special type as maintained by heredity (that is, the operation of the law of assimilation in reference to time), the influence of the pangeneric type, the type of types, the tendency towards the spherical and cellular (that is, the operation of the law of assimilation in reference to space), must have been eminently strong, as also their situation among their environments, compared with that of others of their own kind, most favourable. And it is curious to remark, that this view, though so different in its conception and statement, does not differ practically from that of Mr Darwin. For the capacity or tendency to indefinite variation in all directions which he proposes, may also be described as a general tendency in organisms to radiate from their centres, which is the same thing as a *nîsus* at the spherical and cellular.

But in order to account for the actual forms of all organic species, other morphological data than those recognised in Darwinian writings are indispensable; and it is to be regretted that that which is capable of explaining only a part should be advanced as if it could explain the whole. In order to this, along with a knowledge of the law of assimilation operating both in reference to time and space, and thus, while maintaining and reproducing hereditary types, advancing them also towards more perfect structures, a knowledge is also indispensable of the forms of the atoms of the organic elements, especially carbon, and of certain vapours, especially common vapour and ammonia, and of many planetary conditions and applications of forces at present wholly unknown, and which are likely to remain wholly unknown so long as students of physical science refuse as they do now the helping hand of theology. Nay, after these things have come to be known, it will probably be ages before the human mind can give the plan or explain the structure of the simplest and most minute of the Protozoa. The human eye, when assisted by the most powerful microscope that ever can be constructed, and by means of it seemingly made to touch the object of study, is yet at an all but infinite distance from the region where individual molecules come into view. For them there is the mind's eye alone. And in this there are at the present day not only so many notes, but so many beams, that in order to clear rational vision a distant future must be waited for.

Meantime, referring to Darwin's theory, the idea should surely exalt our conception of the Creator, that already, from the first, in the structure of the material element itself, He, having eternity at his disposal, provided, that in good time the human hand should be given to nature, and in the same species a brain so powerful and so related to the spherical, the type of form, that in its focus of action as an organism of æther with its appropriate currents and matter supporting it and

them, a being of a higher order than the merely material or the purely ætherial should receive its birth and grow in energy, even a spirit, which, when the organism that served as its mother and nurse has performed the cycle of its function, and given up its matter in individual particles to fly about in the air for a season, shall continue to exist, and go to join the world of spirits, and live in the realm of light, and participate in an endless progress towards perfection and in enjoyments of the highest order.

A theory of development, whether it be the Darwinian or any other, does not deny design in nature. Rather it claims all nature as one grand design, yea, a design realised with the utmost perfection and economy, inasmuch as it assigns to those parts of nature which are first created the duty of realising the design of the following parts without needing the collateral interference of Him who is the author of all—an interference which, if it were needed, would it not imply some defect either of foresight or of power? No doubt, during the working out of such a method of creation, it is only to be expected that many individual objects shall be built up in which all the attributes of the mind of Him who designed the parts as a whole shall not appear, at least to such finite insight and thought as man possesses. The awarding existence to a dynamical system which is to act mechanically, and therefore elastically and rhythmically, and to be allowed to effloresce into all that belongs to it as such, implies that, along with the development of opposite polarities, there shall be also that of opposite endowments. And, therefore, we may expect in sentient nature also, objects and actions which, viewing them in the light of sentiment, we must regard as permitted rather than as directly willed by the Creator. Now this is precisely what we find in nature. The grand method adopted, while it gives to nature an all but infinite variety of objects, and never fails to build them in harmony with themselves and their surroundings, so that the machinery is everywhere exquisite, and the actions everywhere appropriate to the machinery, yet gives room for a sentiment which both the object and the action most immediately awake that not unfrequently conflicts with those attributes in the Creator which our intuitive convictions of what He is, as also the moral nature which he has awarded to us, peremptorily insist upon.

It is strange how little regard theologians sometimes pay to features in creation, which to some naturalists seem insuperable difficulties to the belief, that nature is the creation of a benevolent Being. A writer who is at once an officiating clergyman in Cambridge, and a professor in the University (nay, a master in mathematical and physical science, and the author of a molecular theory which is very scientifically wrought out), in a work on the Scripture doctrine of creation, when criticising the



theory of evolution and repudiating it, again and again adduces the lion as a witness, that such a noble creature could not have been created in such a way! Surely the lion is *par excellence* one of those destroyers, in reference to which every considerate theist should be thankful for any derivative theory that would account for their creation otherwise than by the very finger of God directly applied to model a brain, teeth, claws, tendons, and skeleton, all so exquisitely co-ordinated with one idea, and that fitness for the one special work of seizing and destroying living creatures as good or better than the beast itself, only not so strong.

But to feel the necessity in order to the satisfaction of our moral nature of some large and all-embracing view of creation, we need not wander from our present subject. When thinking of reproduction, the fact of difference of sex presents itself. Now that this difference is not essential to life, and that it exists in material organisms alone, we are assured. And looking at it without the aid of adequate science, really nothing seems more uncalled for. Why, may it not be asked, is one-half, perhaps, of all the individuals, and that in the higher and highest species, rendered useless for the continuance of the species without the concurrence of the other half, this other half being otherwise useless altogether for this great end? What, may it not be asked, can be the reason of the institution of sex, and how can it have come into being, sex, a peculiarity of organisation extending to almost all organic beings, and which, in our own species, is the cause of so much suffering, and if of enjoyment also, yet of enjoyment so low, that all are ashamed to speak of it? It certainly looks as if to account for such a state of things, we must suppose that nature is the work of some Demiurge, or, at any rate, that there must be some or other cause than that of a Supreme Reason acting freely in the absence of all limitations.

Now, does not a reference to the structure of the material element itself, as it has been conceived in these pages, hold out a prospect of explaining this seeming imperfection in the individual? Thus we have supposed that the body of the material element consists of 32 ætherial elements confluent into one, yet bearing traces of genesis in two layers of 12 and 20 respectively. Moreover, on conceiving the genesis of that element, we supposed that the 12 were central and the 20 peripheral. Now that we did, simply because this arrangement was the easiest mode of synthesis. But morphologically considered, the structure would be more perfect, more spherical and cellular, if the 20 were central and the 12 peripheral. And for anything that appears to the contrary, this arrangement may exist as well as the other. Now, if so, if both may be, then both will tend to exist in equal numbers; for as soon as one of one kind has been constructed, the law of differentiation (induction) will tend to secure the construction



of one of the other kind as its neighbour. Here, then, is at once an encouragement to inquire whether this difference at the very root of material nature may not prelude and necessitate a difference of sex in composite organisms; for nothing is more remarkable, where sex is most fully pronounced, than the equality of the numbers of both sexes.

But of more consequence to the investigation it is, to inquire whether the difference between the two kinds of material element has any analogy to that between the two sexes in the same species. Now, as to this, it may be remarked, that though the law of assimilation will doubtless impose the same ætherial volume overhead upon both, yet the body (or nucleus) of that in which 20 are central, will tend to be somewhat larger than those in which 12 are central. In this, then, we see an accordance with another phenomenon of sex, for one of the sexes in the same species is generally somewhat larger than the other.

Further, when compared with everything else, the two sets of material elements may be said to be similar to each other. But when compared with each other, they may be said to be dissimilar as well as similar. Now hence, in virtue of their dissimilarity, they will tend to unite together; and in virtue of their similarity, they will tend to remain separate like similars in general. And these twofold tendencies will be satisfied if, as a consequence of the act of union, the amount of difference between them be diminished; for in that case, after union they will separate, and thus will remain separate until the previous amount of difference accumulate again. As to the mode of action in both, arising from difference between them, it must tell outwardly by a difference in the times of the excursions and retreats of the ætherial elements in their atmospheres or dynamispheres. In the one, the excursion of 12 must be simultaneous with the retreat of 12 in the other, and that of 20 with 20, and consequently 12 must be ever encountering 20 in the same phase of excursion or withdrawal. Along with a perfect receptivity on both sides, there must therefore be also a certain conflict. And this conflict must, during the time of union, tend to confuse the reciprocal rhythm altogether, and indeed to render the same rhythm radiant in both, and so to bring the union to an end, and to effect separation; on the occurrence of which the previous normal action (preluding respiration) will gradually be re-established. It must be remarked, however, that the state of the two, after this sympathetic and yet conflicting state of union, will not be quite the same as it was before. Assimilation at least as to an aura must, to a certain extent, have taken place between them. A loss, at least as to its previous power of functioning, must have been sustained on the side of that whose parts most engaged are represented by the number 20, and a corresponding gain must have

been made on the side of that whose parts engaged are represented by the number 12. Supposing, then, that we now are in the midst of speculations which relate to sexual union and its consequences, it follows that of the two sorts of material elements which are otherwise identical, but differ as to the order of the supraposition of the two layers of ætherial elements which constitute their body, that in which 12 are central—that is, the kind most easily constructed—preludes the female sex, while that in which 20 are central preludes the male. Now is there not here again, one of those somewhat obscure verifications which, nevertheless, are all that we can reasonably expect, while yet we are at such a distance from the visible reality? Is it not generally agreed that the female in general is more easily constructed than the male, and that the as yet unimpregnated ovum or ovule is a simple thing compared with the spermatozoon or antherozoon?

Moreover, it is not without great interest to observe, also, that this theory of the genesis of sex, implies that originally every simply individualised organism tends to be bisexual or hermaphrodite, containing in its own organism both male and female parts; but yet bisexual on such conditions that, in order to the continuation of the species by a succession of individuals, reciprocal union and impregnation is required. Now, that such is the tendency of actual nature, embryology and natural history go to prove more and more every day, although discoveries in this line, seeming as they do to imply the superfluous and therefore the unexpected, are but slowly made.

And here a question with regard to cell life suggests itself. Are not the nucleus and the nucleolus in some respects in the relation to one another of the different sexes?

But enough, it will be said,—long ago enough—of such transcendental imaginary biology. And, indeed, I might not have ventured so far, if I had it not to remember how, when I was young, I was the object of ridicule at the University for accepting doctrines in “transcendental anatomy,” newly imported from the Continent, which are now the common belief of everybody. Besides, the enjoyment that attaches to what promises to be new insight into the mysteries of nature, is so great and so high, that he who has experienced this kind of enjoyment in any good measure is emancipated equally from the love of applause and the fear of ridicule. The social principle in our nature is, no doubt, sometimes very inexorable. Man is emphatically made for loving and being loved, and therefore honoured by others of his own kind. But where these conditions of social enjoyment are denied, he may have a grand revenge, by devoting himself wholly to the pursuit of truth.

## CHAPTER XII.

### VEGETABLE MORPHOLOGY—ITS GENERAL PRINCIPLES.

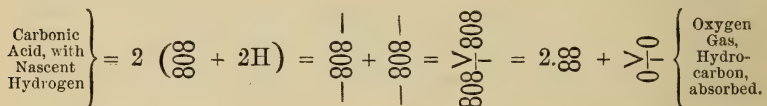
WITH the light which we now possess as to the possible origin of difference of sex in organisms, we are in a condition to venture on an explanation of the forms and structures of plants and animals in some of their more minute details. And here it will be remarked, that our theory would lead us to treat first of animals and not of plants, as also of such as are most minute and microscopic, rather than of those which are palpable and large. But it is so difficult to be sure about that which is invisible except by the aid of the microscope, and the animal cell is so rapidly changeful, that scientific prudence dictates our taking in hand first, not the animal cell in the animal, but that cell, when rendered more stable by being encrusted or encased in cellulose, that is, the vegetable cell ; not indeed when single or as a microscopic object, but when aggregated and constituting a plant of the more perfect or typical kind, say a flowering plant.

Now here we may remark, in the first place, that in order to be able to analyse and come to understand the form and structure of the typical plant, and of the vegetable kingdom generally, its relation to the animal kingdom must be remembered. That relation, in its most eminent feature, is to supply the latter with food. For although the animal may have a form which exposes as small a surface as possible to the ambient medium—that is, may be as compact and spherical as is compatible with a locomotive apparatus, &c.—yet inasmuch as an animal is essentially a breathing creature, it cannot but be continually losing of its substance, and imparting that loss to the ambient medium. And hence the place in nature for the plant. It is wanted to gather up the products of respiration which are diffused in the atmosphere, and to present what in them has been lost by the animal for the redintegration of the organism again of the latter. The plant, therefore, may be expected to have a form which is expanded as far and wide in the ambient air as that of the animal is centralised. Now this is clearly



the character which the vegetable kingdom displays. Its characteristic is organism expanded into thin laminae named leaves—laminae which possess the power universally, during the period of day and sunlight, of absorbing the products of respiration and of decomposing the carbonic acid, appropriating its carbon and letting the oxygen gas go free; thus providing for the animal kingdom aliment both ways: (1.) Aliment for redintegrating the animal tissues; and (2.) Aliment for sustaining respiration!

What the apparatus in the leaf, by which this decomposition of carbonic acid is effected, the popular chemistry has as yet made no step towards discovery. It is only known that in the laboratory such decomposition is impossible by any process which could be supposed to take place in organic nature. I have elsewhere shown that it arises, in all probability, from the construction in the vegetable tissue of tetratoms of hydrogen, which, being highly negative in form, are similar to oxygen in their mode of action, and are therefore repulsive of the oxygen which exists in carbonic acid, and so decompose it. The process may be imagined to be something of this sort. In the sunny leaf, where essential oils, &c., are being developed, let there be atoms of nascent hydrogen. And let one atom attach itself to each pole of the atom of dioxide of carbon as if to reduce all to common vapour and glance-coal at once, then instead of this, and for its indefinite postponement, we may have the equations—



Possibly in some such way may carbonic acid be decomposed by the power of the living foliage when aided by the incidence of the sunbeam or the light of day. But meantime we must content ourselves simply with regarding this admirable power as residing in chlorophyll, a substance in vegetable nature which is so named because to it the general verdure of the vegetable kingdom is owing.

The expanded lamina or leaf, then, is the characteristic element of vegetable nature. But in being led to this conclusion, have we to give up the spherical superficies which we have maintained, that the law of assimilation gives as the culminative form of every object which is individualised by nature—a form seldom fully constructed indeed, but always aimed at? No; the vegetable lamina or leaf, or rather the umbrella of leaves which is the fully developed form of the leaf-bud (that bud as spherical as its mode of nutrition, &c., will allow), is also as spherical as these same conditions will allow. And if each single leaf in the phyllotaxy of the bud-system, while extending in a radiant



manner to the utmost acquires an elliptical, oblong, or very lengthened form, as it so often does, still the tendency to be circular shows itself. It generally subdivides the leaf into leaflets or parts, each of which, though developed under the assimilative influence of the whole leaf, is more circular than the whole.

And while the circular, as modified by its unavoidable mode of nutrition and pressure in the bud, appears in the individual leaf, and still more in the system of leaves, which is the development of the bud, the spherical appears in the distribution of the whole system of leaves proper to the entire tree, shrub, or plant, if it be fully borne up in the atmosphere by trunk or stem; the hemispherical, if it be not. On this subject I saw my way (as it seems to me) so long ago that on July 12, 1860, I read a paper before the Botanical Society of Edinburgh, entitled "Vegetable Morphology, its General Principles," which was, I believe, published in the Transactions of that Society, and also in the *Edinburgh New Philosophical Journal* for October of that year, in which the view I am now advocating was set forth. An extract from that paper will serve my purpose now, while no one need regret the repetition, since the periodicals in which it has already appeared have, I presume, gone into the vault of all the Capulets:—

"The forms of plants in general, the plant-form, why is it what we find it to be, and not otherwise?—that is a question which science has not yet answered. Philosophical botanists have indeed shown that all the more perfect plants may be regarded as consisting of an axis with its appendages; and that all these appendages, however varied in their forms and functions, are either leaves or transformations of leaves. They have also shown that all the special organs of plants have their uses, uses often manifold, and always good, and that the whole vegetable kingdom is beautiful, and calls upon every beholder that possesses sensibility to adore the Creator. But it has not yet been shown why the forms and organs of plants are what they are, and not otherwise; why the typical plant consists of an axis tending to spread out and radiate upwards and downwards into branches and root, the former tipped by the foliage and fruit, the latter by the rootlets and spongioles; why plants consist of the matter of which they do consist, and not other matter; and why they are so highly coloured and so fragrant. For all these features of the vegetable kingdom, and others of the same order, it has hitherto been possible to assign, not physical and physiological, but theological and moral reasons only. It has been possible to refer them only to the will of the Creator that they should be as we find them. Now, this is no doubt the ultimate reason; and for moral purposes, and for men in general, it ought to be sufficient. But to the man of science it is simply equivalent to saying, 'God

knows ;' for the man of science is not at liberty to forget that whilst the Creator is the absolute Will, He is also the Supreme Reason, and as such has implanted in the soul of man the instinct of Philosophy, whose calling is to lay hold of Nature and wrestle with her for light as to the reasons of things, and whose word to Nature ever is, "I will not let thee go except thou bless me.'

"Doubtless there is a sufficient reason why the plant-form is as it is and not otherwise ; and it is for the philosophical botanist to discover if he can what that reason is. To this inquiry there is in fact a moral and a theological, as well as a purely intellectual stimulus. Thus the forms of plants, at first sight at least, seem to exist in violation of all wisdom ; they seem to be the very counterpart of those forms which pure intelligence, contemplating excellence of form as such, points to as the best—the very counterpart of those which geometry and dynamics sanction. Thus, though they be so useful and so beautiful, they are of all things the most fragile and fading ; they are the sport of every blast. Other beautiful products of nature, gems, for instance, or pearls, may be set in gold, and stored up or worn by many wearers without being worn out. They preserve all their charms for many generations. But the most beautiful flower, the most fragrant nosegay, is faded before the evening be over. Now, why is this ? Constant observation of the fact may indeed have so familiarised us with it that we may never think of inquiring, or even deem it needless or strange to ask. But there can be no doubt that if, in perfect ignorance on our part of the fate of flowers, a lily or a rose were presented to us, we could not in the first instance feel grateful enough to him who had given us such an exquisite production of highest art, yet, as soon as we saw how it was going with it, our gratitude would soon give place to a still stronger indignation, that he had merely mocked us with the possession of a thing so fading as to seem worse than the want of it. Now, why is it so ? Why is the plant-form so fleeting ? I answer, because it could not be more solid or more lasting than it is, if the vegetable kingdom is to take its place in nature, and to fulfil its mission there—that is, to intercede between and unite in harmony the fickle fleeting air and the fixed earth. Plants do not exist in disregard of the laws of a pure morphology—that abstract doctrine of form and structure which geometry and mechanics teach, and which the forms of the heavenly bodies, and of all stable structures exemplify. Plants realise those very forms which are most stable and cosmical up to the full measure that is compatible with their place and calling in nature, and the end they are appointed to serve.

"But here it may perhaps be thought that all this is no more than an affectation of mystery, a raising of difficulties where none exist. That

the forms of plants should be fragile, it may be justly said, so far from being a fault in their construction, is the very circumstance on which their usefulness depends; for, to the very extent that they are easily destructible, they are suitable as food for animals, a class of beings higher in the scale than plants, beings possessed of sensibility, beings such that a state of physical well-being in them is a state of enjoyment to them, and so teeming in multitude, and so worthy of existence, that for their sakes it may be said, in a high sense, that next to the glory of the Creator, creation exists, yet beings such that they are all in want of food, which ultimately the vegetable kingdom alone can supply, and which it does supply well in the very degree that it is fragile and easily destroyed.

“Now, against all this I have nothing to advance. I desire rather to appreciate it to the full. But I maintain that we have not reached all the reasons, or even the primary reason, why an object is as it is in all its details, and not otherwise, when we have discovered its economic use whether to ourselves or to other animated beings which are denizens of the world along with us. Such interpretations are good so far as they go; but the vastness of nature, and the multitude of its relations, demand a larger view. Thus, as to the point in hand, if we regard the vegetable kingdom as fashioned solely so as to form the best food for animals, we are thrown aback and silenced as soon as we are called upon to turn round and mark the abundance of uneatable and poisonous plants in nature. We are obliged to confess that our explanation is good only so far, but not adequate to account for the whole. The truth is, that we must keep constantly in mind that creation is a manifestation of other attributes of God as well as His goodness, and specially of His unity and immutability—in one word, His perfection. Hence in nature a prevailing unity of structure, and an universal harmony or homology of form; and hence, on the part of the student of nature, the indispensable necessity of a doctrine of general homology, as well as of special utility. With regard to the forms of the vegetable kingdom, for instance, besides their relation to animals as food, they exist in many other relations. . . . The wonderful, the beautiful fact is, the number of ends, each great in its own sphere, which are obtained, nay, as it were, spontaneously fall out through the fulfilment of a single law, when the position of that law is supreme. It is the same in the moral world; but that by the way.

“What I desire now to affirm is, that in reference to the vegetable kingdom, as in reference to every realm in nature, there is a supreme law; and that in so far as it is purely determinative of form, it is purely morphological, purely mathematical and dynamical. The proprieties of form and structure, viewed in the light of pure intelligence contemplat-



ing a system, an unity, expanded or to be expanded in space and time, are never, either here or elsewhere, violated for the convenience of the individual. Universal order is never sacrificed to private advantage. Euclid of old, when he was inquiring into the first lines and properties of form, and composing his immortal work in the light of abstract intelligence, and so that it should culminate and close in the discussion of the five regular polyhedrons, was paving the way, the only way, for the right understanding of nature. And, alas! after more than two decades of centuries, we have now to take up the subject very much where Euclid left it.

“The supreme law to which I now refer is this, that every individualised form in nature shall tend towards that which intelligence gives as the most perfect of forms, and shall attain to that form so far as is compatible with the nature and environments of the form-possessing object, as being also something else and something more than merely a form.

“But what is that form which intelligence declares to be the most perfect as form, and in which I maintain that the first lines, the most general features of a truly scientific morphology are to be sought and found? To this I answer, that were it not that demonstration is needless, because it has been demonstrated so often before, it might be demonstrated here, that that form is the sphere.

“But it is here to be remarked, that of spheres considered as realised in matter, two kinds are possible. There is *first* the solid sphere, or sphere commonly so called; and there is *secondly* the hollow sphere, or spherical superficies, or sphere properly so called. . . . .

“Now I maintain that these two are the forms which it is the primary office of the physical forces to develop, so far as circumstances do not forbid their development. The proof of this I cannot enter upon here in detail; but this may be here remarked with regard to these forces, that however manifold their names, they are all of the nature of attraction or repulsion. Now attraction, as has been demonstrated since the days of Newton, and might have been inferred from the first morning that a dewdrop was observed, has for its first function to fashion all individualised portions of matter into solid spheres. Repulsion, again, has no less obviously for its first function to expand these solid into hollow spheres; so that between the two they constitute a complete apparatus for the development of these most perfect, most generalised forms, and for rendering them the forms of universal culmination. Nor is this all: if attraction and repulsion be not co-ordinate in extent and force,—if attraction be appointed to rule on the great scale and at first, and repulsion on the small scale and at last—then these two forces not only give a contour to natural objects, they give also a course to



nature. They prescribe as a rule, that an object shall be first constructed as a solid sphere ; and that then, after being as such the representative of the prevalence of attraction, its particles shall tend to expand, and its form to develop, so as to distribute themselves in a spherical superficies, the object thus becoming the representative of the prevalence of repulsive power, or heat.

“ Now, in these facts and inferences an account of the first lines of vegetable form and life is to be found.

“ In keeping with what has been said of the solid sphere (that it is the fittest shape for a deposit or store of such matter as it consists of), it is seen to be the choice of Nature for the form of the vegetable being when deposited anew in the soil, when on its travels from one locality to another, when housed in winter quarters, and, generally, when the aim of Nature is to store up as much living matter as possible, so that it shall displace least of the surrounding matter and expose itself least to external injury. So far as the mode of nutrition and the type of the species permit, and as often as there is unity in the organ, the solid sphere is the culminating form of fruits, seeds, spores,\* tubers, buds, &c. Nor is this all the verification which our theory derives from the phenomena. In accordance with its doctrine (that the course of subsequent action consists in the expansion of the material constituting the solid sphere into a hollow sphere, so far as the conditions of existence permit), the germination and evolution, the growth of the plant is but the protrusion and development of the contents of such solid spheres or spherules as have been named, with assimilation of surrounding matter. That the reproductive forms of plants are more dense than their other living forms generally, is matter of common observation. Vegetable matter in general floats, but seeds sink, and in fact their value is usually estimated by their density. They have invariably contents which they tend to protrude.

“ Moreover, the limit of form towards which growth tends is nothing else but the hollow sphere. In consequence of the extreme difficulty of constructing this form, it is indeed, when not of microscopic minuteness, usually reached only piecemeal, only in morsels, only by the unfolding of small disks (leaves) supported on radii (axes, branches, petioles), to which the peltate leaf or system of leaves terminating the branchlet or petiole is normal, as the spherical surface always is to its radii. Many, indeed, are the obstructions to the development of a spherical contour, many the impediments in the way : as, for instance, the structure of the embryo, and the specific development proper to it ; the supply of food, not equally all around but in certain directions, and

\* This would be the place for an allusion to the pollen also, were it not that this product of vegetable nature requires a separate consideration.

sometimes in one only ; the embarrassment of the individual plant-form in its relations with other plants, with the ground in which it grows, the weather, &c. Still, with all these limitations, it is remarkable to what an extent the spherical is actually attained in the contour of fully developed outstanding plants and trees, as also the hemispherical in those which grow in tufts or clumps. The primary axis which carries up the first foliage into the air, does indeed often keep the lead which it takes at first, thus giving as the geometrical form which circumscribes the tree, not the exact sphere, but a spheroid (the form which is nearest to the sphere), the longer axis perpendicular to the horizon. Let but the eye, when wandering freely over Nature where her forms have not been modified by the artistic but mutilating hand of man, only mark the general contour of plant and tree, and construct in imagination the geometrical form by which the plant form in the eye will be best circumscribed, you will wonder how often the circle in profile, the sphere in full form, is called for ; and if not just these forms exactly, then those which constitute the least departures from them,—the ellipse, the spheroid or ovoid, the semi-ellipse or flattered tuft or clump or cone.

“ This, the first law of vegetable morphology, or rather of morphology in general, as illustrated by the vegetable kingdom, enables us also to explain in a satisfactory manner a phenomenon observed in simple plants or plants with a single axis, which in itself has been considered as strange, and seeming even to interfere with specific identity of form. Thus it is generally to be remarked of simple plants, and the fact is always introduced into drawings of ideal types of plants, such as those which are figured in the popular works of Schleiden and Unger, that their lower and upper leaves, whether viewed in reference to their disks or their petioles, are very imperfectly developed compared with those about the middle axis. The upper and lowest, in fact, are often quite simple, and want petioles altogether, though those in the middle between them are finely divided and fully petiolated. Now, what is this production of leaf-stalk and foliage about the middle of the stem but a normal development of radial and peripheral matter, bent on reaching and covering as far as possible the equatorial region of the plant-sphere periphery, a region which, being at once the largest and farthest from the axis, is most difficult to reach and to fill up? The phenomenon is usually explained by a reference to the condition of the vital action of the plant at different seasons,—its feebleness towards the beginning and the end of life, when the first and the last leaves are protruded. And no doubt the life of the plant is always co-ordinated with the work which it has to do. But why is life feeble at first, or why are the lower leaves developed when life is feeble, and why the same with regard to the last leaves, when the plant is touching on its

full development? Why but because that life, that energy, has a certain design, a certain law to fulfil; whereof the hollow sphere is the most general and the most perfect expression among all possible forms. The very same thing is in fact observed among forest trees and perennial plants, to which this doctrine of feebleness at first and exhaustion at last does not apply.

“But in what has preceded, I have taken for granted the existence of radii as well as a spherical superficies, of an axis as well as the foliage appended to it, of stem, branches, and petioles as well as leaves—of a scaffolding, in short, for supporting foliage widely extended in space, though belonging to a single individual, and though aiming at the formation of a single spherical shell of verdure. Now these radii, stems, branches, petioles, the law of sphericity can scarcely be held competent to supply. Were there no other law but that of the sphere which was determinative of the forms of vegetable nature, plants would be all parenchymatous and laminar, all leaf, frond, or thallus; the plant-form either successful in attaining the spherical form (as plant matter may, when individuality contents itself with minuteness), as cell or vesicle (*Sphaeria*, *Sphaerococcus*, *Hydrogastrium*, &c.), or unsuccessful, as is always the case where the plant is large, the *nisus* merely being indicated by the turning up or down of the edge of the frond, or the formation of a disk-like thallus, which is the first form of so many species,—now becoming a cylinder or tubular body (that is, a hollow sphere whose axis is indefinite), now a lamina turning round upwards and cup-like (*Cenomyce*, *Nidulariaceæ*), or pitted with lacunæ (*Stictia*), or turning downwards, or waved, or crisped at the edge, or over all the frond, as in many Algæ, Fungi, and Lichens. Now all this argues the influence of the sphere, and its power of direct self-construction without the aid of radii. And indeed to a much greater extent than in reference to the entire plant, the doctrine of the sphere accounts for the forms of the most fully developed and perfected parts of the thallophytes generally—those parts, namely, in which individuality has established itself most fully, and in which, consequently, the reproductive spherules or spores are produced. There is scarcely any of these tribes of plants whose forms do not culminate in spherical, hemispherical, or circular balls, shields, disks, or sporocarps of some such form, displaying lineaments of the sphere or its elements.

“But it is equally certain that, from the simplest species up to the most perfect, the plant-form shows a disposition to ramify and to distribute itself as far and wide as possible in the medium in which it grows. In the very simplest organisms (*Confervaceæ*, *Hypnomycetes*), ramification, radiation, is already carried very far. And although there has been a reluctance on the part of systematic botanists to recognise



any analogy between this filamentation of these simple plant-forms and the branching of more perfect plants, yet, morphologically viewed, they are obviously and certainly analogous. Nay, among these simple plants, too, not only have we ramifications, but the rami or filaments even generally succeed in expanding at their tips either into laminæ exhibiting the forms of leaves (*Delesseria*) or into float-vesicles, which are hollow spheres or spheroids (*Sargassum*), or into multiple branchlets (*Polysiphonia*), or into spore-producing cells, as is general. On comparing the branching of a forest-tree between the eye and the horizon in a winter day, when the foliage does not intercept the sight, with that of a finely branched confervoid in water, in a glass vessel held up to the light, nothing can be more analogous than the two. They must be due to the same morphological law. Nay more, shocking as the assertion may at first sight appear, there is nothing for us but to affirm that the vital nodes in the stems of perfect plants, and the septa in the filaments of the simplest vegetations, are analogous, and do in point of fact owe their existence in both (as do also the analogous productions in veins, lymphatics, intestines, &c.) to the same morphological cause—and that the doctrine of the sphere, the tendency of every axis to become at once hollow and finite, so as to approximate the hollow sphere as nearly in form as it may, thus giving ends to itself and closing up in the line of the axis step by step as it lengthens, while as yet its length has exceeded as little as possible that of its diameter. But these things by the way at present. It is the very existence of an axis and branches, often long, tortuous, climbing, that we have now to explain; for this, which is nevertheless the characteristic feature of the vegetable kingdom, the law of sphericity does not explain. We might indeed affirm cogently in general, that the sphere gives its own radii, and therefore that the law which gives the foliage gives also the axis. But in actual nature the axis takes such a lead, ascends, spreads, creeps, at such a rate, that it is manifestly the illustration of some other law. Far from aiming at a minimum of space for the plant to grow in, the stem and branches seem to delight in extending and even often straggling farther and farther.”

The reason of this the article from which the above is taken proceeds to state; but not so well as another article, published in July of the same year, in *The Journal of Agriculture*, Edinburgh, “On the Parts which the Atmosphere and the Soil respectively play in the Development of Vegetation and the true Theory of Agriculture.” To that I have recourse for what follows, returning to the former only at the close:—

“Of all the objects which nature presents to us, the vegetable kingdom contains the greatest beauties; and, of all the arts, the cultivation



of plants is undoubtedly the most ancient, the most generally practised, and the most important. It is to plants, in fact, that we owe, either directly or indirectly, all the food by which our life is sustained from day to day; and the number of families which it is possible to introduce into our world depends altogether upon the extent to which plants may be grown upon its surface. An all-wise Providence has not, indeed, intrusted the existence of the human family to the practice of any one art. By fishing, hunting, and pasturing—by merely gathering the roots, the seeds, and the fruits which the earth spontaneously produces, a stock of men is preserved all independently of the art of cultivation. But the increase of this stock and the progress of civilisation—the numerical, the intellectual, the moral, and the religious cultivation of man—mainly depend upon the cultivation of plants.

“Yet so far behind is our knowledge in this respect, that even at the present day we are in the midst of a keen controversy as to the very first principles of agriculture. Thus, on the one hand, it is maintained that almost everything depends on the atmosphere and the mineral constituents of the soil, and consequently (since the air can scarcely be operated upon by the cultivator) that the grand secret of successful farming consists in keeping in the soil, in a state suitable for absorption by the growing crop, an adequate supply of the mineral constituents proper to that crop, as these may be discovered from its ashes. And this may be regarded as the new light, which is due chiefly to the genius of Liebig. But, on the other hand, it is also maintained that neither the air nor the ashes of plants need to be much considered by the agriculturist, but only proper tillage and the supplying of the soil with well-rotted manure, the belief being that it is upon decaying organic matter in the soil that the crop mainly feeds. And this is the view which has prescription in its favour, and is most popular with practical men.

“Now, though these theories do not conflict in practice so much as might at first sight be supposed from their statement, yet they do conflict; and a final settlement of their respective claims, if it be possible, would certainly be not a little acceptable at once to the man of science and the cultivator.

“I think that such a settlement is possible, and I proceed to attempt it.

“But, in order to do this, the reader must consent to a preliminary question—he must consent, in fact, to the inquiry, *What is the place of the vegetable kingdom in the economy of nature?* That such an enlarged view of plants is necessary when our aim is to understand them fully, and especially when we wish to ascertain the best food for them, and how to apply it to the greatest advantage, follows from the very

nature of the case ; for food is always a part of surrounding nature, and a demand for food on the part of the plant is an appeal to surrounding nature ; and that such an appeal may be successfully seconded by us, it is plain that nature, in her contact and dealings with the plant, should be well understood by us, and her aid invoked in accordance with her own laws and in her own language. Now, though much has been done, and beautiful discoveries have been made in eliciting the relation which exists between the vegetable and animal kingdoms,\* yet the same success has not accompanied such inquiries as have been made into the relation between the vegetable kingdom and the inorganic world. It has been too much the custom of scientific botanists to look at plants as individual objects irrespective of their place in nature—nay, to pluck them up expressly for the purpose of study, and to preserve them at home between folds of paper. Now, from such a mode of procedure great progress has no doubt been made in the classifying and naming of plants, but scarcely any light at all has been thrown as yet on the general features of plants, such as the cause and meaning of their forms, of their inner structure, of their composition, of their colours, of their fragrance, and but little for certain on the true economy of their cultivation. . . . .

“For the discovery of the *rationale* of the vegetable kingdom, the plant must be viewed *in situ* as a part of nature—as a development in the place where it grows by natural law of a living ember given by the Creator, and designated a seed. Nor let the reader recoil from such a point of view, as if he were going to be remitted to his studies, and required to acquaint himself with all the details of natural philosophy, chemistry, and physiology, before he can understand what a plant is, and how it is to be cultivated. No more is demanded than a general knowledge of the chemistry of the atmosphere, such as is now possessed by every inquiring person, and a comprehensive acquaintance with a single law.

“And what is this single, this all-sufficient law? Let us lose no time in setting it forth. By natural philosophers it has been most generally named *the law of continuity*, that law which forbids abrupt transitions from one thing to another, and secures their passing into each other on their mutual confines more or less. By physicists and chemists it has been seized in various manifestations, and has been named now the law of *diffusion*, now the law of *osmose*, now of *capillarity*, now of *catalysis*, now of *affinity*. By physiologists it has been emphatically recognised, and under the name of *the law of assimilation* it has been insisted upon in one of its most important operations. By philosophers generally it

\* See *The Chemical and Physiological Balance of Organic Nature*. By MM. DUMAS and BOUSSINGAULT. An Essay. 12mo. Baillière : London, 1844.

has been referred to as a certain all-embracing harmony of things—a certain strongly but darkly conceived *law of harmony*. Each student of nature has observed it to rule in his own department, and thus has naturally named it in reference to that department; but in consequence of that unhappy isolation from each other in which the various branches of science at present exist, no one has observed that these variously-named laws are in reality but various manifestations of one and the same law; no one has unfolded it in all its comprehensiveness. But this is necessary to our understanding of the vegetable kingdom, its place in nature, and how to aggrandise it; and this, therefore, though very shortly, we must attempt here.

“This law is to the effect that every individualised object, once statically constructed, tends (first) to remain true to its own type, and to hand down and perpetuate that type in every successive moment of its existence as an individual or a species, the conservative action which tends to this end extending also as far as the agency of that individual or species extends, whence (secondly) each permanent object in nature, each molecule, crystal, plant, animal, must also tend to impress its own type upon all others that lie within the sphere of its influence, to assimilate them to itself; and thus (thirdly) each must tend to bring all into keeping or generic relationship, and therefore to promote an universal harmony. Whether objects in general, or more than a few, shall succeed in thus affecting each other either deeply, or in any such degree as may be marked by the senses of an individual observer in the course of his life, or of such history of the past as we now possess, is a question of detail. It is the tendency only at once to permanency of the specific type in the individual, and to the assimilation of all to each and of each to all, and to its actual environments and conditions of existence, that our law affirms and provides for. And that such a tendency does indeed operate universally all nature proclaims aloud, inasmuch as all nature is seen to be a harmonious whole. Every object, while tending to continue true to its present self, and to echo and repeat its past in its future, tends also to mirror itself in the kindred objects around it, or to vibrate in harmony with them. A bright body illuminates the dark, a hot body warms the cold bodies around it. A polarised body polarises such as are susceptible of this mode of existence. Molecules of an eminently undecomposable nature, when introduced among others which are tending to decomposition, arrest that process. Salt preserves meat. And molecules which are themselves undergoing decomposition, when introduced among unstable molecules, assist them in decomposing. Yeast causes fermentation. Conduction, radiation, polarity-induction, catalysis, antiseptics, ferments, &c. &c., are all so many manifestations of one and the same law, which in all tends to the same issue, viz., to assimilate



to individual objects, or to that which is fixed in them as primary data, all the others around, so far as they are assimilable or contain assimilable parts, and thus to secure a general sisterhood and harmony among all. I have lately shown\* that inertia, elasticity, gravitation, polarity, and other agencies, may all be referred to this law, and are in reality merely uniform phenomena in matter resulting from its paramount operation.

“But for our present purpose it will be best to illustrate it in reference to *Assimilation*, as that process is manifested in the life both of plants and animals, and as it is understood in physiology. It is quite a typical illustration of our law, and as it is that by which all growth and life are maintained in organic beings, it is of supreme importance. Now, assimilation is simply to the effect that when two dissimilar yet kindred media meet together, the one consisting of plastic material, and the other of a living organism in want of redintegration or increment, that organism, while maintaining its own type, assimilates more or less the plastic material to itself and organises it; while the plastic material, on its part, assimilates more or less the organism to itself—a circumstance which, though not remarked in physiological works, is altogether needful to be kept in mind in order to a full and satisfactory conception of the phenomenon. Thus, if the plastic matter consist of cell-material in the liquid state, and the living organism be a single living cell, or a mass, or, as we may say, a battery of living cells, constituting an organism which has suffered lesion, or is not yet full grown, then the plastic liquid in contact with the cellular concrete becomes itself cellular and concrete; new cells are developed in it; the organism grows. But the assimilative power is not all on the side of the concrete part. In the region of mutual contact and action, the cellular surface feels the presence of the plastic liquid. It is more than wetted by that liquid (though the phenomenon of wetting is a superficial assimilation)—it is rendered plastic. The new cells are not added abruptly outside the old. Along with the formation of new cells there is a solution or absorption of old ones. The new and the old are beautifully wedded together; they grow and co-exist in harmony, in unity, so long as healthy development is the order of the day. Let it be otherwise, and not a case of health; let the concrete organism in the region of the plastic liquid lose its energy, or the plastic liquid gain more energy than is proper to it in health, and then the cellular surface, instead of growing or being redintegrated, will be dissolved away or absorbed into the liquid; instead of strength there will be weakness, instead of granulation and closing, there will be abscess and ulceration.

\* See *Proceed. Roy. Soc.*, Edin., Sess. 1858–59, p. 146; *Proceed. Phil. Soc.*, Glasgow, 1859, p. 52; *Report Brit. Assoc.* at Aberdeen, 1859; and as a separate work, *First Lines of Science Simplified*, &c. Sutherland & Knox: Edinburgh, 1860.



Disease is not the mere absence of health. It has positive power to extend and perpetuate itself, in so far as it is not in its own nature essentially temporary and transient. Disease cannot be met and resisted too soon, while as yet the healthy action of the system is but a little impaired by it. Hence the cause of so many deaths under acute disease; the physician is not sent for till it is too late. He is no longer master of his situation.

“But that by the way at present. What I have now to insist upon is this, that the instance of assimilative action which has now been given is but an illustration of a law which is absolutely universal; which, though not always obvious to the senses, either in its working or its results, yet is never wholly at rest, and holds good in reference to inorganic as well as organic nature. What but a phenomenon perfectly parallel, and to be referred to the same law, is the growth of a crystal, for instance, in a fluid medium, whether liquid or aeriform, when that fluid is losing energy as such, either through loss of quantity (evaporating), or of heat (cooling), while yet the number of concrete particles in it remains the same, so that, considered as plastic material for the increment of a morsel of a crystal or concrete substance of some kind immersed in it, or placed in contact with it, that fluid's condition is improving? And what but a phenomenon of the very same order with crystallisation is its counterpart, solution—that is, the reduction to a fluid form of any soluble or volatile substance in a fluid, whether liquid or aeriform, in which that concrete is immersed? In the former case the solid assimilates the liquid to itself; in the latter case the fluid assimilates the solid. In like manner, when a granular or crystalline nucleus or bed exists in, or is conterminous with, a mechanical rock, and the granular structure is seen to be extending from that nucleus or bed, what is this but an illustration among geological phenomena of the same law, the law of assimilation? Nor is it less an illustration when crystals imbedded in a rotten rock are found to be rotten themselves. Again, when two dissimilar gases or liquids are placed in contact, either immediately or with a permeable diaphragm between, and the particles of the one pass in among those of the other, as they are known to do, until they are completely diffused, and the mixture of the gases is complete, what is this but a case of assimilation, where the success, mechanically considered, is complete? Diffusion, osmose, capillarity, are but efforts towards assimilation. Catalysis is but the affirmation of the power of one molecule to act assimilatively on another. And what else is chemical affinity but the determination of molecules, when of essentially different types, and not immediately assimilable, to merge their differences by rushing into each other's embrace, and constituting a new chemical species? It is quite marvellous what order and simplicity present them-

selves in nature when we try to take as large a view of her processes as nature does herself, when we try to forget all laws which are merely empirical and have no reason in them, and to dismiss all fondlings and foundlings of our own. There is in nature, indeed, an all but infinite variety—a variety which appears in laws and ends as well as in forms and structures; but there is also an all-pervading unity; and the law of assimilation in its twofold function of at once perpetuating individualities and effecting universal harmony—the impress on creation at the very fountain-head of the two essential attributes, the immutability and the unity of Him who inhabiteth eternity and is the Author of all—the law of assimilation is the most deeply-piercing and all-pervading law of the cosmos that can be reached at present. It is, in fact, exactly an articulate expression of what all men feel when they think of Being and System.

“To find the place of the vegetable kingdom in nature, it is only necessary to consider that diffusion, osmose, capillarity, &c.—in one word, mutual penetration—does not take place between gases only, nor between liquids only, nor between solids only, nor yet between solids and liquids only, but also between aeriform and concrete media. It takes place between the air and the earth, the atmosphere and the soil, on their mutual confines. Yes; the air in contact with the earth tends to penetrate the earth, and to become assimilated to it by assuming a condensed or concrete state; while the earth in its turn, on the confines of the air, tends to rise into it, and become as aerial as it can. Nor can either do otherwise if the law of assimilation be as universal as it has here been maintained that it is. In obedience to this law, those earth-particles which are capable of the aeriform state must tend to rise into the air as gas or vapour; and those which are not volatile, yet separable from each other, must tend to effloresce into the air, and to constitute, on its confines, with the earth, lace-like mineral tissues as highly diffused, as spreading and elastic, as mobile and coloured—in a word, as aerial and bright as possible. I say bright as well as aerial, because the atmosphere is the realm of light and colours as well as of air.

“Has, then, let us ask, this cosmical disposition on the part of these great neighbours, the earth and the air, to keep the law and live in harmony together, to interlace their borders, and adopt as far as possible each other's substance and forms on their common frontier, been permitted to realise itself? Do we find that, on the mutual confines of the air and the earth, the air-particles seek downwards and become concrete; while the earth-particles, water included, seek upwards, and spread themselves abroad in the air? Yes; it will be immediately granted that the soil absorbs and retains in it a goodly portion of air and vapour. The earth also, it will be admitted, the more fully it is

exposed to the air, becomes more and more pulverulent—nay, often rises in clouds of dust; nay, of fish; nay, of frogs; nay, what not, utterly to astonish the natives by their fall again. Certain earth-particles, also (potass, lime, &c.), in places where the air is still, are well known to effloresce beautifully into the atmosphere, as if to anticipate vegetable nature. Moreover, the aqueous matter of the earth is ever tending to rise into the air as vapour. Yes; it is to the law of assimilation (as the rational cause) that we owe the existence of the cloud-world, so varied, so grand; and not less benignant than beautiful. For when it exists as vapour in the air, it is no less under the law of assimilation than it was when in the earth as water. And, in consequence of this having now gained the aeriform state, and satisfied the demands of the atmosphere, it is called upon by the earth to satisfy its demand under the same law, and to become assimilated to it in its turn—that is, to become concrete. And, accordingly, with prompt obedience, from its aptitude for the concrete state, the cloud-matter forms into little masses while yet on high; and pouring down as rain, and hail, and snow, it not only assimilates itself with the concrete earth as a concrete form, but it ploughs the bald surface into many a ravine, thus enabling the air to penetrate deeper and lock with the earth more closely. Meanwhile the earth, by secular upliftings, meets the cloud half-way, and, summoning to its aid the volcano and the central heat, rises high in Alp and mountain-range, keen air piercing into the deep valleys between. Thus that which to blind sensibility seems but the war of the elements, is to intelligence a harmony and a mutual embracing. The storms and convulsions of nature are the products of a law which has repose for its end and aim, and which is, as has been already stated, the symbol and representative in nature of the unity and immutability of the Deity. The law of assimilation by which a wound granulates and our organisation is redintegrated, by which our strength, physical and intellectual, is restored from hour to hour, is also that by which the surface of our globe, from being a bald geometric surface, is made rugged and hoary—that by which the beautiful, the picturesque, and the sublime are imparted to nature, and a sheltered dwelling-place secured for man and other animals.

“Nor is this all. By the miracle of creation at first, and by sowing the surface of the earth thereafter, with the seeds of plants, the Creator has enabled the earth and the air to fulfil the law of assimilation and harmony between them in a manner that is most complete and most beautiful. *For the fully-developed seed, the individual plant, the vegetable kingdom as a whole, what is it, when viewed in relation to the atmosphere, but air become concrete as vegetable tissue piercing down into the earth and rooting itself in it? And, viewed in reference to the earth,*



*what is it but a system of earth-particles, aqueous, gemmeous, earthy, saline, suspended and diffused in air to the utmost by the concrete air-tissue (that is, the vegetable tissue) as a scaffolding; these particles, meanwhile, in so far as they are capable of the aeriform state, exhaling into the air in forms often fragrant, and always more aeriform than those in which they enter the plant?* Yes; the calling of the vegetable kingdom, the charter of its existence with antecedent nature, the earth and the air, is to realise and fulfil the law of continuity, of harmony, of assimilation, on their mutual confines, (1) to carry up in forms as aerial as possible earth-particles, and to suspend them in a state of diffusion in the air when they cannot be made to vaporise into it, and (2) to carry down, in forms as concrete as possible, air-particles into the earth.

“And in this theory (along with that which gives the spherical superficies as the most general archetype of all forms that are the products of the physical forces\*) we have a satisfactory explanation of the forms of the plant-world in general. Here we see why a fully-developed plant must consist of an aerial and a terrene part, of widely-spreading morsels of surface or leaves, supported, if need be, on radii as leaf-stalk, branch, and stem, and of deep-striking roots and rootlets. There is no longer room for wonder why plants and flowers, things of such beauty, should be so fragile and so fading, the sport of every blast. The plant-form must intercede between the fickle fleeting air and the fixed earth on their mutual confines. The plant must bring these heterogeneous elements together and reconcile them. And therefore, inasmuch as the air is very tenuous, elastic, mobile, spreading wide and rising high, while the earth is concrete, inelastic, fixed, and lying low, the plant which is appointed to represent both in itself, and each favourably to the other, must have a form that shall be tenuous, mobile, elastic, carrying up and distributing in the air such earth-particles as are capable of isolation and solution, as widely and as high over head as possible. It must, as an individual, be a wavy, fleeting thing. If it is to acquire stability, and to last for years, or generations, or ages, it must consent to the compromise of its individuality. It must have recourse to the principle of association. Many must merge into one. The phyton must become a branching plant or tree.

“That the plant-form, especially when an annual merely, must, from its tenuous and expanded character, be very liable to injury, is an inevitable consequence. But in creation, as it actually stands, is this an evil? Nay; to the very extent that the plant-world is easily destructible, it is suitable as food for a higher order of beings—beings

\* See *First Lines of Science Simplified*, &c., by the Author. 1860.



possessing sensibility, and that sensibility so adjusted to their organisation that a state of organic well-being in them is a state of enjoyment to them; beings teeming in multitude—creatures such, that it may be truly said, in a high sense, that after the glory of the Creator himself, creation exists for their sakes.

“To our theory there also attaches a definite conception of plant-life and function. A plant, according to what has been shown, consists at once of an ascending and a descending system of parts and action; and for the full development of the plant, a corresponding amount of energy must be simultaneously imparted to both these systems and modes of action. If the proper earth-particles which it is the duty of that species of plant to raise and suspend in the air are wanting in the soil where it is put to grow, the plant has nothing to do, and it will not grow either well or long. And if light and heat, which energise the air, are wanting, all the peculiar phenomena of vegetable synthesis must fail.

“The ascending system of parts and action commences in the soil, and from concrete molecules in contact with the spongioles of the root, it takes up such as it can, analysing and reducing them more and more towards the purely aeriform state; thus resolving water into common vapour, common vapour into oxygen and hydrogen, ammoniacal compounds into ammoniacal vapour, and ammoniacal vapour into nitrogen and hydrogen; also decomposing carbonic acid into oxygen and carbon, at least if nascent hydrogen be present, so that the carbon, by union with the hydrogen, may be rendered more aeriform than it is by itself, and thus may form the basis of some Essence by which the fragrance of the vegetable kingdom may be added to the vital air which, in these circumstances, that kingdom must constantly tend to evolve. Add to these things and to this mode of action the elevation out of the earth towards the periphery of the plant, that they may be diffused and suspended in the air to the utmost, the fixed earth-particles of carbon or diamond, potassium, silica, phosphorus, calcium, sodium, magnesium, sulphur, iron, &c., and it will be seen how much the root-system of a plant has to do.

“But, for success in the accomplishment of this analytical function, it is wholly indispensable that the descending system which originates in the air and belongs to the leaf shall co-operate in energy; for as the ascending or leaf-system is essentially analytic, or in the interest of aeriforms, so this, the descending or leaf-system, is essentially synthetic, or in the interest of concretes. An atom of carbon will not leave those of oxygen with which it is combined in carbonic acid merely to fall down and clog the plant as soot. While the root-system solicits the oxygens and carbons to part company, and offers nascent hydrogen for union to both, it is the descending, the leaf-system, that which has light and heat as its

energising principles, that actually effects the exchange. The leaf-system calls for molecules still more and more highly compounded, for the construction of which, above all others, hydro-carbon is well suited. But how, it may be asked, shall highly compounded molecules be able to maintain their existence if originating in the leaves and destined to encounter in the plant the analysing system of action that is ever ascending from the roots? For this they must be able to fulfil one or other of these two conditions: *first*, they must escape out of the cells in which the analysing plant-action is going on, and get into places or vessels apart; or, *secondly*, they must possess in themselves molecular stability while in the plant. Now, under one or other of these two conditions, it may be shown that all the permanent products of vegetable nature fall. Wax, one of the mostly highly compounded of them all, even often gains the outside and reposes on the leaf or the fruit, as does also sugar sometimes. All essential oils, resins, alkaloids, crystals, &c., exist in cells, apart; while as to starch, it is a vegetable substance constructed in such harmony with the whole action of the plant, that it is no more to be expected that a fully-developed plant will break starch up, than if it were the acknowledged embryo of cellulose. It is otherwise with sugar. But these views cannot be followed up by the ordinary lights of the laboratory. With the single exception of the sugars, all the formulæ of the tectonic elements of the vegetable kingdom are uncontrolled and destitute of significancy.

“Thus it is not the external forms and the chemical composition of the vegetable kingdom only which our theory explains. It throws great light upon the internal structure of plants. It not only leads us to infer that all the first and simplest plants, and all the first elements in every plant, shall be little hollow spheres—that is, cells, vesicles, or utricles; but it leads us also to expect that, as soon as this cellular mass can claim individuality, and constitutes a plant at once aerial and terrene, with both a descending and an ascending system, and therefore a combining or concreting, and an analysing or rarefying mode of action accompanying, the cellular matter, under the influence of the descending mode of action, commencing in the foliage, must, as it proceeds downwards, tend to concrete and combine into forms more and more continuous and dense,—as, for instance, into vessels, fibres, and encrusting matter, still increasing in quantity as we approach the terrene part or root. Under the influence of the ascending, the separating, and rarefying system, on the other hand, the mass of cellular matter must continually tend to separate and expand into laminae, or leaves and cells with their walls, still more and more bright and aerial (as in blossoms in particular and parenchyma and the epidermis generally).

“Under the same state of things, it follows that the distribution of

woody (or concrete air) matter and of ashes (diffuse earth-elements) in plants and trees shall be the converse of each other. The woody matter, as the product of the foliage, and of the descending concreting system, will be found in greatest strength in the interior of the stem and root; the ashy matter or earth-particles, the product of the ascending system, in the periphery of the stem and of the entire plant or tree.

"That all these deductions from our theory are verified by observation, is too well known to require to be stated; and here let us conclude with a remark suggested by the last inference, which throws light upon a great question in high philosophy.

"It is well known, in accordance with what has just been shown, that plants and trees are aerial and light above, massy and strong beneath. Now, this fact in creation has usually, in common with others of the same order, been held to be fully explained by a reference to its expediency. It has been said that plants have been wisely made light and aerial above, solid and tough beneath, to the end that they may be able to support themselves and brave the storm. Now this undoubtedly is a good explanation so far as it goes; but from what has preceded, we find that it does not go to the root of the matter. From what has preceded, we find that the lightness of trees above and their solidity beneath is not a particular expedient adopted in their interest alone, for securing a special end in their behalf alone. We find that it is secured in the fulfilment of a grand principle—that it is provided for in an all-embracing law, in the framing of which this particular end and innumerable other beneficent ends were provided for. These ends may indeed be advantageously contemplated by us in detail as such. But if we are to look for such ends in every individual object in nature and in every organ, we are only preparing ourselves for frequent disappointment; for utility is not the point of view which ought *to rule* in our regards. In the natural as in the moral world, there is a higher principle than particular expediency or individual interest. There is a call all through nature, which is ever for order, universal order, the well-being of the whole. And accordingly there is in natural science a doctrine of *general homology* as well as of *special utility*. And truly wonderful it is to observe to what an extent, in the natural as in the moral world, multitudes of special uses and individual advantages in detail are secured as often as supreme law is obeyed. Hence the grand aim at once of science and philosophy ought to be, the discovery of supreme laws; and to this theme the preceding pages have been devoted in the delightful field of the vegetable kingdom."



## CHAPTER XIII.

### OF THE FORM AND STRUCTURE OF A FLOWERING PLANT.

It was subsequently to the publication of these papers which have been so largely quoted in the preceding chapter, that I first ventured to conjecture in my own study, and have now come to believe in the structure of the material element, which has been set forth in these pages. It is for us now, therefore, to compare that supposed structure with the observed structure of plants, and to see whether we do not discern in the very structure of the material element itself anticipations of what we already find in the vegetable structure.

The vegetable kingdom, in order to be understood, must be regarded in a twofold point of view, which may be designated respectively as physical and physiological (or more correctly biological). The physical point of view regards it as the intermedium between the earth and the atmosphere, embodying and representing both, and clothing the planet with living objects, in fixed situations, which the sunbeams may fall upon and expand, fructify and animate. Otherwise, it may be also regarded as an efflorescence of the sphere mimicked by the efflorescence to be seen on damp walls, nitre-producing fields, and hoar-frost generally, a nusus of the planet to extend its dimensions as reaction against that contraction of dimension which the secular gravitation of its constituent particles implies, and so to utilise the heat which is constantly being forced outwards. This conception of the vegetable kingdom gives it as consisting of vertical lines or a continuation of the terrestrial radii into the atmosphere. It gives the plant as an axis fixed in position. It gives the plant axis.

The biological point of view gives a conception which is precisely the converse. For this point of view gives that of an organism which shall concrete the carbonic acid emitted in the aeriform state by the animal kingdom, and expose that concrete in the amplest manner to the sun-beam, to the end that the carbonic acid in it may be resolved, first, into oxygen gas again, so as to sustain the respiration of the animal king-



dom, and, secondly, into carbon-containing tissue, so as to repair in animals the waste which respiration and action generally imply. Hence the vegetable concrete must be so formed as to expose as large a surface as possible, both for the most successful absorption of the carbonic acid that is floating about, and for exposure to the sunbeam or light of day, that that carbonic acid may be decomposed. In short, the biological point of view leads to the conception not of the plant axis, but of the leaf; not of the radiating stem, but of the foliage. The first point of view gives the axis, the other the equator, which, as is well known, are the skeleton of the sphere. And to what an extent the spherical tends to prevail in the vegetable kingdom has been already shown.

And now let us enter into some details. And as the anticipation of an elemental plant-axis, let us prelude with a structure consisting of three material elements united in a line. This is the smallest number in which individuality can be maintained; for it is the smallest in which the terminals are similar to each other, and therefore repulsive of each other, as also of others like them, and so can maintain itself as an axis, and not turn round into a triangular or circular form.

And as that of most easy genesis, and therefore most probable in nature, let the two terminal elements be those whose nucleus consists of 12 aetherial units, with 20 overlying them; while the middle element is of the other kind—that is, with 20 internally and 12 overlying. Now may we not remark at once, that in this simple structure we have already a prelude of the three parts, namely, fruit and root, with foliage lying between? Nay, more. Of the three elements, though all of them are intimately bisexual, yet, according to what has been advanced in a preceding chapter, the two supposed terminals are female as compared with the middle element, which is male. And here may we not say, what all the world grants, that it is fruits and roots which are productive of offspring as compared with foliage?

But according to prevailing tastes in science, it is more in order to say that a simple plant, when fully developed, consists of these three parts, the fructification above, and the root below, as terminals of the axis, and foliage lying between.

And, first, let us direct our attention to the fructification, in which, as it is free to uprise in the air and sunlight, individuation and ample development most fully appears; while the root, growing as it does in the soil and darkness, has to encounter continual embarrassments. Here, then, let us call to mind that the material element respecting which we are now to inquire whether the fructification of plants is in any measure precluded by it, consists interiorly or nearest the axis of 12 elements, and is here female in relation to an external layer of

elements which are 20 in number, and male in relation to the others. Now that typical flowers are bisexual, as our material element preludes, and that the female parts are next the axis, and the male parts disposed exteriorly or around the female parts, are most familiar facts.

Being to such an extent encouraged then, let us enter somewhat more minutely into the investigation. But here the difficulty meets us, which at this moment prevails through the whole domain of natural science, namely, our utter want of insight or ideas to enable us to say what is what. Science is not only very blind, but glories in its blindness. What has been observed, it is said, is everything; what has not been observed, it is said, is nothing. Such is the canon of reality. And after all, the fact is that this boasted observation is in every case merely interpretation, the entire value of which is regulated by the culture or no culture of the mind which receives the sensations, or, as it is said, "observes." In the present case the question is, what are really female parts in a perfect flower, and what are really male? To this no answer has as yet been given which is comprehensive of all the parts. Nor has any scientific view been given of what makes male, what female. But may we not say, that of "female" the characteristic is to be receptive, and of "male" to be communicative. As to the forms of sexual organs, when we look to the whole of living nature, they are so varied, both in structure and situation, and indeed in every respect, that no definition can be built on form; we can only look to function as has just been done.

Applying this test then to that organism which forms on the summit of a simple plant-axis, that is, the flower bud, we remark that the whole at first presents itself as a sphere or spheroid, or rather ovoid, as perfect as the mode of its nutrition (which is from one region only) will allow. Now, viewed in this state as a whole, a calyx with its contents, it is female; the calyx being receptive in a twofold sense—receptive with regard to its interior of the whole fructification which lies undeveloped in it as in a womb, and receptive with regard to its exterior also; for the exterior of the flower-bud or calyx is usually of a green colour, contains chlorophyll, and is receptive of the carbonic acid of the ambient atmosphere. The calyx, therefore, we regard as belonging to the female parts of the organism of the flower. That the carpels, with their intensely receptive stigmas and ovules, do so is generally admitted. And thus we find that the parts immediately around the aerial terminal of the plant-axis are female, the sepals and the carpels being both analogous and homologous parts.

But our theory, that these parts are possibly preluded by the interior parts or endosark of our material element, ought to enable us to go

farther. It leads us to expect that those parts, taken together with the axis which they surround, will, in a complete but simple flower, be precisely 12 in number, and these disposed in either of two arrangements corresponding to the two kinds of axis which the dodecahedron possesses. Of these two kinds of axis, one terminates above and below in a point formed by three edges, facets, or members of the polyhedron, leaving other three outside of them above and below alternating with them (see fig. p. 67). The other kind of axis has one facet or member for each of its terminals, with five members lying around outside of each, and these alternating with one another. Hence, according to our prelude, the normal number of calyx-divisions or sepals, or of ovary-divisions or carpels, ought to be 3 or 5. Now that nature verifies this anticipation to a remarkable extent will not be denied. It were possible, indeed, to carry the correspondence into a great degree of minuteness. But we are at present so completely in an ideal region that further details may be advantageously omitted here, especially as when the doctrine of abortion, non-development, partitionment of organs, &c., is introduced, there is no difficulty in squaring phenomena with the exigencies of any hypothesis.

Let us proceed then to ask now whether we find any correspondence in the number of elements in the outer layer of ectosark of our material element or element of true protoplasm, with those of the male parts in a perfect but simple flower. And here we have first to remark, that our protoplasmic parts are here not 12 but 20 in number, the 10 upper or interior being opposite to each other in couples, as also the 10 lower or exterior; but the upper 10 alternate with the lower 10 (see the diagram of the icosahedron, p. 67). Now were we to adopt the common view that the stamens only were male parts, the correspondence of nature with our theory would be abundantly verified, for the number of stamens in flowers are, in a vast number of species, 5 or 10, or 20 (or thereabout). But the view that the stamens or anthers alone are male parts, does not accord with the conception that the function of the male is to communicate, as that of the female is to receive. This conception includes the corolla also as male, and, indeed, the whole flower, except the calyx and carpels with their contents, as has been described. Thus, instead of being receptive of the carbonic acid of the atmosphere, like the calyx and the carpels when maturing and verdant, the corolla emits carbonic acid; instead of keeping the fructification cool by the decomposition of that acid and the emission of oxygen gas as the calyx does, the corolla, like the stamens, generates heat, which cannot but often be of great value for the maturation of the pollen. The corolla also plainly exists as a protection for the anthers rather than for the carpels, for as soon as the anthers have



fulfilled their function and fade, the corolla fades immediately afterwards. The lower 10, therefore, of the 20 supposed male elements in the ectosark of the true protoplasmic unit we regard as preluding the 5 petals with their 5 claws, or the pentafid corolla with its tube, &c. The upper 10 alternating with the lower 10 we regard as representing 5 anthers with their 5 filaments, or possibly 10 stamens in many cases of development. Into further details and possible modifications we need not go, because the idea of a perfect, and at the same time a perfectly simple flower, is an idea merely.

Nor need we show, as must be under our cosmical law of assimilation (for this has been fully done already in an empirical way), that the flower in all its parts must tend to be foliaceous so far as the conditions of existence and the law of the spherical and cellular will allow. I only add, that the cosmical law explains also the great expansion of the corolla, for the corolla holds the position of equator to the terminal axis of the plant or peduncle.

As to the colours of the corolla, which have been held to be so beautiful, they are chiefly expressive of the absence of chlorophyll in it. Their charms depend on their comparative rarity, which engages and pleases the eye. If all the fields and forests were yellow, or blue, or scarlet, or parti-coloured, like flowers, what would we not give for a green leaf!

Let these remarks suffice on the structure of a perfect yet simple flower as preluded by the material element itself.

Upon the whole, such is the verification of our view which the vegetable kingdom displays, that instead of summing up our deductions as to the two sets of female parts in a flower with the two sets of male parts between and around them, may I not just quote the following words, which form the opening sentence of Professor Balfour's "Manual of Botany," where he treats of the flower and its appendages: "The flower consists of whorled leaves placed on an axis, the internodes of which are not developed. This shortened axis is the thalamus or torus. There are usually four of these whorls or verticils. 1. The outer one called the *calyx*. 2. The *corolla*. 3. The *stamens*. 4. The most internal one, the *pistil*. Each of these consists normally of several parts which, like leaves, follow a law of alternation. Thus the flower of *Crassula rubens* [he gives a diagram, which has been copied in fig. 16 of our Plate] consists of a calyx composed of five equal parts arranged in a whorl; a corolla, also five parts placed in a whorl within the former and occupying the intervals between the five parts of the calyx; five stamens in the spaces between the parts of the corolla and consequently opposite to those of the calyx, and five parts of the pistil which follow the same law of arrangement." Such is the example of a



typical flower of this class which he gives. He adds,—“Again in *Scilla italica* the parts are arranged in sets of three instead of five,” &c. It will afterwards appear, when protoplasm is regarded as differentiated into those organic elements which constitute the actual bioplasm of visible animals and plants, that there is another though an analogous reason for the appearance, now of the number 3 and its multiples, now of the number 5 and its multiples.

Having said so much of the fructification of plants as preluded by the uppermost of our three material elements which we conceived to represent the simplest plant-axis, very few remarks will be made on the root preluded by the lowest of the three. Being similar to the uppermost, though bisexual like the fructification, it is to be regarded upon the whole as female or productive. But here the organism, unlike the fructification which expands in the thin air, the root is so beset in the closely-resisting soil that the development is very poor and embarrassed. In fact, it all usually remains in a self-diffusing or filamentary state, the only specific organ being the open or absorptive spongiole on the top of the rootlets, corresponding to the stigma on the top of the carpels; the matter to be absorbed being, in the case of the root, free particles of plant-food produced by the soil around the spongiole; and in the case of the flower, free particles of plant-dust or pollen produced by the plant itself around the stigma; the former providing for the growth of the developing plant, the latter for the development of the future plant. On this subject I shall only further refer to a communication which I read before the Botanical Society of Edinburgh, 13th December 1860, which was, I believe, published in their Transactions, and, at any rate, in *The Edinburgh New Philosophical Journal* for January 1861, entitled “The Theory of the Terminal Fructification in the Simple Plant of Ovules, and Pollen, and Spores.”

As to the middle member of our three elements in our plant-axis, which, of course, preludes the whole plant except the fructification above and the root below, nothing requires to be said beyond what has been said already, unless, perhaps, it be this, that while it is bisexual like the other elements, yet here the female parts are not internal as in the fructification, but lie on the periphery. They, therefore, prelude the foliage, which is at once peripheral and receptive or female—*peripheral* to this extent that on it mainly devolves the determination of the external form of the whole plant, *and receptive or female* inasmuch as it has for its special function not only to suck in the carbonic acid of the air, and thus render the whole plant pregnant, but to form a bud or quasi-embryo, each leaf for itself.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### THE SIMPLEST ZOIC FORMS AND FUNCTIONS ARE PRELUDED BY THE STRUCTURE OF THE MATERIAL ELEMENT.

IF we are to content ourselves with modern science (so-called) such as it is, though there is mystery on all hands, yet nowhere is there a spectacle more perplexing than that which nature displays in the field of the microscope. What multitudes of living things, call them protozoa, protophyta, or protista, or by any more special name, their forms, and even their skeletons, sometimes so exquisite, always so strange, and enjoying life surely,—those of them, at least, which move about so rapidly, so freely, so spontaneously, nay, shall we not say, so capriciously—and yet themselves, by all that the scientific eye (so-called) can make of them, merely specks of animated jelly or glue, without mouth or muscle, or nerve or organ of any kind! Their forms how strange, and their means of getting on how unaccountable, and how unlike anything which human ingenuity would have proposed for them! In a word, is not the entire field of the microscope to the eye, though enlightened by all that science has to say, a perfect mystery and a perplexity? Why in the last analysis do we meet with granules and cells on all hands and as the ultimate constituents of everything, both animal, and vegetable, and mineral? Why are these granules and cells at first, and so long as they are free and uncompressed, spherical? Why have cells, also, in these circumstances, usually a nucleus, often a nucleolus? And why do they come, manifestly after a delicate and difficult process of construction, to lose so soon these nucleoli, these nuclei, nay, themselves to be partitioned or to dissolve away? Those vibratile cilia, also, with which spores and ova, and the minutest organisms generally, are furnished as with banks of oars, and which seem to be so proper to every individualised organic element, that they are often found even where such element is impacted among others, and has only one free surface, and that in regions of the highest organisation, as for instance in the mucous membranes of man himself, what can their origin

and meaning be? The tentacula, also, and lasso-cells, and setæ which succeed the cilia, as the organisms to which they belong become more complicated, and which characterise all the multifarious races of polypes, &c., how do they come to be there? Is not one tempted to think, if not to say, like that king of Spain when contemplating the Ptolemaic system of astronomy, that if we had been consulted at the creation we could have suggested something more solid and better? The fact is, that with respect to all these things, and a thousand others, nay, the entire microscopic field, nay, the whole field of nature, there is at present on the part of many naturalists nothing but despair, in so far as the rational point of view is concerned. To account for anything, they maintain is wholly beyond our powers, and therefore that with which we have nothing to do. Let us OBSERVE, they say, with all possible accuracy and minuteness all the objects which we can succeed in bringing within the range of our eye-sight. Let us CLASSIFY them all, and assign to each its place in nature with all possible painstaking, according to the best classification which we can devise, and let us turn to economic account, so that they may add to the enjoyments of our own life, those of them which are suitable for this purpose. But having done our best in this line, let us be content to let them otherwise alone. We are ourselves rapidly passing off the stage of existence like the rest of them. Why attempt to give an account to ourselves of the reason of anything since we are sure to fail? Why give any encouragement to hopes or fears with regard to a future, which though they have hitherto played, and still do play such an important part in the development and history of humanity, are nevertheless to all appearance needless and vain?

Such are the views of not a few naturalists at the present time. Nevertheless, to these naturalists, provided they are true to their method, and do not succeed in involving us in the same despair into which they have fallen themselves, have we not much reason to be thankful? For since they admit into their belief nothing but what they see with their eyes, they are surely good for us to go by so far as they go themselves; and if they have good eyes to see with, and good fingers to separate the objects they look at, surely their testimony as to what they have found must be of the greatest value. So it would seem. At the same time, it is worthy of consideration, how much more easy it is to profess to follow this method of simple observation than actually to do so. Nay, taking into account the unavoidable quickness and suggestiveness of mind in all who have curiosity enough to devote themselves to such inquiries, it may be questioned whether this method is ever practically followed in its purity. And, especially, it may be questioned whether this logically elected ignorance of the so-called man of science is much better than the natural ignorance of men in general. It is all very well to talk about accurate



observation. No doubt it is the first essential to the discovery of reality. But after all, *observation*, as has been already stated, when it reaches the mind, though still retaining this name, is already *interpretation*, and its value depends entirely upon the mental culture of the observer. Now, how can we interpret anything in a satisfactory manner but in the light of reason? And how can we expect any interpretation of value, except from those whose minds have all their natural wits and intuitions about them? Now, among the foremost of these is a belief in God and in the intellectual system of the universe. A mind, therefore, which in this respect is either naturally defective, or by course of study, or of life, has eliminated from among its convictions these truths, which are among the most characteristic instincts of humanity, need scarcely be expected to see light anywhere but along those few lines of thought which, taken together in their focus, give an image on the retina. And where, let us ask, does this method, employing as it does the abnegation of the ceaseless affirmations and demands of reason, land us? What is that universe, the reality of which we are able to reach in this way? An irreproachable logic declares that, pursuing this method, what we find as possessing the highest and indeed the only certainty by way of external world, is nothing more than merely a possibility of sensations, and by way of ourselves, nothing more than a power or habit of spinning out these sensations into a thread of consciousness.\* Yes, this and no more, for God and the universe, man and nature, soul and body, liberty and law, and everything! A possibility of sensation on the one hand, and a thread of consciousness on the other, that is all in all. Let us refuse, then, to indulge in such an unnatural and sterile suppression of reason. Let us rather listen to the anxious inquiries which she makes, and without an answer to which she will never be satisfied.

And to resume our development at that point where we have obtained the material element and the normal action of its aetherial atmosphere, supposing it to exist in a medium dissimilar to itself, and assuming that nebulae or shoals of such beings or things do actually exist in that ocean of the universal aether in which we ourselves on board of this world of ours, and all other worlds, are sailing, do we find, let us ask, anything that throws any light on the forms and structures of those wonderful microscopic objects which have been referred to? Although, when we are at the material element only, we are as yet at an incredible distance from everything that is visible, let us not despair of finding resemblances. The cosmical law of assimilation, implying as it does a general homology among the products of nature, and especially among those which are most adjacent to each other in the order of genesis, leads us to expect

\* See J. S. Mills' Criticism of the Philosophy of Sir W. Hamilton.



among the least and first things visible, resemblances in form and structure, and mode of action to the material elements themselves. Do we, then, find anything of this kind in the air which surrounds us, which of all earthly things resembles the æther most? Do we find in this medium any objects such that the material element itself of which they are composed may be regarded as a prelude of them? Now to this, though not altogether a negative, yet only an equivocal answer can be given. Until lately, indeed, the answer would have been simply, No. Until lately it was supposed that the common open air was free from particles of every kind, except those of the gases and vapours which compose it. But now it is found that even the azure of the sky, and at any rate a certain blueness which common air displays when properly illuminated for the purpose, is in reality nebulous in its nature, the nebulosity being due to clouds of foreign particles in the air. These particles are, however, so minute as not to be otherwise discernible at present. Nothing, therefore, can be affirmed with regard to their forms, structure, and modes of action. But in connection with them, the theory of zymotic and infectious diseases which is most in favour is to the effect that these diseases are caused and propagated by invisible organisms which, however they may have originated, and whatever they may be like, can maintain themselves all invisibly in the air for certain, sometimes lengthened periods. In confirmation of the existence of such objects in the air, it is also well known that media suitable for the entertainment of life—vegetable infusions, for instance, nay, chemical solutions, provided they contain the organic elements—cannot be long exposed to the air before they are teeming with life. And since the living beings and things which thus make their appearance soon produce on their own part spores and ova of exquisite minuteness, capable of producing their like in the same or other similar solutions, the legitimate inference is that they are themselves the development of spores and ova absorbed from the air. Their observation in detail while they are still in the air would, of course, be impracticable. But, all things considered, plainly in so far as the atmosphere is concerned, there is nothing to discourage us from searching even in this small planet of ours, to which alone we have access, for minute objects resembling in some respects, it may be, that with which we have peopled certain regions of the celestial spaces. On the contrary, there is much to encourage us to proceed with our inquiry.

Here, then, let us turn from the atmosphere to the ocean, and its various immediate or mediate distillates, that is, the waters generally of the terraqueous globe. In them, let us ask, do we find any objects bearing any resemblance to the material element itself, that individualised object or species which we have found as the very beginning of the material

economy, where it lies on the very confines of the world of spirit, that is, of pure life? Yes, in reply to this it may be truly said, in general terms, that all the waters of the world—oceans, lakes, rivers, ponds, marshes, ditches, &c.—wherever there is nothing to prevent it, are all teeming with little beings and things all in motion, more and more of them still more and more minute being rendered visible in proportion as the magnifying power of the microscope is increased.

In this field, then, we may reasonably look for those moving forms which are simplest among such as are visible, with a view to mark whether there be any of them which still indicate resemblances to our primordial type of material nature.

It is true that when we have transferred our thought from the single material atom to any object which can by any means be rendered visible, we have, as has been already stated, taken a flight which, in point of interval, may be compared to the distance of our planet from the sphere of the fixed stars. The interval from a single unit of atomic weight to an object which is large enough to show anyhow in our eyes is inconceivably great. But still this should not, according to our philosophy, discourage us in a search for resemblances. For since, according to that philosophy, the material element and cosmical law are one and the same universally, nature must everywhere be consistent with herself, and resemblances between individualised objects ought never altogether to cease.

And hence, indeed, the possibility of a knowledge of nature, such as may be justly entitled to the name of scientific. Nay, hence a beau-ideal of the study of nature. For hence it follows that, by the acquisition of an adequate knowledge of any one typical and fully endowed object, a general knowledge of leading features in all is acquired at the same time,—a happy result, surely, for by such a state of things much of the life of the truly philosophical naturalist may be left free for higher pursuits than the mere classifying and naming of minerals, plants, or animals.

But to proceed. Among the simplest living creatures which become large enough in the field of the microscope to admit of any insight into them are, as has been stated, Gregarinida and naked Rhizopoda. The former, when fully extended, possess lengthened forms, but when they attain a state of repose, both become spherical, and are said to be “encysted,” as represented in figure 1, which, as has been also stated, may also represent equally well the ovum of a highly organised animal. Here, then, we have an illustration of the cosmical law of material action, namely, that the spherical, as being the form of culmination under that law, is the limit of metamorphic action, and therefore the form of repose. And no less an illustration of the same law is the fact that the Gregarina,

when in a state of action, departs from the spherical in form, and becomes prolate or axial, that is, spindle-shaped or cylindrical, while other species when active become equatorial, discoid, or radiate (*Asteroidea*), and multitudes hemispherical or hemiform (*Medusidæ*, &c.)

As to the *Amœba* (fig. 16) when in a state of activity, in its protruding in any or in all directions filaments consisting of the same material as itself, and in fact, parts of itself, and in its also retracting these parts again when and where it pleases, and thus out of its own plastic body or sarcode extemporising legs and arms for itself, and moving about spontaneously, and laying hold of its food, for the assimilation of which to itself it also extemporises a stomach,—in these actions of the microscopic animal, and in these protrusive and retractile pseudopœdia, which are emitted from the protoplasmic body or nucleus, do we not see what we may call a *nisus* at repeating the structure and action of the material element itself, with its ætherial elements constantly proceeding outwards from the nucleus and returning in again? As to the *Gregarina* on the other hand, and *Entozoa* generally, such organism and action are not to be looked for in them, in consequence of the confinement which belongs to their habitat, which forbids all delicate projections from their bodies.

But more simple than these, and mirroring the single material element more expressly, we may regard those ova and spores, which the simplest organisms, both animal and vegetable, produce, multitudes of algæ for instance and zoophytes (see fig. 8). Add to these a vast variety of fully developed organisms, sometimes referred by systematic writers to the animal kingdom (fig. 14, *Actynophrys* sol.), sometimes to the vegetable kingdom (fig. 9, *Volvox globator*), many of them providing themselves with exquisitely constructed siliceous or calcareous skeletons or supports for their soft bioplasmic forms (see fig. 15, a *Xanthidium* or ovum of *Crystatella*); also *Foraminifera* and *Radiolaria* generally. While they are surrounded on all sides, or symmetrically, with fine sensitive filiform appendages always in motion, or tending to move, extensible or excursive and retractile, like the ætherial elements in the atmosphere of the material element itself, in none of these primordial animals, it is also worthy of remark, has a mouth been detected, any more than in the material element. There is no room for looking in them, therefore, for organs of digestion and assimilation. But these things we shall have to look for as soon as we proceed to consider the first stage of composition of organism, and thus make a step in the direction of visible objects.

That such composite structures are to be expected in nature, follows from what has been advanced, both as to the effects of respiration and of sexual differences. The former process we have seen to be exhaustive



of the matter of the element or organism that breathes. Hence elements which have breathed much have become dissimilar to those which have breathed but little. When, therefore, two elements which are thus related to one another meet, they will tend, under the law of assimilation, to merge their differences by uniting together, and giving rise to a new structure consisting of a couple. Now, of this coupled element we may affirm these things. Its form must be lengthened or prolate. It must have one eminent axis, and it must consist of two parts, one of which is *materially* stronger than the other, but that other *ætherially* stronger than the first; for what a material element loses as to its materiality or inertia by the long-continued action of its ætherial atmosphere or respiration, it gains in what may be called ætheriality or quickness. Here then do we not find already in this organism, consisting of two parts united, the preluding of the body and the head of an animal, the body being the more material, the head the more ætherial part?

And what will be the mode of action of the ætherial elements proper to the two atmospheres of the material elements in this coupled form? Plainly the excursions of those which lie between the two component parts of the coupled structure, and therefore about the middle of the form, can no longer radiate and return freely from and to their proper centres, as they did when the two material elements were separate and free. On the contrary, as they tend to meet each other in direct opposition, their excursions will tend to strike out at right angles to the axis of the coupled form, and thus to form an equatorial respiratory circle. Not that this respiratory circle will correspond in position with the middle of the form. The law of action and reaction implies that it will be thrown by the part which is materially stronger nearer that which is materially weaker than the middle of the form, that is, nearer the head. As to the extremities of the axis of this coupled structure, the ætherial elements there will be more free to perform their normal radiant and returning excursions. Thus they will prelude cilia, tentacula, setæ, &c., at the head and tail. But here also the law of action and reaction will tend to endow the head more fully than the tail with purely material organs (tentacula, arms, &c.), while it will at the same time tend to arm the tail more fully with more ætherial elements. Now of these we have seen that germ and sperm are ultimate products, and therefore testes, ovaries, oviducts, stings, &c.

The structure, therefore, to which we are led as representing a living thing such as would result from the lasting union of two material elements, may be something like this (see fig. 17); *a* and *b* are the united elements, *a* the more ætherial, *b* the more material, and therefore *a* the head, and *b* the body. Projecting from *a* there is a complete circle of vibrating cilia, or setæ, or tentacula, or ciliated tentacula, &c.,

ministering to the preservation (securing food, &c.,) of the individual. Projecting from *b* there is a defective circle of cilia or setæ, &c., *d* ministering to the reproduction of the individual. Around the head or neck, or between it and the body, there is a circle of cilia, &c., constituting a respiratory apparatus, which considered as expiratory, is of course counterpart to the alimentary circle around the head, and therefore such that, if that around the head bespeaks a mouth, that adjacent to it, but beneath it, indicates an anus. Now, in such a structure do we not see the preluding of such living beings as many infusoria, wheel-animalcules, and polyzoa, cephalopoda, &c.?

But let us hasten to remark, that although even a single material element (since its nucleus contains a central cavity), and still more, a couple when united, may represent an organism with a stomach, yet no development of a mouth has yet appeared, or any other need of alimentation but that which the emaciating action of respiration implies. As the living organism becomes more composite, however, a mouth, intestinal tube, and cloaca present themselves. Thus a coupled element consists of dissimilar parts. Hence such couples will tend to unite again, and there will result more and more lengthened structures of extremest simplicity, and either rigid, or capable of wriggling. And may not these be taken as the preluding of bacteria and vibrios in the first instance, afterwards of worms in general?

But following the course of definite organisation, we are called upon to remark that, as soon as three coupled elements have united, thus implying two hinges, the structure is capable of obeying so far the law of sphericity, that it may bend round, and head and tail uniting, thus constitute an annular segment of a triangular complexion, consisting of six material elements, and possessing six systems of cilia or setæ, arms or legs, or projecting organs of some kind. Now, have we not here the preluding of the segment of a vertebra, or at any rate that of an annuloidal or annulose animal? (See fig. 18, which is a transverse section of an animal of this order.) But each such annulus, being equatorial or discoid, they will, when developing in the same region under the law of symmetry, apply themselves to each other, so as to form a tubular structure, that is, a structure defective at both ends,—that is, having both a mouth and an anus or cloaca,—provided the organism be developed free in the medium in which it exists.

If, again, it be developed where the first ring is attached to any object, it will have a mouth only, and that surrounded by a system of cilia or tentacula, or ciliated tentacula, as the case may be. And here have we not a preluding of a polype in general, a conception which embraces the animal kingdom in its simpler members to a vast extent?

And now we need not attempt to carry our zoic synthesis any farther

though it was desirable to carry it thus far, because while we had the respiratory function from the first, and even from it saw the necessity of an alimentary function, it did not appear till now how alimentation adequate to secure growth and development, as well as to repair the emaciation implied in respiration, could be effected. Now, however, we see how this may be secured, when a structure defective at one if not at both extremities presents itself, that is, a structure with a mouth leading to an internal cavity, with perhaps an anus also.

But let us not attempt to carry our animated morphological constructions any farther here, when we are dealing as yet with the true, simple, or undifferentiated protoplasm, not the bioplasm of the biologist compounded of hydrogen, oxygen, carbon, and nitrogen, &c., but the mother element of all these, and of the whole material system. It is also to be considered that the aims of general or merely geometrical morphology, (symmetry and sphericity) cannot be in any great measure attained by organisms, which are obliged to develop under the manifold restrictions of concretes confined to the surface of our planet. Thus the gravitation of the planet requires that the axis of the form, if it be of any considerable size, shall be either horizontal or vertical, the former alone being stable. Hence, in individualised forms most frequently, a horizontal axis with a bilateral only, instead of a radiant symmetry, as in most animals; and in those whose axes are vertical, a verticellate and hemispherical (rather than a fully radiant and spherical form), as in most plants. The genial sunbeam also acting at the opposite pole in space to gravitation, tends to lengthen the axis upwards in all vertical forms, and to differentiate the dorsal from the ventral aspect of organisms. And in a word, it is only among forms on which gravitation and sunshine have but little effect, that is, among minute or aquatic beings, whether ova or minute forms, that an obvious accordance with the general types of morphology can be expected.

It is further to be considered, also, that there are in nature comparatively few, either plants or animals, which are truly individuals morphologically considered, few therefore which can be brought to the test of the general theory of form. It has been long known that plants which have more buds, or rather more leaves than one, are composite individuals. And the same is true to fully as great an extent, with respect to animals when morphologically considered. Thus a simple form can have only one equator and one axis. But most animals consist of many equators, which, however, being placed in a column with their axes end to end, preserve unity of axis and of animal life, whence animals have usually axial or lengthened forms.

An axial or lengthened form is indeed necessary to their activity; for sphericity is the form of fulfilled cosmical law, and therefore of



repose. Hence it is aimed at by all animals with a long axis when they go asleep ; for in that case, they ever tend to form their axis as much as possible into a circle or coil. Hence, also, the life-long action of the umbrella of the medusa in the sea, and of the heart in the breast of the vertebrate. They are both more or less hemispherical or pyramidal, that is, half spherical only, and hence they never cease acting, and that always in the interest of sphericity. They are ever throwing the mobile matter on which they act to the other side of their base or equator, so as, if possible, to effect symmetry and sphericity,—in which, indeed, if they could succeed, it would secure to the elements of which they consist freedom from all future work, and their emancipation from the concrete into the aeriform state—to repose or dance in the sunbeam, till the call came to them to descend again and assist in constructing concretes again, to which our partiality is easy to be explained, since our own organs are of the number of such concretes themselves.

But to return. Pursuing the course of life in the preceding synthesis, I have proceeded at once from the biological prelude of a single couple of material elements, to that of three couples united so as to form a ring or an annuloid articulation. But here, may it not well be asked, shall a couple of single material elements be prevented from attaching a third, so that not three couples, but simply three units of matter shall form a circular system. It is certain that such a system will be stable in the highest degree attainable by three equal and similar forces merely ; for such a group forms the triangle of forces of statical science. And when to the three we add a fourth poised over the triangle at an equal distance from all the three, so as to form an elemental triangular pyramid or tetrahedron (see fig.  $\Delta$ ). Now this is a statical system of the utmost stability and intransmutability. But in the very degree that a material structure is stable and intransmutable, it is incapable of life. Here, then, we find the dead appearing among the living ; here we find our primal matter of creation, or true protoplasm differentiated, by the appearance in its midst of dead particles of an abiding molecular structure.

$\Delta$



The Tetrad.

## CHAPTER XV.

ON THE DIFFERENTIATION OF THE PROTOPLASM TREATED OF IN THIS WORK, AND THE DEVELOPMENT IN IT OF THE ORGANIC ELEMENTS COMMONLY SO CALLED.

IN all that has preceded, mere or pure matter itself has been regarded as the basis of life in nature, and that which constitutes the true protoplasm, when we attach to the name its etymological import. It consists, according to our philosophy, of units, all of which, when entire and uncompressed, are spherical in form, and every way equal and similar to each other, except as to the positions which they occupy in space. In this respect each material unit is differentiated from all the others; and on this fact, according to what has been advanced, the whole economy of material nature, whether considered in reference to synthesis or analysis, growth or dissolution, depends.

But while all the material elements are equal and similar to each other, each is, according to our views, differentiated as to its own structure, composed as each is of an atmosphere or dynamosphere of æther, and a nucleus which consists also of æther, but in which the ætherial elements are confluent into one, which thus becomes a material element; the number of ætherial elements so confluent being  $12 + 20 = 32$ , giving as lines of junction traces of the two most perfect of the Platonic or geometrical polyhedra—namely, the dodecahedron and the icosahedron, either superimposed upon the other, or symmetrically circumscribing or inscribing it, as these two forms are well known to geometers to be capable of doing reciprocally.

This hypothesis as to the structure of the ultimate material element, which no one probably for a long time to come, save the author, will be disposed to admit to the rank of a discovery, or perhaps to regard otherwise than as a creation of an individual fancy, has been reached by invoking the aid of that law to which the name of cosmical has been awarded, because to it alone, ever operating under the eye and fulfilling the design of the great Creator, who is always and everywhere immi-

ment to His creation, an appeal is ever made. If other physicists and naturalists indulge in laws of nature by the dozen, or the score, or the hundred, we admit, as the ground of them all, so far as they have a ground in nature, only one. And if by a constantly recurring appeal to this one, we can explain, and have in this and the preceding parts of this "Sketch of a Philosophy" explained, a far greater number of the phenomena of nature and the laboratory than have been explained otherwise by scores of laws, which are frankly admitted to be empyrical, surely this is no slight claim for our law to be at least looked into with a view to its acceptance or rejection. But let it not be forgotten that for any great step such as this long time is required.

This one law, which is regarded as cosmical, I have named the law of assimilation, because the process so named by which our living organism is maintained from hour to hour, is a familiar example of its operation. It is to the effect that every individualised object tends to assimilate itself to itself in successive moments of its existence, and all objects to assimilate one another. The ground of it is, that the created substance or simple and pure substance of creation, has for its special function to manifest the Creator, and consequently to assimilate itself to His will and attributes in so far as the finite can assimilate itself to the infinite. Hence it is, in its own nature, wholly plastic or devoid of fixed innate properties, and wholly assimilative, both with respect to its own portions or parts, and to surrounding objects, and to its position in space, and (in so far as it is capable) to the mind of the Creator. And thus there immediately awake in the material elements, as I have shown in the preceding parts of this work, individuality and the properties of sphericity, elasticity, and inertia, along with a tendency to be assimilated as to place, or, as is commonly said, reciprocal attraction.

Hence, in the first place, the construction in the æther or realm of light of groups of ætherial elements, generating material elements such as have been described.

Hence, secondly, a tendency in the material elements, when previously distributed in space, to form into groups, in which their ætherial atmospheres may become completely confluent, while their material nuclei, being possessed of a more powerful individuality than ætherial elements, come into juxtaposition merely, thus constituting molecules.

Nor is this all that can be ascertained respecting them. By two impregnable arguments, one of them mathematical, and compelling universal consent, the other a legitimate deduction from the cosmical law, and therefore good in our philosophy, the forms and structures of these molecules must always be as symmetrical as the reaction of their own constituent particles and that of their surroundings will allow. Now, to the full extent that mathematics can determine the forms of systems



of equal and similar, elastic and reciprocally attractive spherical forces, or centres of force, when they have settled in a state of equilibrium, their forms are proved to be symmetrical in the highest degree. And the law of assimilation gives the same result; for symmetry is precisely the assimilation to one another of those parts or particles in a form, which correspond in situation on opposite sides of some plane or line or ultimately some one point in the form.

Moreover, this, which must be admitted to be a clear and distinct conception of symmetry, enables us to discover what is that form towards which symmetrical forms as such culminate; for that form must be the one in which the assimilation of the parts or particles in all situations are most fully assimilated to one another, and to a single point within the form. Now this plainly occurs in the spherical superficies or cell. And here, may I not ask in passing, whether all nature does not verify this conclusion, wherever she is permitted to do so? From the great orbs of heaven to the minims of the microscope, whether organisms or atoms of bruised granite, what have we, as the recurring form, but the sphere everywhere?

No; happily not everywhere, at least not the spherical and cellular in form, consisting of similar or homogeneous materials. For where that is the case in any object, the aim of nature in the construction of that object has been attained. Further activity in the previous direction has come to a close, and that object, viewed as it has been hitherto, has nothing to do but repose or to die.

Let it not be forgotten, however, that no sooner has death taken place on this account than the particles constituting the object, being now set free from obeying the law of assimilation as to *space*, and from constituting a part of a composite form (not their own), are free to obey this law as to *time*, and so to become again the individualised objects they were before aggregation, each entitled to occupy its own field in free space as originally awarded to it, that is, to become aeriform.

But though such a law there be, it does not follow that spherical and cellular objects shall meet the eye everywhere. As to objects placed on the surface, or anywhere out of the centre of a gravitating sphere (such as our world is), which is of course always drawing every material element towards its own centre, their construction by an aggregation of such elements into forms which are themselves spheres, especially cellular or hollow spheres, cannot but be very difficult, in many cases impossible, and in many indefinitely postponed.

But hence two most interesting results—first, a ceaseless and indefinitely continued activity in matter; and, secondly, a definite direction of that activity—that is, a life and a morphological aim—or, in one word, a definite economy of nature.

As to the character of that economy, when viewed metaphysically, it may be said to be the attainment of repose; and when viewed physically, to be the construction of the most perfect of forms; for such, under many points of view, the single-walled sphere undoubtedly is.

In this work I have first taken into consideration the structure and action of a single material element. And in the structure which has been assigned to it we have seen, as we should expect under the cosmical law of universal assimilation, implying as it does a homology reigning through all nature, the origin and cause of many of the first, and strangest, and otherwise most unaccountable facts in biology. Thus, in the *structure* of the material element itself, we have seen the type and prelude of such structures as nucleus and nucleolus, female and male, endosark and octosark, &c.; such organs as cilia, tentacula, limbs, &c.; such beings as locomotive spores and ova, Rhizopoda, &c. We have also found in the material element itself the reason why certain numbers are recurrent and prevalent in organic nature, both animal and vegetable. In the *action* of the material element itself also we have found a preluding of the grand function of respiration in general, and in detail an anticipation of such institutions as lasso-cells, various kinds of spitting and exuding, as also tegumentary appendages, &c., these things when looking to a single material element.

We have also, though very shortly, considered the case of two material elements united into one. And in this we have seen a preluding of such beings as infusoria, nay, much higher organisms considered as forms merely, as also the differentiation of an animal into a head and a body.

We have even touched upon the case of three material elements when united into one. And here we have found morphology opening into two branches, one corresponding to that in which the three constituents continue are united in the same line or axis, the other that in which they bend round upon the two hinges which the union of three implies into a trigonal or annular system. And here, corresponding to this deduction, when we looked to nature we found rising out of organisms which may be conceived to belong to either line according to their time of life, the vegetable and the animal kingdoms, the straight axis composed of three material elements superposed on each other, representing the plant-element, the annular system of three representing the true animal-element.

Such annuli, in fact, being applied to one another on the same axis, there is preluded that structure of the animal axis, which manifests itself almost from the beginning onwards even into the vertebrata, the highest of terrestrial organisms. The characteristic of the whole series is a continuously hollow or tubular body, which has two mouths, or a

mouth and an exit-opening, or, at any rate, a structure which is in want of matter or food to complete its form.

And here the question arises—given our elemental annuloid, or mere triangle of matter, how can food be prevented from placing itself axially as two similar poles (for both are defective in matter), as the law of assimilation would seem to imply that it should; in other words, how shall the two open regions be differentiated, the one as mouth, the other as anus? This is a question very interesting, no doubt, but which it would be preposterous in us to enter upon now, while, as yet, we are dealing with homogeneous undifferentiated protoplasm, the primordial element merely, in which neither hydrogen nor oxygen, nor any of the organic elements, commonly so called, have, as yet, been secreted or have otherwise made their appearance. Before addressing ourselves to it, therefore, let us see what must happen on the simplest possible conditions, and while as yet, elemental synthesis, the demonstrated propositions of statical equilibrium, and the law of symmetry or assimilation may still be a safe and certain guide. This inquiry will, moreover, bring us into the region of well-known terraqueous substances, and first of all into acquaintance with

*The Aqueous Element.*

What we have to set out with in the biological point of view in which we are now contemplating the synthesis of material elements, is a system of three such elements arranged, not as a linear or axial system, but as bent round and forming a circular or closed system, the extreme stability of which we have already seen when it was statistically considered as the triangle of forces, but which we now consider as an elemental annulus or element of a flexible tube or annuloidal body.

And here we have first to remark, that two such triquetro-annular bodies meeting in the same field will conjugate; for a couple in union on the same axis, viewed in reference to the ætherial atmospheres, now supposed to be resting on each other, must be more nearly spherical than one only, for one is merely an equatorial ring, whose form overhead (that of its atmosphere) must be a very oblate spheroid.

But before they conjugate such Desmidia-like elements must also exist single at least for a time.

In a mass or medium, then, consisting of true protoplasm, that is, of merely material elements, not differentiated otherwise than each is in its own intimate structure, let there be developed a greater number of conjugated trigonal annuli such as have been described, and along with them a smaller number of similar annuli still single. Of both it is to be observed that they are similarly defective in matter on both extremities of their axis. But this defect, a single material ele-



ment or particle of protoplasm, by placing and poising itself symmetrically over both ends of the axis in both cases, can supply in perfection. There will thus be developed two molecular structures, the nuclei of which we may thus represent in diagram and literal symbol.



I have elsewhere shown (see P. II. p. 46; P. III. p. 14) that both these bodies, if free, must be intensely stable, undecomposable, and untransformable and what they represent in the laboratory. But what we have here to remark is this, that by their secretion thus, in the course of a biological synthesis or growth, these two bodies call a halt in the march of universal life. For when we say of an individualised structure, that it is alive, what we imply is that it is unstable or mobile, decomposable, transformable. Our  $H_I$  and  $H$ , therefore, which are similar to each other in many respects, are similar also in this that they are dead, at least when considered as existing alone and free, and at such temperatures as are to be found on the surface of our planet. This limitation as to temperature is necessary with regard to  $H$ , for, although, when free it must always maintain the form of a trigonal bipyramid, yet it is also capable of assuming what may be called a coronal form, in which its five constituent units come into the same plane, defining the five points or angles of a pentagon. On this, however, I need not enlarge here. But while  $H_I$  and  $H$  are similar, they are also dissimilar to one another, and this it is important for us to remark. For, hence, they will tend to unite together! And since atoms of  $H_I$  are more abundant than atoms of  $H$  (for of all stable structures the elemental tetrahedron  $\Delta$  is the simplest, and  $H_I$  is merely a symmetric couple of elemental tetrahedra) atoms of  $H_I$  will gather around atoms of  $H$ . As to the resultant combination, that will obviously depend on the number of regions in the atom of  $H$ , which are suitable for the attachment of atoms of  $H_I$ . Now these regions are obviously 5, three on the equator and one on each of the two poles. As the product of the aggregation, therefore, of  $H$  and  $H_I$ , we shall have a combination, which is expressed by the formula—



It is so polymorphous that it would take long time to describe and many diagrams to show the various forms in which it may possibly exist. But there is one of these which transcends all the others in symmetry, sphericity, and compactness, and therefore in stability under trying conditions of existence. This, therefore, we may regard as the natural and characteristic form, at least when the temperature is not such as to develop the most highly-expanded form; and this we may regard, therefore, as the biological form. It is when all the six constituent members of the structure place themselves so that their equators are all in one plane, an equatorial angle of each being in the centre. They are all nearly isomorphous, and the equator of each is an equilateral triangle. The equator of the group is therefore a regular hexagon, composed of six similar triangles. And over each of them in both sides a material element is symmetrically poised, giving to the whole a structure of exquisite symmetry. But it is as defective on its axis as are the original annuli or triangles of forces of which its equator consists, or, as we might say, it has two open mouths. Also, instead of possessing a cellular or centrally empty structure, its centre is its most loaded part. Symmetrical and beautiful, and in some respects perfect, though it be, therefore, it cannot be an ultimate as well as a primal element in nature. Meantime let us here give its diagram and a literal symbol (which we will afterwards justify).



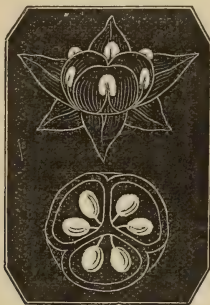
aq.

But what have we here? This structure the iron hand of a synthesis, guided by the inexorable laws of statical equilibrium has forced us to construct and to accept. And to it we must reconcile ourselves, however strange and unlike anything that we meet with in nature it may be. But is it strange, and unlike anything in nature? Nay, can any one look upon such a structure without being reminded of the first concrete forms of the aqueous element—that element which, by the vaticination of all philosophy, has been deemed to be primeval? What will result from the symmetrical aggregation of such structures but the actual forms of snow flakes? Are we not also reminded by it of the



Snow Flakes.

flowers of endogenous plants, that is plants in which it may be said generally that the aqueous prevails over the carbonaceous tissue?



Endogenous Flower and Seed-Vessel.

But these resemblances by the way at present. Here let us ask, in the first place, respecting it, whether, supposing a multitude of such to exist in the neighbourhood of each other, they will continue always to exist separate, or whether they will not rather, under increasing cold or pressure, run together into a molecule of some kind? That the latter alternative must represent the case may be gathered from inspecting the form of the structure itself. Thus, of the six parts which constitute it, one is an atom of  $H$ , while the other five are atoms of  $Hf$ . The structure is therefore differentiated, and in virtue of this, as an individualised body, it will cohere or continue in union all the more firmly.

But, for the same reason, one of the six sides of its equatorial region, or region for union, is dissimilar to the other five. Hence, when two or more, through cold or pressure, come near enough to one another they will assume positions in relation to each other, such that the repulsive action of the similar elements shall be a maximum and in equilibrio, and the dissimilar elements, consequently, nearest to each other, and most favourably placed for clapping together as soon as the ætherial atmospheres of both, or of all, will permit. A medium then containing sparse atoms of  $aq$  will be liable to change, and an aeriform medium composed of such atoms will, under increasing cold or pressure, tend to condense. And, plainly, it would be a great step if we could ascertain the forms and structures which will result. We have this to guide us

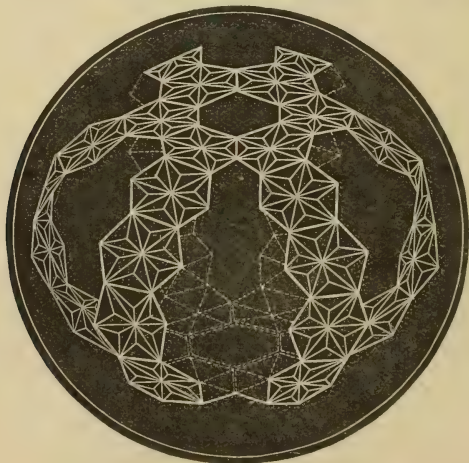


in the inquiry that, as to the resulting molecules, like all others, they must tend to be spherical.

Now, here we are met by the fact that the equator of the molecular constituent aq, which is obviously the region of quiet or cool union, is a hexagon; while this is such a form that, when hexagons are continuously united together, they cannot form a definite polyhedron at all, but only a linear series or lamina.

Here, then, we find the first differentiation of an undefined mass of protoplasm which our philosophy gives. From having been homogeneous, it will now lie traversed by lines and laminae, and, in fact, be differentiated into a tissue consisting of true material elements held together by fibres and membranes of aq. And have we not here the preluding of those jellies, both vegetable and animal, of which, when the contained aqueous matter goes off, almost nothing remains, however large they were before?

But differentiation and individuation must tend to go on. The atoms of aq must tend to segregate, and thus to grow together under the law of symmetry, and become individualised as they may. And here let us ascertain, if possible, what must be the form and structure of the smallest number which possesses good morphological conditions of existence. Recurring to the lamina (which it is the characteristic of hexagons when grouping together), the smallest which fulfils the condition of symmetry is when 3 place themselves on alternate edges around one in the centre. And when on this central one, other two place themselves one above and the other below, so as to form an axis of 3aq to the lamina of 4aq as the equator, we obtain a molecule which has a certain claim to existence. It consists of 6 atoms of aq, 3 ex-



$$AQ = aq^{36}$$

panded laterally like petals, and 3 standing in the axis like an ovary, each composed of course of six parts, so that it may be regarded as a distant preluding of a monocotyledonous, say an alismal flower. But such molecules, consisting of 6aq each, must tend to run together again, and that in groups of six again, as the smallest number that the law of symmetry permits. And now having obtained a group of hexagonal structures, consisting of six times six members, they may attain to a higher unity and at the same time develop an exquisitely spherical molecule of a capsular nature constructed of six ribs or meridians, each consisting of 6aq, and united with one another at both poles. See on p. 144 a very defective diagram of it.

Here then, in our protoplasmic body, already differentiated inasmuch as it contains filaments and laminæ of aq, though, like itself, wholly hyaline, we find a tendency to a further differentiation in the construction within it of molecules or spherules of  $AQ = 36aq$ , which, no doubt, as to the eye will be equally hyaline or transparent. Now, in such a structure of the whole, have we not a preluding of the structure of such protoplasmic beings as sponges, &c.?

And now, suppose one of these contained spherules of AQ to leave the body in which it has been generated and to exist free, let us ask by what generic name we shall call it. And, in the first place, shall we regard it as inorganic or organic, as dead or animated?

That it must be held to be of an organic rather than of an inorganic structure follows, I think, from this, that it is a truly individualised body, constructed symmetrically, its exterior dissimilar to its interior; by which last feature it is distinguished from a crystal or crystalline element. But instead of pressing this inquiry further, since the idea of organisation is always associated with that of life, let us ask whether we ought to regard it as dead or animated. Now, here again we are troubled by the same indefiniteness and obscurity which attaches to the use of terms of everyday life when transferred to exact science; who knows what he means when he speaks of the difference between deadness and animation? Let us not attempt to settle it. But giving up that to lexicographers, let us state some of the properties of our capsular structure AQ, and leave the reader to determine for himself the category in which he will place it.

Looking then to nature with a view to discover something like it, one is at first disposed to say that it is the very prefiguration of a Beroë with six ctenophores.

But a further inspection shows, that though the intimate action of the material elements, as the summits of the six times six atoms of aq, which form the meridians or ctenophores, may be very great, yet that action can only consist in vibration, or rather pulsation, all round the

whole form, and that in the direction of radii to that form, or else in gyrations at right angles to these radii. That action can therefore only be calorific, not locomotive. But of such a structure as aq or AQ, it may be remarked, that the amount of pulsatory action proper to its constituent atoms, even at a low temperature, must be singularly great; in other words, what ought to be called its specific heat must be singularly great.

As to the form of AQ, it might also be shown that, according to the amount of pulsatory action or heat which actuates its constituent elements, that form must be either spherical or oblate or prolate. It must be spheroidal, on opposite sides of the spherical, corresponding to risen or fallen temperatures, and therefore its volume must be a minimum at a certain temperature, namely, when AQ is spherical, with increase of volume both above and below that temperature, a state of things which reminds us not of any organic form commonly so called, but of water, which, however, usually constitutes not less than  $\frac{3}{4}$  of every organic structure, and often a great deal more, sometimes almost the whole, as in Beroe, &c., already alluded to.

But in all this, whether its great amount of specific heat, or its changes of form with changes of temperature, there is nothing that would warrant us in regarding it as animated. Life implies the power of internal change, without dissolution, to a far greater extent than this. And if it imply dissolution also, then that, not without the previous or simultaneous production of spores, ova, or embryos of some kind, which may reproduce the life of the parent.

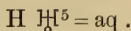
Now, this power of reproduction, which has been commonly regarded as a characteristic of life, we have here in perfection. Our AQ at a certain temperature or on diminished pressure breaks up in 36 atoms of aq, which separate from each other. And may not this be regarded as a prelude of what is seen to take place often in animated nature, as, for instance, in the mature monad, when it breaks open and gives birth to a multitude of little ones?

But is AQ capable of such change of form as may be observed in species all through living nature, whether plant or animal? This is the question for us now, most interesting, not so much for the solution of the question whether we are to regard AQ as in some sense animated (which after all is very much a question of words), as for bringing us to know what AQ actually represents in nature.

And here plainly, in the first instance, we must direct our attention to the atom of aq, by 36 of which a molecule of AQ is constructed. Now, this aq we have already seen to be composed genetically of two somewhat similar structures, namely, H and H̄, and to be the product of the

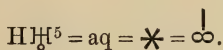


complete saturation of H by  $\text{H}^5$  in its most symmetrical form, the equation being—

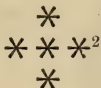


Now, though aq (see the diagram, p. 142), in virtue of its differentiated structure, cannot but be possessed of a certain amount of stability greater by far, for instance, than would be possessed by a similar form if composed of  $\text{H}^6$  or  $\text{H}^6$ , yet it is obviously tender. The atom of H in it is not symmetrically placed in reference to the  $5\text{H}$ . Moreover, aq is wholly deficient in an axis. Hence, if  $5\text{H}$  be capable by themselves of constructing a symmetrical and stable molecule, while one atom of H may form an axis for it, such a transformation of the atom of aq may be expected often to occur.

To illustrate this, and to save the multiplication of bad diagrams, and to use types which are already in the hand of the printer, let us take  $\star$ , a star of six rays, to stand for aq; also I or a dash placed vertically or horizontally, as it may be, to stand for H; and  $\infty$  or 8, figure eight, horizontal or vertical, to stand for  $5\text{H}$  in the new form, which, along with an atom of H, is anticipated from the transformation of an atom of aq. Thus we shall have as identicals in equivalent symbols—

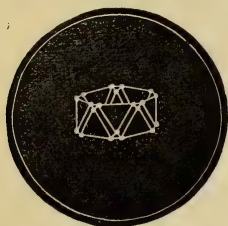


Let us suppose, then, that we are to follow the changes of the structure of the group of  $6\text{aq}$  which we supposed to form the first step in the genesis of  $\text{AQ}$ , and that, when there is no more aq present, and when, consequently,  $\text{AQ}$  could not be developed. In this case we may use the symbols just adopted, for any kind of representation is very difficult to draw and expensive to cut in wood, or otherwise produce.



Three of the six atoms of aq are in the axis of the combination, standing on each other's hexpartite poles, the other three (only two of which appear in the diagram) form equatorial expansions or wings. The latter at present we may neglect. But looking to the former, and inspecting the state of this axis as to unity and solidarity, it may be easily seen that is very badly constituted. In fact, the sustained pulsatory action of the summits of the two extreme atoms of aq against the summits of the middle one and its action against theirs, must tend to throw the atoms of aq off from one another, and so to dissolve the structure. Now, such a dissolution would be prevented if in each of

the two hollow or negative poles of the central atom of aq an atom of H were inserted ; for in that case all the three atoms of aq would, in a manner, be bolted together. Now, such a position and purpose, the two atoms of H in the two extreme atoms of aq, in the structure of 3aq, can supply. But having supplied them, there is left on each pole of the structure not an atom of aq, but 5H in connection with one atom of H now in an axial position. Can these 5H then symmetrise and construct themselves into a stable molecular element? Yes, that they can ; and in either of three ways, whereof that which

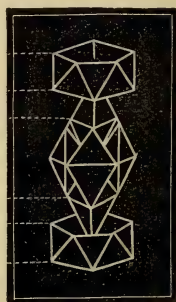
Oxygen  $\infty$ .

is appropriate to the present situation is when they apply themselves to each other, by their alternate facets, and poles to equators, that is, by their most dissimilar parts. This done, they construct a molecule of remarkable morphological properties, which in point of general form may be compared to a coupling joint or wheel with a broad tyre in mechanics, or to a blood-disk, or a life-buoy (see fig.).

The transformed structure of three atoms of aq, united or standing upon each other on the same axis, will now give a new structure, of which the central atom of aq alone is the same as before, and of which some idea is given by the following diagram, which may be regarded as representing the ultimate resultants of the elemental forces which constitute matter.

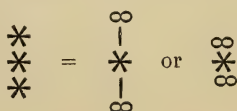


HO



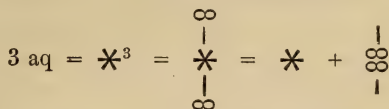
3aq = OHaqHO = 3HO

Using common types as proposed, we obtain the equation—

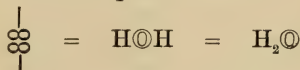


the atoms of H in HO on the formula on the right hand being supposed to be concealed between  $\infty$  and  $*$ .

Now, this new form of 3aq, as well as 3aq itself, is obviously capable of decomposition, though not so easily as 3aq. The two atoms of  $\infty$ , each a transformed atom of aq, are capable together of forming a symmetrical, and therefore a separately insulable molecule. And thus we may have as the equation of partial decomposition of the above—



Moreover, the last, which is a coupled atom of transformed aq, may also obviously be decomposed. Using a double-faced letter  $\odot$  as meaning a couple of atoms of O in union, to stand for the central structure  $\infty$ , we thus obtain the further equation—



And now let us ask, Is there any molecule known in nature or the laboratory which this  $\odot$  of ours may represent? We can already compare it with aq and H. Perhaps they may explain each other. Now this they do in certain important features. Thus, as to the number of material elements or units of atomic weight which go to constitute H and  $\odot$  respectively, the following facts appear. In H there are 5, and in  $\odot$  there are  $2 \times 5 \times 8 = 80$ , or, calling the atomic weight of H = 1, that of  $\odot = 16$ . In atomic weight then our structure which  $\odot$  stands or agrees with an unit volume of oxygen as compared with hydrogen gas.

And since the law of assimilation leads us to expect that the unit volumes of individualised molecules, when in the same state, will be equal to one another, the product of the decomposition of any measure, say two volumes of aq, will give the same measure, say two volumes of H, and half the same measure, say one volume of  $\odot$ . Now this is well known to be the fact when common vapour is decomposed into hydrogen and oxygen gases.

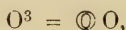
As to the corresponding weight of the smallest unit-volume of aq when in the aeriform state, since it is equal to HO, it must be  $5 + 40 = 45$ , when H = 5 and  $\odot = 80$ , i.e., 9 when H = 1. Now this is precisely that of common vapour, its unit volume under the law of assimilation being held to be the same as that of H and  $\odot$ . And not only do these deductions explain the known phenomena of chemistry, but they bring along with them great relief to that science from great embarrassments. During the earlier period of the



$\odot = \text{O}_2$   
Oxygen Gas.



atomic theory, the atomic weight of oxygen was generally taken at 8 when  $H = 1$ . It is now generally taken at 16. Meanwhile the phenomena of ozone have come in to make the darkness more visible. Now ozone, in all its features, especially in its characteristic, namely, its more intense chemical activity, is fully explained by the view here advanced; for, as the attainment of the spherical is the attainment of the aim of molecular action, it is the condition of molecular repose or inactivity, whence a single atom of O, being much more defective as to sphericity than a coupled atom, that is, than an atom of  $\odot$ , must be much more active. Not that any of the ozones (for there are more than one of them) consists of oxygen in single atoms, but they are all molecular structures of oxygen in which there is an odd atom of oxygen, which is on the eve of going off as a single atom on any change of action. Thus one of the best defined ozones is that whose sp. gr. is  $1\frac{1}{2}$  times that of oxygen gas, indicating that the aeriform unit is that which is normal to sulphur when it assumes the aeriform state, that is, consists of three atoms of O, giving the equation—



speedily resolving itself into oxygen gas and active oxygen. (But for a more dense ozone, see Part II. p. 93, note.)

That oxygen in every case,  $\odot$  as well as O, must be very active, follows from its extreme defectiveness in reference to the sphere. And that that activity must manifest itself chiefly by a generally parasitic or corrosive habit, follows from the fact that it is in polar matter that it is deficient. Hence, it will tend to squat down upon and adhere to almost every other body, for it can scarcely be so ill anyhow as when existing alone.

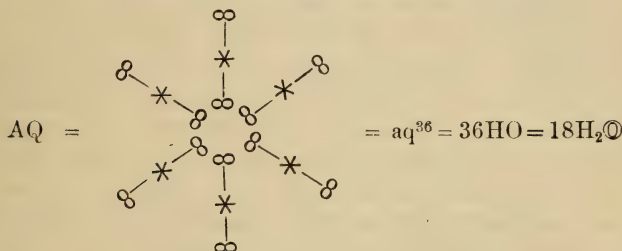
The morphological relation of O to H is also such, they are so entirely dissimilar, that when they are brought within the sphere of each other's attraction, they must rush together with immense force, the positive axis of the atom of H in the direction of the negative axis of the atom of O, piercing O, and causing such heat as must tend to explode it, the explosion being prevented, however, by the suitableness of the atom of H to take its place along with the 5 atoms of  $H\ddot{H}$ , which constitute O in constructing an atom of aq, towards the regeneration of which the whole action tends, inasmuch as it tends to bring all the axes of the six nearly isomorphous members of  $H\ddot{H}^5$  into parallelism, and into the same plane; for such is the condition of the six members in the beautiful structure of aq.

But, referring to the former parts of this work for evidence showing how completely our molecular structure of H and O and aq explain all the known phenomena of hydrogen, oxygen, and the aqueous element,

let us here remark, what now appears, that our Beroe-like AQ (see fig. p. 144) is capable of a remarkable transformation. In fact, every three atoms of aq that enter into it may resolve themselves into the beautiful structure, of which the lines of the resultant forces are given in the diagram (p. 148), as has been already shown. Now here, both poles being atoms of oxygen, they are pentagonal, and not trigonal, like those of H and H<sub>2</sub>. They cannot, therefore, run together into hexagons, and thereafter tend to form filaments and membranes only, and if spherules, then spherules still very open, though with no fewer than 36 atoms of aq in each. They are now altogether suited for forming a regular polyhedron, one of the Platonic bodies, the dodecahedron, namely, consisting of 12 members. Now in each of these members there are 3 aq. One molecule of AQ, therefore, gives precisely one such dodecatom:—



To represent this beautiful structure in detail must be left to hereafter, when there will be students of these matters who can afford to lose, or have skill and a mind to make money by science. Meantime, with common types, it may be half shown as if it were in profile; thus—



Thus our first complete differentiated structure in our primal or true protoplasm is capable of a remarkable transformation. Formerly, as AQ, being once free, it was capable of maintaining its freedom by the great heat and repulsiveness which must ever tend to actuate its whole surface. It was also capable of changing its form from prolate or lengthened to oblate or discoid, with spherical lying between. Now it must remain always spherical. And this may be remarked respecting it, that, being already wholly mailed in oxygen, both outside and inside, it is protected from the further attacks of this, the great terraqueous corroder. But it has at the same time, and in virtue of the same structure, become parasitic or adhesive on all sides. Such dodecatoms will, therefore, no longer remain free. They will tend to unite, though not with each other directly perhaps, yet with other matter. And thus they will induce, as we shall presently see, a further differentiation of our elemental protoplasm.

But have we not in this  $(\text{OHaqHO})^{12}$ , as compared with the same

matter as AQ, a preluding of the hybernating, or encysted, or ovulated state of organisms? And if it would not do to say that our aqueous spherule is an animated thing, can we fairly say that it is altogether dead? For my own part, I never can look at a stream of water rushing down from the mountain, or a river making for the sea, or a cloud forming in the air, without feeling that language is misapplied when the liquid element is spoken of as altogether dead.

But to pass from words to things, it may be remarked that, according to these views of the nature of the aqueous element, a most remarkable fact appears in its pathology. And that this must have important bearings in pathology, commonly so called, and therefore possibly in therapeutics, cannot but be, since our fleshy parts consist of aqueous matter to the extent of not less than three-fourths of the whole, and our brain of a still larger proportion. I allude to the great difference in capacity for heat between AQ and (OHaqHO)<sup>12</sup>. The former, in fact, is more suitably constructed for entertaining a great amount of that vibratory or pulsatory action wherein heat consists, than any other molecular structure whatever. All the polar elements in every atom of aq that goes to construct it are free to pulsate without interference. In the latter it is quite otherwise. The same polar elements are to a great extent bound up. The capacity of the atom of O also (of which there are no fewer than 24 in the dodecatomic molecule) is very small compared with that of aq. When both are at the same temperature, therefore, that is, when there is an equilibrium of calorific action and reaction between them, according to their respective capacities, as structures composed of perfectly elastic elements, the quantity of developed action in AQ must be very great compared with what it is in (OHaqHO)<sup>12</sup>. Aqueous matter, therefore, in passing from the former state to the latter must give out a great deal of heat, and so cause a hot fit in the organism in which the transformation takes place. When undergoing the contrary change, it must cause a cold fit, and that in both cases, all independently of the chemical union of carbon or hydrogen with oxygen, to which alone the phenomena of heat in the organic system is popularly referred. No doubt, to this chemical source exclusively animal heat has been referred with such exactness of calculation as seemingly to leave no room for any other calorific or frigorific agency, and indeed nothing more to be desired. But all such calculations are so made as to be self-correcting as they proceed, their product being also a foregone conclusion. It is therefore not to be wondered that they throw no light on the phenomena of fever or any of those abnormal states of the system as to temperature, between which and the rate of nutrition or of respiration no connection can be discovered.

And here let us bring to a close our inquiry as to the molecular

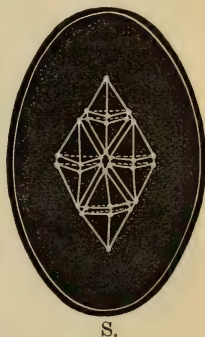


structures which result from  $5\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$  when they can secure one atom of H first as a leader and then as a companion. Having hydrogen previously given, we obtain in this case aqueous matter and oxygen. But as has been already hinted,  $5\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$  may give being to other elements.

## SULPHUR.

In constituting an atom of oxygen, the  $5\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$  (which  $\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$  I have sometimes called hylagen) are united poles to equators and by their facets. But they may also be united poles to equators (that is, by their dissimilar and therefore permanently cohesive parts) by their edges. In this case, from the same material as gives an atom of oxygen, another element is obtained, which may be regarded as an alternate form of that material, and which in its functioning must have singular analogies as well as differences with oxygen. Let us in the meantime designate it by the literal symbol S (see the fig.).

We may also conceive its genesis in connection with our molecule of  $(\text{OHaqHO})^{12}$  or reduced water, though that is not the most natural connection. Thus, in this molecule, the 12 surface regions being atoms of oxygen whose poles are empty externally, and in want of an axis, it is to be expected, supposing the molecule to exist in the midst of protoplasm in which atoms of  $\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$  (hylagen) have been already developed, that each atom of O will attract one of  $\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$  into its empty pole to form an axis for it. But every such atom of hylagen thus placed presents four points for the attachment of others which are still unoccupied, three on its equator and one on its outstanding pole. These, therefore, will also tend to be taken possession of by other atoms of hylagen. Thus each of the twelve atoms of O will be a cup or receptacle for five atoms of  $\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$ , three of them standing out like three stamens around the other two, which are in one line and form the axis of the structure like ovary and stigma in the same flower. And thus we might fancifully say, that one molecule of reduced or concreted water has come into flower, and shown that it belongs to the monocotyledonous class of vegetables—a remark which, as has been already hinted, is not altogether fanciful or devoid of scientific value, since, when we compare together the two great classes of flowering plants, it may be truly said that the monocotyledons are those in which the aqueous tissue preponderates as compared with the dicotyledons in which the carbonaceous tissue preponderates. But as in a flower the tips of the stamens, either mediately or immediately, sooner or later, apply themselves to the stigma, so here the  $3\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$ , at first sup-



posed to be spreading, must sooner or later place their axes parallel to those of the other two, so that their previously free poles fall upon the equator of the upper atom of  $\text{H}$  in the axis, which when they have once done they must remain united; for there is thus generated at each of the six regions where the five atoms of  $\text{H}$  are united together a triangle of force, and at the seventh region, namely, the centre of the structure, a coupled triangle of force. Now, such a combination of equal and similar forces is so stable that it cannot be decomposed, or otherwise be destroyed, except by being exploded.

Thus we obtain, in each of the twelve surface atoms of  $\text{O}$  in our dodecatom, twelve atoms of  $\text{S}$ , which, once constructed, must be very stable. Now, on comparing  $\text{S}$  with  $\text{O}$ , it will be seen that  $\text{S}$  is defective in equatorial matter, as  $\text{O}$  was found to be in polar matter. There are, in fact, in the equatorial region of  $\text{S}$ , three cavities wanting to be filled up, there being around that centre room for six, as in aq. Now, for filling up, three other atoms of  $\text{S}$  are very suitable; and if they come on so that a pole of each may gain the centre of the fourth atom of  $\text{S}$ , which thus becomes an axis to the system of four, the whole structure may be very stable. We thus obtain  $\text{S} = \text{S}^4$ . (See fig.)



Sulphur,  $\text{S}^4 = \text{S}$ .

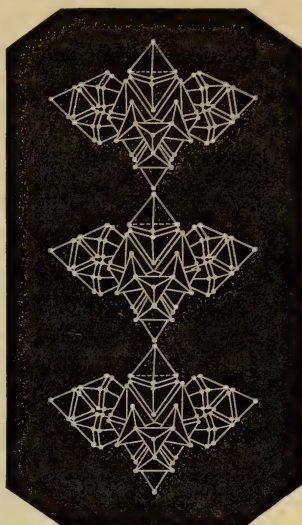
And now, our new element agrees with oxygen in being what may be naturally called a negative form, that is, a form which is defective in axial as compared with its equatorial expansion, and which, when viewed overhead in its æthereal atmosphere, is an oblate spheroid; the prolate spheroid being taken for the positive form.

Atoms of  $\text{S}$ , therefore (supposing that no very high temperature has imparted so much action to the axis as to improve their sphericity), when admitted to the aeriform state, will not rise singly, nor yet will they rise like atoms of ordinary oxygen in couples, but rather like oxygen as ozone in sets of three, one on each pole of the central atom—which last in such a situation will dilate so as to make the whole structure much more nearly spherical than it is represented in the diagram on the next page.

In this way then, the twelve atoms of  $\text{S}$ , which we have supposed to encrust one molecule of concreted moisture, may be imagined to escape from it.

As to the weight of this new aeriform ( $\text{S}^{12} = \text{S}\text{S}\text{S}$ ) it must

(if the law of assimilation still insists upon the normal or atmospheric unit volume for it) be six times that of oxygen gas. Thus, while the atomic weights of O and S are the same, namely, that of  $5H = 5 \times 8 = 40$ , that of  $\textcircled{O} = 2 O$  is  $80 = 16$  when  $H = 1$ , but that of  $\textcircled{S} = 4S$  is  $4 \times 40 = 160 = 32$  when  $H = 1$ , whence that of  $3\textcircled{S}$  must be  $3 \times 32 = 96 = 6 \times 16$ , that is, six times that of oxygen gas. But when the pulsatory action or heat of the triple system of atoms of  $\textcircled{S}$  is so great as to separate them, and each occupies an unit volume, the weight of the aeriform in that case will plainly be twice that of oxygen gas. Here, then, we have all the well-known phenomena, of sulphur vapour as it rises, and when it is risen and very hot.

Sulphur Vapour,  $S^4S^4S^4 = \textcircled{S}^3$ .

Plainly, however, in  $\textcircled{S}\textcircled{S}\textcircled{S}$  the poles are overloaded. The proper element for carrying up an atom of  $\textcircled{S}$  into the aeriform state is not another atom of  $\textcircled{S}$  on each pole, but an atom of H on each pole. This gives a very beautiful, but also a very formidable structure, resembling a combination of lance and halbert. That it answers to the chemical formula  $H_2S$  when  $S = 32$  is too obvious to require proof. But what a mistake in the popular chemistry to maintain that, because of the resemblance between the formulæ  $H_2O$  and  $H_2S$ , the substances which these formulæ stand for are similar! On the contrary, are they not as dissimilar as moisture, the most genial and the most necessary of all things to life, is from sulphuretted hydrogen, the most hateful and poisonous.

Sulphuretted Hydrogen,  $HS^4H$ .

When there is neither hydrogen nor heat enough to retain atoms of  $\textcircled{S}$  in the aeriform state, they must form into molecules. And since all the dimensions, both of S and  $\textcircled{S}$ , are trigonal both as to poles and equator, the molecule must be that which results from trigonal constituents, which, when most perfect, is the icosahedron or icosatom.



And here we find a verification of the conclusion to which the law of assimilation conducts us, namely, that the volumes of molecules when in the dense state, whether liquid or solid, ought to be equal, or in some most simple ratio to one another. This, chemists have long ago found with regard to aeriforms. But having no certain principles to guide them with respect to the molecules of aeriforms when condensed, they have not attempted to calculate their specific gravities, except by creating a doctrine of the atomic volume of the elements in the dense state by the aid of the balance which, after all, loads the subject with exceptions and anomalies.

But a regard to the cosmical law of assimilation enables us to extend the method, known to hold good with regard to aeriforms, to liquids and solids also; and this we may show in the present instance. Thus, taking AQ as the unit volume for dense molecules, since its power as a type of volume, or as an assimilative agent in respect of volume, must be no less in our planet than common vapour azote and oxygen gas for aeriforms, we obtain the following formula for the specific gravity of sulphur:—

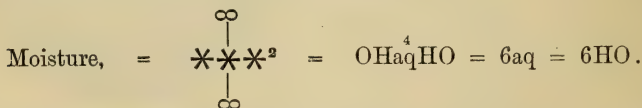
$$\frac{(\S)^{20}}{AQ} = \frac{20 \times 160}{36 \times 45} = 1.96 \text{ Expt. } 1.98.$$

But the icosatom of sulphur may be constructed in either of two ways, giving a small variation in the volume. Our  $\S$  must be also capable of a plastic state, interposed between two states of fluidity. It must also possess two forms of crystallisation; for a more ample notice of all which I must refer to previous parts of this work, as also for details respecting the various forms and properties of the fumes of burning sulphur, which in certain conditions of existence readily give up some of the oxygen in them, and in certain other conditions urgently demand more oxygen, being, in fact, represented by either of these formulæ—

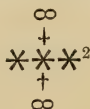


in all of which the ratios of O and S are the same, and, as it happens, the weights of both elements equal (see Part III. p. 34).

Rather let me here notice the form of repose to which this element attains when aqueous matter is supplied to it. We have seen that the primal aqueous structure which we may call

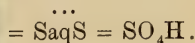
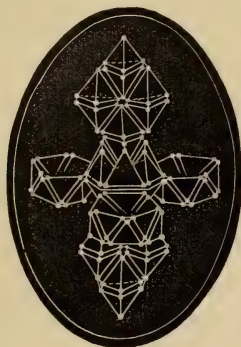


Now, instead of this, when fumes of S are flying about, we may have the structure still preserved, while S is substituting H, thus giving—



in which the dagger represents one atom of S. Here we have fumes of sulphur in a moist or hydrated state, the poles, however, being over-headed with oxygen. Now let another atom of O be supplied, and then the oxygen will be transferred from the poles to the equator; for the three atoms of S may be symmetrically applied there in the place of the three atoms of aq. In this way a much more stable structure must result than existed before, while yet the original type is still preserved. Now, what have we here? It is what we call sulphic acid, otherwise

Pure Oil of Vitriol,



We may represent its formula by  $\overset{\cdot\cdot\cdot}{\text{SaqS}}$ , in which the dots stand for atoms of oxygen. Its usual chemical formulæ are  $\text{SO}_3\cdot\text{HO}$  and  $\text{SH}_2\text{O}_4$ , in the latter  $\text{S} = 32$  and  $\text{O} = 16$ . This latter, however, though at present it is the favourite, gives chemists much trouble in consequence of the ascertained specific gravity of oil of vitriol. According to that formula, and the chemical rule for the specific gravities of compound vapours, its sp. gr. ought to have been the double of what it is actually found to be. It ought to have been  $3\cdot2+$ , instead of which it is only found to be  $1\cdot6+$ . Hence it is necessary to admit that the aerial unit of oil of vitriol occupies 4 normal or hydrogen volumes instead of 2, which it is destructive of the present state of chemical hypothesis to admit, except as an anomaly in nature (which is nonsense). From this predicament, however, our view of the structure of the atom of oil of vitriol relieves the afflicted vapour.

But more interesting still is the light which our molecular morphology throws in this case on the specific gravity of oil of vitriol in the dense state. Thus, suppose the boiling of oil of vitriol to have been continued so long that no more water can be expelled, it is still found that  $\frac{1}{2}$ th of an atom of water remains for every atom of oil of vitriol. Now let atoms of oil of vitriol gather round an atom of aq as a nucleus, when all the rest of the original aq has been expelled as by boiling, then since there are 12 points in the atom of aq, on each of which an atom

of pure oil of vitriol may fix itself, we shall have for every atom of oil of vitriol just  $\frac{1}{12}$ th of an atom of water remaining, a result which has been found in the laboratory, nay, found impossible to prevent—though it is surely very strange, when viewed in the light of the popular chemistry, that it should be so,—but not the less to be cherished, perhaps,—since wonder is one of the chemist's most favourite emotions. As to the sp. gr. of the liquid, which it is more agreeable to us to be able to deduce than to wonder at, its equation stands thus—

$$\begin{array}{l} \text{Strongest Oil of Vitriol} \\ \text{attainable by boiling,} \end{array} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \frac{(\overset{\dots}{\text{SaQ}}\text{S})^{12} + \text{aq}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{(12 \times 245) + 45}{36 \times 45} = 1.843 \text{ Expt. } 1.843, \end{array} \right.$$

which corresponds to a temperature exactly the same as that at which the sp. gr. of sulphuric acid was taken by Professor T. Thomson in Glasgow, that great centre of the manufacture and use of oil of vitriol, that great chemist always reasoning well, though not always weighing so accurately.

A more natural structure is when atoms of oil of vitriol gather round an atom of AQ, which gives 2aq in each atom of oil of vitriol, or when, at any rate, there is an atom of aq for every atom of S. This is known as the glacial acid. Aggregated around the sulphic pole, the molecule has stability sufficient to stand the boiling. As that pole is trigonal, the perfect molecule must, therefore, be the icosatom. Allowing to so large a molecule two aqueous volumes, we obtain as its equation of sp. gravity—

$$\text{Glacial Oil of Vitriol, } \frac{(\text{aq}\overset{\dots}{\text{SaQ}}\text{S})^{20}}{2\text{AQ}} = \frac{20(45 + 245)}{2 \times 1620} = 1.79 \text{ Expt. } 1.78,$$

which is again, as we may say, quite exact, since the second decimal depends on the temperature at which the experiment is made.

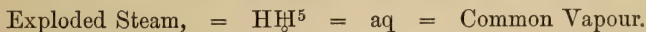
The molecule of the glacial acid, however, though not in the laboratory, yet in nature maintains the more perfect aquæform, and consists of 36 instead of 20 members, at least when its acidity has been quenched or neutralised by an encrustation all over of lime. This is proved by the sp. gr. of sulphate of lime, gypsum, or selenite (see Part II. p. 95, or Part III. p. 41.)

But let us here pass on, remarking only that, from these discoveries, it appears that the views of chemists are too narrow when they regard hydrogen alone as the acidifying principle. From these discoveries as to the structure of the atom of sulphuric or rather sulphic acid it appears that H as well as H, when it forms a pole, as in the atom of S, or sulph, can acidify. Both are indeed isomorphous, and that they should both be acid-producers favours the idea of the old chemists, that there must be something lance-shaped about an acid since it is lancinating to the tongue, and generally of a piercing and solvent nature.



## AMMONIA.

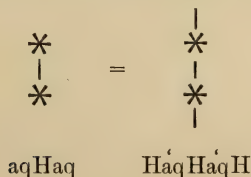
The first differentiation of our protoplasm we have found to be the construction in it of atoms of  $\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$  and  $\text{H}$ , which enter into union with each other, so that  $\text{H}$  is saturated with  $\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$ , whence, taken in its limits of maximum and minimum expansion, we obtain the equation of—



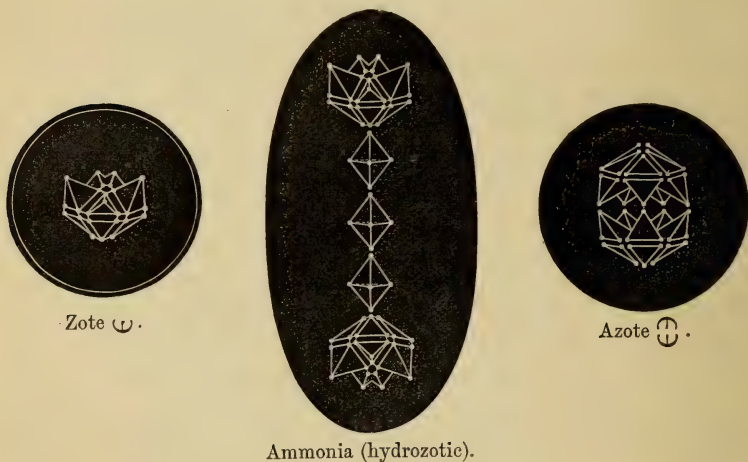
Let us now again recur to an atom of  $\text{H}$  as a nucleus, and on each of its 5 points for union, instead of an atom of  $\text{H}\ddot{\text{H}}$  let us place an atom of their united product  $\text{aq}$ , giving—



This structure resembles that which we found to be the first type in the progressive synthesis of atoms of  $\text{aq}$  into molecules (fig. p. 147). It differs only in this, that the central body, instead of being an atom of  $\text{aq}$ , is an atom of  $\text{H}$ . Consequently there are in the axis, instead of 3  $\text{aq}$ , only 2  $\text{aq}$ , and these two bolted together, as we may say, by an atom of  $\text{H}$ , its trigonal or lance-shaped positive poles piercing into and filling up the negative or hollow poles of the atoms of  $\text{aq}$  above and below. Now, this difference of structure must introduce a great difference of product as to secular results. In fact, the two atoms of  $\text{aq}$ , thus bolted together by the atom of  $\text{H}$ , cannot easily separate. The whole must usually continue as one structure. But if so, then if there be any defect of symmetry in its structure, it must secularly undergo improvement in that respect. Its symmetry will be perfected as far as possible. Now, on inspecting the atom of  $\text{aq}$ , it will be seen that in its centre there are eleven material elements or unit-forces, while six are sufficient and proper for the symmetry of the hexatomic structure. There are five, therefore, which are disposable. The terminal polar regions of the coupled atoms of  $\text{aq}$  also are empty and negative, while an atom of  $\text{H}$  in each would fill them in a proper manner. Now 5 units are just the material required to construct an atom of  $\text{H}$ . They do, in fact, tend naturally to develop into an atom of  $\text{H}$ . Secularly, therefore, and very soon after  $\text{aq}$  has been given to nature,  $\text{aqHaq}$  will be given, and the latter will develop into  $\text{HaqHaqH}$ , the spiritus asper above the symbols of  $\text{aq}$ , as given below, implying that each has given out one atom of  $\text{H}$ —



Now, when the equator of such a structure is loaded and expanded, as for instance, by carrying  $3aq$  (which we have supposed) or otherwise, so that the whole structure, viewed overhead in its æthereal atmosphere, is oblate, then under the law of sphericity there must exist in the axis a force calling for the extension of that axis, and in that case the axis may be expected to extend by undergoing a most remarkable transformation. No more now, indeed, can the atoms of  $aq$  transform themselves, as before, into  $HO$ . Each of the five atoms of  $H$  that now go to the aquæform  $aq$  has lost one of its material elements or forces in the centre. Each now consists of seven instead of eight elements, and is intensely unsymmetrical in the structure of its equator. The  $5H$  in  $aq$  must therefore remain united as they are, to supply each other's defect of symmetry. They cannot open and turn round as they might do, in order to construct an atom of  $O$ . They must keep together at the centre as they are. And when, by the lengthening of the axis, the atom of  $H$  is taken from the circle of 6 and placed in the axis, the five defective atoms of  $H$ , when duly compacted, must give a hemiform such as  $\Im$ , and  $aqHaq$  will now give  $\Im H^3\epsilon$ .



Meantime, the atom of  $H$  in each of the poles of  $HaqHaqH$  will be given off during the transformation; for the poles of  $\Im$  are 5-partite in structure and no longer conformable to the trigonal shape of  $H$ .

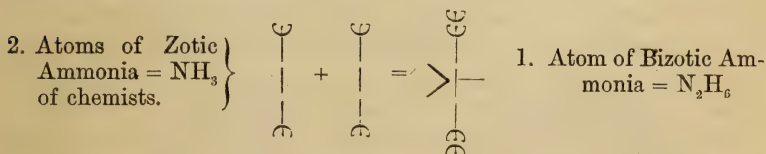
And, suppose the structure  $\Im H^3\epsilon$  to be decomposed as by an electric shock or otherwise, plainly the two dissymmetrical hemiforms will under the law of symmetry and sphericity couple, for by so doing they may generate an eminently spherical and symmetrical element (see fig.). Now, since this coupled element possesses such a perfect form, it must be very reposing in nature, or, as the chemist says, inactive. And its

atomic weight must be  $2 \times 5 \times 7 = 70$ , *i.e.*, 14 when  $H = 1$ . It therefore represents azote. And the dimorphous structure which we have obtained, when decomposed, must yield three volumes of hydrogen and one of azote. It therefore represents ammonia. In its primal form it is isamorphous with a couple of atoms of common vapour united on the same axis, and must, therefore, in its functions, have many analogies with common vapour. Its activities and powers, however, must be much greater. In fact, they are wonderfully many. Common vapour, and the aqueous element in general, is quick, but ammoniacal vapour is far quicker and of double force. Both are plainly most suitable for entering into the construction of tissues which are to possess quickness or animation, but ammonia still more than aqueous matter.



Ammonia (aquæform).

But ammonia may lose its quickness and become stable by doubling, and this is the state to which the chemist most frequently reduces it in the laboratory. Thus, making use of the pharmaceutical symbol to stand for half azote (which, from its extreme activity attaching to its hemiform and want of symmetry, we have called zote), we shall have, when all lateral or equatorial support has been taken away—

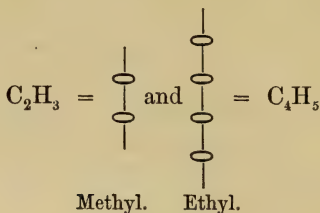


The latter is no longer capable of lapsing into the aquæform. It may also be stable to a considerable degree, for though its body be still volatile hydrogen, yet that hydrogen exists in normal typical molecules, each being  $\text{HH}^5$  homologous with  $\text{HH}^5$  and  $\text{Haq}^5$ , and, indeed, a repetition of the form of the single atom of H, though with five joints or articulations. In fact,  $\text{HH}_5$  or  $\text{HH}^4\text{H}$  is the typical aeriform molecule of this, the highest of the elements.

Here we may remark, in passing, the extent to which chemists have amused themselves in substituting for the simple hydrogens which are in natural ammonia, other hydrogens which are less mobile and volatile, inasmuch as carbon or some other fixed element enters into their structure, while yet both their equators and poles continue to be atoms of hydrogen, so that they may function like single atoms of hydrogen. Adopting in the meantime a cypher as the printers' type, to stand for an atom of carbon, its atomic weight taken at 6 when  $H = 1$ , as it

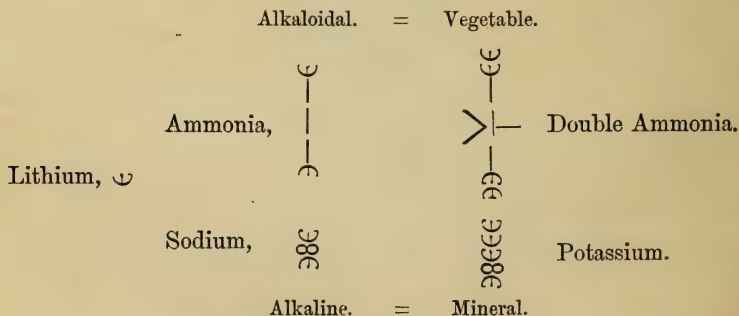


used to be universally (and for good reasons, as will appear). Such hydro-carbons are (alcohol radicals !)



&c., their insulable forms being usually their doubles with carbon poles.

When the true ammoniacal structure is thus steadied by  $\text{C}_2\text{H}_3$  or  $\text{C}_4\text{H}_5$ , &c., instead of  $\text{H}_3$  or  $\text{H}_6$  (thereby destroyed for all the uses of life), and oxygen is made to enter into the structure, chemists are surprised to observe how similarly to potass and the fixed alkalis the products function. But the truth is, that in these structures of the laboratory, inasmuch as the volatility of pure hydrogen in ammonia is overcome by the addition or substitution of more stable elements, there is an approach to the construction of the fixed alkalis. The latter we obtain, when for the  $3\text{H}$  or  $6\text{H}$  in the atom of single or double ammonia, oxygen is substituted as the coupling joint for the single or doubled atoms of zote which constitute the polar bodies. It is true, that in this case the zotic element has usually quite a different genesis from that which results from the transformation of ammonia, and more generally possesses the full atomic weight of  $5\text{H} = 40 = 8$  when  $\text{H} = 1$  instead of 7. Still its reduction has been fully accounted for (Part III. p. 52); and when thus reduced, it has been shown to explain all the properties of lithium. Thus, contenting ourselves with the types instead of diagrams, we have—



Their molecules are all the usually differentiated dodecatom, so that their sp. gr. may be deduced, allowing  $\frac{1}{2}$ , 1, and 2 normal volumes as they increase in complication—thus

Lithium, G . . .	$\frac{(L)^{1+12+1}}{\frac{1}{2}AQ}$	=	·60 Exp. ·59.
Sodium, G . . .	$\frac{(Na)^{1+12+1}}{AQ}$	=	·99 Exp. ·97.
Potassium, G . . .	$\frac{(K)^{1+12+1}}{2AQ}$	=	·84 Exp. ·86.
Ammonia, G . . .	$\frac{(Am)^{1+12+1}}{AQ \text{ or } 2AQ}$	=	·73 Exp. ·74.

## CARBON.

But what of carbon, whose atomic weight, contrary to the present fashion I am giving, as 6 when  $H = 1$ , while it is now usually given at 12, and that for reasons which, if applied to our vision generally, would prove (since the functioning of both eyes is single), if only our eyes were so small as to be invisible, that we were all monoculi.

As to carbon, then, it may be remarked that, wherever zote has been constructed, another element is imminent. Let the 5 units which render one polar region of the atom of zote, 5-partite and dissimilar to the other polar region, be constructed into an atom of H, as they must secularly tend to be, and then instead of the original  $5H$ , we obtain a beautiful cellular structure of exquisite symmetry and stability, carrying an atom of H on its pole. Like O and  $\omega$ , it is oblate, however, and therefore when free its atoms will tend to go in couples also.



CH.

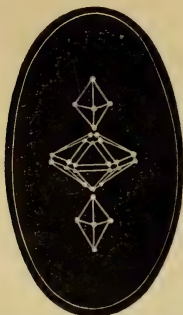
Carbon  $\omega$ 

Its atomic weight is  $5H - 2H = (5 \times 8) - 2 \times 5 = 30$ , *i.e.*, 6 when  $H = 1$ , and that of the coupled atom corresponding to the unit of oxygen-gas or azote is 12. In a word, in every feature this highly reduced element represents carbon.

Its characteristic is that, in order to reach it, two atoms of hydrogen must be developed out of the matter, *viz.*  $5H$ , which furnishes it, so that, previous to loss, it must appear in nature in union with two atoms of hydrogen, one on each pole (see fig. HCH, next page).

But such a form is very prolate, while two by coupling reproduce the primal type of an atom of H as nucleus, with 5 other atoms around

it, in this case 3 atoms of H for the 3 points for union on the equator



Nascent Marsh-gas, HCH.



Marsh-gas,  $\text{CH}^4\text{C} = \text{C}_2 \text{H}_4$ .

of the nuclear atom, and one of carbon on each of its poles (see fig.  $\text{CHC}^4$ ). And, in reference to such a molecular structure, whether we look to sphericity, cellularity, or adequate differentiation, we see that it is very perfect. Now to us it plainly represents marsh-gas; and therefore prepares us for finding that substance so generally diffused, and such a survivor in nature as it actually is.

Do not the conditions of its genesis also explain why carbon should be the very substance that it is, so averse to, and even incapable of, the aeriform state? Thus every atom, when its genesis is complete, *i.e.*, as HCH is furnished with two atoms of hydrogen, which we may regard as two wings. And when they have been cut off or carried away, is it wonderful that the bare atom of carbon remaining should be as incapable of flight as it is found to be?

At any rate, it appears that it is to this, its aversion to the aeriform state, and its determination to reintegrate its original union with hydrogen, that carbon owes its peculiar value in the economy both of animal and vegetable nature. Meantime its value as a fixed element is great.

Thus we have seen that both the aqueous and the ammoniacal elements, which are the first products of the differentiation of our pure or homogeneous protoplasm, are both of them very quick to go off in vapour, or, if remaining, are ready to be transformed into still more aeriform elements, namely, into hydrogen, oxygen, and azote. Life in an organism, therefore, if that organism were constructed only of them, could not but be altogether ephemeral. Plainly, there is wanted some other kind of element which in its nature is fixed, or such that it shall not tend to go off as an aeriform—not altogether fixed, for that would imply a state of death, but fixed in a degree so as to moderate more or less the tendency of the others to go off into the aeriform state. Now for such a function carbon is altogether suited. Every atom of it may indeed be



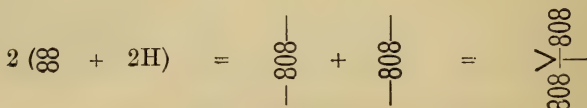
regarded as a bolt, sure as adamant, which indeed it is. Keep away oxygen or hydrogen and it will remain fixed and a fixer long enough. But let oxygen gas come in the way, every atom of which is precisely adapted for nipping up an atom of carbon and carrying it off as an aeriform, and off goes the carbon. Thus, when two atoms of oxygen exist, coupled on the same axis, thus constituting an unit of oxygen gas, there is, in consequence of the concavity of both the interior poles, a hollow in the centre, or an empty stomach. Now this hollow is precisely a mould for an atom of carbon! Hence an atom of oxygen gas (which is everywhere prevalent in the terraqueous globe), when it enters an organism in the active, empty, hungry state, and meets with an atom of free carbon, forthwith devours it, and though to all outward appearance still only an atom of oxygen gas, isomorphous and isovoluminous, and able to escape by the same channels, or channels no larger than those by which it entered the organism, it carries off the carbon. But though isovoluminous with the pure oxygen, it is now all the heavier by the atom of carbon which fills the stomach of each aeriform element. It is also, as might be expected, less elastic and less diffusive. Hence it tends to prevail in the lower strata of the atmosphere, where there exists the vegetable kingdom. And for this kingdom it supplies the requisite food!



Carbonic Acid,  $\infty = \text{CO}_2$ .

And here the deeply interesting question in physiology occurs, How comes it to pass that, while in the most highly animated organisms, those of animals, namely, oxygen gas lays hold of carbon and bears it away in such firm union that even the chemist can scarcely decompose it; yet in stable and cool organisms, those of plants, this carbonic gas is readily decomposed, the oxygen gas escaping pure and free again, while the carbon is retained to perform the same function in vegetable nature (that of imparting durability to the tissue) which it had previously performed in animals? To this the answer, I believe, is, that inasmuch as the primal union of carbon, even the union implied in its genesis, was with hydrogen, not oxygen, so, under the law of assimilation, acting in reference to time, that is, as a law of heredity or reintegration, the hydrogen nascent in the vegetable tissue succeeds in expelling the oxygen from the carbonic gas which is brought in, appropriating the carbon, and setting the oxygen free. If it be alleged that such a view is a substitution of magic for science, the answer is, that that is just as one takes it. The operation of all law may be said to be magic till the mechanism is discovered by which the law is realised or worked out. Moreover, here we are not without an appre-

hension of the mechanism. Thus there is nothing better established in molecular science than that it is dissimilars which tend to unite, while similars tend to repel each other. Now, by similars in our molecular morphology we must, in the first place, mean similar forms—forms which, viewed overhead in their aetherial atmospheres, are either both or all oblate, both or all prolate, both or all spherical. Thus an atom of oxygen viewed overhead is oblate, so is a tetratom of hydrogen, (see the diagram below, and that of marsh-gas, fig.  $\text{CHC}$ , p. 164). Let us suppose, then, that two atoms of carbonic acid gas,  $\text{CO}_2$ , have entered into the vegetable tissue where chlorophyll is normally functioning. Then, in order to their being wholly reintegrated, it is necessary that an atom of H be supplied to each of the two poles of both, for this is necessary to reintegrate the primæval  $2 \text{ aq}$ , from which we suppose everything organic to have been derived. But when the poles are thus supplied, the two are ready for doubling into one—



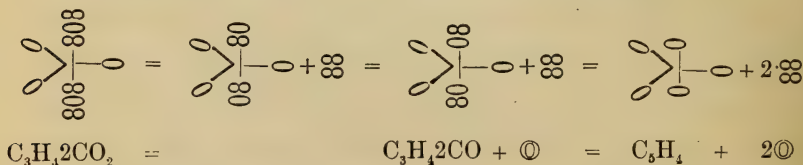
There is thus constructed as the equatorial body in the unified structure a tetratom of hydrogen, which is very oblate.



Tetratom of Hydrogen.

But in maturely elaborated parts of plants, in chlorophyll, for instance, there is so much carbon, compared with hydrogen, that we cannot suppose that the outstanding poles of the three atoms of hydrogen in the equator of  $\text{C}_3\text{H}_4\text{O}_4$  would long remain naked. Doubtless each of them, if not from the first, would soon be capped by an atom of carbon, and become an atom of

hydro-carbon,  $\text{CH}$ . Now, by such an addition the equator would be still further extended, and thus the whole form rendered still more oblate. But if so, it will be rendered still more highly repulsive of the oblate oxygens on the poles. We may, therefore, when the structure is rendered active, as by the sunbeam playing upon it, expect a process of dissociation and reduction, which may be thus conceived—



Thus we obtain, as the product of the solar action, pure oxygen gas and a hydro-carbon. Now, let us see what this hydro-carbon represents. Its elemental formula is  $C_5H_4$ . But it is obvious that it is highly polymorphous, for the three atoms of carbon may apply themselves to the three equatorial hydrogens and to the axis in a great variety of ways. If, then, this hydro-carbon represent anything in vegetable nature, we may expect a considerable number and variety of hydro-carbons with the same chemical formula. But will the single element  $C_5H_4$  be insulable by itself? No, its form is so oblate that, like so many other molecules that we have met with when in the aeriform or most fully individualised state, they will still go in couples on the same axis, each represented by the formula  $C_{10}H_8$ . Now, this is the half-formula of what is usually given as that of the non-oxygenated essential oils. Its sp. gr., as compared with air, must be—

$$\text{The Vapour, } G = \frac{C_{10}H_8}{\frac{1}{8}(4Az + \odot)} = \frac{300 + 40}{\frac{1}{8}(360)} = 4.7 \text{—Expt. } 4.7. \text{ Essential Oils.}$$

As to its condensed state, since its trigonal equator extends so far beyond its poles, its molecules must be those of the trigonal series, that is, the tetratom or the octatom, and ultimately the icosatom, as the culmination molecule. Now, constructing these possible molecules, and allowing half a normal volume to the tetratom, one normal volume to the octatom, and two to the icosatom, we obtain, just as in the distillation of the essential oils, a lighter and less perfect (and consequently a more volatile and fragrant oil), and a heavier and more perfect (and consequently less valuable perfume), the specific gravities of both, as determined by the balance, being the same as those which our formula gives—

$$\text{Light Essential Oil, } G = \frac{(C_5H_4)^4}{\frac{1}{2}AQ} = \frac{4(150 + 20)}{\frac{1}{2} \times 1620} = .84 \quad \text{Expt. } .85.$$

$$\text{Heavy Essential Oil, } G = \frac{(C_5H_4)^{20}}{2AQ} = \frac{20(150 + 20)}{.2 \times 1620} = 1.05 \quad \text{Expt. } 1.04.$$

The economy of nature then, in relation to oxygen and carbon, so far as we have touched upon it, is this, that, by their respective forms which imply their eager union wherever oxygen can penetrate among atoms of carbon existing single and free or loosely engaged, they unite all through the animal organism, which is everywhere penetrated by oxygen, and everywhere disengaging carbon in single atoms. By this means the effete carbon in the animal organism, which is tending to a chaotic and wholly obstructive state, is constructed along with the oxygen now taken in union with it into carbonic dioxide, commonly, but not correctly, called carbonic acid,\* a most serviceable heat being generated.

\* On Carbonic Acid, properly so called, see P. III. p. 92.



Thereafter, the true carbonic acid formed, when it has served important purposes in the organism, breaks up into carbonic acid gas, which escapes into the air by the lungs, the skin, &c. Thus, the organism is relieved of matter which must otherwise soon have proved fatal to its action, and have caused death. But having thus gained the atmosphere and the sunshine, this deadly gas brought by its own weight into contact with the ground and its vegetable covering is decomposed there, its oxygen being restored in purity to the atmosphere, to serve for breath and life again to the animal kingdom, while its carbon goes to supply just the food which is needed by the vegetable kingdom in order to the construction of its timber, which is so necessary in the processes of human art, as also to the birth of those perfumes by which that kingdom in its most sunny and highly matured parts is rendered so deliciously fragrant.

Thus, in pursuing the differentiation of our primal homogeneous protoplasm, we have obtained, first, aqueous matter, as common vapour; and, secondly, from it, by doubling and reduction, ammoniacal vapour. Then, by the decomposition of aqueous matter, we obtained hydrogen and oxygen, while to the same epoch of nature the appearance of sulphur belongs, and soon after the fixed alkalis and silica, of which, however, nothing has been said here.

#### AZOTE.

By the decomposition of ammonia we have obtained, instead of oxygen, another still more active element—an element so active as to be like fluorine, still unknown to the chemist in a separate state. This we have called zote. And as oxygens by coupling give oxygen gas, which is much less active than oxygen in single atoms, so do zotes by coupling give azotic gas, the other great constituent of the atmosphere, which is very inactive. (See fig. p. 160.)

Where atoms of zote cannot couple we have seen that, owing to their dissymmetry, they must suffer reduction. And in this way there is given to nature carbon in union with hydrogen. (See fig. p. 163).

#### SILICON.

Let us now remark, that the atoms of zote, when so coupled as to constitute an atom of azote, that is, when united so that the summets of their 5-fid poles merely touch each other, may also give to nature another element, which plays an important part in the simplest organisms as well as in the crust of the earth generally. Thus, instead of merely touching each other by their tips, let these 5-fid or 5-toothed regions of the two atoms of zote in one of azote be locked together by pressure or



Si.

otherwise, and in this case there must result an exquisitely spherical molecule with the same atomic weight as azote, and still more inactive or reposing. I have elsewhere shown in detail, and it may be easily seen that such a structure represents silicon.

#### CALCIUM.

But what of lime? Where it, may be asked, in our process of differentiation, does calcium make its appearance—calcium which plays such any important part both in the organic and the inorganic world?

To this it may be answered that given free hydrogen existing in quantities under cold or pressure or both, or on the pole of a molecule, such as sulphuretted hydrogen (see fig.  $H_2S$ , p. 155), our calcium may possibly be generated. Thus, let atoms of  $H_2S$  form into molecules, then in virtue of their trigonal dimensions, these molecules must be icosatons. Each nucleus will thus be a structure consisting of 20 atoms of hydrogen wedging each other together. And this they may do secularly so closely that the interceding æther of their atmospheres may be in the main extruded, and thus the group of 20H be consolidated so as thereafter to be undecomposable in the laboratory. Its form and structure are eminently fine. Its atomic weight is plainly  $20 \times 5 = 100$ , *i.e.* 20 when  $H = 1$ . It may be shown to represent the atom of calcium when it has attained its utmost perfection of structure, or what may be called organic calcium. Calcium, however, must also result from the dedoubling of an atom of unreduced potassium as has been explained elsewhere (Part III. p. 48).



Ca.

#### SILICIUM.

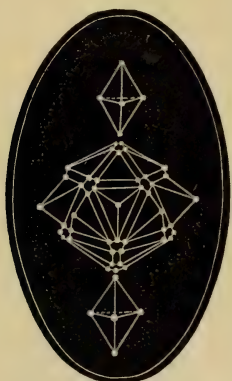
It has also been elsewhere shown that this calcium  $H^{20}$ , though it possess such an exquisite structure, yet being wholly undifferentiated cannot be altogether stable and permanent for ever in nature. It has been shown that the 20 material units in its centre must secularly repel each other until they take the place of those on the surface, which will meantime go off in groups of 5 as atoms of hydrogen, while also the 5 on the poles will gather themselves up into hydrogens. And thus, there will result a structure similar to that of nascent marsh-gas (see fig.  $SiH_4$ , next page), but with this difference, that the central molecule in this case has an atomic weight of 70, *i.e.* 14 when  $H = 1$ , and represents with great perfection all that is known or conceived of silicium.

This, the prevalent constituent of our planet, then, according to our molecular morphology, exists in two states—a less mature state, containing still 10 units in its centre, wholly metalloidal, which the term

silicon very well expresses, and one which is truly cellular, and as has been shown elsewhere, might be called semi-metallic, being an element of a brittle metal, and which the name silicium equally well expresses.

Hence, a consequence of our theory of matter, to the effect that calcium, in the lapse of the ages, must be gradually transformed into silicium with emission of hydrogen (which will give a second crop of calcium, and, along with oxygen, aqueous matter, &c.).

But where oxygen gas abounds, as it does everywhere in the terraqueous globe, of course it is not hydrides, such as  $\text{CH}_2$  and  $\text{SiH}_2$ , that we are to expect in nature. An atom of  $\text{O}$  will attack each pole, and there will result  $\text{CO}_2 + 2\text{aq}$  and  $\text{SiO}_2 + 2\text{aq}$ .

 $\text{SiH}_2$ Silicic Acid,  $\text{SiO}_2$ 

Since the poles of silica are pentagonal, its molecule must be the dodecatom, which may, of course, be either differentiated as usual or not. Both molecules occur in nature. But since coupled atoms of silica in the first instance, giving an atom of  $\text{O}$  in the centre and an atom of  $\text{O}$  on each pole, possess a structure so much more perfect than the single atom, it seems likely that natural molecules of quartz will thus consist of coupled molecules. This gives—

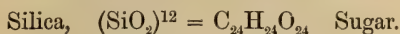
$$\text{Quartz of Fusion, } G = \frac{(\text{OSi} \odot \text{SiO})^{12}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{12 \times 300}{1620} = 2.2 \text{ Exp. } 2.2.$$

$$\text{Crystallised Quartz, } G = \frac{(\text{OSi} \odot \text{SiO})^{1+12+1}}{\text{AQ}} = \frac{14 \times 300}{1620} = 2.59 \text{ Exp. } 2.6.$$

Let it not be inferred from this that, along with all previous life, all traces of it even, are in the course of being obliterated, and merely silicates and silica destined to increase in quantity for ever. They possibly may do so to a vast extent. But let the ten units now on the outside of the equator of the atom of silica take the course of the poles, and be gathered up, as they must be, into an atom of hydrogen on each,



while the ten triangles of forces thus left naked in the equatorial region take a similar course, joining these summits in the axis of the structure, then the atom of silica is by these axial movements transformed into two structures, each consisting of carbon, oxygen, and hydrogen. And a dodecatom of silica gives the following most remarkable result :—



So that out of the most fixed or dead form by a simple normal movement of material elements, the most vernal product of life may possibly arise !

#### PHOSPHORUS.

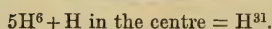
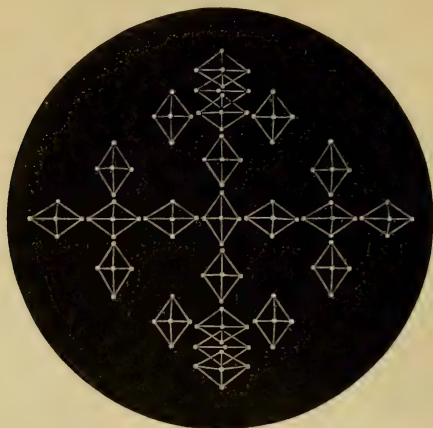
From  $\text{HH}^5$  by the course of nature, as we conceive it, we have obtained aqueous matter, oxygen, sulphur, and ultimately lime.

From  $\text{Haq}^5$ , by the same course, we have obtained ammonia giving similarly azote and carbon and other elements.

But  $\text{HH}^5$  may give rise to molecular structures as well as  $\text{HH}^5$ . And since both are isomorphous, we should expect from  $\text{HH}^5$  a similar series, especially a light oxygen, a light sulphur, and a light carbon. But except the last named, which represents boron (considered as monotomic), it is no wonder that the existence of the others has not been verified by the terraqueous chemist. Our planet is too small and its synthetising forces are too weak to make much of such a light and volatile subject as hydrogen, when it is not kept down by such elements as are more weighty than ours, or a more intensely gravitating sphere. Nevertheless, we have seen  $\text{HH}^5$  forming the body of the atom of double ammonia, and we have characterised it as the typical aeriform molecule of hydrogen, that in which the form of the single atom is reproduced on a large scale. And if now we construct a large aeriform molecule by five of these hexatomic hydrogens placed around, so as to saturate a single atom of hydrogen as a nucleus, it appears that, after the complete condensation of the atoms of light oxygen and light carbon (boron), developed during the process of secular transformation, there results a structure, which has been discovered by science, very generally diffused, though in small quantities, over the crust of our globe, and which has justly excited the greatest interest of the chemist and the physiologist.

The structure  $\text{H}(\text{HH}_5)^5$ , of which a diagram is given in part, so as not to confuse the eye (see next page), has for its atomic weight  $5 + 5 (5 \times 6) = 155$ , that is 31 when  $\text{H} = 1$ . Now, this is the singular but well-known atomic weight of an atom of phosphorus. For a convincing development of this element, I must refer to Part III. p. 105, where it is given in company with its isomorphs, vanadium, arsenic antimony, and bismuth. I will only remark here, that in phosphorus molecular synthesis comes to a crisis. It may be viewed as constructed

wholly out of hydrogen and boron. But reasons may be given why, under any force adequate to decompose an atom, it could not be resolved into these elements again. It looks rather as if, along with every atom



of hydrogen given (except, perhaps, those which would be developed out of the axis), there would also be given off matter in single units. Now, these single units, springing off into the medium of light, might be expected to impart to the residuary substance an eminent degree of luminosity or phosphorescence, unless this dissipation were prevented, and the genesis of hydrogen again secured by the catalytic action of hydrogen introduced into its ambient atmosphere. In a word, this structure bids fair to represent and explain all the specific characters of phosphorus. But having shown this with considerable detail already in the third part of this work, it need not be repeated here.

I may here remark, however, that the current belief that phosphorus contributes in a special manner to mental functioning, is based on no better evidence than that it is found in greater quantity in the brain than in any other of the soft parts. Perhaps it were nearer the truth to regard its presence there as an evidence of failure so far, in the intense analytico-synthetic action of that organ whose special function is to give birth to something lighter and more luminous still, and out of the sphere of the material altogether.

But phosphorus is intensely useful in nature, both from its dissimilarity equally to hydrogen and oxygen, and consequently its relative activity and the stability of its combination with oxygen when once constructed.

## CHAPTER XVI.

### ON THE ULTIMATE PRODUCTS OF ÆTHERIAL, MATERIAL, AND MOLECULAR ACTION.

IN the Sketch of a Philosophy which these words now bring to a close, the economy of creation is not regarded as a theory of development all in one direction, as is commonly supposed, but as a cycle in which after development and as its fruit, the last term gives again the first.

Æther and matter after developing a molecular economy become the mother and nurse of beings, which enter into the world of spirits, and present themselves to the great Creator; nay, enter into communion with Him, so far as the finite can comprehend and unite with the Infinite, and partake of His everblessedness.

In the beginning is the Author of all. And as His most immediate creation there is the world of spirits, in the realm of light or the æther, which is their home, the expression in space of the cosmical law of assimilation to the Divine, creation in the æther aiming at His immensity and omnipresence. Thus in the cosmical law there is instituted a tendency to ultimate dissociation or analysis.

But under the same cosmical law, in virtue of the unity of the Creator, which is His indefeasible attribute no less than His immensity or omnipresence, there is awoke also in the realm of light, or the ætherial medium, a contrary tendency in the ætherial elements to association into groups or nebulous specks, in the centre of each of which, when it has attained a certain force, confluence of a definite number of ætherial elements takes place, constituting an atom of a different order from the ætherial element, and which, as the nucleus of its accompanying ætherial atmosphere, gives to nature the material element.

Under the same law and synthetic mode of action the material elements continue to aggregate into thousands of molecules (the far greater number of which are decomposable by chemists, though about sixty-three resist); and these molecules hold on aggregating still until they constitute organisms, whose mobility and easy decomposibility



show that the analytic agency of nature is greatly modifying the synthetic, and gaining upon it in our planet.

In terraqueous organisms these contrasted but co-ordinated agencies culminate, the synthetic in muscularity, the analytic in cerebation.

A cerebral unit, viewed physically, is an organic aggregate, consisting of the lightest elements, held together in a very open structure; and, viewed physiologically, it may be regarded as an individualised volume of æther, more or less spherical, supported by a scaffolding of matter. It is therefore analogous to the nebulous speck in the celestial spaces to which, according to our philosophy, the material element owes its genesis out of the ætherial.

Here, then, we find the material economy assimilating itself in its close to the structure and mode of action which it had in its rise, as the cosmical law leads us to expect. At first it gives to creation in open space a small nebulous speck of æther (without any scaffolding), obliged by the unifying or synthetic action to give birth in its centre, by the simultaneous confluence of the ætherial elements there, to an atom, which is merely geometrical and dynamical, and which in the powers it possesses answers to the material element. At last it gives to creation, in the centre of the organism in which the material or molecular structure and action culminate, a large organised volume of æther (supported by an exquisite material or cerebral scaffolding), obliged by the more powerful unifying or synthetic action proper to it to effect the successive confluence of the ætherial elements in its centre or focus; so that, while the nebulous speck at the first commencement of ætherial synthesis can give to nature no more than a monad still blind and apathetic, and capable of self-preservation and sociality only in the forms of inertia and elasticity with attraction—that is, no more than a material element—this ætherial organism, on the other hand, due to cerebation and accompanying muscularity, gives in its focus of action a monad of vastly greater energy, a monad in which the mental powers proper to the primal substance of creation (after its attenuation in the ætherial element which reduced them to an aura merely), are recovered. Instead of mere inertia there is here conscious self-assertion; instead of blind attraction there is conscious desire, &c. There is, in short, as the proper offspring of this, the highest product of the material economy in our planet, the genesis of psychical beings, ultimately as in man, a soul or spirit, whose mother, nurse, and educator is thus the material organism and the terraqueous world.

Here, then, is the link by which the law of continuity is maintained throughout, and the cycle of things is made to be complete—the link which is missing in the popular science of the day, with this very serious consequence, that, to keep the break out of sight, the entire doctrine of spirit and the spiritual world is ignored or denied altogether.

As to the powers and dispositions which the individual mind will manifest, they must, of course, according to our philosophy, be co-ordinate with the individual peculiarities of the myo-cerebral organism in that individual; and their actual manifestation from childhood to old age, and from hour to hour, must be co-ordinate with the actual functioning of the cerebral apparatus at the time. According as that functioning is normal or aberrant in the individual, so must his mental manifestations be. This responsiveness of the mind to the brain is secured on a two-fold basis. First, there is the situation of the energy of the mind as centralised in the central region of the myo-cerebral apparatus, which under the cosmical law secures the assimilation of the thoughts and feelings as far as is possible to the existing mode of action in the myo-cerebral organism. And secondly, there is the relation on the part of the organism to the mind as mother and nurse, which under the same cosmical law secures assimilation again. Thus the mind is held by the brain, as it were, in double harness. But this is not an evil; for the mind can act and react from within itself with sufficient force; and but for the regulative action of the organism, which is to the mind the plenipotentiary from the kingdom of nature, imparting sensations and affections, and that higher regulation which comes from the imminence of the Deity, constituting reason and conscience, the mind would only curvet and kick and break loose altogether. Nothing less than all the bindings and brain-traces which actually exist would ever reconcile so quick a thing as the mind to drag on this mortal life and carry along with it to the end of the journey this inert heavy body. Nay, though the light of reason shone into it, still, if this were all, and it were a stranger to the pains of hunger and thirst, and the pleasures of eating and drinking, the highest order of minds would be the most neglectful of the necessities of the organism, and the first to be lost to the world. It is therefore no argument against the survival of the mind when dissolution overtakes the organism, that the manifestations of the mind are modified by the organism to the extent that they actually are; for nothing less would render possible such a mixed life as ours.

As to the special functions of the encephalon, both as a whole and as to its several parts, and the lesser systems which are compacted in the organism along with the central system, it is greatly to be regretted that historical anatomy has imposed such a multitude of names and even methods of inspection which are worse than useless. Unsuitable experiments also, even in the present day, have been followed by very unwarrantable interpretations. Nor is it to be expected, so long as the most tenuous and central regions of the cerebral apparatus are looked upon as of no account (though the important name of ventricles has

been bestowed upon them), that much progress will be made in cerebral psychology, or the discovery of the residence in normal states of being of the centre of action of that mental force or substance which is supreme in man, and which, when all is right, holds in co-ordination with itself, and in subordination to itself, all the merely psychical centres that exist in the organism.

If there really be anatomical evidence for regarding the region of the corpora striata as that from which efferent action or muscularity issues, and the region of the optic thalami as that of afferent or sensation-awaking action, then according to this view the hemispheres would be a development co-ordinated with these two regions, a store of energy, a vault or concave reflector, having its focus of centrad ætherial pulsation, there where, consequently, there would be the birth and growth of the centre of energy of that being in which the access of motion generates feeling, and in which, reciprocally, feeling generates motion.

Being a true unity, and belonging as it does to the spirit-world already, it will escape at death from the little world of æther within, which has been its mother and nurse, into the great world of æther without, the realm of light, which is ambient to every deathbed.

To follow it into that realm belongs to theology. But even there theology can no more dispense with the revelations of science than science here can dispense with the revelations of theology. All truth is at once confluent and radiant in every direction. Thought in its spontaneity has the run of the universe; and there should be no bar to discovery, but sustained experiment that it cannot be made. No method adequate for all possible discoveries can be formulated in words. There is such a thing as inspiration, not for the poet only, but for the philosopher and the man of science also. Not method, but "happy thought," makes discovery. It was a happy thought in Newton that gave to science the idea of universal gravitation. The method now so much in favour—homage to observation alone—so often, as in that case, inaccurate, nearly cost the world that great discovery no one can tell for how long. Method is valuable chiefly, if not wholly, for preventing and for putting thought in order. Discovery is usually due to the spontaneity of thought discharging itself as a member, and to a certain extent as a mirror of the universe.

As to reality, the only adequate evidence or warrant for philosophic belief is the perfect harmony of all things believed, the support that all give to each.



# INDEX.

	PAGE
Adoration, its scientific value, . . . . .	1
Abiogenesis or Biogenesis? . . . . .	6
Æther universal, its origin, . . . . .	63
Alimentation, necessitated by respiration, &c., . . . . .	83
Alkalis, their structure and relations, . . . . .	162
Amœba, its contribution to the earth's crust, . . . . .	13
—— encysted, similarity to human ovum, . . . . .	22
Ammonia, its genesis and structure, . . . . .	157
Analysis and synthesis, their organic relations, . . . . .	43
Animals, provision for their abundance, . . . . .	88
—— a most general view of, . . . . .	87
Antherozoids, their origin, . . . . .	24, 73
Animal substance, simpler than vegetable, . . . . .	84
Annulosa precluded, . . . . .	134
Assimilation, the law of, . . . . .	41
—— of food, . . . . .	52
Aqueous matter, its genesis and structure, . . . . .	142
Attraction, its nature and cause, . . . . .	44
Azote, . . . . .	160
Body, a cloud in the azure of spirit, . . . . .	81
Bones, the typical number in limbs, &c., . . . . .	31
Calyx, its place in the flower, . . . . .	122
Calcium, its genesis, . . . . .	169
Carbon, its relation to lithium and azote, . . . . .	163
Carbonic dioxide, how decomposed in the leaf, . . . . .	100
Carnivora, their existence vindicated, . . . . .	84
—— their disappearance anticipated, . . . . .	86
Cerebration, its function and place in nature, . . . . .	174
Chemical action, its cause and aim, . . . . .	47

	PAGE
Cilia, their nature and origin, . . . . .	23, 130
Corolla, its place in the flower, . . . . .	122
Coral polypes, their contribution to the earth's crust, . . . . .	17
Creation, a reasonable view of nature, . . . . .	39
Crust of the earth, its normal origin, . . . . .	26
Cycle, and not merely development, the system of nature, . . . . .	173
Development theory, defective, . . . . .	37
—— conditions of its completeness, . . . . .	38
Death, its nature and conditions, . . . . .	89
Differentiation, its origin and necessity, . . . . .	53
Dodecahedron as dodecatom, its prevalence in nature, . . . . .	67
Elasticity the inertia of form, its origin, . . . . .	45
Electrical action, its condition and results, . . . . .	47
—— spider, illustrates elemental respiration, . . . . .	71
Essential oils, their structure and genesis, . . . . .	166
Fecundity, preluded by the material element itself, . . . . .	93
Fingers and toes, their normal number and its cause, . . . . .	31, 130
Flower, its typical structure and its theory, . . . . .	121
Foliage, its nature, . . . . .	125
Food, theory of its necessity, . . . . .	83
Foraminifera, their contributions to the earth's crust. . . . .	17
Forms, the type of . . . . .	23
Genera, their cause, . . . . .	42
Geometry, its conditions inexorable, . . . . .	81
Gravitation, its law and nature, . . . . .	69
Growth and development, its theory, . . . . .	83
Heredity, its universality and origin, . . . . .	45
Homology universal, the secret of nature, . . . . .	66
Hylagen, what, . . . . .	140
Hydrogen, its genesis and structure, . . . . .	140
—— sulphuretted, . . . . .	155
Hydro-carbon, . . . . .	164
Inertia, its nature and origin, . . . . .	44
Immortality, its scientific evidence, . . . . .	175
Impregnation, its necessity and the reason of it, . . . . .	73
Imagining, what is it, . . . . .	43
Judging, its nature, . . . . .	43
Lasso-cells, their nature and origin, . . . . .	24
Law of nature, a rhetorical not a scientific conception, . . . . .	8
Law cosmical, the only law, . . . . .	42
Leibnitz, the doctrine of the conservation of energy his, . . . . .	82

	PAGE
Liberty, secured in consciousness, . . . . .	60
Light, the realm of, its place in nature, . . . . .	64
Life, originally paramount, . . . . .	10
Life, gives death and needs it, . . . . .	25
Limbs, their number and cause, . . . . .	31, 130
Lung and leaf, the friendly struggle between, . . . . .	86
Matter, its genesis and structure, . . . . .	65
—— its normal mode of action, . . . . .	71
Medusidæ, theory of their locomotion, . . . . .	28
Medusoids, . . . . .	74
Miracle, not an unscientific conception, . . . . .	7
Monera, &c., their existence anterior to plant life, . . . . .	19, 84
Mind, that which can manifest itself to itself, . . . . .	59
Morphology, its principles universally the same, . . . . .	105
Muscle, the highest molecular organism, . . . . .	174
Nebular speck, its structure and issue, . . . . .	67
Observation, is in reality interpretation, . . . . .	128
Oxygen, its genesis and structure, . . . . .	147
Perception, its nature and origin, . . . . .	43
Phosphorus, its genesis and structure, . . . . .	171
Polypes, . . . . .	74
Prayer for physical changes, not unreasonable, . . . . .	7
Properties permanent in matter, their origin, . . . . .	62
Protoplasm, pure or primal, . . . . .	40
—— differentiated or chemical, . . . . .	140
Radiolaria, theory of their forms, . . . . .	25
Reason, its origin, . . . . .	43
Recurrent numbers in organisms, . . . . .	30, 121
Religion, a normal element in humanity, . . . . .	43
Respiration, the fundamental function, . . . . .	79
—— cosmical, . . . . .	76
—— preluded in the action of the material element itself, . . . . .	76
Remembrance, its nature, . . . . .	43
Reversion, its origin, . . . . .	45
Rocks, primarily exuvial, afterwards igneous, . . . . .	85
Segmentation of ova, &c., its cause, . . . . .	93
Sex, its probable origin, . . . . .	96
Silicium, its structure and genesis, . . . . .	170
Snow flakes, their form and its cause, . . . . .	163
Somites, their normal number and its cause, . . . . .	31, 130
Soul, its birth and growth, . . . . .	175
Species, why so persistent, . . . . .	42
Spermatozoids, their origin, . . . . .	24



	PAGE
Substance is force when statical, . . . . .	58
Sulphur, . . . . .	153
—— its acids, . . . . .	157
Symmetry, its origin and culmination, . . . . .	45
Teeth, their number and its theory, . . . . .	30, 130
Tetrad, its construction in the pure protoplasm introduces the dead among the living, . . . . .	135
Theodicy, not really contradicted by nature, . . . . .	35
Theologians, often superficial naturalists, . . . . .	95
Truth must be followed at all costs, . . . . .	2
Types chemical, are creations of art, . . . . .	32
Union of Sexes, its theory, . . . . .	83
Voltaic action, its theory, . . . . .	47
Vegetable kingdom, its relation to the animal kingdom, . . . . .	80
—— its derivation and constituents, . . . . .	115
Vertebrata, preluded, . . . . .	134
Water, its structure, . . . . .	142
—— teeming with life, . . . . .	11
—— its educts, . . . . .	145
Zoic forms, the simplest determined by the material element, . . . . .	130
—— how differentiated into head and body, . . . . .	130
Zote, half azote, also lithium, . . . . .	160

A SUPPLEMENT  
TO  
A SKETCH OF A PHILOSOPHY.

By JOHN G. MACVICAR, M.A., LL.D., D.D.

---

*In Four Parts. Sold Separately.*

PART I. Mind: Its Powers and Capacities, and its Relation to Matter. Price 6s. (1861.)

„ II. Matter and Molecular Morphology. The Elemental Synthesis. Illustrated by 75 Diagrams of Molecules. Price 3s. (1867.)

„ III. The Chemistry of Natural Substances. Illustrated by 2 Plates and 150 Diagrams of Molecules. Price 7s. (1870.)

„ IV. Biology and Theodicy. A Prelude to the Biology of the Future. Illustrated by a Plate and many Diagrams. Price 9s. (1874.)

WILLIAMS & NORGATE, LONDON AND EDINBURGH.

---

*Also to a Condensed View of the same (Price 3s. 6d.), entitled*

**A Science Primer.**

ON THE NATURE OF THINGS.

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS.

BLACKWOOD & SONS, EDINBURGH AND LONDON.

MDCCCLXXVIII.

---

WILLIAMS & NORGATE:

14 HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON;  
AND 20 SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.

---

1881.





# CONTENTS.

---

## PART I.

### THE COSMOTECTONIC LAW.

PAGE

The Physicists to be imitated—As they distribute their subject into kinematics and dynamics, so we distribute ours into pure (merely mental) morphology, and applied morphology (the morphology of nature) here called plasmatology, the science of perfectly plastic individualised or self-contained elements, . . . . .	5
The Cosmical Law—Assimilative action, thermo-magneto-electro-biotic, . . . . .	6
Its type in the Infinite, unity and omnipresence—Its operation in the finite, aggregation tending to unification (on the one hand); dissociation tending to utmost diffusion (on the other), . . . . .	6
The result of both modes of action—The harmony of an expanded universe, full of motion, life, and beauty, . . . . .	7

## PART II.

### PURE MORPHOLOGY.

Mental developments of the cosmical law conceived as taking place in individualised portions of space and time—	
Symmetry, . . . . .	7
Sphericity, . . . . .	7
Cellularity, vascularity—The hollowness of interiors in general, . . . . .	8
Deformation, diffusion, radiation, rotation, . . . . .	8
Universally reciprocal aggregation (tendency to unite), . . . . .	8
The inertia of motion—Continuity, Persistence, . . . . .	8
The inertia of form—Elasticity, Heredity, . . . . .	9
Vibration of positions—Heat, . . . . .	9
The simultaneous institution of opposites, forms of motion—	
Positive and Negative Polarity, . . . . .	10

## PART III.

## APPLIED MORPHOLOGY—PLASMATOLOGY.

PAGE

The cosmical law provides definite properties for whatever is placed fully under it, so that finite substance, in order to be fully its subject, ought to be in itself a mere plasm—The true protoplasm—This is held as being the case, . . . . .	10
Two kinds of substance primordially dissimilar popularly assumed, viz., mind and matter, . . . . .	10
Mental substance is the primordial unity, . . . . .	11
How this view may be wrought out scientifically, . . . . .	11
Finite substance divisible, diffusive, confluent, monadgenous, . . . . .	11
Mental existence—The monad—The spirit—The soul, . . . . .	12
Two phases of mental existence under cosmical law—	
1. Liberty, a reality though transient, . . . . .	12
2. Obedience to law the normal choice of the soul, . . . . .	12
Merely physical existence—The molecule—The genesis of physical force—	
The unifying force—Actual inertia, . . . . .	12
Extreme divisibility and attenuation—The genesis of ether—	
The universal ether, . . . . .	13
The union of ethereal particles under the cosmical law—	
The genesis of Matter—The atom, . . . . .	13
The grouping of atoms—The molecule, . . . . .	14
Molecular movements, . . . . .	14
Metamorphism, . . . . .	15
Fermentation, . . . . .	15
Molecular force, . . . . .	15
The conditions of relative activity in the elements, . . . . .	16
Affinity, atomicity, &c., . . . . .	16

## PART IV.

## NATURE.

Nature guided by the divine legislation operating in the universe (and imperfectly expressed in our Theocosmic law) is a self-sustaining developing economy instinct with life, being assimilated in this respect—so far as the Finite may be assimilated to the Infinite—to the Everliving One who is its author. Nature carries within itself no fiat for its own ruin; but depends through a coming eternity solely on the will of the Eternal, . . . . .	16
--	----

## PART I.

---

### THE COSMIC LAW.

THE physicist having for his theme the simplest data for thought, viz., time and space, and matter viewed as homogeneous and as consisting only of physical points, meets with fewer interruptions to a train of scientific thought than the chemist and physiologist, and consequently has been able to impart to physics a more continuous and scientific character.

This appears in his primary classification of the related phenomena into (1) *kinematics*, or the doctrine of pure or mere motion ; and (2) *dynamics*, that of motion caused by physical force and applicable to nature.

Now when we proceed to specialise physics and to apply its beautiful results to nature in detail, as we see nature developing itself or already developed around us, it is possible to imitate successfully, I think, the primary classification of the physicist by regarding local movements as existing (apparently to the senses) in a statical phase, and thus producing finite forms, and creating a field for the science of morphology.

And here, learning to classify from the physicist, we may propose

(1) a PURE MORPHOLOGY.

(2) A morphology treating of natural forms, which for a reason that will soon appear may be called PLASMATOLOGY.

This separation of form from substance, and the institution of a doctrine which while it is a purely mental construction, offers itself also as an explanation of the phenomena of material nature, depends on the echoing between thoughts and things when both are rightly conceived, and law applied in every case — a single law. The discussion of this law requires a metaphysical excursus which must be sought for elsewhere.\* Meantime, by those who have acquainted themselves with it and applied it to phenomena, and found it to explain phenomena better than any other hypothesis they are acquainted with, though they may refuse their sanction to the method of its derivation (by pure thought verified indeed by

\* See "A Sketch of a Philosophy," part i. and *passim*.



sensation, but not gathered from it), and though therefore they cannot lay hold of it by the head, may yet catch it by the tail.

Its full name, without being longer than many names with which modern science is familiar, might be the theoucosmogenetic law—the law of God, genetic of the cosmos. But omitting all possible syllables, *brevitatis causa*, and to avoid the twofold offence of innovating in names as well as things, we shall call it simply THE COSMIC LAW.

#### ASSIMILATION.

In detail it is a law of all-embracing reciprocal assimilation both as to time and space. In space it produces the simultaneous assimilation of parts and particles on a principle of unity, and gives to nature symmetry along with individuality. In time it assimilates the future to the past, giving harmonious development and heredity. And in a word it produces the effect that every object tends to suggest and to mirror more or less either directly or inversely every other object; giving universal harmony, while all harmoniously unites in echoing the voice of the one omnipotent author of all, who is imminent and omnipresent in all.

This law may be illustrated by an allusion to that process by which our own organisation is continually reintegrated under continuous change and loss, and our life maintained from day to day, in reference to which the term assimilation is already in familiar use, though bringing along with the name no special light on the successive stages of the process except that they are seen to be cases at once of analysis or solution and of synthesis or reconstruction (as plainly they must be in order to assimilate things dissimilar) under the influence of agents to which there is now applied the name of ferments.

What these agents are, and how they act, is quite unknown to science. On these processes, however, our cosmic law does throw light, such light as may prove useful to dyspeptics and to the doctors to whom dyspeptics resort for relief.

Here, however, I shall mention only one condition (suggested by our law) to the successful assimilation of food.

#### THE ETHEREAL PRIMAL AND ULTIMATE.

I allude to the fact that food when eaten must be dissimilar in some respect to the living organism with which it is brought in contact. If it be animal food for instance, and say that in itself it is identical with the tissues of the eater, it must be differentiated by being killed before ingestion, or at all events before the assimilative processes commence. But granting this difference—the difference between the dead and the living—the strain of reciprocal assimilation may take place, the living organism vitalising the dead food, and the dead food deadening the organism, as is indicated in the oppressed feelings of the dyspeptic and the gourmand after food, and the drowsiness of all creatures with full stomachs.

But I trace this process no further here. And indeed I have touched on it so far that I may state how the cosmic law acts when its only field is among objects that have been completely assimilated already. This is important; for it is to be considered that in this

case the objects under it have already completely fulfilled it as to its reciprocal action. In this respect therefore they have nothing more to do. So much of the assimilative energy of each therefore as might have been bestowed upon the other is saved thus intensifying the assimilative action of each upon itself, (1) in confirming its individuality, (2) in preventing the intrusion of others on its rightful sphere of existence or volume, or (3) in liberating it so that it may assert that volume if it be in a state of confinement or concretion.

Hence the aeriform, ultimately the etheriform, is that in which alone an individualized particle of substance possesses all that belongs to it in its relation with space, and the continual operation of the cosmic law as dominant upon it tends to bring it into this state, as will appear hereafter.

### FROM FIRST TO LAST NO CHAOS, NO RUIN.

When indeed we apply the cosmic law only partially, as for instance to universal assimilation in temperature, without regard to its concomitants, speculation obtains very sad results. But the same law, if applied all round, gives the universe at last, not as gathered together into one cold, dark, dead solid monument of its former self, but then, as now, a thing of progressive life and light and beauty, continually burning away indeed, but burning away into the aeriform, that is, into the most perfect form of matter, leaving what we call ashes behind, but ashes out of which arise objects brighter and better than before, yet necessarily perpetuating the same economy, being developed by the same law.

---

## PART II.

---

### PURE MORPHOLOGY.

By assuming mere points or positions in space, and placing them under the cosmic law, a definite system and economy of forms presents itself, of which the following are the heads.

#### SYMMETRY.

This is a name for the similarity of similar parts or particles in their relation to some one position, some one point or line or plane within the form. It may manifest itself in a greater or less degree. But wherever it appears it is explained intellectually by ascribing it to the cosmic law, the law of assimilation.

#### SPHERICITY.

As the symmetry of any finite system of points or positions whose tangent planes would enclose a space increases, two eminent stages may be noted, first, that which has one centre for all the points which constitute it, but these are disposed around that centre at different distances from it, except the equiradial series, which are equidistant from it and from each other.

## CELLULARITY, VASCULARITY, HOLLOWNESS.

But a higher degree of assimilation and symmetry is attained when the positions which constitute the contents of the sphere proceed outwards so as to place themselves along with those which are there already at equal distances from each other, the whole system of points constituting the form being equidistant from each other and from the centre. The form now attained is the spherical cell, and in its development the cosmic law culminates, for plainly no more perfect assimilation of a system of points or positions which are to enclose a space or give a definite volume is possible.

## DEFORMATION, DIFFUSION, RADIATION, ROTATION.

But our points must be viewed as individuals as well as an united system, and in this case a much more perfect degree of assimilation than that which is attained in the cell is possible, viz., when they are all equidistant from each other or similarly in juxtaposition to each other,—a homogeneous extension in three dimensions, as in space itself. And in this arrangement they may accordingly be said to be assimilated to space itself.

The spherical cell must therefore be regarded as a transient structure depending on the sustaining power of its own individuality as a united system to resist the tendency of its own constituents and surroundings, which ever aim at its deformation and ultimate diffusion as consisting of so many individualized elements, each bent on asserting its claim as such to the full, that is, its own aeriform volume of space around it as the sphere of existence proper to itself.

## UNIFICATION, SEEMINGLY UNIVERSALLY RECIPROCAL ATTRACTION.

Suppose there are given two or any finite number of points at a greater or less distance from each other and perfectly mobile, the cosmic law requires them to be assimilated as to position. They must therefore move towards one another until they meet in one and the same place. They must seem to be guided by an universal attraction among themselves.

And now we have already an anticipation of those seeming oppositions and conflicts which nature so often displays. But it may here be seen that one and the same law may produce them according to its normal mode of action at the time and place. All is not a tending, as some physicists have concluded from seeing the law of assimilation verifying itself in reference to some one mode of motion only, to the utmost concentration and unity. It has for its coordinate in the economy of things the utmost diffusiveness as well. And hence the beauty and the variety of nature, everywhere weaving and unweaving and representing at once unity and omnipresence, the indefeasible attributes of the author of all.

## THE INERTIA OF MOTION—CONTINUITY, PERSISTENCE.

Any point considered as mobile must, when moving under the cosmic law, move along so that every successive element of its course



shall be assimilated to the first. Now the first element of motion in every case is simply a change in position from the original to the next position adjacent, and this can never be anything else but an element of a straight line lying in a certain direction; and under the law of assimilation every successive element must be assimilated to those which have preceded. The whole motion must therefore be in the same direction, that is, it must be rectilinear. But under the same law similar lengths or equal lines must be described in similar or equal movements or measures of time. The motion therefore as it proceeds along must both be straight in point of direction and equable in point of velocity. It must be uniform. Moreover, if once entered upon, it must go on similarly, that is, for ever.

Thus there immediately results from the cosmic law acting in its simplest case the uniform phenomenon of inertia and the first law of motion.

#### THE INERTIA OF FORM—ELASTICITY, HEREDITY.

This inquiry cannot be carried far by mere insight, even by assuming the simplest forms or by the aid of the most advanced mathematics. If the permanence of the form in hand be provided for so that it is only subject to transient deformations, not to transformation, the law of assimilation provides that after every deformation the original form shall be restored under the condition of the inertia of the points in motion. Hence an everlasting vibration of the points and a phenomenon which would be an ideally perfect elasticity. But deformation and malformation have no place among the permanencies of the cosmical law. The action is ever aiming at the perfect, the infinite, with which however every finite form is at variance, but some more than others. That which is least at variance is the spherical superficies or cell. Hence towards this form whatever is capable of constructing it culminates.

But once constructed as a cell, its continuance in existence as such is all but over. It is forthwith called back to a form less symmetrical if it is to continue to exist, if not, it will be exploded or sublimed by diffusion into the infinite.

#### VIBRATION OF POSITIONS—HEAT.

From the inertia of form (anticipating elasticity) it follows that a point which has once gone to constitute a form or a closed system of points can never, if left to itself, cease from entertaining a vibratory movement. And a whole system of points so disposed as to constitute under the cosmic law a molecule more or less in accordance with that law, must continue to vibrate round its centre and constitute itself a *punctum saliens*, until it be brought to rest from without.

And if there be two or more such systems face to face with each other, whencesoever they may have come, sooner or later they must be assimilated as to the quantity of vibratory action in each, the vibratory action of each point being less in proportion as the number of points in that system of points is greater.

## THE SIMULTANEOUS INSTITUTION OF OPPOSITES—POSITIVE AND NEGATIVE—POLARITY.

A single movement can only be in one and the same direction at the same time. But all the while that it is going on towards new points, it is going off from those which it has reached already. Every single movement therefore has two aspects which are of the same character and yet are the opposites of each other. They therefore pave the way for such terms, constantly occurring in science as positive and negative, and sanctioning such symbols as plus (+) and minus (-).

Suppose two points to be fixed in space at such a distance that whatever the amount of their difference the cosmic law acting directly can do nothing to assimilate them; as, for instance, let one of them be a point of light and the other a point of darkness. Then let one or more mobile points be placed in a line between them, but not close to each other, or let them be restricted to keep as their trajectory the straight line between them, each will be repelled from that fixed point to which it has been assimilated and attracted towards that to which it is still dissimilar, according to the action of the cosmic law, which acts only to isolate objects which have fulfilled it. The mobile point or points therefore fulfilling the cosmic law of assimilation will be carriers of light to the dark points and carriers of darkness to the points of light. And the mobile points may, while thus placed and acting, be said to have each a photic or photiferous pole, and a scotic or scotogenous pole, which through custom and a homage to sensation we should no doubt name respectively the positive and the negative pole.

---

## PART III.

---

### APPLIED MORPHOLOGY—PLASMATOLOGY.

The mathematician having discussed kinematics or the doctrine of the motions of mere or pure points, proceeds to dynamics or that of physical points. In this there is a step in the direction of material nature. It postulates in the points physical force, especially inertia and universal attraction, and consequently regards them as possessing not merely a subjective or mental existence, but an objective, outward, or real existence. In a word, the points regarded are now substantial things, each occupying a definite position in space, and itself dissimilar to space itself.

#### TWO ESSENTIALLY DIFFERENT KINDS OF SUBSTANCE FORMERLY ASSUMED, VIZ., MIND AND MATTER.

It has been a very prevalent conception that this new datum of thought, viz., substance—besides existing in great variety—is of two essentially different kinds, the one mental and the other material.

## THEY ARE NOT COORDINATE.

But since in the investigation into knowledge of any other subject whatever or into knowledge itself, we always find ourselves in the last analysis dealing with the phenomena of mind, and as to the phenomena displayed to us by matter, can know them only by mind and in terms of mind, while in neither case we can get beyond phenomena except in the naturally non-reasonable affirmation of substance, it seems wisest not to double that affirmation by setting out with two kinds of substance essentially different, but with one only, and proceed to inquire whether the differences in observed phenomena may not arise from differences in the conditions of existence of that substance.

## MENTAL SUBSTANCE THE PRIMORDIAL UNITY.

If this be agreed, it is certainly mental and not material substance which has the claim to be this primordial unity. And the question would stand thus—given a mental substance such that it is capable of manifesting all the mental phenomena known to us, sensation, perception, thought, volition, may it not be inferred by a most extensive observation of the economy of things that by attenuation less or more that substance may lose its power of manifesting these higher phenomena, until at last no power remains but that which seems to be of the very essence of mind, viz., activity, implying (1) the power of effecting change within itself, and (2) the power of effecting change in the outward, as for instance that of appearing or manifesting itself to others; the former power (intrinsic activity) being *the last traces of volition*, and the latter being that by which belief in external existence is awoken, *the correlative of perception*.

Accordingly some time ago physicists who did not avail themselves of the elementary dichotomy of existence into creator and creation, substituted for it the dichotomy of matter and force. Of late, however, a finer analysis has found that matter is known only by force and in force, and moreover that such is mind as it exists for us and in us, that nothing but that which is a manifestation of some kind of force can be known to us. There is a growing conviction therefore among materialists as well as others that substance in the last analysis is a thing of life and power, a spirit-nature, a “mind-stuff.”

## HOW THIS VIEW MAY BE SCIENTIFICALLY WROUGHT OUT.

Let this view be adopted, and let the following data be granted with regard to the substance conceived.

## COSMIC SUBSTANCE FINITE.

1. That its quantity in existence, however vast, is yet finite.

## DIVISIBLE—DIFFUSIVE.

2. That it may be partitioned or individualized to such an extent that each individual element of substance is next to nothing as a force, being, or thing. Meanwhile, though with loss of individualised force, substance has thus gained diffusion throughout the universe.



## CONFLUENT—MONADGENOUS.

3. That such or any elements of substance may become confluent into unities (monads) of greater value as powers, recovering mental faculties proportionally to their quantity in the individual, in virtue of the postulate that substance is essentially mental substance or the basis of mental phenomena.

## TWO PHASES OF EXISTENCE UNDER COSMICAL LAW.

And for these phenomena and all phenomena let it be unattenuated or exist in quantity, and (1) let it be wholly and solely obedient to the cosmical law bearing upon it as external to it, that it may be assimilated in its attributes to those of the author of all (the primordial mind), until it acquires such power as an individualized being that it can move freely in the depths of its own activity, and manifest free will, and for the time become an originator of acts and its own universe; and (2) let this volitional phase of isolation be destined to pass off while the light of the cosmic law shines fully in it as well as upon it and directs its choice.

Ultimately, therefore, and when entering normally into the system of the universe, and when on the way of its own well-being, the substance conceived depends for all its phenomena on its intrinsic life and spirit-nature, and the play upon it from without and from within itself of the THEOUCOSMOTECTONIC, more shortly the cosmic law.

## THE GENESIS OF PHYSICAL FORCE.

The cosmic law is the fountain of physical force. It may be illustrated by the familiar phenomenon of the weight or gravitation of bodies. Plainly, however, this is not a simple phenomenon; we can conceive even a large thing moving spontaneously downwards and hitting our toes without hurting them.

Mental analysis resolves the phenomenon of gravitation into the two following components, viz., universal aggregation and inertia.

## THE UNIFYING FORCE.

Given two or more morsels of substance so attenuated by partitionment or individuation that they are no longer capable of manifesting mental phenomena, but only their own existence, then it follows under the cosmic law that that law must tend to assimilate them as to their positions in space. They must tend towards the same position as if they were actuated by a mutual attraction.

The phenomenon may be fairly regarded as the residuum of the mental phenomenon of sociality.

## ACTUAL INERTIA.

Referring to our pure morphology on this head (p. 7), and instead of a point substituting a morsel of substance similar to that conceived in the last paragraph, the actual phenomenon of inertia plainly emerges, and there is given to nature what is usually called the first law of motion, implying weight or pressure in the direction of motion.

### DIVISIBILITY.

Substance though thus ever tending to identity in position and therefore to complete unification is yet divisible, individualizable and diffusible to all but an infinite extent, the cosmic law requiring it to assimilate itself to the whole of space to the full extent that that which is finite can assimilate itself to that which is infinite.

### THE UNIVERSAL ETHER.

When partitioned so that each morsel is a minim and next to nothing, though still each an unity and diffused to the utmost degree compatible with the preservation of all the particles in relation with each other so that the whole may still possess a certain degree of unity, the substance conceived as in this state constitutes the ether. It does not either in its particles or as a whole manifest any mental phenomena itself directly, but it shows its relation to these phenomena by its powerful assistance to them as the medium by which embodied minds are enabled to perceive distant objects, as light, the affinity of which to mind has been constantly recognized.

### MATTER.

The quantity of ether being finite, its particles under the cosmic law in regions where a synthetic phase of existence prevails must tend to be assimilated as to position. A certain number must group themselves around a common centre. They will not at once rush in upon that centre and become confluent there. Because, having been once individualized for an unknown epoch the cosmic law acting as the law of heredity and tending to assimilate them in their new situations to what they were when diffused to the utmost will prevent their immediate confluence, preserving their previous individuality, admitting them only to remain in juxtaposition and constitute a group of ethereal elements which for convenience we have called a nebular speck.

But as the group increases in the number of elements constituting it, the urgency or pressure of all its constituent to be assimilated in position and therefore to press towards the centre must increase. Hence an epoch must arrive when the central pressure is able to overcome the individuality-preserving power of the constituent particles, and those nearest the centre will become confluent. And thus we obtain a new mode of substance, viz., a monadic nucleus invested with its atmosphere of generating ether. And this according to our view is the material element or atom or true unit of atomic weight; for the ethereal elements being all under the cosmic law identical with each other except in their positions in space, the central pressure causing confluence and generating nuclei in the nebular specks must effect these nuclei when the speck consists of the same number and quantity of substance in all. In the last analyses of an adequate chemistry, therefore, while the educt is still entitled to the name of matter, all material elements are identical except as to their positions in space.

And here therefore our views depart entirely from those of modern chemistry, which regards the particles of all undecomposable substances which are different from each other as different kinds of matter, not to

be transmuted in each other anywhere in the universe—because forsooth this cannot be done by man at this particular time in this small cold planet which happens to be our embodied dwelling-place for a few minutes in an eternity !

#### THE ATOM.

The senses of touch and of sight take such a lead over those of hearing and smelling in determining our popular views of things that they prompt us always to ask the size and form of objects, meaning the planes of demarcation between these objects as indicated by the senses and the external space—the very conception of which implies a breach in the law of continuity. Now the habit of mind having such an inadequate origin must be quite put away from us if we are to have any rational idea of force. Happily for this view it is held as part of the Newtonian philosophy that every atom in the universe attracts and consequently acts on every other atom, implying an extension of reciprocal action on the part of all atoms to the remotest distances ; and indeed without sanctioning this view it is necessary if we are to have any intelligent conceptions of the functioning of atoms at all to consider each atom viewed as an object of sense as a “nucleus” merely invested to an unknown but vast extent by an abiding or continuous effluence or radiation of assimilative thermo-electro-magnetic force.

As to the nucleus of the atom, considering the innumerable number which can be accommodated in what we call a very small space, we are tempted to regard that nucleus as merely a physical point or centre of force. But it is certain that any individualized thing which exists in space, however minute it may be, yes even a physical point as a thing of nature and not merely of mathematical conception must have a definite form and magnitude. And it follows obviously as will be granted on referring to our pure morphology (p. 7) that the form of the nucleus of the atom must be a sphere whose constituent particles are assimilated to each other in position to the utmost ; and therefore that the atom is a spherical superficies merely or cell, though inconceivably minute yet real.

And as to its assimilative atmosphere of force, all the successive wavelets, whether peripherad or centrad, which constitute it must be spherical also concentric with the nucleus and with one another.

The consumption of spirit-substance in constituting matter is thus a minimum.

#### MOLECULES.

As the ethereal elements in the celestial spaces aggregate into nebular specks whence atoms of matter result, so under the same law, atoms of matter aggregate into molecules. But the atom along with a great recovery of power generally over the ethereal element has a great increase of power in maintaining its own individuality also, its self-assimilative or self-sustaining power. Consequently when atoms aggregate into molecules, no confluence takes place of those in the centre. It may be, however, that in very highly composite material systems new unities of the primal mind-stuff of creation or mental monads are developed.

But in this planet the atoms constituting the molecule exist in juxtaposition only not in confluence. And thus the field is given to nature for physics, chemistry, and petrology.



## MOLECULAR MOVEMENTS.

The phenomena of molecular and intermolecular action presuppose elements which, from their history of their genesis or the want of material, cannot assume at once a spherical and cellular structure. Hence the cosmic law, in virtue of its proper pulsatory action or specific heat, is always keeping molecules in motion, moving their particles towards the maximum of symmetry, that is, the spherical and the cellular. This, however, only a few light and versatile or polymorphous molecules commonly called organic can actually attain.

## METAMORPHISM.

Hence secularly or in very long periods of time mere stoney and mechanical deposits tend to become granular and crystalline, especially (1) in regions which formerly have been or still are actuated by more powerful heat, or (2) where the assimilative influence of previously existing crystalline matter acting in their neighbourhood produces the same effect as heat.

## FERMENTATION.

Very soon also, molecules and molecular unities, which are very active and changeful, especially if manifesting life, when introduced into a volume of matter liquid or solid which as it exists tends towards change, alter it assimilatively—and that always in the interest of molecular perfection, viz., the spherical and cellular or the aeriform state.

To this mode of action chiefly, and the many different ferments provided in the course of the nutritive canal to assimilate the different kinds of food we eat, our living tissues, our life, in spite of a daily and hourly loss which is severe, and if we are active creatures inevitable, is maintained, it may be, for the best part of a century, a longevity which may perhaps be reached hereafter in its integrity, when the laws of hygiene are well understood and fully respected.

## MOLECULAR FORCE.

Power or force (not quantivalence) in general in individualized objects is, according to our view (*cæteris paribus*), proportional to the quantity of our protoplasm which constitutes them. The force of molecules ought therefore to be proportional to the number of atoms involved in their structure, and therefore to their atomic weights. And that it is so fully appears from observation, though verification is difficult where so many other features of molecules as well as their atomic weights enter into and determine their functioning. But disregarding those which have dissimilar forms and structures, the following, which, generally speaking, are isomorphous, when properly mated or tested, plainly increase in power as their atomic weights increase, the lightest being named first.

Chlorine, Bromine, Iodine.

Potassium, Rubidium, Cæsium.

Magnesium, Calcium, Strontium, Baryum.

Sulphur, Selenium, Tellurium.

Phosphorus, Vanadium, Arsenic, Antimony, Bismuth.

Boron, Carbon.

Ozone, Fluorine.



## ATOMICITY.

Elements according to the number of places on their surface, especially their polar and equatorial regions, which are suitable for attaching other elements to them, are said to have different atomicities, a fact which assists greatly in developing the variety of nature, and forms a fertile subject of scientific observation.

Absolute atomic weights = H = 5, C = 30, O = 40,  $\text{O} = \text{O}_2 = 80$ , N = 35, Az = 70.  
Conventional H = 1, to many chemists C = 12, O = 16, N and Az = 14.

## MOLECULAR ACTIVITY.

This is in the main dependent on form and structure, and the quantity of the generating ether which the nucleus has succeeded in carrying along with it. The further it is from being spherical and cellular, and therefore the more work that is before it in order to the fulfilment of the cosmical law, the more active or disposed for action it is. Yet its inertia is such a hindrance to its activity that that activity may be said (*ceteris paribus*) to be inversely proportional to its atomic weight, and therefore inversely to its force in general.

The type of locomotive activity is hydrogen, of parasitic activity, fluorine; and of very long lived stability, silica and other gems.

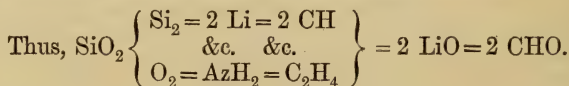
## PART IV.

## NATURE.

But there is no such thing as perfect rest in any molecular structure in nature, no ultimate immutability, nothing permanently dead, no absolute cold. There is molecular action everywhere.

And all molecular action is cyclical, wholly or in part.

The cosmical law fulfilled in any case, then by the analytical and synthetical action, both of which are implied in that law, the structure which has so fulfilled it proves to be resolvable into quasi-embryos fitted to restore it to nature out of its own ashes.







**PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET**

---

**UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY**

---

**SEEN BY  
PRESERVATION  
SERVICES**

DATE

*25/8/86*

For use in  
the Library  
**ONLY**



